

A treatie of all the rents and reuenues, which the king of Spaine hath in all his realmes, and as the Indies, which consist in Alcauales, and Thirds, Subsidies, Imposts, Customs, Duties for salt, and other reuenues contained in his finances of Spaine, with a declaration of the Alcauales.

Alcauala what
it is.

The king of Spaine exacts the tenth partie of all goods, lands, houses, merchandises, or whatsoever else, as such times as they are sold, and this tenth is called Alcauala. In like manner artizans and workemen, and such as keepe shops and sell any thing of their handie worke or industrie, or else in those places wheras they sell, as in the butcheries, and tawerns, they are bound to pay the tenth part of all that they sell. For this cause many townes, and their members, compound with the king, and pay him a certaine summe without any further charge, and they themselves gather up these Alcauales in their jurisdictions; which accord is called Encabecamiento. Moreover the things receivers remaine in the Metropolitan townes and prouinces, where they looke to the payment of the Alcauales, and giue an account. Besides, they haue the charge of certaine recompences ordained to some by the king of Spaine, and in like manner of other debts and assignations, whereof they doe afterwards giue an account to the foweraigne Chamber of the accounts: But to the end that you may know the qualitie of thirds, you must vnderstand, that Popes in former times haue graunted to the king of Spaine the third partie of the reuenues of the Clergie, to ayd them in their warres against the Moores, and to defend the Catholicke religion. The same receivers recieue the thirds with the Alcauales, and they are in like manner rented out to townes. The king of Spaine hath sold some Alcauales, and giuen others in recompence, whereof we will make mention.

The salt, that is to say, the places from whence the king of Spaine drawes salt, are rented yearly for 93 (Quentos) or millions of marauedis.

The tenths of the sea, of merchandise which comes from forraigne parts into Bilcaia, and the prouinces of Guipuscoa, and of the foure Maritime valles of the mountaines, pay for all the merchandise which is caried by land into Castille, vnto the houses appointed to that end in the townes of Victoria, Horduna, and Valmosede, the sum of 70 mill. of marau.

The tenths of the sea which passe by the realme of Leon, and by the ports of Sanabre, and Villa Franca yeeld yearly 1 mill. of marau.

The tenths of the principallitie of Asturia, passing by the Towne of Ouiedo yeeld 375000 marau.

The reuenues of the gouernment of the towne of Bilbao, for merchandise which come from forraigne parts 490500 marau.

The citie of Burgos, with the jurisdiction, payes yearly for the Alcauales, thirds, and rents 17 mill. 129880 marau. E

The Bayliwicke of Burgos, which they terme Bureba, payes yearly 2 millions 646 marau.

The mountaines of Oca yeeld yearly 34000 marau.

The Bayliwicke of the prouince of Rioja 3 mill. 757000 marau.

The Bayliwicke of Ebro payes 2 mill. 340000 marau.

The jurisdiction on the other side of Ebro yeelds 1 mill. 402000 marau.

The citie of Victoria payes yearly vnto the king 269000 marau.

The prouince of Guipuscoa payes yearly for the Alcauales and thirds 1 million 181000 marau.

The mines of Iron which are in the said prouince yeeld 150000 marau.

The seven Bayliwickes of the mountaines of old Castille 942000 marau.

The valley of Mena in the same mountaines of Castille 288000 marau.

The prouince of Logrono 7 millions 746000 marau.

The townes of Lanquas, and the tetritorie, payes 541000 marau.

The

A The citie of S. Dominico de la Calçada payes yerely 4 mil. 812000 Marau.

The bayliwicke of the town of Diego 1 million, 545000 Marauedis.

The bayliwicke of Can de Munno payes 4 millions, 612000 Marau.

The bayliwicke of Castro Xeris 8 millions, 485000 Marauedis.

The bayliwicke of Cebriato 1 million, 968000 Marauedis.

The bayliwicke of Monfon 2 millions, 276000 Marauedis.

The citie of Palence, and the prouince of Campo payes yerely for the Alcauales and thirds 16 millions, 940000 Marauedis.

The town of Carion payes 4 millions, 949000 Marauedis.

The jurisdiction of Carion payes 2 millions, 910000 Marauedis.

The places of Peter Aluares of Vega 655000 Marauedis.

The town of Sahagun is rented for 2 millions, 125000 Marauedis.

The bayliwicke of Pernia payes 178000 Marauedis.

The bayliwicke of Campo in the mountaines 1 million, 730000 Marauedis.

The valley of Miranda in the mountaines 557000 Marauedis.

The foure Townes called of the coast, that is to say, S. Andera, Laredo, Castro of Vridales, and S. Vincent, pay yearly 3 millions, and 345000 Marauedis.

The principallitie of Asturia, and the town of Ouiedo 12 mil. 345000 Marau.

The citie of Lugo in the realme of Galicia, with the Bishopricke, payes yearly 4 mil. 137000 Marauedis.

The citie of Mondonedo in the realme of Galicia 1 million, and 132000 Marauedis.

The citie of Orense, and the jurisdiction 6 millions, and 58000 Marauedis.

The citie of San Lames or Compostella, with the Archbishops tetritorie, payes 18 millions 212000 Marauedis.

The citie of Tuy, and the Bishops jurisdiction in Galicia 5 mil. 827000 Marauedis.

The town of Pontferado in Galicia 1 million, 975000 Marauedis.

The citie of Leon, with the jurisdiction and Bishopricke 6 mil. 350000 Marau.

The town of Sardagne 1 million, and 13000 Marau.

The citie of Astorga and Bishopricke in the realme of Leon pay 2 mil. 455000 Marau.

The villages or places called Caudiaz of the Abbey of Leon and Astorga are rented at 797000 Marau.

The Barrios or parishes about Salas within the principallitie of Asturia pay yearly 231000 Marauedis.

The citie of Zamora with the jurisdiction 15 mil. 525000 Marau.

The citie of Toro and the jurisdiction 11 mil. 112000 Marau.

The town of Vrena payes for the thirds, the tenths, or Alcauala belonging to the duke of Osouna 62000 Marau.

The town of Garena payes yearly 2 mil. 335000 Marau.

The town of Brasil de la Coma 230000 Marau.

The citie of Salamanca and the jurisdiction 24 mil. 345000 Marau.

The citie of Rodrigo and the jurisdiction 14 mil. 345000 Marau.

The jurisdiction of Trigueros 417000 Marau.

The town of Olanillo 47000 Marau.

The town of Tordeillas and the tetritorie 2 mil. and 600000 Marau.

The town of Valladolid and the jurisdiction 29 mil. 730000 Marau.

The town of Tordehumos payes 827000 Marau.

The town of Medina del Campo and the jurisdiction payes yearly 32 millions, and 149000 Marau.

The town of Olmedo, and the tetritorie 2 mil. 149000 Marau.

The town of Naua, and the seven churches payes for the thirds 333000 Marauedis, for the tenths belong vnto Don Francis de Fonseca.

The town of Madrigal 682000 Marau.

The town of Ariualo with her jurisdiction 5 mil. 310000 Marau.

The town of Auila, and the jurisdiction 19 mil. 55000 Marau.

The

The cite of Segouia, and the jurisdiction	12 mil. 470000 marau.	A
The towne of Aranda of Duero, with her jurisdiction	3 mil. 350000 marau.	
The towne of Roa paies yearly	1 mil. 515000 marau.	
The towne of Gomiel of Yzan (where the tenths belong vnto the Duke of Offouna) paies yearly for the thirds	154000 marau.	
The towne of Sepulveda with the territorie	3 millions, 540000 marau.	
The cite of Soria with the jurisdiction	10 millions, 2820000 marau.	
The cite and Bithopricke of Olina, with the jurisdiction	4 millions.	
The towne of Agreda and Caracena	2 millions, 830000 marau.	
The towne of Molina and the jurisdiction	5 millions, 7920000 marauedis.	B
The cite of Ciguenga and the jurisdiction	3 millions, 662000 marauedis.	
The towne of Cuenca and her jurisdiction paies	24 millions, 645000 marauedis.	
The towne of Huerc with the territorie	17 millions, 916000 marauedis.	
The towne of Villarejo de Fuentes	2 millions, 317000 marauedis.	
The province called the Marquisat of Villena, that is to say, the townes of Timihilla, Abaserte, Roda, Saint Clement, and the towne of Villena, with the jurisdiction paies yearly	31 millions, 505000 marauedis.	
The towne of Beaumont, whole Alcauales belong vnto the Marquis of Villena paies onely for the thirds	476000 marauedis.	
The cite of Murcia and the jurisdiction	14 mil. 820000 marau.	C
The towne of Lorca, and her jurisdiction	5 millions.	
The cite of Carthagena and her jurisdiction	2 millions.	
The towne of Alcaras, with the jurisdiction	16 millions, 984000 marauedis.	
The towne of Segura de la Sierra with the mountaines thereabout, and territorie belonging to the maister of Saint James	11 millions, 91000 marauedis.	
Villa Noua de los Infantes, with her province called el Campo de Moryel, belonging to the knights of Saint James	8 millions, 664000 marauedis.	
Ocagna and the province called Castille, belonging also to the knights of Saint James paies	23 millions.	
The cite of Guadalajara with the jurisdiction paies	11 millions, 640000 marau.	D
The towne of Prox and Poso pay yearly	160000 marauedis.	
The towne of Almonacid, and the province of Sorite, which belong to the knights of Saint James	1 million, 188000 marauedis.	
The towns of Vzeda, Talamanca, and Tardelaguna, with the territorie which belongs to the Archbishop of Toledo	18 millions 250000 marauedis.	
The towne of Yepas	423000 marauedis.	
Alcala of Henarez and the jurisdiction, with the towne of Briuega, which are the Archbishops of Toledo, pay	16 millions, 250000 marauedis.	
The towne of Madrid, with her territorie	23 millions, 250000 marauedis.	
The countrie of Puno in Rostro, yeelds	1 million, 262000 marauedis.	E
The townes of Cubas, and Grinon, where the Alcauales belong to the house of Mendoza, pay vnto the king for the thirds	117000 marauedis.	
The towne of Gualapagar, where the tenths belong vnto the Duke of Infantazgo, pay for the thirds	160000 marauedis.	
The towne of Illescas, and the territorie, paies	2 millions, 297000 marauedis.	
The cite of Toledo with the members, pay yerely	37 millions.	
The revenues of the mountaines, which are paid by the maisters of the flocks of sheepe, which go to feed in Extremadura, yeeld	19 millions, 503000 marauedis.	
The villages of the Priors of Saint Iohn	7 millions, 55000 marauedis.	
The towne of Almagro, with the province which is called el Campo de Calatraua paies	7 millions, 120000 marauedis.	
Moreover the Alcauales for greene come which is sold there for horse meat, yeeld vnto the king	3 millions, 438000 marauedis.	
The towne of Ciudad Real paies yearly	4 millions, 150000 marauedis.	

The

A The villages lying in the countrie called the Archdeaconschip of Talauera de la Roina	14 millions, 326000 marau.	
The cite of Plaisance, and the villages which belong to the Archdeacon, pay yearly	18 millions, 475000 marau.	
The towne of Truxillo, and the territorie, yeelds	12 millions, 224000 marau.	
The towne of Carceres, with the jurisdiction, payes	7 millions, 850000 marau.	
The towne of Badajos, with the jurisdiction and province, payes	9 mill. 972000 marau.	
The towne of Alcantara, with her territorie, which belong vnto the knights of Alcantara, payes yearly	9 millions, 403000 marau.	
B The tenths of the greene corn which is sold for the feeding of horses of price, in the month of March, yeelds vnto the king	3 millions, 481000 marau.	
The province of Serne, or Serene, belonging to the knights of Alcantara	7 mill.	
The cite of Merida, with the territorie, in the province of Leon	570000 marau.	
The towne of Fuente el Macstro in the same province	21 millions.	
The towne of Guadancanal, with her territorie, payes yearly	234000 marau.	
The towne of Xeres of Badajos, with the territorie, yeelds	6 mill. 973000 marau.	
The cite of Seuille, with the lands, and jurisdiction, yeelds	3 mill. 305000 marau.	
C All the rent of the seigneurie of Seuille yeelds	7 mill. 100000 marau.	
The townes of Palma and Gelues, vnder their Earles, pay	182 mill. 870000 marau.	
The townes of Teuar and Ardales, where the tenths belong to the Marquis of Ardales, pay yearly for the thirds	2 millions.	
The towne of Lerena, and the territorie, and the province of Leon, vnder the knights of S. James, yeelds	235000 marau.	
The revenues of Cadiz, which they call Almadraues, that is to say, the fishing of Tonnie amounts to	3 millions, 325000 marau.	
The cite of Cadiz payes yearly	3 millions, 35000 marau.	
The towne of Gibraltar payes onely thirds, and is exempted from all the rest, and these third come to	8 millions, 452000 marau.	
The towne of Xerez de la Frontera, with the jurisdiction, payes yearly	1 million, 500000 marau.	
The towne of Carmona yeelds vnto the king	21 millions, 500000 marau.	
The townes of Lora and Setafila pay	9 millions, 450000 marau.	
The towne of Ecija, with the suburbs,	680000 marau.	
The cite of Cordoua, with the territorie, yeelds yearly	15 millions, 500000 marau.	
The places called Realengos of Cordoua	48 mill. 995000 marau.	
The towne of Anduxar, and the territorie,	17 millions, 316000 marau.	
The cite of Vbeda, and her jurisdiction,	4 millions, 800000 marau.	
E The cite of Betga payes yearly	11 millions, 346000 marau.	
The towne of Quexado yeelds vnto the king	17 millions, 316000 marau.	
The Adelantado or Lieutenant ship of Cacoria yeelds yearly	1 million, 415000 marau.	
The countrie of S. Stephen payes vnto the king	6 mill. 885000 marau.	
The towne of Martos, and the territorie which belongs to the knights of Calatrava, of the members of Andalusia, yeelds yearly	1 million, 340000 marau.	
The cite of Iuen, with the territorie, payes	11 millions, 336000 marau.	
The cite of Granada, with the territorie, yeelds	15 millions, 909000 marau.	
The filke of the realme of Granada, before the expulsion of the Moores, was worth, 42 millions, but now it yeelds vnto the king but	42 millions, 910000 marau.	
B The towne called Guelayabizes, in the realme of Granada, is worth	22 millions.	
The towne of Loxa, and Alhama, in the realme of Granada, pay	2 millions.	
The towne of Baga, in Granada, yeelds yearly	750000 marau.	
	3 millions.	
	650000 marau.	
	10 millions, 626000 marau.	

All these be-
long to the
knights of
S. James.

The

The cite of Guadix, in the realme of Granada, and the mountaines thereabout, pay by A the year 6 millions, 395 000 marau.
 The cite of Almerie, in the realme of Granada yeelds 3 millions, 80000 marau.
 The towne of Almeria, Mutil, and Salobrena, pay yearly 2 mill. 643000 marau.
 The cite of Malaga yeelds vnto the king 16 millions, 269000 marau.
 Velaz Malaga, in the realme of Granada, payes yearly 16 millions, 519000 marau.
 The towne of Pulchena payes vnto the king 410000 marau.
 The cite of Ronda, with the iurisdiction, yeelds 5 millions, 334000 marau.
 The Island of Canarie yeelds yearly 4 millions, 850000 marau.
 The Island of Teneriffe yeelds yearly 3 millions, B
 The Island of Palma yeelds yearly 2 millions.
 The tax which is yearly due throughout the realmes of Spaine is worth 104 millions, 309000 maraudis: And this tax is diuided among the people throughout all the provinces, and towns, for that the noblemen which are Feudataries and knights are exempt, they are taxed according to their estates.

The rols or customes by land of the realmes of Valencia, Arragon, and Nauarre, which are to be paid for all things that are carried by land in the said realmes, as well for the entrie, as for the going forth, yeeld vnto the king of Spaine 49 mill. 35000 marau.

The drie ports or passages within the countie, as well at the coming in, as going forth, which passe betwixt the realmes of Portugal and Castile, pay yearly for the tenths of C such things as are brought in, or carried forth 34 millions, 155000 marau.

The wools which are transported yearly out of Spain into other countries, yeeld for euery sack (which doth commonly weigh 10 Arobes, and the Arobe weighs 25 pound) 2 ducats, so as it be of the countie wools, for strangers pay 4 ducats: and in all it yeelds yearly to the king of Spaine 53 millions, 386000 marau.

The Almojarif, or great custome of Seuille, which the cite doth farme of the king of Spaine, yeelds yearly in rent 154 millions, 309000 maraudis: They doe so call the custome of all the merchandise which comes from the Low countries, France, England, Portugal, Italie, and other places, as at bar, and in the port of Seuille.

The Almojarif, or custome of the Spanish or West Indies, which the cite of Seuille D hath yeelded, whereas all the merchandise receiued into the ships at Seuille, and is to be transported thither, payes the twentieth part, and being carried to the Indies, they are forced to giue another twentieth part, all which amounts to 67 millions.

The reuenues which the king of Spaine drawes from the money of Spaine, that is to say, from euery marke of silver, or six ducats of silver (whereas they coine money) a Royall, and this is called *El Sencor de la Alameda*, or the right of the mint; and the mint at Seuille yeelds as much as all the rest: the which yeelds vnto the king of Spaine yearly 22 millions.

The king of Spaine hath come out to the Foulkers of Ausbourg, and to other Banquers, the maisters of the Cities of Seuille, Calatrava, and Alcantara; which are only the customes and tenths of wines, oyle, and other things which the maisters were wont to enjoy, nor comprehend the customes of Alcaualas and thirds, as hath been said: which rent doth yeeld vnto the king yearly 98 millions.

The power of the maisters was wont to be great, and extended into many provinces, but now this charge is of lesse esteeme, since that the king of Spaine haue taken vpon them the maisterships, by little and little draw away all the reuenues. Moreover, the king of Spaine letteth some the feedings and pastures of the said maisters and companies, and it doth yeeld him yearly 37 millions.

The king of Spaine doth rent out the mint of the cities of Almedan, of Sierra Morena, and the field of Calatrava, and receiue for the same 73 millions.

The Croisado, or Popes Bulls, all charges deducted, yeeld vnto the king of Spaine yearly 200 millions.

That which they call subsidie, which the Clergie giues out of their reuenues taxed vpon their benefices, to make war against Infidells and others, yeelds yearly 85 millions.

Moreouer

A. Moreover, all the Bishops and Churches of Spaine giue vnto the king for the making of war against Infidells, one hundred and one millions. This reuenue is called *El Exento*, and is wont to be granted to the king of Spaine by the Popes Bulls, whereby it is lawfull for him to take the tenths of the wheat, millet, wine, oyle, and other fruits belonging to the Clergie and Churches; and the Clergie giues this summe vnto the king all charges deducted.

The mines of Guadalcanal in Estremadura vpon Sierra Morena did sometimes yeeld 18 millions of maraudis: but being at this day much decayed, it cannot be taxed.

All the lands of Spaine paie yearly vnto the king a certain imposition which they call *Excuse* for the Slaues and Gallics, and this makes the sum of 7 mil. 750000 marau.

The reuenue called *Alameda Forera*, for the which euery fire whatsoeuer it be, is constrained to pay 7 maraudis yearly vnto the king of Spaine, and this doth make by the year 6 mill. and 656000 maraudis.

That which comes vnto the king yearly from the VVest Indies, amounteth vnto the summe of 300 millions.

The realme of Nauarre yeelds yearly vnto the king 35 mil. 500000 maraudis. The realme of Valencia, Arragon, and Cattalogia giue vnto the king, besides other tributes 75 millions of maraudis.

The Islands of Sardinia, Maiorca, and Minorca, yeeld no profit vnto the king of Spaine, for that the reuenues of these places are consumed in the guard of them, and besides they are not very rich.

The realme of Sicile brings yearly vnto the king of Spaine 375 millions. The realme of Naples, with the countries of Pouillia and Calabria yeeld yearly vnto the king 450 millions of maraudis.

The Duchie of Milan yeelds 300 millions of maraudis. Bourgondie and Flanders were wont to yeeld vnto the king of Spaine 700 millions, but now they are no more his, being giuen in dowrie to the *Infanta Isabella Clara Eugenia*, whenas she married with *Albertus* who was before a Cardinall.

The farme or reuenue of playing-cards which are sold in Spaine, and pay vnto the king for euery paire six pence, yeelds 20 millions.

The Serges or Ruff of Florence which is brought into Spain, and pay vnto the king for euery pece six ducats, yeelds yearly 10 millions.

Such was the reuenue of the king of Spaine in the yere 1578 before that he was king of Portugal; by reason whereof we will let the reuenues of the crowne of Portugal apart. All these reuenues and summes of maraudis being reduced into ducats of Spain, amount vnto the summe of 13 millions, and 48000 ducats, euery ducat being worth eleven roials of Spaine, and six shillings six pence of our English money.

The realmes comprehended vnder the name of Spaine, but more properly of Castile, are these which follow, Leon, Arragon, Castile, Nauarre, Granada, Tolledo, Valencia, Seuille, Cordoua, Murcia, Iacn, Gallicia, Gibraltar, and Cattalogia.

The realmes, provinces, and cities which assemble at the Estates of Spaine are, the realmes of Leon, Seuille, Tolledo, Granada, Cordoua, Murcia, and Iacn: the cities of Burgos, Salamanca, Segouia, Soria, Auila, Cuenca, Toro, Zamora, and Guadajara, all which are Bishopricks. Of those which haue no Bishops, or are not walled in, there are but two admitted to the Estates, and which haue voices, that is to say, Madrid and Valladolid. The other realmes, as Arragon, Nauarre, Valencia, and Cattalogia haue their Viceroies and Gouvernors apart, which command with the kings councill like to the Viceroy of Sicile and Naples, and the Gouvernor of Milan.

In Spaine they vse the words of cite and towne distinctly, and make a great difference betwixt the one and the other: for the cities in Spaine are those which serue for government to others, and which haue greater preheminencies and prerogatiues, and therefore they comprehend Archbishops, Bishops, and other gouernments. There are cities which enioy this title by a speciall priuiledge, although they be not great: and there

The total sum of the king of Spaines reuenues.

is great difference betwixt a citie and a towne, as well in authoritie as in other freedoms and immunities.

In cities, there are commonly gouernors, whom the Romans called Pretors, or gouernors of cities or provinces: and so one citie hath many townes and villages which are subiect vnto it, so as the townes are members to cities, for that the townes are subiect vnto cities, and villages vnto towns; seeing that in Spaine whenas there falls out any mutinie or reuolt in a province, the towns, and countrie people submit themselves to the defence of cities, in all accidents that may happen.

To make a towne a citie, they must haue more regard vnto the antiquitie, than to the greatnesse, for that there are many final cities, and great townes, such as, Medina del Campo, a very great towne; Saint Foy, a very little citie, Madrid, where the king doth sometimes keepe his court, a very great towne, Orihuela, a little citie, Carceres, a great towne, Alcantara, a little citie, Saintiren, Abrantes, Ceroual, and Oliuensa, great townes in Portugal without any titles of citie: there are also many final cities, as Guadix, Baela, Gardiagena, and others.

¶ The Reuenues of the crowne of Portugal.

The ordinarie reuenues of the crowne of Portugal do euery yeare passe a million and 200000 duckats: the reuenues of the knights of Portugal, whereof the king is at this day great maister, and to whom belong the Islands of Açores, Madera, Cape Verd, Saint Thomas, and of the Prouince, yeeld yearly 200000 duckats: the reuenues of the mine which belongs vnto the knights called of Christ, amounts yearly to 100000 duckats: the reuenues of spices and other things which comes from the East Indies, yeeld yearly 600000 duckats, that is to say, eightene tunne of gold. You must vnderstand that this is drawne from the customes and imposts of merchandise; for the other reuerues and fruits of the earth are easily consumed in the guard and defence thereof: wherefore the whole reuenues of the crowne of Portugal, and of the countries which are subiect vnto it, amounts to two millions of duckats.

¶ The wages and pensions of the officers, gentlemen, and other seruants of the king of Spaines household and court.

The great maister of the household, or lord Steward, hath for his yearely fee 3000 duckats.

Four other maisters of the household, either of which hath 1500 duckats a yeare. One and thirtie gentlemen seruants, the which haue eight roials a day a peece for their expenses.

Ten and twentie gentlemen of the kings house, either of which haue fix roials a day. Ten gentlemen of the chamber, and to euery one twelve roials a day.

Three keepers of the wardrobe, who haue charge of the apparrell and other moueables, to either of them fix roials a day.

Four keepers of the jewells, to the first, eleuen roials a day, and to the rest four.

Five painters, and to either four roials a day.

Four butlers, to the first, four roials a day, and to the rest two.

Four officers of the kitchen who haue the charge of salt meates, and to the two first, four roials a day a peece, and to the others two roials.

Three officers of the larder, to the first, four roials, and to the others two.

To the maister cooke, and his first assistant, four roials a day a peece, and to another two.

To the two boies of the kitchen a roiall a day a peece.

To the cooke of the first maister of the household, three roials a day.

To the porter of the kitchen and his assistant, two roials a day a peece.

Euery roiall is
fix pence stan-
ling.

To

To the maister feather-maker for himselfe, his assistants, and foure boies, foure hundred duckats a yeare wages.

To the kings chiefe tapestrie-man, foure royalls a day, and to five assistants of the tapestrie, two royalls a day a peece.

To the maister locksmith, three royalls a day, and to either of his two seruants, two royalls. To two phyfitions of the kings chamber, & to the phyfition for the household, three hundred duckats a yeare a peece.

To the chirurgeon, and to two barbers of the bodie, foure royalls a day a peece, and to the assistant to the barbers, three royalls a day.

To two apothecaries, three royalls a day a peece, and to their assistant, two royalls a day.

To the tayler, hosier, shoo-maker, imbroiderer, and skinner, fiftie duckats a yeare a peece.

To the goldsmith, seampster, and lander, fortie duckats a yeare a peece.

To two porters of the palace, foure royalls a day a peece.

To two vishers of the chamber, foure royalls a day a peece.

To fouen porters of the hall and chamber, three royalls a day a peece.

There are threecore and seuen groomes of the chamber, euery one of which hath twentie thousand maraudis yearly for his wages, the which makes fiftie three duckats, twentie souls, and foure deniers.

Euery five
soul is five
pence.

There are also twelve porters, which are called of the Cadenas, who are alwaies at the palace gate, who haue foure and twentie thousand maraudis for their yearely wages; which makes threecore and nine duckats, nine souls.

¶ Officers.

To the lieutenant of the maister of the household is giuen one hundred thousand maraudis a yeare for his wages, which are two hundred fixtie seuen duckats, foure royalls, and twelue maraudis.

He keeps the accounts, and provides for the charges of huntsmen, and to the household, and his yearely wages.

To him that carries the kings cross-bow, twentie thousand maraudis a yeare, which are fiftie three duckats, six and twentie maraudis.

To the chirurgeon of the household, twentie five thousand maraudis, which make threecore and foure duckats, fortie six souls and a halfe.

To the drawer of gold, fiftene thousand maraudis, which are fortie duckats, one soull, and a halfe.

To the glouer, twelue thousand maraudis, which are thirtie two duckats, foure souls, and a halfe.

To the treasurer or keeper, eleuen thousand maraudis, which comes to twentie nine duckats, twelue souls.

To the four butler and cross-bow-maker, six thousand maraudis a peece.

To the mulcters or moyle keepers of the kings house, that is, to the maister and his six assistants, three hundred thousand maraudis a yeare, which make eight hundred and nine duckats, seven souls, and six deniers.

To the chiefe keeper, and his eight assistants, five hundred thirtie foure duckats, foure souls, and a halfe.

¶ Guards of the kings bodie in his palace.

The Bourgondian guard.

To the captaine of the archers of the kings guard, a thousand duckats a yeare.

To the lieutenant of the company, five hundred duckats a yeare.

To the ensigne bearer, foure hundred duckats a yeare.

To the three archers, all gentlemen Bourgondians by nation, foure royalls a day a peece.

To the ensenager as much.

To the chaplain three royalls a day.

Bb ij

Guard

¶ Guard of the Germans.

To the captain of the German guard, a thousand ducats a year.

To the lieutenant, three hundred ducats.

To the largest of the guard, two hundred ducats.

To the phife, three score ducats a year.

To two drummes, a hundred and thirtie ducats a year a peece.

To a hundred Germans of the footguard, two royals a day a peece.

To the chaplaine, two royals a day.

To the chirurgion, ten thousand maraudis a year.

¶ Guard of the Spaniards.

To the captain of the footguard, a thousand ducats a year.

To the lieutenant, five hundred ducats a year.

To the largest of the guard, two hundred ducats.

To two drummes, a hundred and thirtie ducats a year a peece.

To the phife, three score ducats.

To four captains of corporals of footguard, three royals a day a peece.

To a hundred Spaniards, two royals a day a peece.

To a chaplaine two royals a day.

To a chirurgion, one royal a day.

To a phifition four royals a day.

¶ Guard of the French.

To the captain of the guard of the French, three royals a day a peece.

To two trumpeters, three royals a day a peece.

Ten harbingers, euerie one of which hath fiftie thousand maraudis a year wages, the

which is payed wherefoeuer the king keeps his court, heist or Madel, or elsewhere,

and this amounts to a hundred thirtie three ducats, thirtie thousand maraudis.

Fortie harbingers of waies, to euerie one thirtie thousand maraudis a year.

Three hundred gentlemen in ordinary of the king's house, euerie one of which hath four

tie thousand maraudis a year wages; for they that serue by quarters haue but foure

score ducats.

¶ Gentlemen of the chamber.

To the captain of the gentlemen that are in ordinary, three hundred thousand ma-

raudis a year, which makes eight hundred and thirtie ducats and halfe a royal.

To his lieutenant, one hundred and fiftie thousand maraudis.

To the ensigne bearer, a hundred thousand maraudis, which makes two hundred fixtie

seven ducats, two royals and five maraudis.

To a hundred gentlemen of the king's chamber, two royals a day a peece.

To a hundred gentlemen at armes of the guard, six royals a day a peece, and twelue when

of his maiestie doth march to the wars, or goes to any publicke feast or sport.

To the chaplaine of the companie, two royals a day.

To the paymaister, four royals a day.

¶ Gentlemen of the chamber.

To the captain of the gentlemen that are in ordinary, three hundred thousand ma-

raudis a year, which makes eight hundred and thirtie ducats and halfe a royal.

To his lieutenant, one hundred and fiftie thousand maraudis.

To the ensigne bearer, a hundred thousand maraudis, which makes two hundred fixtie

seven ducats, two royals and five maraudis.

To a hundred gentlemen of the king's chamber, two royals a day a peece.

To a hundred gentlemen at armes of the guard, six royals a day a peece, and twelue when

of his maiestie doth march to the wars, or goes to any publicke feast or sport.

To the chaplaine of the companie, two royals a day.

To the paymaister, four royals a day.

A Nineteene pages and a gouernour, with two thousand ducats a year.

To the gouernors affittant or deputie, one hundred ducats.

To a chaplaine, fourescore ducats.

To the pages scholémaister, two hundred ducats.

To their cooke, three score ducats.

To the musitians which teach the pages to daunce and play, eightie ducats a year.

To the maister that teacheth them to vault, fortie ducats.

To him that teacheth them their weapons, fiftie ducats.

¶ His Maiesties Chappell.

To the deane of the chappell, two thousand ducats a year.

To the head Almoner, one thousand ducats a year.

To the clark of the clofet, four royals a day.

To four chaplaines of the habit of faint James, one hundred and thirtie thousand

maraudis a year to either of them, which makes 347 ducats six royalls and 18 mara-

To two chaplaines of the order of Alcantara, and to two other chaplaines of the order of

Calatrava, the like pay.

To four and twentie chaplaines which serue in the chappell, fiftie thousand maraudis

a year a peece, which come to 133 ducats 38 soulz.

To the chief keeper of the vestrie, 150000 maraudis, which make foure hundred duc-

ats, fiftie eight soulz, nine deniers.

To four affittants to the keeper of the vestrie, and to two others which serue in the

said chappell, three royalls a day a peece.

To the Subalmoner, fiftene thousand maraudis, which are fortie ducats, one soulz,

nine deniers.

¶ Musitians.

To the maister of the musicke, 267 ducats, foure royalls, and five maraudis.

To the maister of the chappell, fiftie thousand maraudis.

To twelue quiersters, one hundred and fiftie thousand maraudis, which makes on chun-

dred thirtie three ducats, eight soulz, and it is paid vnto the maister of the said chil-

dren of the chappell.

To five and fortie singing men of the chappell, foure royalls a day a peece.

To a musitian that sings the base, the like summe.

To him that teacheth the children latine, to the organiste, and to him that markes the

notes, foure royalls a day a peece.

To the harbingers, fortie thousand maraudis, which makes 106 ducats, 50 soulz, 2 deniers.

To the keeper of the vestrie, and to the keeper of the chappell, thirtie thousand maraudis

a peece.

To him that tunes the organes and other instruments, fiftie thousand maraudis, which

are worth one hundred thirtie and three crownes, thirtie and eight soulz.

To two blowers of the organ, fiftene thousand maraudis.

To six violons and two cornets, foure royalls a day a peece.

To foure chaplaines which serue not in court, fortie thousand maraudis a peece, which

make one hundred and six ducats, fiftie soulz, nine deniers.

¶ The kings Quirrie or Stable.

To the maister of the horse, two thousand ducats a year.

To the chief quiersters, one hundred thousand maraudis a year a peece.

To four riders, the same pay, that is 267 ducats, foure royalls, five depiers.

To foure mace beares, or sergeants at armes, one hundred thousand maraudis a peece.

To fiftie kings at armes, fiftie thousand maraudis a peece.

away his first wife, who was daughter to the earle of Tancarville, being barren, & married Philip daughter to John of Burgundy, duke of Gueldres; he died in the year 1466, and left

Anthony duke of Calabria, Lorraine, and Bar, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

Claude of Lorraine, duke of Guise and Aumale, the most famous prince of his time for warre, who married Antoinette of Bourbon, daughter to Francis duke of Vendome.

Philip duke of Calabria, Lorraine, and Bar, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

Maria duke of Guise, who married first to the Duke of Orleans, & afterwards to the Duke of Longueville, & afterwards to James the first king of Scotland.

Charles duke of Calabria, Lorraine, and Bar, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

Charles duke of Guise, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

Charles duke of Calabria, Lorraine, and Bar, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

Charles duke of Guise, Marquis of Flandres, Count of Vandenscaeppe, & Armenton, who died in the year 1476, and left

DISCOURSE OF THE STATE OF THE LOW COUNTRIES NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF THE ARCHDUCKE ALBERT OF AVSTRIA.

The Contents.

1. **Of the Low Countries** were so called. 2. **The situation and limits, circuit and greatness.** 3. **The most famous rivers of the Low Countries, their springs and courses.** 4. **Division of the countie into seuentene Provinces, and how many townes and villages are in every Province.** 5. **How they have been united under one Lord, and reduced under the dominion of Spaine.** 6. **Donation of the Netherlands, made by Philip the Second, King of Spaine, to the Infanta his daughter, in favour of her marriage with the Archduke Albert.** 7. **How the Archduke and Infanta have obtained possession of the Low Countries by vertue of a procuracion from his future spouse the Infanta.** 8. **The countries which are at this day under the Archdukes, and the description of the towne beginning with Flawanders.** 9. **Description of the countie of Artois, and of the cities of most note.** 10. **Of Cambresis and the limits.** 11. **Of Haynault.** 12. **Of Namur.** 13. **Of Luxembourg.** 14. **Of Brabant.** 15. **The Low countries fit to breed castles.** 16. **The sea of the Low countries, with their commodities, and discommodities.** 17. **The fortifications, and the fort of Ardenne.** 18. **Disposition of the inhabitants of the Low countries, and how they love libertie.** 19. **Excellent painters in the Low countries: and who was the first mingled colours with oyle.** 20. **The princes revenues, whereunto they may be divided.** 21. **The forces consisting in forts, and an armie entertained in his garrisons.** 22. **The forme of government of the Low countries: of the princes three councill, and by what names the said councill governe themselves: of the commissioners sent into Provinces, and how they are called the Estates.** 23. **Of the religion of the Low countries, and of the united churches.** 24. **Archbishops and Bishops in the Low countries.** 25. **A catalogue of the Lords of Flawanders, their raigne and death.** 26. **Articles of the tract made in the year 1548, betwixt the Archdukes and the Estates of the united Provinces.**

Although that the affaires of this Estate have been heretofore many times very intricate & much confused, by reason of the diuers posses- sors which have enjoyed these Provinces, sometimes distindly, and sometimes altogether: yet I hope to make all plain, and to write it orderly and without obscuritie. For having first set downe in generall the limits, and circuit of all these countries, how they were divided into seuentene Provinces, how, and by whom they were under one Lord, and when, and by what means they came vnto the house of Austria, I afterwards come to set downe in particular, that which is at this present

the command of the most famous prince the Archdukes *Albert* of Austria, and *Isabella Clara Eugenia* sister to *Philip* the third, now king of Spaine, and by what means they came to the possession of the said countries: and on the other side I will represent that which the Estates of the united provinces do now hold. If I shall not herein content the reader's desire, as the least they oppose the difficultie of the enterprise, and the paine I have taken in writing of this relating that which I have seene my selfe, being in the countries during the discourse of others.

I. And the name of Low Germanie is so called, for that the manners, language, and customs of the inhabitants differ not much from the other Germanes. The name of Low is proper, for that this countrie is neerer to the sea, than the rest of Germanie; and the name of the higher, their fields are more flat and lie lower: they of the country call it *Flamand*, as they do also call it *Flanders* in a manner throughout the countrie, and so they are for all other for the power or beautie of that countrie in relation to the other parts of the great trafficke and ancient Faires of Bruges, whither merchants of all sorts come from all parts, for that this countrie being neerer vnto France, Spaine, Italie, and England, the name was better knowne and more divulged.

II. But leauing this curiositie, which I hold superfluous, as all others that are of the like nature the Low Countries hath for her bounds vpon the North side, the Ocean, towards the South, *Lorraine* and *Champagne*, vpon the East, the riuers of *Meuse* and *Rhein*; and to the West, the sea, and that part of *Artois* which ioines with *Picardie*. All this countrie hath in circuit according vnto *Quicheur* kin, a thousand Italian miles, or three hundred and three leagues of Flaunders; and it contains seven degrees and a halfe of longitude, that is to say, from the two and twentieth degree and a halfe vnto the thirtieth: But as for the latitude, it comprehends five degrees, that is to say, from the eight and fourth degree and a halfe, vnto the three and thirtieth and a halfe: by reason whereof, the Low Countrie is set betwixt the middle of the fteenth Climax, and the beginning of the sixteenth; and in this place the day in Summer is three quarters of an houre, for in the middle of the sixteenth climax the longest day is but sixteen houre, and in the beginning of the nineteenth is sixteen houre and three quarters. And this countrie contains all the countreys, which are betwixt the sixteenth and the one and twentieth.

III. The principall riuers of these provinces are the *Rhein*, *Meuse*, *Ecaud*, and *Ems*: the others are *Moselle*, *Sambre*, *Dele*, *Demere*, *Noche*, *Ruer*, *Beicel*, *Niers*, *Scarpe*, *Denle*, *Haynault*, and others: the greatest is the *Rhein*, whereof we will speake in our discourse of Germanie. For the *Meuse* it comes from Mount *Vaugez*, not far from the springs of *Seine* and *Marne*, and running towards the North it passeth by Saint Thibaud, where it begins to be navigable; from thence it runneth to *Verdun*, *Molon* and *Mezières*; and then turning towards the North-east, it passeth by *Charlemont*, *Bouines*, *Dinan*, and *Namur*; and then receiving *Sambre*, it goes to *Stoomen*, *Ruremond*, and *Mentlo*, where turning towards the West it runneth by the towne of *Chick*, *Grane*, *Raumben*, and *Meghen*: then receiving a part of *Rhein* at the towne of *Herweide*, and giving all of her waters, the mingles with the *Waller*; and then presently these two riuers retaining their own names, diuide themselves, and run apart to *Laufstein*, where they compass the Island of *Bo*, and then they meet againe, and change their names for that of *Merou*; so passing along the mountain to *Wotton* and *Gorkon*, they grow very great at *Dordrecht*, where habiting in the Island of *Flisland*, the *Meuse* takes her owne course againe, and keeping the North-west, she passeth *Roumden*, and *Uterdingue*, she falls into the sea nere vnto *Bird* and *Wolff*, whence as for a long time the waters continued.

IV. The *Sambre* it comes out of *Vennedits* uere vnto the Abbey of Saint Marthe, then passing by *Catelet* and *Beaurevoir*, it goes to *Cambray*: running through the countie of *Haynault*, it builth the towne of *Valenciennes*; and running on towards the towne of *Mayne*, it passeth by *Conde*, then being

passed by *Scapae*, it runs by *Saint Amand*, and from thence turning towards the North, it passeth by *Tournay*, *Audenard*, and *Gand*, where it receives the riuers of *Dele*, and some other waters: from thence it turnes serpent-wile to *Denremonde*, and then passing the river of *Deire*, it passeth to *Rupelmonde*, and there receives the river of *Dele*, and soone after *Dele*: being thus growne great, it goes and wasteth the river of *Meuse*, and makes a good and safeport for shipping; then running on and diuiding itselfe into two branches, it diuides *Brabant* and *Flanders* from *Zeland*; for that on the left hand towards the South, it follows the banks of *Flanders*, & taking the name is called the *Hont*, and from thence runs into the Western sea by *Zuytbed*, and *Vlachie*; and on the right hand, having left the confines of *Brabant*, continuing her course, and keeping the old channell, she falls into the Ocean by the banks of the Island of *Ecaud*. To conclude, this river flowes vp as farre as *Gand*; which is thirtie miles, accounting the crooked turnings. As for the rest, I referre the curiositie of the reading of Geographers, with whom (in my opinion) I haue bene too

The Low countie contrines seuenteen Provinces, that is to say, *four* duchies, *Brabant*, *Limbourg*, *Luxembourg*, and *Guelde*; *eight* earledomes, *Holland*, *Zeland*, *Flamand*, *Artois*, *Haynault*, *Namur*, *Zutphen*, and the *Marquisat* of the sacred Empire: and *seuerall* lordships, that is, *Macklin*, *Vtrecht*, *Frisland*, *Ouerijssel*, and *Groningue*. They are called seuenteen Provinces, for that they haue giuen 17 miles to prince, and there can be giuen no other reason of this appellation, although there be more provinces. They are not all called to their generall assemblies, neither doe they giue their voice nor contribute according to this order in generall impositions: for the *Marquisat* of the sacred Empire of *Antuerpe* is not numbered among the provinces: The duchies of *Limbourg*, with *Walkenbourg* and *Dalem*, go vnder *Brabant*: *Tournay* and *Artois* with *Lille*, *Douay*, and *Orchies*, are not commonly named among the seuenteen provinces, and yet they both contribute, either as a province, and so doe *Valenciennes* and *Orient*. This countrie, about the year 1550, in the time of the Emperour *Charles*, did graunt vnto the Emperour, according to his demand, the summe of thirtie months, the which they called *Nouentale*. *Limbourg*, *Luxembourg*, *Artois*, and *Groningue*, were not taxed for this imposition, being frontier countries, and so were not counted; so as there were none but these thirtie provinces and towne of *Antuerpe*, that is to say, *Brabant*, *Flanders*, *Artois*, *Haynault*, *Valenciennes*, *Lille*, *Orchies*, *Holland*, *Zeland*, *Namur*, *Tournay*, *Tournais*, *Macklin*, & *Vtrecht*; yet that the others are not excluded in their conuocations and generall assemblies.

Euerie Florin
is two shillings

There are in this countrie of the Netherlands, about two hundred walled cities, one hundred and fiftie places which had the jurisdiction and priuiledge of a burgh, and about a thousand villages: but during their late long wars, they haue bene so much impoverished, that I will set downe the number in general, for how many townes and villages are in euerie province.

How many Townes and Villages are in euerie Province of the Low Countries.

Province	Townes	Villages
Brabant	26	700
Limbourg	23	1100
Luxembourg	5	125
Guelde	24	300
Holland	26	1000
Zeland	23	1100
Flamand	26	1000
Artois	23	1100
Haynault	26	1000
Namur	23	1100
Zutphen	26	1000
Macklin	23	1100
Vtrecht	26	1000
Frisland	23	1100
Ouerijssel	26	1000
Groningue	23	1100

in the eight Earldomes	HOLLAND, 23.	400.
	ZELAND, 10.	101.
	FLANDERS, 35.	1178.
	ARTOIS, 12.	754.
	HAYNAULT, 24.	950.
	NAMUR, 4.	184.
	THE MARQUISAT.	
	GOVERNMENT, 5.	70.
	FRISLAND, 11.	345.
	OVERFLAND, 1.	101.
	GUERINOV, 1.	145.
	GUERINOV, 1.	9.

1111

Before the birth of Christ, the Romans and *Julius Caesar* comprehended this countie under Gauls Belgice, so called, for that the inhabitants being haughtie and hardie would not endure the losse of their libertie, customes, and priviledges: so as by the report of *Caesar* they were the most valiant people of all Gauls: They had then divers names, and they were called Germans, Bataves, Frisons, Aduatices, Menapiens, Atrebatens, Nervins, Morins, &c. The Germans are at this day the Allemans. The Bataves are the Hollanders, and part of Gueldres: the Frisons are they of Friseland: the Aduatices they of Antwerp: the Menapiens part of Gueldres, and part of Cleues: the Atrebatens they of Arras, and thereabouts: The Nervins they of Toornay: the Morins they of Flanders, &c. But this countie being divided into provinces, they have received certaine lords as fountaines, but with certaine conditions, having a care they should not grow too mightie, lest they should be brought into subjection: and therefore they loved them best when they were but young. These provinces living thus in peace with their lords, and banding together in case of need, they did many times performe great deeds of armes, as waving against the Romans as other nations, yea against the Turkes and Sarrazins, whereof they made good proof under the conduct of *Godfrey* of Bouillon, and other kings of Hierusalem: also under *Balthazar* earle of Flanders, who won the empire of Constantinople: and in many such like enterprises, as may be seene in their Chronicles and Histories, so as they had but little cause to be esteemed and feared. Finally, it is a nation of whom that famous Historiographer *Cicero* hath written as followeth, *The Gauls did fight for their libertie, the Germans for bootie, but the Hollanders for glorie and honour.* And therefore this Roman Emperour made choise of them for their guards, holding them to be faithful and more valiant than all the people of the world.

Although that all these provinces of the Low Countries have been heretofore divers times under different princes, yet in the end, they have been reduced under foure dukes of Bourgondie, then under the Archdukes of Austria, and in the end, under one Lord, that is to say, under the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, and his sonne *Philip* king of Spaine: it will be fit to make a briefe repetition, how, when, and by what manner they have been reduced vnder these last, and that it may remaine for a perpetuall memorie, that the Spaniards are come to the government of these Low Countries, not to governe them as their owne subjects, that is to say, as being subiect to their lawes, but as a free people observing their owne lawes and priviledges.

Charles the fifth being in his fathers right earle of Flanders, Nevers, Rethel, Salines, Antwerp, and Moulins, and by his mother, earle of Bourgondie & Artois, had one only daughter, called *Isabelle*, whom he had by his wife *Marguerite* daughter to *John* 3 duke of Brabant. This daughter was married at Gand, in the yere 1369, to *Philip* of Valois, furnished the Hardie, who was at that time duke of Bourgondie, and the youngest sonne of the French king: of that was borne *John*, called, Without feare, earle of Flanders, Bourgondie, Artois &c. This *John* of Valois in the yere 1415 married with *Marguerite* daughter

A daughter to the Earle of Haynault, Holland, Zeland, and Friseland, and was murdered at Montreuil in France, by the Dolphins instigation, in the yere 1419, the nineteenth of September, being eight and fortie yeeres old, and having raised fiftenth his only sonne, *Philip* the Good, succeeded in his place at the age of three and twentie yeeres, being duke of Bourgondie, Earle of Flaunders, Artois, and Bourgondie, Palatine, Marquis of the sacred Empire, and Lord of Salines and Moulins. Moreover in the yere 1429, by the death of *Dideric* Earle of Namur, he succeeded in the said Earldome of Namur, having first bought it and by the death of *Philip* duke of Brabant, who died without children, he had in the yere 1430 the Duchies of Lorraine, Brabant, and Limbourg; and also by the death of *Jacoba* or *Isabelle* countesse of Holland &c. his neece, he had in the yere 1436, the Earldomes of Haynault, Holland, Zeland, and Friseland; in the yere 1443 his aunt gave him the Duchie of Luxembourg, first as tutor, and then as lord. He was the first of the house of Bourgondie that did institut the order of the Golden Fleece at Bruges in Flaunders, when as he married *Isabelle* of Portugal: he died at Bruges in the yere 1467, being twentie and seven yeeres old, having reigned eight and fortie yeeres. He left for heire to all these countries one only sonne, whose name was *Charles* of Valois or the Warrior, who succeeded his father in the government, being 34 yeeres old: he bought the duchie of Gueldres and the countie of Zutphen of *Arnold* of Egmond for nine and twentie thousand crownes, and a yearly pension, who dying confirmed the same sale by a testament, making duke *Charles* his heire, and disinheriting his sonne *Adolph*, for that he rebelled against him, and detained him long in cruell captivitie: this duke tooke possession of the countie of Gueldres, in the yere 1473; he fought to winne all the provinces of the Netherlands into a realme, promising to that end to give his only daughter in marriage to *Maximilian* sonne to the Emperor *Fredericke* the third, the which he would have called the realme of Bourgondie, for that Bourgondie had been a realme in former times: but for that every province was soveraigne, and had distinct priviledges, rights, and revenues, yea different weights and measures, they would never yeeld thereto unless their princes power had been limited, so as this dessein took no successe. This brave warriour was slain before Nancy, in the yere 1477 the fift of January, being trained by an Italian Earle called *Campobasso*, who served him, at the instigation of *Levis* the eleventh, having first lost three batailles to the Swisses, and Lorrainers: he was 44 yeeres old, and left one only daughter called *Mary* of Valois, being eighteen yeeres old, who married with *Maximilian* of Austria, who recovered that from the French king, which he had taken from his wife: he restored the order of the Golden Fleece, which had been much neglected: they had two children; one sonne called *Philip*, and *Marguerite* their daughter. *Mary* of Bourgondie, the fift yere of her marriage, fell from a horse and dyed with that fall. *Maximilian* governed these countries for a time in favor of his sonne *Philip*, but with no good intent, for he sought to alienate and separat from the Low Countries the provinces of Brabant, Haynault, Holland, and Friseland, to give them to his father *Fredericke* the Emperor, doing many things in prejudice of those countries. In the yere 1492, his sonne *Philip* was acknowledged for prince throughout all the Netherlands, and was confirmed hereditarie lord thereof. In the yere 1496 he married the lady *Jane* of Spaine in the towne of Liege in Brabant; so as the Low Countries being before united together by many marriages, are in the end come to this marriage to the house of Spaine, and although they seeme to have attained thereby a perfect prosperitie, yet by this marriage they are fallen into a long and tedious war, yea into civile wars and combustion, to the great ruine and prejudice of the said countries. So by this means the severall provinces were made subiect to the government of the king of Spaine.

Philip the second, king of Spaine, finding his strength to decay, and his health to improve, desirous to make a final conclusion of the resolution which he had taken to give his daughter *Donna* *Isabella* in marriage to the Archduke *Albert* his nephew (notwithstanding that he enjoyed great ecclesiasticall dignities, and especially that rich Archduke of Toledo) caused prince *Philip* his only sonne, being about twentie yeeres of age, to come into his presence in the towne of Madrid the fixth of May, being accompa-

by Don *Gomes* of Auila, marquis of Vellada, gouernour and chiefe steward to the
 Prince *Philip*, Don *Christophor de Mors* earle of Castel-Rodrigo, great commaunder
 Alcantara; Don *Iohn* of Idiagues, great commaunder of Leon, all three counsellors
 State; and maister *Nicholas Damani* knight, counsellor president and chauncellour of
 Arabant; with *Lalo* secretarie for the Low Countries, and no more. Whereas the conclu-
 sion of the cession and transfation of the Low Countries made by the king vnto his said
 daughter was read, signed, past, and sealed, being in the French tongue as followeth.
Philip by the grace of God &c. To all present, or to come, that shall see or read these
 letters, greeting. As we haue found it fit, as well for the generall good of Christendome
 as of our Low Countries, no longer to defer the marriage of our most deare and welbe-
 loved eldest daughter the *Infanta Isabella Clara Eugenia*: and the more inclining thereun-
 to for the preferuation of our Houle, as for certaine other good respects: in considerati-
 on also of the good affection which we beare vnto our most deere and welbeloued bro-
 ther, cousin and nephew the Archduke *Albert*, gouernour and capitaine general for vs in
 our Low Countries and Bourgondie, hauing taken notice of his person, and chusing him
 for future husband to our eldest daughter; as well with the consent of our holy father
 the Pope, who hath thereupon granted his dispensation, as also hauing imparted it to the
 most high, most excellent, and most mightie prince our deere and welbeloued brother,
 cousin, and nephew *Rodolphe*, the second of that name, Emperour of the Romanes, and
 also to our most deere & welbeloued good filter the Emperesse his mother. Which con-
 sidered, and to the end that our said daughter may (as it is fit) haue meanes according to
 her graces, vertues and merits; yea and for our parts to make knowne the great loue and
 affection which we haue alwaies borne to our said Low Countries and Bourgondie:
 We haue resolved to transport and giue to our said daughter (in fauour of the said mari-
 age) our Low Countries, and all that depends thereon, in manner and forme as shall be
 hereafter specified: and that by the meanes and interuention, will, and consent of our
 most deere and welbeloued good and onely sonne and heire prince *Philip*, according to
 the aduertisements which haue bene giuen by vs, and our said sonne, vnto the chiefe
 lords and knights of our Order, Consuls, and Estates of our said Low Countries, being
 vnder our obedience, and also to them of our countrie and countie of Bourgondie: who
 haue testified and made knowne by their answer, the ioy and content which they had of
 this our fauourable resolution, the which they confesse to be necessarie for the good of
 our said Low Countries. And this is the true meanes to attaine to a good peace and uni-
 on, to be freed from that painefull war wherewith they haue bene afflicted for so many
 yeares, which peace and rest we haue alwaies wished them: considering also (the which
 is notorious to the world) that the greatest happinesse that may come vnto a countie, is
 to see it selfe gouerned by the eye and presence of their naturall lord and prince. God is a
 witnesse of the care and paine we haue often had, that we could not do that in person
 of Spaine, had not tied vs to continue, and make our residence there, and not to absent
 our selues, as we are yet bound at this present. And although that by the age of the
 prince our sonne, it seemes that it would be more fit and conuenient now then at our first
 yoiaage, yet the will and pleasure of the good God hath bene such, hauing giuen vs so
 many realmes and prouinces, in which there neuer want affaires of great importance, by
 reason whereof his presence is also necessarie here: whereupon we haue found it expe-
 dient to take this good resolution, for that we would not abandon our Low Countries to
 those inconueniences, wherein they haue bene formerly; adding thereunto the reasons
 of a portion which we are to giue vnto our daughter the *Infanta* according to her me-
 rit, and the greatnesse of her birth: transferring them vnto her in particular, for that af-
 ter our said sonne the prince (whom God preserve many yeares, making him to pro-
 sper in his reigne) our said eldest daughter is the first and next of blood: and that with the
 consent of our said sonne, he may be presently admitted thereunto; hauing chosen these
 meanes vpon hope that thereby our said Low Countries shal recouer their former glory
 and prosperitie, which they were wont to enioy.

We

We therefore make it known, that desiring to put in effect that which we haue so ma-
 nely resolved; hearing the voluntarie consent which our said sonne the prince hath so
 freely giuen for his part, and knowing the submissions wherunto our said countries
 haue conformed themselves according to our intention: We haue resolved to giue and
 transport vnto our said daughter the *Infanta*, in aduancement of the said marriage, all our
 said Low Countries, and Bourgondie, in manner and forme, and with the conditions
 hereafter mentioned.

The first condition is, and not otherwise, That the said *Infanta* our daughter shall
 ioyne in marriage with the Archduke *Albert*, considering the dispensation which hath
 bene granted by our holie father the Pope to that end: and that by way of donation,
 or gift, he receiue our said Low Countries, and countie of Bourgondie. And in case the
 said marriage shall be hindered by any occasion whatsoever, this present donation or ces-
 sion shall be void and take no effect: in which case we doe presently reuoke it, and make
 it void.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That the children and successors of the
 same marriage, be they males or females lawfully begotten, and not vnlawfull, although
 were by a subsequent marriage, the elder preceeding the younger, and the male the fe-
 male; shall from hand to hand be heires in the same degree of all the said prouinces
 jointly, without any diuision, or distraction, or dismembering thereof: declaring that
 the eldest sonne, or daughter, after the death of the father, shall be preferred before the
 widdes, or any other of the collateral line.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That in case (which God forbid) there be
 neither sonne nor daughter of this marriage; or that they die after the death of the Arch-
 duke *Albert*, or of our daughter the *Infanta*, the said donation, cession, and transport, shall
 be void and of no force: In which case if our said daughter the *Infanta* shall remaine a
 widow, the lawfull portion by the father-side, and the donation by the mother-side, such
 as may be fitting and belonging to her, shall follow; besides that which we, or our sonne
 the prince, for the loue we beare vnto her, shall giue her. And if the said Archduke *Al-
 bert* (our good cousin) shall suruiue the said *Infanta*, he shall remaine gouernour of the
 said Low Countries, for, and in the name of the Prince Proprietarie to whom they shall
 be denoted.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That all the descendants of this marriage,
 males and females failing, so as not any one should remaine of them that are called to
 these states, in that case they shall all returne vnto the king of Spaine, which shall be de-
 cended from vs; and according to this donation and cession, in that case we make him
 presently donatorie, as being giuen vnto him.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That our said daughter the *Infanta*, nor
 any other called to the said succession, shall not for any cause whatsoever diuide, or dis-
 member the said countries, neither giue, nor exchange, without our consent, and of those
 which shall be our heires and successors in these realmes.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That whosoever shal be prince or ladie
 of the said Low Countries, shal marrie with the king of Spaine, or with the prince his son,
 who shall be then liuing, with a former dispensation, if need shall require: and if then
 he shall haue no will nor power to consummat the said marriage, in that case the said
 ladie shall not take any other husband, nor meddle with any donation, without our ad-
 uance consent, and of our heires and successors in our said realmes of Spaine, which
 shall be giuen from vs: and in case of contrauention, all that hath bene giuen and gran-
 ted, shall returne, as if this donation, cession, and transport, had neuer bene made.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That all and euerie prince and lord of the
 said countries shall be bound to marrie their sonnes and daughters by our aduise and
 consent, and of those that shall be our heires and successors kings of Spaine.

Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That neither our said daughter the *Infanta*,
 nor her husband, nor any of their successors, to whom the said countries shall fall, shall
 in any sort negotiat or trafficke to the East or West Indies, nor send any ships vpon

any

any colour or pretext whatsoever, vpon paine of forfeiture of the said countries, in case A
of contravention: And if any subjects of the said countries shall presume to go contra-
rie to this defence, the lords of the said countries shall punish them by confiscation of
goods, and other grievous punishments, yea by death.

9 Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, That if the said Archduke Albert (our
good cousin) shall survive our daughter the Infanta, leaving either sonnes or daughters,
he shall have the gouernement of that sonne or daughter, with the gouernement of their
estates, as if our said daughter the Infanta were yet liuing. And moreover, our said
son the Archduke shall enjoy all the said countries during his life, entertaining the said
children according to their qualities, giuing vnto the eldest sonne, or daughter, the du-
chic of Luxembourg, and the countie of Chiny, which they should enjoy during their
fathers life: after whose death that child shall haue all, as heire generall: being here ex-
pressly declared, that this clause of Enjoying it during life, shall be onely vnderstood in fa-
uour of our said good cousin the Archduke Albert, without drawing it into consequence,
to the end that none of his successors may vige any example, nor pretend any right in the
like case.

10 Item, vpon condition, and not otherwise, as being the principall and greatest bond
of all others, That all the children and descendants of the said marriage, shall follow the
holie religion which doth now shine in them, and shall liue and die in our holie Catho-
like faith, as the holie Church of Rome doth teach; and that before they take possession
of the said Low Countries, they shall take the oath which followeth. And in case (which
God forbid) that any of the said descendants shall decline from the said religion, and
fall into heresie, after that our holie father the Pope hath so pronounced them, they shall
be deprived of the administration, possession, and propriety of the said prouinces, and
their vassals and subjects freed from their obedience; but they shall receive the next Ca-
tholike kinsman of the same descent, who shall succeed him that is thus strayed from the
faith, being reputed for a dead man.

*Ego iuro ad Sancta Dei Evangelia quod semper ad extremum vitam spiritum sanctum
fidem Catholicam, quam tenet, docet, & praeedicat, Sancta Catholica, & Apostolica Ecclesia Ro-
mana (Communium Ecclesiarum mater & magistra) constantiter professabor, & fideliter firmiter
credam, & veraciter tenebo: atque eam a meis subditis teneri, doceri, & praedicari (quantum in
meum curabo. Sic me Deus adiuvet, & haec Sancta Dei Evangelia.*

11 Item, vpon condition, and for the greater assurance and confirmation of the peace,
loue, and correspondence, which should be betwixt the king and his realmes, Our des-
cendants and successors, and the princes and lords of those countries, our successors also
and descendants, euery one of them that in future times shall come vnto the possession
and command of the said Low Countries, and Bourgondie, shall approue and ratifie
whatsoever is contained in this Article.

12 And for that our intencion and will is, that the said conditions shall take full effect,
We do giue, graunt, quit, transport, and renounce, in the best manner and forme that
may be by law, and that no incompatibilitie shall prejudice that which is compatible,
necessarie, and profitable to the said Infanta, Isabella Clara Eugenia, our most deare and
welbeloued eldest daughter, all our Low Countries, and euery prouince thereof,
with the countries and countie of Bourgondie, comprehending therein that of Cara-
lois, the duchies, principalities, marquissats, and iorts, which are in our Low Countries,
and Bourgondie, together with all the regalities, fees, homages, rights of patronage,
revenues, demaines, confiscations, and fines, with all sorts of iurisdiccions, rights,
and actions, which we might pretend by reason of our Low Countries and Bourgondie,
as also all preeminences, prerogatiues, priuiledges, exemptions, guards, protections, li-
berties, appeals, and all other kind of soveraigntie whatsoever, or howsoever they may
belong vnto vs, either by patrimonie or otherwise, vpon what title soeuer: to haue full
possession, as we haue enjoyed them, without exception: vpon condition notwithstanding
that they shall inuolubly observe all and euery the conditions aboue mentioned,
and the pragmatic made by the deceased, of immortal memorie, the Emperour my
lord

A lord and father, who past into glorie in November 1549, touching the vnion of the said
Low Countries, and not consenting to any diuision or dismembred thereof, for any
cause whatsoever.

13 And it is our intencion, as we do hereby declare & expressly ordaine, That in regard
of the donation, cession, and transport, our said daughter the Infanta, and her future hus-
band the Archduke Albert, shall be bound to pay and discharge all debts, obligations, and
contracts made by vs, or in our name, or by his deceased imperiall maiestie, vpon the pa-
trimonie and demaines of the said Low Countries, and the countie of Bourgondie:
and they shall be in like manner bound to discharge all rents, pensions for life, and al-
l other gifts, recompences, and rewards, which his said imperiall maiestie, we, or our prede-
cessors haue giuen, assigned, and granted to any persons whatsoever.

And so we do make, create, and name by these presents our said daughter the Infanta, prin-
cess and lady of the said Low Countries, and countie of Bourgondie and Charolois.

Moreover we do grant vnto our said daughter, That besides the particular titles of eue-
ry of the said prouinces of the Low Countries, and the countie of Bourgondie, she may
waite and intitle herselfe Duchesse of Bourgondie, notwithstanding that we haue refer-
red (so long as we shall please) for vs, and for the prince our sonne, the said title of
Duke of Bourgondie, with all the rights that may belong thereunto, together with the
soveraigntie of our order of the Golden Flece, whereof we retainne a power to dis-
pose hereafter, as we shall thinke fit: we do therefore consent, agree, and giue full abso-
lute and irrevocable power to our said daughter the Infanta, of our owne priuat autho-
ritie, without any further request or consent, either by her selfe, or by her deputies sent to
her future husband, to take full and absolute possession, of all the said Low Countries,
countie of Bourgondie and Charolois: and to this end, to assemble the generall Estates
of the said countries, or the particular Estates of euery prouince, or otherwise any other
course that shall be thought fit for this donation, cession, and transport: to signifye it, and
to take the oath due to the Estates and subjects of the said countries, and to require the
institute of euery peece and seigneurie where it shall be needfull: as also to receive an
oath from them, to bind them to all that, whereunto they were reciprocally bound by
precedent oaths. And vntill that our daughter shall take, or cause to be taken in her name
the reall possession of the said Low Countries and countie of Bourgondie, and Charo-
lois, after the same manner that is set downe by these patters, We do constitute our
selves possessors thereof, in the name and behalfe of our said daughter.

In witness whereof, We will and ordaine that the said Letters Patents shall be deliue-
red vnto her consenting and giuing full power to our daughter the Infanta, to retainne,
admit, and place in the said Low Countries and Bourgondie, Gouernours, Iudges, and
Iustices, as well for the preseruacion and defence thereof, as for the administration of ju-
stice and policie; and for the receipt of the revenues, or otherwise: and also to do euery
thing that a true princeesse and lady of the propertie of the said countries, may by law,
and according to the customes doe, and as we haue and might haue done, alwaies ob-
seruing the conditions aboue mentioned: to which effect we haue quit, absolute, and dis-
charged, and do quit, absolute, and discharge, by these presents, all Bishops, Abbots, Pre-
bendaries, and other Churchmen, Dukes, Princes, Marquisses, Earles, Barons, Gouernours,
Heralds, Captaines of Countries, Townes, Courts, Presidents, Counsellors, Chanc-
lers, accountants, and other Iustices, Captaines, men of war, and Souldiers of foot
and other, their Lieutenants, Knights, Esquires, and Vassalls, Magistrates, Bourgeses, In-
habitants of good townes, borroughes, freedomes, and villages, and all and euery the
subjects of our said Low Countries, and countie of Bourgondie, and Charolois, of the
oath of fidelitie, homage, promise and bond which they owe vnto vs as their naturall
prince, and soveraigne lord. We will, ordaine, and expressly command, that they shall
know and accept the said Infanta our daughter for their true princeesse and lady; and
take the oath of fealitie, homage, promise, and bond, according to the accustomed man-
ner, and the nature of the countries, places, fees, and seigneuries: and moreover, that
they shall do vnto her, and her future husband, all honor, reuerence, affection, obedience, and
fidelitie

politic and service, as good and loiall subjects are bound to their lawfull prince and na-
tural lord, as vnto this day they have done vnto vs. And supplying all and euery defect
and omission, as well in law as fact, which might haue bene omitted in this present
donation, cession, and transport, and which might well haue bene inserted: of our owne
motion, certain knowledge, and full and absolute regal power, We haue and do derogate
to all lawes, constitutions, and customes, which may contradict these presents; for such is
our pleasure. And to the end that whatsoever hath bene spoken, may be for euer firme
and stable, We haue signed these presents with our hand, & set too our great seale: com-
manding that it shall be registred in all and euery of our priuie counsellors, and chamber
of accompts. Given in our towne of Madrid, in our realme of Castille, the sixt of May
1598, of our realmes of Naples and Ierusalem the five and fortieth, of Castille, Arragon,
Sicile, and others, the foure and fortieth, and of Portugall the nineteenth. Signed, *Philip*,
And vnderneath, By the king, *A Laleo*.

This resignation of the Low Countries, was ratified also by the letters patents of
prince *Philip* the third of that name, now king of Spaine, as followeth.

Philip by the grace of God, prince, sonne and only heire of the realmes, countries, and
signories of king *Philip* the second of that name, my lord and father: to all present and
to come, greeting. Whereas my said lord and father hath taken a resolution to marrie the
lady *Infanta Isabella Clara Eugenia* our most deare and welbeloued good sister, to the
Archduke *Albert* our good vncle and cousin; and that thereupon his Catholike mai-
esty hath resolved, with our consent, being moued therunto, for certaine great reasons,
and respects of the common good, yea for the generall quiet of Christendome, and the
particular peace of the Low Countries; to the end that our said sister may be advanced
according to her qualitie and great merits; to giue vnto her the said Low Countries, and
countie of Bourgondie, in the same manner and forme as it hath bene past; as it ap-
peares by the letters patents which my said lord and father hath caused to be dispatched,
signed with his hand, and sealed with his great seale.

We make it knowen, That hauing particularly vnderstood euery point thereof, con-
sidering the publicke good which may thereby redound to Christendome, and for the
singular loue which we owe vnto our good sister the *Infanta* in regard of her graces and
great merits, We commaund allow, and by these presents hold it good, notwithstanding
any prejudice which may hereafter grow thereby vnto vs, or to our successors; and for
the same reasons We consent, and are content by these presents, that the said Low Coun-
tries, and the countie of Bourgondie and Charolois, shall be giuen and transported vnto
our good sister, the *Infanta*, as my said lord and father hath done. And to the end it may
subsist the better, for the greater assurance, and strengthening of that which his maiesty
hath decreed in fauour, and for the aduancement of our good sister; We dispose and or-
daine, as well as it is needfull by these presents, in her fauour, and in the same forme and
manner, as our owne free will, without any force, constraint, falshood, deceit, or any
other respect, nor fatherly reuerence, feare, error, nor any perswasion, our will and intent
on being that the said countries shall belong vnto our sister the *Infanta Isabella Clara Eu-
genia*, and to her successors; according to the disposition of the king my lord and father:
and to the end it may take full effect, and remaine for euer firme and stable, We haue,
and do renounce by these presents, in fauour of our said sister, for vs and our successors, all
benefits, which we or they may by law pretend to contradict, or frustrate these presents:
as it is by the law, *De restitutione in integrum*; to the which we haue, and do hereby re-
nounce. For our resolute, and determinat will is, that nothing whatsoever shall be of
force, which shall this donation, cession, and transport which hath bene made of the said
Low Countries.

In whereof We haue giuen our faith, & sworn vpon the holy Euangell, which We
haue toucht with our hand to keepe, obserue, maintaine, and accomplish, and to cause to
be kept, obserued, maintained, and punctually accomplished, all that hath bene said,
without any excuse or exception made by vs, or any of ours: the which We promise in
the name of a prince; and that We will giue all aid and assistance, for the effecting and
accom-

A accomplishing of that which hath bin said: being as We haue declared our sincere and
determinat will. In witness whereof, We haue caused these present letters patents to be
made, the which We haue signed with our own hand, and caused it to be signed by the
secretarie of State to the king my Lord and father, for the affaires of the Low Countries
and Bourgondie: and caused it to be sealed with the great seale of his maiesties armes,
hanging vpon laces of gold. There being present as witnesses *D. Gomes de Anila*, Mar-
quis of Velada, our gouernour and high steward of our household: *D. Christopher de Mora*,
cousin of Castel Rodrigo, great commander of Alcantara, gentleman of his maiesties
chamber, and butler to our person: *D. Iohn of Idiagues*, great commander of Leon,
all three Counsellors of State, and maister *Nicholas Amant*, knight also, and Councel-
lor of State, keeper of his maiesties seales for the affaires of the Low Countries, and
Bourgondie, and Chauncellor of the duchie of Brabant. Given in the towne of Ma-
drid, in the realme of Castille, the sixt of May 1598. Signed *Philip*. And vnderneath,
By commaundement from my Lord the prince, *A Laleo*.

These two letters patents of Resignation from the king, and agreation from the
prince, were both sealed with one seale in red wax, and laces of gold.

These instruments being thus read, signed, and sealed, autentically, the prince of
Spaine arose, and went and kist his fathers hands, thanking him for the loue he bare vnto
his sister: then addressing himselfe vnto his said sister, he did congratulat the good which
she had receiued that day: who rising, went and kisted the king her fathers hands, humbly
thanking him for his bountie; as also, she gaue thanks vnto the prince her brother.
Whereupon the assemblie being dismissed, the rest of the day, and night, was spent ioy-
fully in Court, and had bin more, if the kings indisposition (who began to grow weake)
had not hindered it.

Two dayes after, which was the eighth of May, the Empreffe (who was the kings sister,
and mother to the Archduke *Albert*) came to court, being accompanied by the Em-
bassadour of the Emperour her sonne, by the Marquis of Velada, *D. Christopher de Mora*,
D. Iohn Idiagues, and others, whereas the marriage treated of, was confirmed: the *In-
fanta* binding her selfe by oath, in the hands of the said Empreffe, to marrie the Arch-
duke *Albert* of Austria, according to his maiesties good pleasure: Whereupon, the said
lady Empreffe bound her selfe reciprocally, that the said Archduke her sonne should
take her to wife, by vertue of a speciall procuration which he had sent her. Then the *In-
fanta* advanced to kisse the Empreffe hand, who was her aunt (and future mother in
law) but she would not suffer her, imbracing her verie kindly. In the end, after many
countreies, and amiable complements, the Empreffe beginning to retire her selfe, the *In-
fanta* kneeled downe, and would haue kist her hand againe, but she drew it backe, and
raising her vp, kisted her cheeke, and so they parted.

All this being thus past, the *Infanta* sent a procuration in qualitie of princeesse of the
Low Countries, to the Archduke her future husband, as followeth.

Isabella Clara Eugenia by the grace of God *Infanta* of all the realmes of Spaine, duchesse
of Bourgondie, Lothier, Brabant, Limbourg, and Luxembourg, Countesse of Flanders,
Artois, Bourgondie, Palatine, and of Hainault, Holland, Zeland, Namur, and Zurphim,
Marquise of the sacred Empire, lady of Friesland, Salins, & Macklin, of the countie and
city of Trecht, of Queryffel, and Groningue: To all to whom these presents shall
come. Whereas, as well for the general good of Christendome, as for the Low
Countries in particular, and for other good considerations, it hath pleased the king
my Lord and father for the aduancement of our future marriage, by a dispensation from
our holie father the Pope, with our most deare and welbeloued cousin the Archduke
his brother, consent, and assistance of the high and mightie prince our most
deare and welbeloued good brother, to giue, make cession, and transport vnto vs all the
Low Countries, and Bourgondie, according to the letters patents which haue bene dis-
patched, and signed respectively by them, the sixt of this month of May: with other our
letters patents touching the acceptance of the said donation and transport: To the end
that the said Low Countries and Bourgondie may be held and enjoyed by vs, our heires
and

and successors in manner and forme, and according to the conditions comprehended in the said letters patents: by the which his majestie hath graunted vnto vs full power, and irrevocable, of our owne priuaty authoritie, not being bound to require any other consent, to take and receive, by our selfe, or by procurator to our future spouse the Archduke *Albert*, the full and absolute possession of all the Low Countries, and countie of Bourgondie and Charolois: Wherefore, according to the tenor of the said letters patents, We make it knowne, that for the former reasons, and to follow his majesties will and pleasure from point to point, yea to aduance that which may be requisite before our departure towards the said Countries.

We haue vpon our owne knowledge and absolute power, giuen full authoritie, and irrevocable commission, as well generall as speciall, to our future spouse the Archduke *Albert*, in our name and behalfe, by himselfe or other his substitutes, wheresoeuer he shall thinke it requisite by vertue hereof, at once, or at diuers times, to doe all things, as well in our name and behalfe, as in the behalfe of the Low Countries, and countie of Bourgondie and Charolois in general, or by the Estates in euery particular Prouince, which shall be held necessa^rie to be done: To take, accept, or retaine in our name, the full and reall possession of all the said Countries, and euery Prouince thereof, and of all that depends: The same to enioy fully and peaceably, without any contradiction, let, or molestation. To those ends causing the Estates of the said Countries to assemble, be it in general, or particular, and to take the accustomed oaths in our name: And moreover, to haue that done by our future spouse the Archduke *Albert*, which We our selues being in person might doe, notwithstanding there be something which might require a speciall warrant, the which is not expresse in the said letters: promising in the word of a prince, and vpon our honour, to haue for ageable, firme, and stable for euer, and to obserue, and cause to be obserued and inuiolably kept, whatsoever hath bene done by the said Archduke *Albert* our future husband, or by his substitutes, by vertue of the said letters, and in regard of the reall and full possession of the said Low Countries and Bourgondie, after that manner and forme, that is mentioned in the said letters patents of donation, cession, and transport: wherunto We referre our selues, not doing nor suffering any thing to be done to the contrary, directly nor indirectly in any sort whatsoever: for such is our pleasure. In witness whereof, We haue signed these presents with our owne hand, and caused it to be signed by the secreta^rie of my Lord and father for the affaires of the Low Countries and Bourgondie, and sealed with his majesties seale of armes, hanging in strings of gold. Giuen in Madrid, in the realme of Castille, the thirtieth of May, in the yeare 1598. Signed *Jabella*. And vpon the fould, By commandement from my ladie the Infanta, *A. Lalon*.

VII.

The acts and dispatches of the donation of the Low Countries, made by the king of Spaine to the Infanta his daughter, in fauour of her marriage with the Archduke *Albert* of Austria, who was yet a Cardinal, being come to Brussels; The said Cardinal caused them to be published by copies, together with the agreeation of the prince of Spaine, the procurator of the said Infanta, and letters sealed vp from the king, and the prince his sonne, the which were sent vnto the gouernours, and Consuls of all the Prouinces which were yet vnder the gouernement and house of Spaine, commanding them to send their deputies to the towne of Brussels, where the Estates being assembled, the said Cardinal Archduke, in the name of the said ladie, and by vertue of his procurator, was accepted, and an oath taken vpon certaine conditions: the contents whereof follow.

The first article contained the agreeation or the approbation of the transport and donation of the countries, and of the prince's marriage which the said Cardinal. 2. The second after what manner the should be received, and the oath taken. 3. That his highnesse should make the consummation of their marriage appeare within three months. 4. That the king should giue an act, that the twelfth article contained in the said transport, should not be preiudiciall to the Low Countries. 5. That they should take away all contributions, forraging of souldiers and other charges: and that from thence forth her highnesse should bee contented with her demaies. 6. That forraine souldiers should

A should remaine vnder the kings pay, who should be employed in field vpon the enemies frontiers. 7. All Germaine souldiers should be entertained and paid as far as might be, and that the surplussage should be paid by the king. 8. That all offices and gouernments of prouinces, townes, and forts should be (within one yeare) deliuered into the hands of the noblemen and others that were borne in the countie. 9. All extraordinary counsellors should be reduced to their accustomed number: that the great counsellor of *Maclin*, and that of Brabant, with the counsell of State, should consist of men borne in the countie. 10. That all prouinces, countries, and townes should be maintained in their ancient priuiledges, rights, and liberties. 11. That his highnesse should bind himselfe to returne into the Low Countries by the month of May next ensuing. 12. That her highnesse should appoint in his absence a gouernor in the said Low Countries, which should be of her blood, and should be bound to sweare by oath, all that the king hath sworn. 13. That it should be lawfull for the generall Estates, by the interuention of his highnesse to treat with them of Holland and Zeland touching a peace. 14. And for that the countries are furnished with noblemen that are borne there, they shall depute three to go into Spaine with his highnesse, and to thanke the king. 15. That his highnesse should be bound to entertaine all about mentioned, and at his returne with the *Infanta* to take the accustomed oath in all the Prouinces. 16. That all gouernors, captains, and men of war should not attempt any new thing, during his highnesse absence. 17. That C his highnesse, at his returne, should be bound to assemble the generall Estates, to the end they might labour in the reformation and settling of the affaires of the Low Countries.

Matters being thus past, and the said Cardinal Archduke sufficiently acknowledged, and accepted for their future prince, according to the promises of marriage betwix him and the *Infanta*, meaning to vncardinal himselfe, and to enter into the consummation of the said marriage, according to the Popes graunt, he went to Hault (a little towne of Brabant, three leagues from Bruxells, commonly called our Lady of Hault) where he laied his Hat and Cardinalls habit vpon the great altar, the which he offered to our Lady. This done, he began to prepare for his voyage, and for the gouernment of the countie: whereunto during his absence he named his cousin, a Cardinal also, *Andrew D* of Austria sonne to the Archduke *Ferdinand*, who was brother to the Emperor *Maximillia* an, and therefore cousin germane to *Albert*, ioining with him the counsell of State, appointing *Francisco de Mendoza*, Admirall of Arragon to be Generall, and *Count Herman Vanden Bergh* Marshall of the armie, with other commanders and officers, to put in execution during his absence, the resolution which had been taken at Bruxells, touching the Frontiers of Germanie.

To keepe him companie, and for the accomplishment of the articles, there were depu^ted *Philip* of Nassau prince of Orange &c. (to whom his silter the Countesse of Henloesent a good summe of money to performe his voiage, of the reuenues of his demaies in Holland and Zeland) the earle of Barlaimont, and the earle of Sores, noble men borne in the countie, with many ladies and gentlewomen, among others the countesse of Mansfeldt widow to the earle, and dowager to the earles of Henin and Hoochstraten; and many other noblemen and gentlemen of the Low Countries, desirous to see Spaine, with the triumphes and magnificence of the prince of Spaine, and of the said Archduke and *Infanta*.

The said Archduke before his departure had written to the generall Estates of the vni^uer^sed prouinces of Holland &c. containing in substance, That he went to marrie with the *Infanta*, with whom he should haue the Low Countries in dowrie: That the greatest part of the prouinces had receiued him, and acknowledged him for their lord and prince, That he desired nothing more, than to settle a good peace in the Low Countries; and therefore they should conforme themselves with them of Brabant and Flaunders, to a generall peace, and acknowledge him for their prince and lord, wherunto he had authoritie from the generall Estates of his prouinces. There were also letters from the prince of Orange, to prince *Maurice* his brother, from the duke of Arschor, and from the marquis of Hauell, exhorting them to peace: To all which letters, there was not

D d

any

any answer made, neither by the Estates, nor by prince *Maurice*: but there being brought vnto the Estates assembled, certaine letters which had bene intercepted in France and England, by the which the king of Spaine gaue a lesson vnto the said Cardinal Archduke, quite contrarie to those goodly offers and promises which he had made to the Estates of the vniued provinces; the Estates, nobilitie, and townes in generall resolved not to harken to any peace or truce, but to beare the burthen of the war to the extremitie, and to attend such an end, as it should please God to send them, rather than to abandon the countrie, and to admit their enemies to the government thereof: hereupon they appointed a great number of deputies of townes, in their colleges and generall Estates, sending many of their chiefe men ambassadours to the queene of England, to moue her to continue the warre with them, against the Spaniards: Their names were, *John Van Dnyenwoorde* knight, seignior of Vuarmon and Vuoude, &c. *John Van Oldembarnelst*, seignior of Tempel, first Councillor and Aduocat of the Estates, keeper of the scale of Holland, and West-Friseland: *John Vandensuerke*, Councillor and Pensioner of the towne of Middelbourg: *John Van Hottinga* Esquire, Councillor and deputie in the generall estates: and *Andrew Hefels*, first Councillor of the Council of Brabant, remaining at the Hague, for that which depends vpon the vniued Prouinces: Who being come into England, hauing had audience of her maiestie, were sent to treat with the lords of her Council of all matters whereof he had summoned them, and for the which they had bene moued to come vnto her in the name of the Estates: so as in the end hauing giuen her maiestie contentment, all matters were agreed vpon, the sixt of August 1598, according to which accord and firme deliberation of the Estates, to maintain themselves by armes against the king of Spaine, and the Archduke *Albert*; her maiestie refused also for her part to continue the war: the which could not be so hurtfull to her, as to the Spaniard, for many reasons which would be tedious to relate. At the same time, a peace being concluded betwixt the French king and the Spaniard, the seignior of Buzenual, ambassador for the French king with the generall Estates of the vniued provinces, was sent back into Holland by the king his master to continue his charge, who propounded vnto the Estates many excuses and reasons, which had moued the king to make a peace with the Spaniard, assuring them that he would be no enemy, nor contrarieto their government, but as much as he could (the peace excepted) fauour them, and would continue in their alliance, with promise to repay the money wherewith they had assisted his maiestie during his wars.

Thus the Estates of the vniued provinces, and prince *Maurice*, being assured of these two mightie allies, the French, and the English, prepared for war against the Archduke, the which war they continued with variable successe of either part, vntill in the end they came vnto a truce, in the year 1609: the which we will set downe truly, for the readers content, in the end of the discourse which we will make of the generall Estates of the vniued provinces of the Low Countries.

VIII.

Hauing treated of all the Low Countries in generall, and summarily how all these provinces were reduced and made subiect to one lord, and finally how the Archduke holds them at this present: It follows next in order, that we speake particularly of the provinces which he enioyes, and which yeeld him obedience, that is to say, the countries of Brabant, Limbourg, Luxembourg, Flanders, Artois, Haynault, Namur, Lille, Douay, Archiers, Tournay, and Tournets, Macklin, Valenciennes, Cambray, with a part of the countrie of Guedres, and the seigneurie of Linguen, except a part of Brabant, and Flanders, which the generall Estates of the vniued Prouinces hold yet.

Flanders at this day hath for her limits, vpon the South side Artois, with Haynault, and a part of Picardie; vpon the East Haynault and Brabant; vpon the North Brabant with the Honr, or the mouth of the riuer Elcaut, which diuides Flanders from Zeland; and vpon the West the German or rather English seas: It is in length from the Elcaut against Antuerpe vnto Fosse-neuf thirte miles, and it is in bredth twentie miles. There are thirte walled townes in Flanders, that is to say, Gand, Bruges, Ypre, Lille, Douay, Tournay, Courtray, Audenarde, Aloft, Hulst, Tenenmond, Birsler, Nieuport, Sluce, Donkerke,

A Donkerke, Grauelin, Bourbourg, Damme, Dixmude, Fourné, Ardenbourg, Geramont, Orchies, Lanoy, Axelle, and Ostende. Besides these townes there are open boroughs, which yeeld nothing vnto good townes, neither in regard of their priuiledges, nor their stately buildings, nor yet in respect of multitudes of inhabitants. There are in all 1154 villages, so as, when the Spaniards came into that countrie with *Philip* the second, king of Spain, deceased, they thought that Flanders was but one towne. But during the warre for these fortie yeares, Flanders hath had more cause to complaine than any other, hauing bin spoyled by a feditious multitude, and all their townes besieged, taken, and sackt, except Grauelin, & some other smal things not worth the mentioning. Many townes and great villages haue bin made heaps of stones, so as in this prouince there haue been more townes, villages, castles, and cloisters ruined, than in any other; whereby the countrie is more than halfe vnpeopled, for that the inhabitants are retired, and disperfed in a manner throughout all the world. The Archdukes hold all Flanders, except the townes of Sluce, Axelle, and Temseuf, all the Island of Cantsant, Bieruliedt, Ardenbourg, with some other places and forts. Finally, if Flanders were at peace, she would soone recouer her former beautie.

The first towne of Flanders is Gand, the which is foure miles from the sea, and is warded by the riuers of Elcaut, Life, Liue, and More. Moreover, there is a channell made by hand, which is also capable of great vessels, and it is incredible what wealth this towne receiues by these riuers and channells. It is ten miles from Antuerp, and as much from Brussels, Macklin, and Middelbourg: It hath seuen Italian miles in circuit. There are twentie six Islands, nine tie eight bridges, foure great water-mills, one hundred wind-mills, with an infinit number of others. It is the place where the emperor *Charles* the first was born. Bruges is seated in a plaine, three miles from the sea: It hath foure miles and a halfe circuit within the walls, and is the most pleasing towne of Flanders: There are sixtie Churches, whereof the chiefe is that of S. Donatian, the which was sometimes dedicated to our Lady, and was built by *Lideric* the first earle of Flanders, in the year 1121. This towne hath been so rich, as queene *Joane* (wife to *Philip* the Faire) being there, in the year 1501, and hauing seene the pompe of the women, she was first amazed, and then complained that she was not queene alone: yet amidst this abundance of all things, it hath neither port nor riuier. There is a channell made by art, which they call Reye, the which being disperfed through the town, runs into the sea, neere vnto Sluce: but for that it was not capable of any great vessels, they haue made another higher, and haue diuided it from the sea with banks. Ipre was built in the year 960: they say the foundation of this towne is of lead, by reason of the great number of pipes of lead, by the which the water is diuersly distributed throughout the towne. Sluce is a sea towne, which hath a goodly great port, able to containe fise hundred ships. Right against it is the Island of Cantsant. Ostend stands neere vnto the sea, and is famous, for that it endured a siege which the Archduke layed before it, the space of three yeares and some moneths, with great losse of men of either side. Nieuport is a sea towne, three miles from Ostend. Donkerke hath a little port, the which is capable of few ships. I omit the other townes of Flanders, for that it would be endlesse: but before I passe vnto the other parts of the Low Countries, I will only say, That of these townes aboue named, the Estates hold that of Sluce, and the Island of Cantsant, which is a great curbe vnto the whole countrie.

The countrie of Artois is neere vnto Picardie, with the which it confines. The bounds at this day are, vpon the North Flanders, from the which it is diuided by the riuer of Life; vpon the West and South Picardie; and vpon the East Flaunders Gauloise, and Cambrusis. The chiefe towne is Arras, besides the which they number twelue townes, and 754 villages. The chiefe are Saint Omer, Bethune, Bapaume, Hedrin, Renty, and Lens. But to speake something of Arras, it is a verie great towne, diuided by a wall into two parts, whereof the one belongs vnto the Bishop, and is called the Citie; the other is the Prince, and is called the Towne. It is but little, yet faire and pleasing. There is a scene out Ladies Church, whereas they preferre Manna (the which they affirm to be wooll in the time of S. Ierosme, as he himselfe writes in his Epistles) and a candle,

D d ij

which

which they say they had in old time from heauen. The towne is great, and hath goodly streets, and a market-place which is exceeding great. There is to be seene the Abbey of S. Vaz, the which hath aboue twentie thousand duckats of yearly rent. All the houses haue causes or sellors paied, to the end the inhabitants may retire themselves thither in time of siege, out of the danger of the cannon: it is verie well peopled, and full of artificers of all trades. S. Omer is a reasonable faire towne, in which is the Abbey of S. Bertin, with a Church and an admirable Conuent, hauing great reuenues. The greatest part of writers hold, that Port Iecius (whereof ancient Authors make mention) was at S. Omer: the which seemes to be verified by the banks and causeis wherewith the place is inclosed, for that the sea came thither. Neere vnto it is a lake which contains certaine little Islands, full of grasse and shrubs, the which they draw with a cord, which they tie vnto it, and by this meanes carrie these Islands where they please, with the cattell that feed in them, a thing which is no lesse true than wonderfull. This countrie hath no cause to complain of warres, vnlesse it be by reason of the impositions.

X. Cambrais, which hath for the chiefe towne Cambrai, confines with the foresaid prouince. The Bishop, who is a prince of the empire, is soueraigne lord, but the Spaniards are the maisters. Henry the first gaue it in protection to Robert of Hierusalem, earle of Flanders, to whose successors it was confirmed by the emperour Frederick, in the year 1164. In the end it put it selfe vnder the protection of Maximilian of Austria, king of the Romans, by whom it was left at libertie: it remained a long time neuter, during the wars which were betwixt the houses of France and Bourgondie, until that Charles the fifth built a citadell there: since, the duke of Alençon, brother to the deceased king Henry the third, made himselfe maister of it: but it was afterwards yielded to the Spaniards, the inhabitants giuing vp the town for want of victuals. The towne is faire, great, and stately, as well for the publike as priuat buildings, & for the great number of people that inhabit there.

XI. Haynault is twentie leagues long and 16 broad: It is so called of the riuier of Hayne, which passeth through the middle of the countrie: her bounds are towards the North, Brabant and Flanders; vpon the South, Champagne and Picardie; vpon the East, the countrie of Namur, and the countrie of Liege and Brabant; and vpon the West, Flanders with Artois. They do number 24 walled towns, the most famous of which are Mons and Valenciennes. Mons stands vpon a little hill, & hath goodly buildings, with many springs, and a little riuier called Trulle, passing through it. Among other things which are remarkable in this town, there is an order and chapter of Chanonesses or religious women, very considerable: the founder was Paltrude duchesse of Lorraine, who gaue them good rents. These religious women (which should be daughters of noblemen, and gentlemen of note) remaine neere vnto the Church, and attend the seruice thereof: In the morning they go attired like Nuns, and in the afternoone like secular women, and may marrie at their pleasures: they haue an Abbess which gouernes them. There is a Chapter of the like order, but richer, at Ninelle, and another at Mabeuil. Valenciennes was (as they say) built by the emperour Valentinian; it stands in a pleasant valley: The riuier of Escourt, and the little riuier of Ronelle enter into it, and make diuers small Islands, and a current which passeth vnder the houses, which is not onely commodious for priuat men, but doth also giue them means to fortifie the towne, for that they may drowne some part round about it: there are two faire Churches, the one of our Ladie which is very ancient, and the other of S. Iohn: there is a palace which is called the Earles hall, the which is verie great, and the Town-house yields not to any in beautie: neere vnto it is a clocke which, besides the hours, shewes the course of the moone, planets, moneths and seasons. The other places of note are Quefnoy, Landercy, Aeneas, Mariembourg, Philippeuille, Beaumont and Bins.

XII. As for Namur, it is the chiefe towne of a verie good countie: It is situated vpon the riuier of Meuse, betwixt two mountaines: The riuier of Sambre passeth through it, and ioynes with Meuse: It is not great, but a good faire towne, and is hath vnder it three walled townes, whereof Bouines is the greatest, Charlemont the strongest, and Valenciennes the last. Besides these are one hundred eightie two villages: they haue endured much, but at this present they are in good estate.

The

A The duchie of Luxembourg contains three and twentie townes, and almost one thousand and two hundred villages: it lies in a manner all within the forest of Ardenne, which by little and little hath bene cut downe and tilled. This duchie takes her name of the principall towne which is great, but not well peopled, by reason of the ruines which it hath undergone, with the whole prouince, during the wars betwixt the houses of France and Austria: for the towne was taken and sackt in the year 1542, then recovered and sackt againe in a manner all the places of importance ran the like fortune, as Arlon, Thionuille, Montmet, Danuilliers, Yuols, all which places were held impregnable. This countrie hath bene best preferred of all the prouinces of the Low Countries in these last troubles; for it hath not bene in any fort ruined, onely the armies haue past thar way.

Brabant hath for bounds vpon the North, the Ocean sea, vpon the East the riuier of Meuse on the South the Bishopricke of Leige, and the countie of Namur, and vpon the West the last place is Niuelle. This countrie contains those places whereas Caesar did lodge the Aquatices and Ambuarites: it is two and twentie leagues long, and twentie broad, and fourescore in circuit: it contains six and twentie walled townes, eighteen that haue priuiledges, and seuen hundred villages. There are foure principall townes, that is to say, Louvain, Bruxells, Antwerp, and Bosseduc. Louvain is in a faire situation, and hath foure miles in circuit about the walls; but it contains meadows, vines, and

C great gardens, which giue it a great grace by reason of the mountaines and valleis. There is one of the best vniuersities of Europe, whose founder was John duke of Brabant in the year 1426, but it hath bene much enrich with pensions for publike readers, by Philip the second king of Spaine. Bruxells (whose circuit is not much lesse than that of Louvain) is seated partly vpon a plaine, and partly vpon the descent of a hill; it is the ordinarie aboad of the Archduke: the towne is full of faire pallaces, and goodly houses, amongst the which, is the palace roiall, with a parke that is very delightfull. Antwerp is so faire a towne, as there are few in Europe that can equall it: it is seated vpon the riuier of Escourt, which brings ships with all kinds of merchandise from the sea, which is seuenteen leagues off: there are many goodly buildings, but the chiefe are our ladies Church, D the Bourde, the State-house, and that of the Easterlings: before the ruolt of the Low Countries, it was a place of great trafficke, and of such importance, as there was more businesse dispatcht in one moneth, than is at Venice in two yeares: it hath now in a manner lost all the trafficke of the sea, hauing their enemies at their gates; so as it is no more that flourishing towne, whereof in former times they made so great account. Bosseduc is seated vpon the little riuier of Deese, two leagues from the Meuse: it is a faire, great, and rich towne. As for Macklin, which is a soueraigne towne, and a seigneurie, it hath bene twice taken, and so spoiled, as not any towne thereabouts hath bene more: it stands vpon the riuier of Dele, which is great of it selfe, and swells more by reason of the flowing of the sea, which passeth a league beyond the towne: this riuier hauing many branches,

E maketh diuers little Islands, and is very commodious for the towne. Without the towne there is a great monastirie, in which are aboute one thousand and fise hundred nuns, or rather maidens which may marrie. Among the other places of any importance, they put Niuelle. There are also some Estates beyond the riuier of Meuse, which belong vnto Brabant: that is to say, the duchie of Limbourg, and Valkembourg, Dalem, Rode, and Carpenall townes with command and iurisdiction. The Archduke inioies all the townes at this day, except Berghen-op-Zoom, Breda, Steenberghe, Willem-stadt, Graue, and some forts, all which are vnder the government of the Estates of the vnited prouinces. This countrie hath endured so much, during fortie yeares wars, both by the enemye, and by their owne souldiers, mutining often for want of pay, and so oppressing the countrie, as it is a wonder how it hath subsisted.

D d iij

¶ The

XIII.

XIIII.

¶ The Qualitie.

A

To speake in generall of the qualitie of the Low Countries, the aire is very moist, and yet very wholesome for the inhabitants of the countrie: Summer is very pleasing with a temperat heat: they are not scorched as in many other countries, flies and dorres do not annoy them with their buzzing and stinging: it is not subiect to Earthquakes; but the Winter is long and windie: any wind that comes from the East causeth frost. The countrie is in many places sandie: it abounds in wheat, barley, rie, flax, and hemepe: it doth also bring forth all kinds of fruit in great abundance, as apples, pearces, plums, cherries, mulberries, peaches, nuts, medlers, and in some places chestnuts: there are not any mines of siluer, of note. As for trees they doe much please the sight, being thicke set in order, and laden with fruit, and there are many which serue for building, and for firing: there are of all sorts which are very great and high; but there are few bay trees or of elme. There is a certaine tree which they call Linden, whose leafe is almost like vnto an Elme, but they grow higher and faster, for in fixteene or eightene yeares they grow as big as a man: they vse them somewhat for building, but more to make coales. Betwixt the barke and the wood, they find a certaine string like vnto hemepe, whereof they are accustomed to make ropes; but there are many beauls which like not the leaves, notwithstanding that they be tender: there are also many ewe trees, whereof they make good bowes: there is a certaine poison made of the iuice, with the which *Casus* faith that *Catinaleus* died. There is also another kind of tree, which the inhabitants call Abeelen, and it is like vnto a white Poplar tree. There are great store of them in Brabant, and they vse them chiefly at Brussels for diuers occasions. Moreover they of the Low Countries may commend their soile, to be fit for cattell, for that there are few places where their oxen, sheepe, and horses do multiply faster, and prosper better. First they haue great and mightie horses fit for war: then oxen which are sometimes so great and fat, as they waigh one thousand and two hundred waight. *Guichardin* writes of an ox which was giuen to the earle of Hochstrat at Macklin, waighing one thousand siue hundred twentie and eight pounds, and therefore he caused this beast to be drawne in his pallace. As for cowes, they haue alwaies their dugs so great and so full, as it is almost incredible what milke they giue: for it is most certaine that in some places of Holland a cow will yield in Summer nine or ten pintes at a meale, and they do commonly milke them thrice a day.

XV.

There is store of fallow deere, stags, goats, wild boares, conies, hares, and great numbers of herons, partridges, pheasants, turtle doves, quailles, thrushes, storkes, geese, and mallards: there is also abundance of rafe foule, and store of salmons, lampreys, aloes, mullets, and much other good fish which comes from the sea, into the riuier of Meuse, drawne thither by the sweetnesse of the water: and it is a thing worthe admiration, that these fishes being taken in the sea, are little esteemed, but within the fresh water they are very fat, and of a good tast: the same riuier doth also beare trouts and lampreys, whereof some are great and excellent, others lesse and delicate.

Moreover the sea (with her flowing into the riuier of Escaut) brings sturgeons, salmons, great lampreys, mullets, soles, crabs, and many other sorts of delicate fish, where they liue and breed, for that the water is fit for them. In two or three moneths, in the spring time, they take such abundance of small fish, besides the great, as many people liue of them. Moreover this riuier without any helpe of the sea, doth continually breed many kinds of fish, whereof the chiefe are pike, barbles, tenches, and carpes which many times waigh twentie pound: there are also some oysters found in the mouth of this riuier, but they come from the sea. The peasants ioyning many waters together with the helpe of these riuers, make channells with great industrie, which run certaine leagues, and are capable of great ships; so as there is scarce any place but hath a passage vnto the water: yet this countrie wants springs, except it be in hilly places.

XVI.

We must now speake of the sea of this countrie. Without doubt when it is troubled it is very dangerous, for that many times it drownes great fields, yea whole countries, as

we

A we may see neere vnto Zeland: but the inhabitants at this day haue made so many banks and defences, as they are in a manner free from danger. It is most commonly tornented at the new moone, and when it is full betwixt the two Equinoxes, when (according to *Complan Tacitus*) the sea doth swell wonderfully. There are two effects of the flowing of the sea, the one is commodious, the other troublesome: the one keeps the sea from corrupting, and makes way for them that saile; the other is discommodious by reason of the inundation and violence. But hauing spoken of the discommodities which the sea brings to these countries, it is fit to say something of the commodities which it giues them when it is quiet. Without the sea it were impossible they should feed halfe their people: for thereby these countries are as it were a publike market-place for all Europe, and it brings vnto them a wonderfull profit by the herring and fish of all sorts which the inhabitants take, for they not onely serue for daintinesse to the rich, but also for nourishment to the poore, and they vent such store into all the parts of Europe, as it yeelds them a great reuenue.

Finally, the Low Countrie is plaine and euen, and there are few mountaines, vnlesse it be in the countries of Luxembourg, Namur, and Haynault, where there are more than all the rest. It hath Forrest sufficient for the ornament of the countrie, for seruice, and for hunting. The Forrest of Ardenne, in the time of *Cesar*, was the greatest of Gaule, and passing through the middest of the countrie of Treues, it extended it selfe from the Rhyne, vnto the countries of Tournay and Rheims, so as it was about six hundred thousand paces long: but at this day it hath lost much of her greatnesse, so as that which remaines is often cut vp, and tilled by the inhabitants, who giue other names to all those places. The greatest part, and least interrupted, is from Thionuille, neere vnto Liege, for the space of thirrie miles. The Forrest of Mormau which is in Haynault, begins at Quenoy, and runs Southward toward Vermandois. The Forrest of Saint Amant is also in Haynault, and begins neere vnto S. Amant, and goes toward the East vnto Valenciennes, being verie broad and thicke. There are also the woods of Faigne, Soigne, Marlaigne, and some others, but I will not trouble the reader with their descriptions. I will now come to examine in particular the qualitie of those countries which are vnder the Archdukes.

XVII.

¶ The Qualitie.

As for Artois it is rich in wheat, whereof they send great store into Flanders and Brabant, where there commonly growes none, so as for the most part, the inhabitants eat Rie bread. There grows no wine, yet some hold that the countrie is fit to beare it, and that the negligence of them that dwell there, is rather the cause of this defect, than the situation. The aire is good, wholesome, and cleere.

The countrie of Haynault enioyes a sweet and temperat aire, and the soyle is fertile, and beares great store of wheat. There are many meadows, pastures, orchards, and other things necessarie for the life of man. There are also mines of yron and lead, and quarries of diuers sorts of marble, and also of a certain kind of flint which the Liegeois call Houle. These flints feed the fire like vnto coales, and they vse to make fire of it mingled with a little wood.

The countrie of Namur is hillie, but pleasing, and of a wholesome and temperat ayre. The soyle yeelds all things necessarie for man. There are also mines of yron and lead, and quarries whereas they cut stones of all sorts, especially of marble inclining to black, much like vntoasper. And it is not long since they began to dig that kind of flint stone, which they name. There are riuers which abound in fish, and goodly springs and fountaines, as also forests where there is great store of wild beasts of all sorts.

The countrie of Luxembourg although it be hillie yet it is good and fertile, and enioyes a pleasing ayre. There is one part which yeelds much corne and wine, and another which recompence this want with abundance of Deere, and other wild beasts. The Countie of Manderfeld is in the seigneuries of Keyle, Crouenberg, and towards the towne of Hellental.

Brabant

Brabant is in a verie good aire, and hath a fertile plaine which beares good store of A come, yet that which they call *Die Kempen*, or the Champian, is somewhat barren by reason of the sand, and yet it yeelds some fruits, and is not altogether vnprofitable.

Flanders hath a wonderfull temperat ayre. The soyle is fertile, especially towards the sea, and France: There are goodly pastures, the which we may easily guesse for that the neighbours countries are accustomed to send many colts thither to feed. Moreover, they breed vp many tame cattell whose tast is exceeding pleasant, and they haue an infinit number of Deere and wild beasts. They want no herons, selants, partridges, peacocks, and storkes.

¶ *The Manners of the Ancient.*

Cæsar tells vs, that the Belges, which be those of the Low Countries (among whom he also comprehended the Picards) were wonderfull valiant and resolute, for that they were farre from the ciuilitie and courtseie of other Prouinces, and that merchants did not much frequent amongst them, nor bring those things which makes mens courages effeminat; and also, for that they were neere vnto the Germans who dwell beyond the riuier of Rhein, with whom they were in continuall warre. We may iudge of their valour, and the great desire they had to defend their libertie, in that they fought to retire themselves from the rule and obedience of the Romans, yea in Cæsars time. The Neniens, which are they of Tournay, would neuer suffer any merchants to bring them wine or any other thing to sell. And to speake something in particular, the inhabitants of the countie of Flanders, were so giuen to armes, and so aduise, as they could neuer liue in peace: yea in former times they haue run with their armes into Syria, to the Holie-land, and to Hierusalem. This people haue for a long time giuen themselves to trafficke, and haue bene verie succesfull, and in like manner they haue shewed themselves painefull to manure the countie, and to make it better.

¶ *The Manners at this day.*

XVIII. **T**he Flemings are most commonly great, but some thinke that in old time they were much bigger; the which Cæsar doth attribute chiefly to the libertie of their liues, and their custome not to do any thing against their wills. They are faire, quiet, not cholerick, nor ambitious, open, readie to all things, industrious, painefull, and faithfull, capable of all arts and sciences, and rather giuen to wine than to women. They are reasonable ciuile, according to the countie, and so pleasant as they are sometimes insupportable. They are light of beleefe, by reason whereof they are easily decieued. There is not any nation more suspicious, nor more obstinat. They are great talkers, and doe soone forget the courtesies and fauours which they haue received, and in like manner the wrongs which haue bene done them. They doe not much loue other nations, and they daily inuent some new thing. As for musick, they haue made it perfect, for that there is not any nation more inclined to this art. They are valiant ynough at land, but more on foot than otherwise, for they are bad horsemen, and doe seldome come to ioyne with the enemy: but we must confesse that at sea they are inuincible; they vnderstand the art of navigation perfectly. They learne many languages, and trafficke cunningly; and they make great store of silkes, farges, and linnen cloth of diuers sorts, and aboue all tapestrie hangings, whereof they make great account, and the which they not only send into all Europe, but also to the Indies, and into Africke. Most commonly they make Rie bread, and drinke beere more vsually than wine, the which is brought from France and Spain. They go well and handsomely attired. Their houses are continually kept more neatly than in any place of Europe, and their chambers doe so shine, as it is pleasant to behold. They build in a manner generally of one fashion, and their houses are so made as they seeme to haue but one owner, they take such delight in townes to haue houses of an equall height.

The women are faire, but there are no great numbers of such, and besides, as the most part this beautie fadeth before they are thirtie yeares old, and then they grow wrinkled

B

and

A and foule: they are quicke and hardie, and conuerse freely among men: The greatest blemish is, that they loue wine, yea young maidens will not refuse to drinke, and sometimes more than is fit, which causeth effects of loue: yet it is most certaine that there are fewer women which liue loosely in this countie, than in some other where they are not so much subiect to drinking: notwithstanding this their custome, the women gouerne themselves discretely, and many times they trafficke and contract with one another like merchants: they affect much to go attired after the French fashion, they go alone in the streets, and to places neere the towne with little or no companie, and yet they are not suspected: and for that their husbands do many times leaue vnto them the manning of all their affaires, they grow proud, imperious, and insupportable.

The princes, lords, and all others of what condition soeuer, giue vnto the eldest of the house, the name of his father, although he be liuing, and in the floure of his age: and gentlemen do alwaies prefer their eldest daughter before the rest, although that all haue the like dowrie; so as they giue the younger to men to whom they would refuse the elder, whom they reserve for a better fortune: and they haue this particularitie, that they do easily contract marriage with a stranger, if occasion be offered: they hold it base and dishonourably that young men should marrie old women, and old men young maidens, a base or meane man a gentlewoman, the maister his maid, and the mistris her man. There is not any Nation that excells so much in painting. *Iohn Eekius* (who was of this countie) did first shew the manner how to mingle colours with oyle. They are accustomed vpon that Saints day whose name they carrie, and during Shrouetide, to feast their kinsfolkes and friends, and to entertain them bountifully; for aboue all things they loue banquets, and to make good cheere.

XIX.

¶ *The Riches.*

The Flemings are rich by meanes of the sea, and the ordinarie trafficke which they vie. The trades whereunto they apply themselves bring them a thousand commodities, and the sale of their silkes, farges, and tapistrie worke, which are so much desired, brings them in great summes of money.

It is in a manner incredible what profit they make of porpeses and salmons, which they do salt and barrell vp, and what abundance of herring and barrellod cod they send forth yearly, for the which they returne great summes of money from the Germans, English, French, Spaniards, and Italians.

The ordinarie reuenues which the prince drew from the Low Countries (whenas they were all vnder one lord) did amount to aboue three millions of gold yearly, besides the vncertaine subsidies, and confiscations whereof he had the third, vnlesse it be in cases of high treason. At this day the Archdukes reuenues are not so great, since that diuers of his Estates haue bene dismembered, and that which he hath will not in any sort B defray the charges of his court, and entertaine his troupes.

XX.

¶ *The Forces.*

The Archduke may boldly say that he hath good townes, not onely able to make a long defence, but in a manner impregnable: for you shall hardly find a stronger place than the citadel of Antuerp, the which is held to be one of the best fortified in Europe, according to the rules of this age. Besseduc which is also in Brabant, is a place of good importance. Then vpon the sea is Grauelin, two leagues from Calais, furnished with great store of ordnance, & exceeding strong. Neere vnto it is Donkerke, the which B by reason of the strength of the walls hath very resolute inhabitants: there is also in the same power vpon the same coast the strong towne of Offend, the which did so much resist during a siege of three yeares and a halfe.

XXI.

In the countie of Artois, there is the town of Arras, the which is strong and able to resist a great assault. Terouanne might be well defended and endure a long siege: Hedin

Heim is of no lesse importance, yea it is better fortified, and is vpon the frontiers of France: in Haynault Mons is strong, and so is Valenciennes; in this towne there is an arenall furnished with all sorts of munition and armes, to maintaine a long warre. Phillippeville and Mariembourg are two very strong places, vpon the frontire of France. Namur hath a good fort which is very defensible: and to end in a word, all the Archdukes countrie is full of good places, so as he that shall assaile him shall find work enough. As for the men, the inhabitants of townes are valiant, whereof they haue in former times giuen good proofe. But besides his naturall subiects, this prince doth alwaies entertaine an armie consisting of Spaniards, Italians, English, Germanes, and other nations, and this armie (before the truce) during Winter lay in garrison, and about the mid spring went to field, and was employed at the siege of some townes. Now many of these troupes haue beene cast, so as their numbers are not so great: that which remaines, is entertained in diuers places vpon the frontiers.

¶ The Government.

XXII.

The formes of gouernment are, the generall, which the prince hath ouer all; and the particular, which euery one of these Estates doth vse, according to their priuiledges and customes.

The prince hath three councells, whereof the first is called the councell of State; the second, the priuie councell; and the third, that of the finances or treasure. The councell of Estate hath a president, and very many counsellors, for that they call more or lesse according to occurrents. In this councell they treat of all matters belonging to the State, as of peace and war, of ambassadors, intelligences, & aduices from abroad and within the State; and to this the most important affaires of other councells are referred.

In the Priuie councell there are twelve doctors chosen by the prince, and there is a president, whereas they treat of all questions in law, for that it hath a preheminance ouer all the other councells, and this consents to priuiledges, giues pardons, and remissions, and makes laws, statutes, and edicts; and to it also doth belong the knowledge of judgement, of controuersies, and questions for the limits of countries, and for the chief of the seigneurie. In matters which are difficult and of great waight, they conferre with the councell of State, as that doth with this when as there happens any matters of iustice.

In the councell of the Finances, there are three chiefe men of the countrie, who are called heads and ouerseers of the exchequer, there is a treasurer, a receiuer, and other inferior officers. This councell doth mannage all the princes reuenues, and the taxes which are paid him: there they make the impositions and payements in all occurrents both of peace and war.

There is a Chamber of accounts, which is as it were a member of the councell of the finances, and seuen maisters of accounts, with other inferior officers: there they go to make their accounts, and to receiue their acquittances (at the end of the terme) that so they mannage the princes money in Brabant, and the countries adjoining, and in the duchie of Luxembourg; and notwithstanding that there be other Chambers in the countrie, besides the abouenaied, which doth reside at Bruxells, with the three councells, yett all the Chambers are accustomed to giue their accounts to the councell of the Treasure, as to their soueraigne magistrat.

Besides the said magistrats, there is in most of the said Estates a particular gouernour, to whom (as to a lieutenant) matters are referred, especially for the war.

The prince hath also in the greatest part of his Estates a councell in his name, the which in Brabant is called the Chancery, and at Macklin, in other places it is called the Parliament. In this councell there are sometimes twelve, sometimes sixteene, and sometimes eighteene counsellors, with a president, into the which the prince aduocate is admitted, the procurator for the treasure, and some other inferior officers, all which in a manner haue wages from the prince: and the authoritie of these magistrats is great both in ciuile and criminal causes, and thither they may call not onely all priuat persons, but euen

A euen the prince himselfe, if any one pretend any thing against him in iustice. To these iurisdictiones all appellations go from the other magistrats of this priuat estate, and in three of them, as in Brabant, Macklin, and Haynault, they iudge definitiue: In all the said Councells they are gouerned by the common laws, if the municipall priuiledges or commandements (for so they call the princes resolutions) be not opposit. Besides the foresaid officers, the prince sends commissioners yearly into the chiefe parts of his estate, to examine particularly the entries and exportations of euerie place; and in Brabant, where the prince hath (by a priuat graunt from the Pope) authoritie ouer sacred things, the Commissaries visit Churches, Monasteries, and Hospitals.

B When as the prince is to treat with the Estates, either touching new lawes which he meanes to make, or for new subsidies which he would haue, or for any other occurrents, he assembles them after this manner: He commands by his letters all the Estates to meet, at a certaine time appointed, in a certaine place, the which is commonly in the towne of Bruxels.

In all the townes, counties, and principall places by ancient preheminance, they know who should go to the assemblie, and how many they are, who in deed are many: in this assemblie there are three orders of persons.

The first order is the Clergie, the second the Nobilitie, and the third the chiefe townes of the estate. Euerie one of these hath power to bind his communitie, but neuer to conclude but with expresse condition, that all the other Estates shall come and doe the like.

C In these assemblies the proposition is made in a great hall, in the princes presence, by a president, or some one of the Counsellors of state, where they seeke with words and strong reasons to perswade what they intend. The propositions being heard, the Estates take time to make their answer, and then euerie man doth iudiciously examine in particular what hath bene propounded, and they giue their answer in writing, the which not being pleasing vnto the prince, the businesse is not ended, but they labour to draw them vnto it: but if it cannot be effected, the prince must haue patience, and referre it to a better opportunitie.

Notwithstanding that the principall gouernement, and all the most substantiall preheminences of the seigneurie be in the princes person, yett all the townes and places adiacent haue a particular administration, and a great libertie, with their lawes, customes, and priuiledges.

These lawes, customes, and priuiledges haue a great difference, for that the said countries haue bene enjoyed for many ages by diuers princes, and they haue often bene in quarrell with moztall and deadly hatred; yea they differ in weights, measures, and manners, and (which is of verie great importance) they differ in language, which is so incomparable a thing, as the Emperour Charles the first, hauing often propounded by what meanes he might draw these estates into one bodie, and giue them the name and forme of a realme, he could neuer find the way: but with all this diuersitie, they doe all agree in the qualities of members which make one bodie, for that the estate of all the townes and places hath one particular gouernement, which doth not differ in any other thing but in the number of them that deale in the gouernement, and this grows, for that one place is bigger than another.

The priuat gouernement of euerie great towne consists of foure members: we will call the first the new seigneurie, and this comprehends all the great and lesser magistrats which are in charge: the second is the old seigneurie, which comprehends all those that haue had any charge of importance: the third is called the Bourgesie, which consists of as many capitaines as there are streets in the towne. Antuerpe hath six and twentie: the fourth member embraceth all the heads of Trades, called Deans, which are also diuers in number, according to the townes. Antuerpe hath fiftie foure, and of all these foure members the particular gouernment is framed. The example hereof shall be the gouernment of the towne of Antuerpe, from which the rest differ verie little or nothing at all, while it be in regard of the number.

The manner to frame the particular gouernement in the towne of Antuerpe is thus, The

The feigneurie presents nine gentlemen, and nine others are named by the capitaines of A the streets, which are in all eighteen; to these they add the feigneurie which is then in authority, the which may make the like number of 18, which are in all thirte six, and these aspire to the future feigneurie. All these names are sent vnto the prince, who cha- seeth out eighteen, and these are called Schemats (which is to say, Senators) who haue au- thoritie to chuse two Burgomasters, which are as much as two Consuls, whereof the one treats with the prince, or with the Estates, touching the affaires of his countrie; and the other remains in the towne, and hath care of gouernement, giuing audience to the Bourgeois and strangers: so as the magistrat of the towne of Antuerpe consists of eigh- tene Schemats and a Bourgomaister, who hath great authoritie both in ciuile and crimi- nal causes. But for the execution of iustice, the prince hath two lieutenants, one for the criminall, whom they call Sculter; the other for ciuile causes, called Amman; which places the prince doth giue, and these go before all others. The office of the Sculter is to cause malefactors to be apprehended, demanding iustice of the soueraigne magistrat, and afterwards to execute the sentences which shall be giuen. The office of the Amman is to heare ciuile causes, and to require the feigneurs to dispatch and doe iustice, and to giue sentence at their charge that plead.

The same soueraigne magistrat doth chuse without any interuention of the prince, or his commissioners, certaine inferior magistrats, and among others two Treasurers, which be gentlemen of the peoples nomination; and one Receiver, of the people, named by the gentlemen: and these officers receive and disburse the publike mony by the ordinance of the said soueraigne magistrat; who doth also create the Councillors of the people, which are twelue in number, all out of the number of the Deans of Trades, as mariners, bakers, gardeners, smiths, and such like. And in the feigneurie of Macklyn the magistracie is equally diuided; for that of the twelue Senators or Shemats, there are six gentlemen, and six of the Deans of Trades, and the most honourable are the fish-mongers, butchers, bakers, gardeners, and brewers.

These Plebeian Councillors go vnto the Councill as well as the gentlemen, they heare suitors petitions, and giue their aduice, sometimes seditiously, when as they treat of disbursing any money which should come into the hands of the gentlemen; for that this sort of men are not capable to proceed with grauitie and moderation in the degree of superioritie; so as the insufficiencie, insolencie, and instabilitie of the people, and the perpetuall ielousie which these popular Councillors (who are powerfull by reason of the great number of men which follow them) entertaine against the gentlemen, haue caused many dangerous reuolts at sundrie times, vnder all their princes: for that of thirte six which haue ruled since Lewis of Harlembec, the first earle of Flanders, all haue felt some rebellion, except three only.

Of these good townes there are some which haue good store of publike reuenues, and among the rest, Antuerpe hath two hundred and fittie thousand crownes yearly rent: but both this and others were much indebted in the yere 1556, and we must beleue that E by reason of the continuall warres, they are more at this day, especially for that they haue wanted the industrie of arts and merchandise, the chiefe foundation of all the Estates of Flanders. And Antuerpe alone loofeth much yearly, for that the troubles haue altered their traffike.

The authoritie of lords which haue castles, lands, and other iurisdiccions is verie much limited, for that they cannot oppresse their vassalls in any sort, nor accept voluntarie presents from them without the expresse consent of the prince: but these lords leauing vnto the people the gouernement according vnto their lawes and customes, enioy the titles and reuenues with all modestie. It is true there are some lords which haue certaine particular iurisdiccions, in such sort absolute, as they doe not acknowledge any other supe- rior but God only.

The Clergie is verie mightie and rich throughout all the whole countrie, so as to stay their increafe of wealth, least they should grow more powerful, Charles the first made a law prohibiting all Clergie men to buy any land without licence expressly granted from the prince,

A prince; and in subsidies which are paid him, the Clergie paies his apart; and the con- ventions which the prince of this countrie hath with the Pope, are in a manner like vnto those of France, for he names, and the Pope confirms the Prelats, and no rescription is put in execution without the princes pleasure: moreover they cannot (by any commis- sion from the Pope) draw his subjects out of the State for any cause whatsoever, but he must depute commissioners vnto the place, for any matter that is in question. The extra- ordinary titles which the prince of these Estates hath, are, Chanoine of Saint Seruais, and Abbot of Saint Gertrude, which is a famous Monasterie of nunnies: He is also called Vicar perpetuall of the Empire, in all Friesland vnto the countrie which is called B Bethmarie vpon the confines of Denmarke; the which is a preheminence obtained by Maximilian of the Emperor Fredericke his father, as well for himselfe as his successors.

¶ The Religion.

Throughout all the Archdukes Estates in general, they haue no other exercise but of the Romish religion, yet there are few townes (especially of those that were in for- mer times reuolted) where there are not many Protestants, but they dare not make open profession thereof, seeing themselves restrained, and redie to be punished, if it be knowne. They that are earnest Papists hold that it is impossible to make them alter their religion, C and that the neighbourhood of the Protestants make them more zelous.

XXIII.

¶ Archbishops and Bishops in the Low Countries.

AS for the Estate of the Clergie throughout all the Low Countries in general, it XXXIII. consists of three Archbishops, and fiftene Bishops: that is, the Archbishop of Cambray hath vnder him, the Bishopricks of Arras, Tournay, S. Omer, and Namur.

The Archbishopricke of Macklyn hath vnder it the Bishops of Antuerpe, Gand, Bruges, Boffene, Ipre, and Ruremonde.

The Archbishop of Vtrecht hath vnder him the Bishops of Harlem in Holland, De- D uenter in Guelderland, Middleborough in Zeland, Leuuardin and Groningue in Frie- land.

The Archbishopricke of Cambray was erected by Pope Paul the fourth, in the yere 1562, for before it was but a Bishopricke, and the first Bishop was called Saint Diogene, a Grecian borne, he was consecrated Bishop at Arras, by the Archbishop of Reims, in the yere 390, and euer since the two Bishopricks were vntied vnder one Bishop vntill the yere 1094, in which yere they were diuided: and the Bishopricke of Cambray com- prehends vnder her iurisdiction the townes of Cambray, Mons, Condee, Athe, Quefnoy, Landrecy, Auesnes, Bins, Beaumont, Brenne, Soignes, Mauberge, Chimay, and in a manner all the countrie of Henault, Cambresis, and some small part of Artois, a part of E the townes of Valenciennes and Tournay.

The Clergie of Arras (after they had long pursued this seperation) in the end obtained of Pope Urban the eleuenth, a particular Bishop, in the yere 1094. The Bishop hath vnder his iurisdiction the townes of Arras, Douay, Bethune, Bapaume, Lens, Armentieres, Bouchain, La Bassée, a part of Valenciennes, with many borroughes and villages.

The Bishopricke of Tournay was erected in the yere 480, and some time after it was ioyned to the Bishopricke of Noyon, and continued fix hundred yeres vntied vnder one Bishop, till in the yere 1123, the seperation was graunted by the Bishop of Noyon, and the Bishopricke of Tournay. Saint Barnard was an earnest suitor vnto the Pope E for this seperation.

The Bishopricke of Saint Omer was erected, for that the towne of Terouenne being seized by the Emperour Charles the first, in the yere 1553, the reuenues of the Bisho- pado of Terouenne were diuided into three, one part went to the Bishopricke of Boul- logne, another part to the Bishopricke of Saint Omer for Artois, and the third to the Bishopricke of Ipre for Flaunders: wherefore, the Collegial Church of S. Omer was

was erected into a Cathedral in the year 1559, having vnder it ten townes, that is, Saint Omer, Aire, Hedin, Gravelin, &c. with many villages as well in Artois as in Flanders.

In the year 1559 the Collegiall Church of Saint Rombaut at Macklin was made a Metropolitan; besides the Bishoppicks that are vnder it, there were assigned seuenteen townes, Macklin, Louvain, Brussels, Tillemont, Lande, Dist, Arscot, &c. with many villages.

The Collegiall Church of our Lady at Antuerpe was erected to a Cathedral in the year 1559, with episcopall jurisdiction ouer seuen townes, that is to say, Antuerpe, Liere, Bergues, &c. and many villages.

The Collegiall Church of Saint Iohn in the towne of Gand was made a Bishoppicke, in the year 1559, and it hath vnder it foure townes, Gand, Andeuarde, &c. with many villages.

The Collegiall Church of Saint Iohn the Euangelist at Boisleduc was changed to a Cathedral in the year 1559, having vnder it ten townes, Boisleduc, Helmont, Bomet, &c. with many villages.

The Collegiall Church of Saint Donat at Bruges in the year 1559, was made a Cathedral, comprehending vnder it nine townes, Bruges, Scluse, Ardenbourg, &c. with many villages.

The Monasterie of the regular Chanoinis in the church of Saint Martin at Ippe was in the year 1559, made a Cathedral Church of the secular Chanoinis, containing vnder that episcopall jurisdiction ten townes, Ippe, Dunkerke, Bergue, Furnes, &c. with many borroughes and villages.

The Collegiall Church built in honour of the holy Ghost at Ruremonde was in the year 1559 changed to a Cathedral, with episcopall jurisdiction, having vnder it ten townes, Ruremonde, Nimeguen, Zutphen, Venelo, &c. and many villages.

The Bishoppick of Vtrecht was erected by Pope Sixtus in the year 690, & it was made a Metropolitan in the year 1561; it hath vnder it the five Bishoppicks aboue mentioned: as for the particular limites of the Bishoppicke of Vtrecht, it contains all the territories of Vtrecht, and a part of Holland and Guelderland, with the seigneuries of Buren, Columboorg, Vianen, &c. in the which are comprehended thirtie townes, with many villages.

The Parochiall Church of Saint Baouin in Harlem, was made a Cathedral in the year 1559, having vnder that jurisdiction twelue townes in Holland, and many villages.

The Collegiall Church of S. Liebbin at Delft, was made a Cathedral in the year 1559, having vnder it fite and twentie townes, and many villages.

The Collegiall Church of S. Peter at Middlebrough, was in the year 1559 changed to a Cathedral, vnder whose jurisdiction are ten townes, with many villages.

The Parochiall Church of S. Vr at Leuwarden, was made a Cathedral in the year 1559, having vnder it ten townes and many villages.

The Parochiall Church of S. Martin at Groninghe, was in the year 1559 chaunged to a Cathedral, containing vnder the jurisdiction all the territories of the towne which is very great, and the Islands of Rollinge and Boithin.

At this day that the Estates of the vniued Prouinces hold the Bishoppicke of Vtrecht, and other Bishoppicks, they haue with the change of religion confounded the order which the church of Rome had established there.

As this day that the Estates of the vniued Prouinces hold the Bishoppicke of Vtrecht, and other Bishoppicks, they haue with the change of religion confounded the order which the church of Rome had established there.

XXV.

The Lord and Earle of Flanders.
The first called Bucke, was made the first Forrester of the countie of Flanders, in the year of Christ 821; by Dagobert king of France, for him and his successors he gouerned the countie two and fiftie yeares, and died ninetie and two yeares old, in the year 894.

Anthony second sonne to *Zynghe*, succeeded his father to the gouernment of Flanders in the year 894; at that time the Gothes, Vandales, Huns, and such other barbarous nations, moued the Chanoinis to confesse without any resistance, of the said Forrester, who made himselfe into France with his people.

Bouchart

A Bouchart, the third sonne to *Zyderic*, called the Bucke, by the death of *Anthony* his brother, was deprived of the estate of Forrester of Flanders, by *Theodoric* king of France, yet he granted him the seigneurie of Halbeck. The countie of Flanders was againe ruined by the Huns, Gothes, Vandales, and other nations, so as the greatest part of Flanders remained desolate and not inhabited, about a hundred yeares.

Elofred or *Elofseif*, sonne to *Bouchart*, was by the deccale of his father and mother prince of Louuayn, lord of Halbeck, and Forrester of Flanders, he died in the year of our Lord 792.

Zyderick, prince of Bucke, sonne to *Elofred*, hauing married a noble ladie of Germany called *Flandrina*, of whom the countie tooke the name, was made great Forrester by *Charles* the Great, to cleanse the waies and countrie from theues and robbers; where in he behaued himselfe valiantly, for the which he was inuested the first earle of Halbeck: he gouerned this countie as a vertuous prince foure and fortie yeares, vnder *Charlemagne* and *Lewis* the Gentle, his sonne, kings of France, and died in the year 836: he was a good Christian, and drew vnto him many Bishops, Pastors, Preachers, and learned men to conuert the Pagans, which remained there in great numbers.

Inguerran or *Inguerrant*, sonne to *Zyderick* the second, succeeded his father in the gouernment of Flanders, and the countie of Halbeck, in the year 836; he liued vnder *Lewis* the Gentle, and *Charles* the Bald, kings of France, to whom he did homage for his lands and seigneuries: he did redifie many townes, castles, and houses, which had been ruined; he died in the year 852, having gouerned sixteen yeares.

Odoacre or *Audacre*, sonne to *Inguerrant*, succeeded his father in the gouernment of Flanders, in the year 852, and ruled eleuen yeares; he also caused many townes to be repaired, and did wall about Gand, he died in the year 863.

Baudouin, surnamed Arme of yron, sonne to the said *Odoacre*, so called by reason of his valour and worthe exploits: He carried away by force the faire *Indith*, widow to *Edward* king of England, and daughter to *Charles* the Bald, emperor and king of France, so as for a time he could not come into grace with the emperor, who in the end was pacified, and made him the first earle of Flanders, giuing him in dower all the countie of Flanders; yet refusing vnto himselfe and to his successors the soueraignie of the said countie: he hauing gouerned the prouince fite and twentie yeares as Forrester, and fiteene as earle; he died in the towne of Arras, in the year 877, or as some say 879.

Baudouin, the Bald, sonne to the other *Baudouin*, was second earle of Flanders, he obtained many victories against the Danes and Normans, he died in the year 919, and lies at Saint Peters nere Gand.

Arnould the old, surnamed the Great, eldest sonne to *Baudouin* the Bald, was third earle of Flanders, in the year 919; he had great warres against the house of Normandie, hauing caused duke *William*, called Long sword, to be slaine: being ninetie two yeares old, he died in the year 964, and is interred at S. Peters by Gand.

E Baudouin the young, third of that name, and fourth earle of Flanders, became by a voluntarie transport of his father (being his only sonne) earle of Flanders: hauing gouerned three yeares, he died in the year 967, and lies at S. Bertin.

Arnould the Young, second of that name, the only sonne to *Baudouin* the Young, fift earle of Flanders, tooke the gouernment in the year 968, who died of a burning feauer at Gand, the thirteenth of March 988, and lies at S. Peters nere Gand.

Baudouin, with the faire Beard, fourth of that name, fift earle of Flanders, eldest sonne to *Arnould* the Young: in the beginning of his gouernment he had warre against the emperor *Henric* the second; he was valiant, and therefore the emperor loued him, and gave him *Walachrie*, and the Islands of *Zeland*, for him and his heires, whereby there grew long warres betwixt the Flemings and the Hollanders: hauing gouerned the countie six and fortie yeares he died in the year of our Lord 1035: He is buried at Saint Peters by Gand.

Baudouin, fift of that name, called the Gentle, or of *Ylle*, only sonne to *Baudouin* with the faire Beard, was the seuenth Earle of Flanders: he had in his time warre against the emperor

Ec ij

capitour

emperour *Henrie* the third, and hauing gouerned the cuntry three and thirtie yeres, he died in the yere 1067, and is interred at S. Peters.

Baudouin, sixt of that name, called of Mons, fumamed also the Peaceable, the eight earle of Flanders, was sonne to *Baudouin* the fift; he neuer wore armes nor sword, his gouernement was verie peaceable, and died in the yere 1070.

Arnold the Simple, third of that name, ninth earle of Flanders, eldest sonne to *Baudouin* of Mons; he was much troubled by his vnckle *Robert* the Frilon, who vnder colour to be Tutor to his nephews, depriued them of their succcession. He did hazard two battels against his vnckle, and was slaine in the last, in the yere 1072.

Robert, first of that name, fumamed the Frilon, tenth earle of Flanders, yonger sonne to earle *Baudouin* the fift. After the death of *Arnold* the Simple, slaine in battell, and his brother *Baudouin*, with his mother *Rithilde*, being fled into Haynault, he tooke the said earldome without any resistance; he died in the yere 1077.

Robert the young Frilon, fumamed of Ierusalem, eleuenth earle of Flanders, sonne to *Robert* the first, succeeded in the yere 1077; he crost himselfe to go against the Infidells: going into France to the Coronation of king *Lewis*, passing the brdge of Nece neere vnto Meaux, his horse stumbling fell vpon him, so as the third day after, he died in the yere 1111, and is buried at S. Vast by Arras.

Baudouin, fteenth of that name, twelfth earle of Flanders, succeeded in the yere 1111; he was a good Officer, and died in the yere 1119, hauing before his death and by his will made his heire *Charles* of Denmarke, his cousin, sonne to *Canutus* king of Denmarke; he lies at S. Bertin.

Charles, first of that name, fumamed the Good, thirteenth earle of Flanders, was, before the death of his cousin *Baudouin*, instituted his heire, and tooke the gouernement in the yere 1119; he deferred the name of Good, for his vertues and holie life: he banished the Lewes out of Flanders, and died without heires, in the yere 1127; he lies buried at S. Christophers at Bruges.

William of Normandie, fourteenth earle of Flanders, sole heire of Normandie, but depriued of the duchie by his vnckle *Henrie* king of England, was instituted in the said earldome by *Lewis* the Grosse, king of France, in the yere 1128. At his entrance he carried himselfe modestly: but thinking himselfe assured, he became cruell and a tyrant, which was his ruine. For in his place, the Nobilitie and Estates of Flanders did chuse *Thierry* earle of Elface, sonne to *Thierry* of Elface and *Gertrude* of Flanders, daughter to *Robert* the first; the which he seeking to hinder by armes, was slaine at the siege of Aloft, in the yere 1129, he lies at S. Bertin.

Thierry of Elface, fifteenth earle of Flaunders, was, by the Prelats, Nobles, and People, receiued to the earldome: He was a verie politicke prince, valiant, and discreet: He made foure voyages to the Holie-land, and before the fourth, he inuested his eldest sonne *Philp* in the cuntry of Flaunders, and being returned, he left him the gouernement, and retired himselfe into the monasterie of Watene, which he had founded: he died fixtie nine yeres old, in the yere of our Redemption 1163, and lies buried at Watene.

Philp of Elface, eldest sonne to *Thierry*, fumamed the Great, by the cession of his father was sixteenth earle of Flanders, and was a prudent prince: He made two voyages into Syria, to succour the king of Ierusalem his cousin: and died in his last voyage before Aire, and was by the commandement of his wife buried at Cleruault: he died without heires, hauing gouerned Flanders about two and twentie yeres.

Baudouin, eighth of that name, earle of Haynault and Namur, seuenteenth earle of Flanders, by his wife *Marguerite* of Elface, sister to *Philp* of Elface, succeeded by the death of his brother in law, in the yere of our Lord God 1192: He was descended in direct line from *Baudouin*, second sonne to *Baudouin* of Mons, expelled by *Robert* the Frilon his vnckle. He had warre against *Thierry* of Beures, earle of Aloft, against *Mewie* earle of Namur, and against the earle of Neuers; he died in yere 1195, and lies at Mons in Haynault, in the Church of S. Vaudru.

Edm. iiii

Baudouin called of Constantinople the ninth of that name, eighteenth Earle of Flanders, succeeded in this cuntry in the yere 1194, and in the Earldome of Haynault; and so the said cuntry of Flanders returned to the right and lawfull heire, which had bene vniustly detained from them by *Robert* the Frilon and his successors, since the yere 1072, that the said *Robert* (at the battell of Cassell) defeated *Arnold* the right heire, and Earle of Flanders, and chased away *Baudouin* afterwards Earle of Haynault, brother to the said *Arnold*, vntill this yere 1194: he was chosen Emperour of Constantinople, and in the yere 1205 he was taken by the king of Bulgaria and sent into Turkie. He lies in Grece.

Ferdinand of Portugal, sonne to *Sancho* king of Portugal, the nineteenth Earle of Flanders by his wife the Lady *Jone* countesse and heire of the said cuntry, eldest daughter to Count *Baudouin* the ninth of that name: he had sharpe war against *Philip Augustus* the French king, and was taken at the battell of Bouines, and carried prisoner to the Loure in Paris, where he remained twelve yeres, finally being set at libertie he dyed soone after, in the yere 1232. He lies at Margiettes.

Thomas, yongest sonne to *Thomas* Earle of Sauoy, was also in the right of his wife *Jone*, the twentieth Earle of Flanders for a time, and died without heires.

Jone Countesse of Flanders and Haynault (eldest daughter to *Baudouin* of Constantinople) succeeded in the gouernment of the said counties in the yere 1195 (being then but seuen yeres old) vnder the gouernment of her vnckle *Philip* Earle of Namur, vntill that C the married *Ferdinand* of Portugal: she died in the yere 1243, and lies at Margiettes by her first husband.

Marguerite, second daughter to *Baudouin* the ninth, succeeded, by the death of the Lady *Jone* her sister, in the counties of Flanders and Haynault, being widow to her second and last husband. Being vnder the gardainship of *Richard* or *Boschard* of Auenues, sonne to *Janes* of Auenues, issued from a noble and auncient house in Haynault, Pronost, and Chanoine of Saint Peters at Lisse, her kinsman; he blinded with the beautie of his pupil, suborned her (being yonge) and won her to yeeld vnto his lust, by whom he had two sonnes: after which she married *William* of Bourbon, Lord of Dampierre, and of S. Desfier, brother to *Archambault* Lord of Bourbon, by whom also she had three sonnes and D one daughter, whom she preferred (before the two first that were vnlawfull) to the succcession of the countie of Flanders, holding the two first for bairds, the which bred her great trouble: she did settle the children of Dampierre her heires, and died in the yere 1279. She lies at Flines.

William of Dampierre, eldest sonne to *William* of Dampierre, and the Lady *Marguerite* Countesse of Flanders, by an accord of transaction made with *John* of Auenues Earle of Haynault his bafe brother, obtained the title of Earle of Flanders, and was the one and twentieth Earle. He crost himselfe and went into the East with king *Lewis* in his last voiage he was taken prisoner by the Turkes or Sarrafins, for the which he paid a great ranome: being returned, he died soone after in the yere 1251: he lies at Flines, hauing E gouerned his countries three yeres, he died without heires.

Gay of Dampierre, second sonne to *William* of Bourbon Lord of Dampierre, and of *Marguerite* Countesse of Flanders, was the two and twentieth Earle of Flanders. He was a wife and vertuous prince, but he trusted his friends too much, for the which he smarted. He died a prisoner at Compiegne (being aboute eightie yeres old) in the yere 1304, he was buried at Flines, hauing gouerned foure and fiftie yeres.

Robert the third of that name, fumamed of Bethunes, for that before he was Earle, he was Lord of Bethunes: he was the three and twentieth earle of Flanders, a vertuous & hardie prince: he resigned to the French king the townes of Lisse and Douay: he went into Sicilie with *Charles* king of Sicilie, and duke of Anjou his father in law, against the baird *Manfrey*, whom he slew with his owne hand: he killed *Isolante* of Bourgondie his second wife, with the bridle of his horse, for that she had poisoned *Charles* his sonne by his first wife: he died in the yere 1322, in the towne of Ipre, being foure score and two yeres old, and lies in Saint Martins at Ipre.

Loth of Neuers called of Crefsy, for that he was slaine at the Battell of Crefsy, the only

only sonne to *Lewis* earle of Neuers and of the countesse of Rethel, succeeded his father and mother in the counties of Neuers and Rethel; and also in the countie of Flanders, to *Robert* of Bethunes his grandfather by the fathers side, in the yeare 1322, notwithstanding that *Robert* called of Cassel, his vnckle, would haue seised vpon the countie of Flanders: he died in the yeare 1346.

Lewis called *Malain* or of *Male*, for that he was borne at *Male* in the countie of Flanders, the only sonne to *Lewis* of Neuers, called of *Cressy*, succeeded in the yeare 1346 in the counties of Flanders, Rethel, and Neuers, and by the decease of his great grandmother by the mothers side, in the earldomes of *Aras* and *Bourgondie*: a valiant and warlike prince, but too full of reuenge: hauing ruled eight and thirtie yeares, he was slaine by the duke of *Berry* vpon some controuersie that grew betwixt them for the countie of *Bourgondie*: he died in the yeare 1383, and lies in *S. Picotat* at *Lille*.

Philip of France surnamed the hardie was fourth sonne to *John* of *Valois* the French king, and brother to *Charles* the first, by whose gift he was duke of *Bourgondie*, and afterwards by the marriage of *Marguerite* (the only daughter and heire general to Count *Lewis Malain*) was the six and twentieth earle of Flanders, duke of *Brabant*, earle of *Artois* and *Bourgondie*, & lord of *Salines* and *Macklin*: he had great authoritie in France, for that he was a very wise prince, and died at *Hault* in the yeare 1404, he lies at *Dijon* in *Bourgondie*.

John duke of *Bourgondie* eldest sonne to *Philip* duke of *Bourgondie* and of *Marguerite* heire and countesse of Flanders, &c. succeeded in the duchie of *Bourgondie*, counties of Flanders, *Artois*, and *Bourgondie*, and seigneuries of *Salines*, and *Macklin*, in the yeare 1404, he was a man of a small stature, but of a great courage; he punished the *Liegeois*: he was slaine vpon the bridge at *Montreau* in the yeare 1419: he gouerned his countries fiftene yeare, and was interred in the monasterie of the *Cartusians* by *Dijon* in *Bourgondie*.

Philip called the Good, for his admirable vertues, was the only sonne to *John* duke of *Bourgondie*, and the eight and twentieth earle of Flanders, of *Artois*, *Bourgondie*, *Palatin*, lord of *Salines*, and *Macklin*. He made a league with the English, the better to be reuenged of his fathers death, the which caused great wars in France: he punished the rebels in *Gand*, and subdued the *Ligeois*; he ruined *Dinant*, ioyning to his house the duchies of *Brabant*, *Luxembourg*, and *Limbourg*, and the earldomes of *Holland*, *Zeland*, *Haynault*, and *Namur* (the house of *Bourgondie* being then in the heigh of greatness and authoritie) he instituted the order of the *Golden Fleece*, in the yeare 1419 he died (being seuentie and two yeares old) in the yeare 1477, in the towne of *Bruges*, and lies at *Dijon*.

Charles called in his youth earle of *Charolois*, the only lawfull sonne to duke *Philip* the Good, succeeded his father in the earldome of Flanders, and was the nine and twentieth earle, and heire general of the house of *Bourgondie*: a very hardie and warlike prince, who in his fathers life time led a great armie before *Paris*. He punished the *Liegeois*, who had rebelled against their Bishop his cousin: in the end of his daies he lost three battells, the first at *Morat* in *Suifferland*, the second at *Granson*, and the third at *Nancy* in *Lorraine*, where he lost his life, in the yeare 1476. He lies at *Bruges* in our *Ladies* church.

Maximilian surnamed *Hart of Steele*, Archduke of *Austria*, sonne to the Emperor *Ferdinand* the third, married (without the priuite of king *Lewis* the eleuenth) the lady *Mary*, the only daughter and heire of the house of *Bourgondie*: he was taken prisoner at *Bruges* by the *Flemmings*, and detained by the space of nine moneths, but they released him, fearing his father who marcht with a great power to relieue him: he died in the yeare 1519, and lies at *Neustat* in *Germanie*.

Philip eldest sonne to the Archduke *Maximilian* who was Emperour of *Germanie*, succeeded in all the duchies, earldomes, and other seigneuries left by the death of his mother, in the yeare 1482, being then very young, vnder the gouernment of his father: during which time the countie of Flanders suffered much. This prince being but young,

W25

A was of a good vnderstanding, and died in his youth in *Spaine*, not without suspition of poison, in the yeare of our Lord God 1505, (his father being yet liuing) and lies at *Granado*.

Charles the first, emperour of *Germanie*, king of *Spaine*, eldest sonne to *Philip* Archduke of *Austria*, duke of *Bourgondie*, and earle of Flanders, &c. succeeded his father in the yeare 1505, in all the lands and seigneuries left by the death of his fayd father: a prince worthe of memorie: he performed many memorabile acts too long to recite; and died in *Spaine* in the yeare 1558. He lies at *Granado*.

Philip, only sonne to the emperour *Charles* the first, was borne the one and twentieth of *May*, in the yeare 1527: He was inuested during the life of the Emperour his father in all the duchies, earldomes, and other seigneuries of the Low Countries, being two and twentie yeares old, which was in the yeare 1549, and after his fathers death was king of *Spaine*, &c. He sent diuers gouernors into the Low Countries, vnder the which he hath had great ciuile warres, as well for religion, as for the priuiledges of the provinces: so as some of them haue withdrawne themselves from his obedience, being vnted vnder pretext of their priuiledges, and for religion. Finally, finding his life declining, in the yeare 1598, he gaue his eldest daughter *Isabella Clara Eugenia* in marriage to the Archduke *Albert* of *Austria* his nephew, and in fauour of the marriage he gaue them all the Low Countries in generall, with the countie of *Bourgondie*, and added the C thirteenth of September, in the yeare 1598, being seuentie two yeares old.

Albert Archduke of *Austria* and *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, according to the donation, tooke possession of the Low Countries, which remained vnder the obedience of *Philip* the second, father to the said *Isabella*, and with the consent of *Philip* the third, king of *Spaine* &c. They fought by mildnesse to vnite all the provinces of the Low Countries vnder their obedience, but not able to effect it, they vsed force: but after nine yeares war, they resolu'd to make a peace at what price soeuer, sending to the Estates to that end: wherein the French king and the king of *England* employed themselves. In the end a truce was made with them after the same manners as it is set downe in the end of the discourse of the generall Estates of the vnited Provinces: by which meanes he doth quietly enioy the provinces and townes aboue mentioned.

XXVI.



OF THE GENERALL ESTATES OF THE VNITED PROVINCES OF THE LOW COUNTRIES, AND WHAT THEY HOLD.

The Contents.

- A** Catalogue and description of the lands and countries which the vnited Estates of the Low Countries hold. 2. Scituation of the Island of *Zeland*, and others that lie nere vnto it: their confines and circuit. 3. Description of *Holland*, and the chiefest townes, among others of *Amsterdam*. 4. Of the duchie of *Gueldres*, and her townes. 5. Of the countie of *Ouerijsel*. 6. *Vtrecht*. 7. East and West *Frisland*. 8. *Groningue*. 9. Qualitie of the ayre of the Island of *Holland*, *Zeland*, &c. their good pastures, and the often inundations in the Island of *Holland*: Of the humor and disposition of the people of those Islands, and *Vtrecht*, *Frisland*, and other provinces: and of the tall stature of the *Hollanders*. 10. Of the vnited Estates of the Low Countries, growing by trafficke at Sea, pastures, and fishing.

living in Holland, pastures and wheat in Zeland, and horses in Friseland. 11. The forts and Armies of defence which the united Provinces hold. 12. The government and police of this Common-weale both as land and sea: their manner of assembling the Estates: How matters are propounded and resolved by the seven Provinces: Of the Council of State of the said Provinces: Of how many persons, and what gentlemen it did consist in the year 1600. 13. Of the Estates of the Province of Holland, their manner of assembling, and what townes of the Province are called *Stadts*: and the chiefe points for the which they are commonly called. Of the great Council and Chambers of accounts: & many of the said province. 14. Of the Estates of the countie of Zeland, and of what townes it doth consist. 15. Of the principallitie and estate of Vtrecht, with the members. 16. Of the estate and seignurie of Friseland, divided into three quarters: Of the forme and place where they hold their assemble. 17. Of the estate of Overysel, consisting of three jurisdictions. 18. Of the estate and government of the towne of Groningue, and the Communes for countie jurisdictions, divided into three parts. 19. Of the religion of the united Provinces, and what sects are crept in amongst them. 20. Articles of truce concluded in the year 1609, betwixt the Archdukes, and the general Estates of the united Provinces. 21. Genealogie of the Earles of Holland, Zeland, and Lords of Friseland.



Or as much as that part which they commonly call at this day the generall Estates of the united Provinces of the Low Countries, is a kind of Common-weale, and that the king of Spaine and Archdukes have treated with them as with fouraigenes; I have thought it fit to fet downe at large what I could learne, either by mine owne experience, or by instructions from others, of this Common-weale. I will first number the countries which they hold, then I will continue the description. They doe hold at this day the Provinces of Zeland, Holland, Friseland, Vtrecht, Groningue, and the countie therabouts, Overysel, Drent, the countie of Zutphen, and three parts of the countie of Gueldres; with some parcels of Brabant and Flanders, all which countries did heretofore contribute to the warres.

- II. The Island of Zeland with the neighbour Islands lie betwixt the mouthes of the riuers D of Meuse and Escaut, and haue for their bounds vpon the North part, Holland; vpon the East, Brabant; on the South, Flanders; and vpon the West, the English sea. The Islands of Zeland are seuen in number; whereof there are three beyond the mouthes of the riuier of Escaut, towards Brabant and the East; and for this cause are called the East Islands, and those be Scalde, Duueland, and Tolen: and foure on this side the Escaut towards the West, and they are Walcheren, Zuytueland, Nortbeueland, and Vuolledijck. Scalde is the greatest Island of those that are beyond the riuier of Escaut, which they of the countie call Tlanduan Sijchouren: it is now about seuen miles in circuit, and in former times it hath bene greater, and onely distinguished from Nortbeueland by a little strait. The chiefe townes are Zirzee and Brouwershaue. They hold that Zirzee is the most auncient towne of all those of Zeland: it was built in the year 1349 by one *Sirraque*: It hath bene long in great esteeme by reason of the Port, and the great concourse of Merchants, but since that the haven hath bene choakt vp with sand, it is neither so rich nor so much esteemed. Brouwershaue hath scarce any inhabitants but fishermen, which liue by the sea. Duueland hath foure miles in circuit; there are none but villages in it: In the year 1530, it was ouerflowne by the sea, but being well fortified with banks, and layed drie, this losse was soone recovered. Tolen lies next vnto Brabant, and is diuided from it by a little strait. There is the little towne of Tolen, and not farre from it the pleasant place of S. Martins Dijk. On this side of the Escaut towards the East the chiefe Island is Walcheren, which lies on the East towards Brabant, on the South is Flanders; Holland on the North, and England on the West: it is the chiefe of all Zeland, and all men in a manner call it Zeland, and of a thousand strangers which come into this countie, it may be there is scarce one that goes away with the knowledge of the name: it hath ten miles in circuit. The chiefe townes are Middlebourg, Fleissingue, Armude,

A Armude or Armue, and Vere or Camphere, and there are many villages: Middlebourg is a faire town, in which there are goodly buildings, especially the Towne-house, which they do beautifie dayly: the streets and market places are very spacious: the place wherethe Bourgesses and Merchants assemble euery morning (built like a cloister) is wonderful pleasant, and the haven is very safe and commodious: this is the chiefe of all the townes of Zeland, and one of the best frequented with merchants of all the Low Countries. Fleissingue is a good towne, it was engaged by the Estates to Elizabeth queen of England deceased, and likewise Briele, for certaine summes of money which the lent them: in the which the king of England hath an English gouernor and a garison entered: in this day. Armue hath a good port, but the towne is little and poore; about three yeares and a halfe since they did bind passengers to goe and imbarke at Armue to passe into Holland, to the end they might restore the towne to her former beautie by this passage; for many hold that in former times it was a good towne. Zuydeuclande is of a good bignesse, it looks towards the banks of Brabant and Flanders, but of late yeares it hath bene so ouerflowne, as it is lesse by the halfe: The towne of Romersuall seems to be come from it, the which is enuironed with the sea, and doth not subsist but by the trade of salt: there the earles of Zeland were accustomed to take the oath. On the West part of this Island is the towne of Goefe vpon a mouth of the Escaut, which they call Scenge: this towne is more pleasant than great, and it is alone

C in this Island. Nortbeueland (with the towne of Cortchene, and many villages) was drowned with an inundation which happened in the yere 1532, but they recovered it by little and little. Vuolledijck is a little Island, in the which there are but two villages. And to take all Zeland together, it hath ten townes, and one hundred villages, or some few more. This province hauing endured much, all her townes hauing bene either forced by famine or siege, the banks of the countie broken, so as they past with boats into the land; they haue in the end freed themselves from those miseries, and flourish againe in trafficke, people, and shipping, according to their deuse, *Luctor et Emergo*.

Holland hath for bounds vpon the West, the British sea; vpon the North, the Cimbricks on the East, a strait which discouers Friseland; vpon the South-East, the countie of Overysel; and towards the South, that of Vtrecht: it is sixtie miles in circuit; the breadth is very small, for that they hold that a trauelier standing in the midst of the countries, may go vnto the extremitie in three houres, and there are some places where it is but a mile or lesse from the midst vnto the sea, or to a gulf of the sea.

The townes are Dordrecht, otherwise Dort, Delft, Leyden, Harlem, Amsterdam, Goude, Naerden, Mude, Wesop, Edam, Parmerede, Alcmene, Enkuyfen, Home, Rotterdam, &c. Dort is the chiefe town of all Holland; it is rather long than broad, and hath a very long street, besides many little ones, which are exceeding faire: there is a very faire church the which is conuerted to a temple, whereas the Protestants do preach, and there is also an hospitall for souldiers that are maimed or hurt in the States seruice, or are sick; where they are attended & serued as carefully as they can desire. Harlem is a great towne and well built, where there is to be seene the greatest church in Holland; it stands neere vnto the market place. Leyden is situated vpon that place which *Pholomee* and *Plinie* call the midst of the mouth of Rhin. Amsterdam is at this day one of the best townes of Europe, and built vpon piles like vnto Venice: about two hundred and eighty yeres since the felloes of Amstelt fortified it, and made good rampiers, gates, and townes; but all being burnt through the enuie of her neighbors, she began to be walled about in the yere 1582: it is now inhabited by all sorts of Nations, and hath gotten all the trafficke and reputation from Antuerpe: you shall not onely see dwelling there Italians, Spaniards, Portugals, English, Scottish, French, Polonians, Danes, Swedes, Norwegians, Liouinians, and Germans, but also Americans, East and West Indians, and Moores. Goude stands vpon the riuier of Yssel, it is a faire and rich towne. Besides the townes which I haue named, there is the Hage or Haye, whereas the generall of the armie, and the chiefe of the Estates remaine. This province in the beginning of the wars, was more ruined

ned than any other : hir townes haue bene besieged, taken, burnt, &c. but in the end, A through war it is come to rest, increasing in prosperitie and great wealth, augmenting some part of her townes, yea when they had their enemies vpon their frontiers, so as the people are multiplied in such sort, and there is such abundance of shipping, as there is not any countrey in the world at this day like vnto it : they saile throughout all the world, and flourish in trade of merchandise, the which will easily appeare if we consider the townes of Amsterdam, Rotterdam, Enchusen and others.

IIII.

Geldres is a prouince where in old time the Sicambrians did inhabit, and vnder that name were also comprehended they of Cleues, Monts, Marke, and Iuliers : some hold it tooke the name of Geldres of Gelduba, a towne standing in old time vpon the Rhin, B whereof Tacitus makes mention, but at this day there is no memorie thereof. *Musler* holds, that the first lords of this countrey (who then and long after carried no greater title than that of Aduocats) were two brethren issued from the French, *Winchard* and *Leopold du Pont*, who built a castell called Pont Gelder, which castell hath long retained the name of Pont, and is ioyned to the towne of Geldre, which hath giuen name to the whole prouince. It hath for limits vpon the North, the countrey of Friseland, vpon the North-West, a gulfie of the Germane sea, commonly called the Zuyderzee; vpon the South, the river of Meuse diuides it from Brabant to the South-East is the duchie of Iuliers vpon the East, it is diuided from the duchie of Cleues by the river of Wahal at the Island of Grauenweerd, whereas collonel *Schenck* built his scastle; and towards the West, is C Holland, and the seigneurie of Vtrecht.

The duchie of Geldres and countie of Zurphen contains the townes of Arnhem, Zurphen, Nymegen, and Ruremond, which are the foure chiefe of the whole countrey, and make the foure quarters of these two prouinces, and are seated vpon foure diuers rivers, and subiect to foure seuerall Bishops. There are in this prouince Venlo vpon the Meuse, Geldre, Stralen, Erckelens, and Wachendoncke, in the Champain countie, Hatten vpon Issel, Elbruch and Harderwicke vpon the Zuyderzee, Wageningen vpon the Rhin, Tyel and Bomel vpon the Wahal : there are many other towns which in old time haue bene walled, but they had bene spoiled, and in these last wars vtterly ruined, the which be Keppell, Burch, Ghendt, Battemburgh, Montfort, Eche, and others, the which D do still enioy the ancient priuiledges of townes.

Arnhem was in old time called Arnacum, it is a good towne and spacious, seated vpon the right banke of the river of Rhin, halfe a league from the which is Fossa Drusiana, now called Yffell Dord; whereas *Drusus* to keepe his souldiers from idleness, caused them to dig a channell, which drew the water out of the Rhin into the river of Yffell. This towne of Arnhem is the chiefe of the valley, which is one of the foure quarters of the duchie of Geldres, vnder which towne are the townes of Hatten, Harderwicke, Elbruch, and Wageningen, with many villages and castells, with their iurisdiccions, subiect to the iustice of the Droffart of that quarter, the which is enioured by the Zuyderzee, the rivers of Rhin and Yffell. Touching the spiritualtie, the towne of Arnhem before the E troubles, was subiect to the Bishop of Vtrecht in this towne in old time the dukes of Geldres made their residence, and were interred.

Nymegen is a free towne and a fee of the Empire : some write that it was built by *Mergus* king of Gaule, and was called Nouiomagus; it stands vpon the river of Wahal. *Yffell* the sonne of the king of the Cattles fauoured this town, being borne there, and enlarged it, so as the lower part of the towne is yet called Hesselmarck : the castell is very ancient, and stands yet vpon the toppie of a little hill ouerlooking the towne, the which some say was built by *Cesar*, to commaund the countrey thereabouts. This towne makes a quarter, and vnder it are comprehended the townes of Bomel and Tiel, which are walled, and Ghendt which lies open, yet hath it the priuiledges of a towne. F This towne was engaged by *William* king of the Romanes, earle of Holland &c. to the earle of Geldres, for one and twentie thousand markes of siluer, vpon condition that he should redeeme it at a certaine time, or else he should enioy the towne with the iurisdiction as his owne inheritance; the which the Emperour *Konradus* did afterwards confirme,

A fine, neither was the money euer repayed, and this towne retains the iurisdiction and prerogative to coyne money, as an imperiall towne.

Ruremond is a good towne, strong, and pleasing, seated vpon the riuer of Meuse, ioyning to the mouth of that of Ruuer : It is the chiefe towne of one of the foure quarters of Geldres, vnder whose iurisdiction are comprehended the townes of Venlo, Guelder, *Straelen*, Wachendonck, and Erckelans, all walled and strong.

Zurphen is a countie of it selfe, and numbered for one of the seuenteen Prouinces. This towne stands vpon the right banke of the riuer of Issel : It was vniued by marriage vnto the duchie of Gueldres, and makes one of the foure quarter. The townes and iurisdiction B on which are subiect vnto the said countie, are Doesbourg, Dotcum, Brunkhorst, Lochoot, Groll, Bredenoerd, Keppel, Bourg, Gand, Sherenbourg, which are, or haue bene walled townes, besides many good villages.

The countie or countrey of Oueryffel was in former times vnder the principalltie of the Bishops of Vtrecht, and called the High diocesse : but the emperor *Charles* 5 hauing obtained the temporalltie of both diocesses from the bishop, he made two prouinces, the one of Vtrecht, and the other of Oueryffel, the which are numbered among the 17 prouinces, and are now subiect to the vniued Estates. This countie is so called, for that it C lay beyond the riuer of Issel. It hath vpon the North side, Friseland, and a part of the countie of Groningue; vpon the South the countie of Zurphen; to the East Westphalia; and vpon the West the Zuyderzee. It is watted by the riuers of Issel, Vidre, Regge, Dan-noire, and Wahal. The whole prouince is diuided into three great bayliuicks, that is, of Salandt (so called of the old Saliens) Tuent, and Vollenhouen, which is in the middle of the other two. Salandt contains vnder it many good townes, among the which there are three imperiall Hans townes, Deuenter, Campen, and Swoble : The lesser townes are Hasselt, Couoerden, Genemuiden, Ommon, Hardenbourg, Wifoon, and Grothout. Tuent hath the townes of Oldenzel, Ommen, Enchede, Ghoor, Dyeperham, Dallen, Rissen, and Almelo. The quarter of Vollenhouen, hath a towne of D that name, with a castle, where the Bishop of Vtrecht had a palace : and the towne of Strethouen.

The countie and seigneurie of Vtrecht was in old time belonging vnto a prince, and particular prelate, who had both the spiritual and temporall iurisdiction, the which was giuen by the kings of France, vnto *S. Wilbeard* the first Bishop, who was an Englishman : and this estate did consist of two diocesses, the one called the lower, which is the prouidence of Vtrecht; and the other the high diocesse, which is the countie of Oueryffel, and thus stands. But *Henry* of Bauaria, Bishop of Vtrecht, being expelled out of the towne by his iurisdiction, and oppressed by the duke of Gueldres, about the year 1327, resigned all his right and interest to the temporall iurisdiccions of the countie of Vtrecht and Oueryffel, to the emperor *Charles* the fifth, who restored him to the possession of his spiritual dignitie. This countie of Vtrecht hath for bounds towards the E North Holland, and vpon the West Guelderland. The chiefe townes are Vtrecht, called in old time Antonia, or Antonina, and since Traiectum, for that it was a passage where as impost was payed for merchandise which was transported from one side vnto another, and it retains that name vnto this day. It stands vpon the head of the Rhein, the which pass directly there, before it was forced, some eight hundred yeares since, to fall into the *Elze* the great and pleasant towne, and the ordinarie aboad of many gentlemen, where are to be seen, Amersford, Rhenen, Montfort, and Wicker. Dursild, in the north banke of the towne, with about foure boroughs and villages. In these late troubles the countie of Vtrecht hath bene more annoyed by the duke of Alba, and recruited by the emperor, than by the other prouinces, it doth by little and little recover from the miserie and prosperitie, increasing daily in traffike.

The countie and seigneurie of Vtrecht was in old time belonging vnto a prince, and particular prelate, who had both the spiritual and temporall iurisdiction, the which was giuen by the kings of France, vnto *S. Wilbeard* the first Bishop, who was an Englishman : and this estate did consist of two diocesses, the one called the lower, which is the prouidence of Vtrecht; and the other the high diocesse, which is the countie of Oueryffel, and thus stands. But *Henry* of Bauaria, Bishop of Vtrecht, being expelled out of the towne by his iurisdiction, and oppressed by the duke of Gueldres, about the year 1327, resigned all his right and interest to the temporall iurisdiccions of the countie of Vtrecht and Oueryffel, to the emperor *Charles* the fifth, who restored him to the possession of his spiritual dignitie. This countie of Vtrecht hath for bounds towards the E North Holland, and vpon the West Guelderland. The chiefe townes are Vtrecht, called in old time Antonia, or Antonina, and since Traiectum, for that it was a passage where as impost was payed for merchandise which was transported from one side vnto another, and it retains that name vnto this day. It stands vpon the head of the Rhein, the which pass directly there, before it was forced, some eight hundred yeares since, to fall into the *Elze* the great and pleasant towne, and the ordinarie aboad of many gentlemen, where are to be seen, Amersford, Rhenen, Montfort, and Wicker. Dursild, in the north banke of the towne, with about foure boroughs and villages. In these late troubles the countie of Vtrecht hath bene more annoyed by the duke of Alba, and recruited by the emperor, than by the other prouinces, it doth by little and little recover from the miserie and prosperitie, increasing daily in traffike.

The countie and seigneurie of Vtrecht was in old time belonging vnto a prince, and particular prelate, who had both the spiritual and temporall iurisdiction, the which was giuen by the kings of France, vnto *S. Wilbeard* the first Bishop, who was an Englishman : and this estate did consist of two diocesses, the one called the lower, which is the prouidence of Vtrecht; and the other the high diocesse, which is the countie of Oueryffel, and thus stands. But *Henry* of Bauaria, Bishop of Vtrecht, being expelled out of the towne by his iurisdiction, and oppressed by the duke of Gueldres, about the year 1327, resigned all his right and interest to the temporall iurisdiccions of the countie of Vtrecht and Oueryffel, to the emperor *Charles* the fifth, who restored him to the possession of his spiritual dignitie. This countie of Vtrecht hath for bounds towards the E North Holland, and vpon the West Guelderland. The chiefe townes are Vtrecht, called in old time Antonia, or Antonina, and since Traiectum, for that it was a passage where as impost was payed for merchandise which was transported from one side vnto another, and it retains that name vnto this day. It stands vpon the head of the Rhein, the which pass directly there, before it was forced, some eight hundred yeares since, to fall into the *Elze* the great and pleasant towne, and the ordinarie aboad of many gentlemen, where are to be seen, Amersford, Rhenen, Montfort, and Wicker. Dursild, in the north banke of the towne, with about foure boroughs and villages. In these late troubles the countie of Vtrecht hath bene more annoyed by the duke of Alba, and recruited by the emperor, than by the other prouinces, it doth by little and little recover from the miserie and prosperitie, increasing daily in traffike.

The countie and seigneurie of Vtrecht was in old time belonging vnto a prince, and particular prelate, who had both the spiritual and temporall iurisdiction, the which was giuen by the kings of France, vnto *S. Wilbeard* the first Bishop, who was an Englishman : and this estate did consist of two diocesses, the one called the lower, which is the prouidence of Vtrecht; and the other the high diocesse, which is the countie of Oueryffel, and thus stands. But *Henry* of Bauaria, Bishop of Vtrecht, being expelled out of the towne by his iurisdiction, and oppressed by the duke of Gueldres, about the year 1327, resigned all his right and interest to the temporall iurisdiccions of the countie of Vtrecht and Oueryffel, to the emperor *Charles* the fifth, who restored him to the possession of his spiritual dignitie. This countie of Vtrecht hath for bounds towards the E North Holland, and vpon the West Guelderland. The chiefe townes are Vtrecht, called in old time Antonia, or Antonina, and since Traiectum, for that it was a passage where as impost was payed for merchandise which was transported from one side vnto another, and it retains that name vnto this day. It stands vpon the head of the Rhein, the which pass directly there, before it was forced, some eight hundred yeares since, to fall into the *Elze* the great and pleasant towne, and the ordinarie aboad of many gentlemen, where are to be seen, Amersford, Rhenen, Montfort, and Wicker. Dursild, in the north banke of the towne, with about foure boroughs and villages. In these late troubles the countie of Vtrecht hath bene more annoyed by the duke of Alba, and recruited by the emperor, than by the other prouinces, it doth by little and little recover from the miserie and prosperitie, increasing daily in traffike.

V.

V I:

VII.

of Asia, after whose death they came with certaine ships into those parts, and there set. A led their aboad, and gaue it the elder brothers name, the which it holds vnto this day. It is bounded vpon the North and West by the Ocean, on the South it hath Ouerysell, and to the East the riuer of Ems which diuides it from Westphalia. The most ancient towne was Stauerem, and the chiefe of all the countrie. It had a prerogative from the kings of Denmarke, That in passing the Sond, their ships shold go and come first before all others, and be presently dispatched by the Collectors of the imposts, whereas others should attend their turne: but since the haven hath bene stopp'd by the sand of the sea, so as their trade is decayed. But at this day Lewarden is the chiefe towne of the prouince, seated in a pleasant countrie full of goodly meadows, and in the middelt of Frise. B land: vnder the Grittenie or bayliwicke of this towne there are seuteene good villages, and this towne is in the quarter of Ostergoe, of which Dockum is the second. There are also in Friseland the townes of Franiker, Bolswardt, Harlingen, Snecke, Sloten, Ilt, Worcum, Hindelopen, and these are in the second quarter called Westergoe: the third quarter of Friseland is called the Seuen forrests, but now they are conuerted to pasture and tillage; it consists of eight bayliwickes, in which are siue and twentie bouroughs and villages. East Friseland hath the towne of Emden vpon the riuer of Ems, & Aurich, which is inuironed with forrests. The Archdukes hold a little towne in this countrie called Linguen, and Oldenzeel in Ouerysell neere vnto it, where there are good forns and garrisons. C

VIII. The towne of Groningue and the Ommelands (which are countrie iurisdiccions consisting of many good boroughs and villages) lie betwixt the riuers of Ems and Lanwers, and make one of the seuteene Prouinces. The towne of Groningue hath bene besieged and forced, and the country about it much spoyled; but now they are in a more quiet estate, yet they are subiect to contributions which they pay to the garrisons of Linguen and Oldenzeel, so as the villages cannot well recover their former estate. Finally, the countrie of Friseland hath bin much subiect to the violence and insolencies of war, and they haue alwaies carried themselves valiantly, and contributed freely to the charges of the war with the vnited Estates. There is in this prouince the towne of Dam, which is of good trafficke, but it hath bin of late yeares demanteled, and fortified againe, D yet now it lies open: and there is also Delfziel a great and mightie fort, in forme of a rowne, it stands vpon the Dullart, and is like in time to be a towne of good trafficke, vnder the subiection of them of Groningue.

The vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries are all at this day in better estate than the other Prouinces, for that they haue the sea free and open, great store of shipping, the Ocean towards the North, and some riuers at commandement, people in great abundance, which haue come thither from other prouinces, vpon hope of trafficke and gaine, and to haue libertie of religion without molestation, yea for navigation, for the which the countrie is verie commodious, and is much increased by the warre (a paradox which seemes strange, and contrarie both to nature and reason) and wonderfully flourishing, as E appears by their forts, enlarging of townes, and sumptuous buildings.

¶ The Qualities

IX. The aire of Zeland is not verie good, and is less wholesome than that of the neighbour prouinces, especially in Summer, by reason of the marshes, and pooles, whose waters doe putrifie and stinke, and the vapours infect the aire that is neere vnto them; of else for that the countrie hath too few trees: yet it hath this benefit, that it is not subiect to the plague, nor other contagious diseases. The soyle is fat, and of great yielding, and there they reape wheat which is whiter and more weightie than in any other countrie. F They haue store of Bay trees, which grow verie great, and great abundance of hearbes, both physcall and of a good taste, fit to eat. There are also good pastures, not only within the banks, but also vpon the sea shore, where you may see thousands of cattell feeding. There is great plentie of all sorts of fruit, faire, and ripe, except grapes, which cannot come

A come to any maturitie; so as there are not any vines but vpon abours, where as the grapes doe sooner rot than ripe.

As for Holland, the ground doth sometimes shake vnder their wagons and horses; and there happened an accident which made it appeare that the ground is hollow, for that a cow, being fallen into a hole, was found dead in the sea three daies after: Moreover, a part of Holland is called Waterland, that is, a countrie of Waters. It is diuided by many pooles and marshes, and by many channels artificially drawne from these riuers and from the sea. And although it were in former times full of woods and forrests, yet at this day there are few trees, by reason of the great humiditie. The aire is sweet & whole- B some, notwithstanding this moisture, by reason of the good winds which raigne there, and the great multitudes of people which inhabit this prouince. The land is so low, as that the sea is higher than it in many places, and for this cause there are dikes and banks of all sides. This countrie yeelds little wheat, and small store of fruit or flax: but there are excellent pastures, where they breed and feed good store of cattell, especially kine and horses.

The countrie of Ouerysell is for the most part plaine and fertill, among other things it beares good wheat. The countrie of Gueldres abounds chiefly in corne, and it hath very good pastures; so as they send very leane cattell out of Denmarke to be fattened there.

C As for Vtrecht towards Viana and Arnham, there is nothing but sand, but in other places the soile is good, and is more tilled and lowne than that of Holland, for that it is not so low nor so moist.

Friseland is a flat countrie and morish: there are many meadows whereas they feed great store of cattell: they haue a kind of soile whereon they make turfes, which burne like coale, but they are graie, and keepe fire well with a little wood. They sow little corne, for that the countrie is so low, especially towards the sea, the which from the beginning of Autumne vntill the spring is in a manner all couered with water, so as the townes and villages in places which stand high, are enuironed with good banks and defences; but by their pastures and turfes, the inhabitants haue corne, wine, and wood, from other D places. But the better to vnderstand what turfes are, you must know that it is a kind of earth which they find in fat and moorish grounds, the which is so knied with the sunne, as it is fit to receiue and entertaine fire; and there are many forts, according to the qualitie of the countrie: they dig them siue and twentie or thirtie foot deepe: they cut them into peeces, and set them to drie in the wind and sunne, that they may come to perfection, and then they presently take fire when they come neere it, they giue a great heat, and the coale last longer than that of wood. In the yere 1567 a great field of turfes being set on fire, there was so great a flame and smoake, as it seemed the whole countrie had been on fire. They doe also burne in Friseland cow dung dried. They breed very great oxen, yea the greatest in Europe, and many goodly horses.

E East Friseland abounds in horses, tame beasts of all sorts, and store of game for hunting. There is abundance of corne and pulles, and good store of salt.

¶ The Manners.

The inhabitants of Zeland haue good wits, they are forecasting and subtil, of a meane stature, notwithstanding that the Annales report that William the Good Earle of Holland did carrie with him vnto the marriage of Charles the Faire, a Zeland of huge stature, in regard of whom many tall men seemed but dwarfs, and so strong F as he could lift vp with either hand a hoghead of beere, and they write that he could carrie a beame which eight men could not lift. They are very expert in navigation: and very neat in their houses, so as their wodden implements are like vnto looking-glasses. They are very carefull of their affaires, and very skillfull in trade of merchandise. As for their diet they are like vnto the rest of the Low Countries.

The people of Holland exceed all the other Nations of Europe in stature, and as for the

the women they are commonly faire, but their beautie doth not last, neither is it to pleasing as that of the women of England. The Hollanders are ciuile, but in their drinke. The townes are very well gouerned. They retaine still their auncient courage, and are haughty and proud, like a people which liue in a rich countrie, and of great trafficke; they make no account of the force and power of neighbour princes.

As for the inhabitants of Guelderland and Zutphen, they were the last which in *Cesars* time came vnder the power of the Romans, and the first which freed themselves in the declining of the Empire.

In Vtrecht you haue a great number of ciuile gentlemen. The gentle women go all attired after the French fashion, vnlesse they carrie a huque, which is a blacke vail which couers their faces and bodies: there are not any in all the countrie so handsome as the inhabitants of this towne, and the Hage.

As for the Frisons, they are many in number, and some hold them to be very valiant, but I find no reason to settle this impression, they go on like other men when they are commaunded; but they shew no such heat of courage: they are so proud, as they are altogether insupportable: most of them are given to merchandise. They hate adulterie much, and loue libertie.

¶ The Riches.

X. **T**he Estates must needs be very rich, by reason of their great trafficke by sea, and the multitude of merchants which come from all parts: for besides the profits which many priuat men of the said Estates get by them, there is not any commoditie that comes into Holland, but paie a great imposition and custome, which they haue imposed vpon all things that come into their hauens. As for Holland, their wealth consists in pastures, where they doe feed an infinit number of horses, oxen, and kine, which yeeld so much milke, as they hold that the butter and cheefe of Holland is yearly worth about a million of gold, whereof besides their owne prouision, they do yearly send great store into England, Germanie, France, and Spaine. They do also make great commoditie of red Madder, which they call Meedecrapp, the which they vse to keepe cloth from staining. They make great reuenues of their fishing, but especially of their voiage they do make at sea, whereas they sometimes bring home ships of great price: and it is almost incredible to beleue what great ships this countrie hath, both for war and trade. So as Holland (hauing neither vines, flax, wood, and but little corne) abounds in wine, wheat, and linnen cloth, which brings great commoditie to the inhabitants, as also the thred, edgings, and bone lace which they make there. They do also sell their horses at a good rate, which yeelds them good profit.

Zeland hath also store of Meedecrapp, which they send into all Europe, and return great profit, as also of Coriander seed. Their pastures are also very profitable, feeding great store of cattell, whereby their owners grow rich: these cattell are not onely greater than any other, but of a most delicate tast, by reason of the grasse that hath a propertie to feed them better than any other. And that which makes Zeland rich, is the great concourse of merchants which come to Middlebourg, and the customes and impositions which they raise of all merchandise that comes thither. They haue an excellent art to boyle bay salt, which they bring from countries which lie Westward, the which they put into great coppers, and by boiling make it as white as snow. They put salt water into the bay salt of Spaine or France, and refine it with a greater increase, the which they send into all the parts of Europe. Moreover they make a benefit of the trafficke of their wheat, which is the best that can be seen. As for Friseland, they send their horses into all Europe: they are fit to carrie an armed man, and for great burthens: finally, they make their profit as other countries doe which the Estates hold, but there is nothing extraordinary that merits any longer discourse of their riches: I will onely say that their townes doe witnesse that they want no commodities, and the long wars which they haue vsuained, shew, that they are mightie and rich, notwithstanding that they haue borrowed from the queene of England, and other princes, who had an interest in their preferuation.

¶ The

¶ The Forces.

It is scarce credible without fight, what the strength is of those countries which the Estates hold; for that, first of all, Zeland is enuironed by the sea, and besides, all approaches are so well fortified, as it is impossible to find any easie landing to enter into the countrie, without the consent of the inhabitants. You haue the towne of Fleissingue which the sea doth beat vpon on three parts, and is well furnished with artillerie to frustrate the attempts of a great armie. This only towne was the cause that all the rest of the Low Countries (which be free) tooke armes, and freed themselves from the Spaniards yoke: so as their inhabitants which haue framed this common weale, haue treated with the king of Spaine and the Archduke as soueraignes, and haue bene so acknowledged in this last treatie. Middlebourg is also a place of good consideration: but the fort of Ramekens is of great importance, and it may be not inferior to any. Coming afterwards into Holland, you haue Dort or Dordrecht, which is verie strong, and enuironed with water. Rotterdam is a towne of good defence, and so is Gorkom: As for Vtrecht, it is a faire towne, fortified with ten good bulwarkes well flanked.

In Guelderland there is Nimeguen, a towne that is strong both by art and situation. Amham is one of their best places. Zutphen is of good importance, but not so defensible as the other. As for the countrie of Oucryssel, you haue Deuenter, which is strong and well furnished with all things necessarie to make a long defence. And in Friseland Groningue is a place which will not be easily forced.

I should neuer make an end if I should set downe in particular all the strong places which are in this countrie, as the Tolus, or *Skinks* Sconce, which is almost impregnable, built betwixt the wall and the Yssel; and in like maner S. Andrews fort, Tiel, and Briele, which are able to withstand the greatest armies. It shall suffice to say, that this countrie is so well fortified on all sides, as an armie that would win it foot by foot, were it verie strong and alwaies in field, should aduance verie little in a long time. We must also consider, that the Estates haue meanes to drowne the whole countrie (if they see themselves brought vnto dispaire) by the breaking of their bankes, especially in Holland. Moreover, they doe alwaies entertaine many companies of souldiers, both vpon the frontier, and within the countrie. And as for the sea, I doe not thinke there is any nation in the world so strong, nor so able to make a great attempt. To conclude, all things fauour them in regard of force, as we haue plainly seene in the long warre which they haue maintained against the king of Spaine: who seeing that he could not preuaile, and that it was a continuall wasting of men and money, hath bene forced in the end to make a truce with them, and to graunt them most of their demands.

¶ The Governement.

A. **L**ing affaires of State of the vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries, as well for the warre, both by sea and land, and of that which depends, the alliances and leagues which they haue with kings, princes, and forraigne potentates, for the leuies of money which must be made, as well for warre, as for affaires of State, and generally of all that concerns the good and quiet of the vnited Prouinces, are directed and gouerned by the generall Estates of the sayd Prouinces, whereof the assemblie is made of the chiefe colledges of the Nobilitie, Magistrats, and Superintendants of townes, in euery quarter and province respectiue.

F. The particular Estates of euery province doe yearly chuse and depute so many persons as they shall thinke good, to whom they giue full power and authoritie to aduise and resolue with the deputies of all the other Prouinces, of euery point which shall be propounded, and of all other things which may be represented, as shall be thought fitting for the good and seruice of the State. In which assemblie of the sayd generall Estates, matters are propounded, debated, and resolued on the behalfe of euery Province.

F f ij

uince

After the French account it is 300 thousand pounds sterling.

unice respectively, and not by voyces. So as at this day the resolutions are taken in the said assemblee in the behalfe of the seuen Provinces, whereof the first is the duchie of Gueldres and countie of Zutphen (notwithstanding that Zutphen be a Province by itselfe, besides the seuentene Provinces of the Low Countries) the second is the province of Holland and West-Friseland, the third Zeland, the fourth Vtrecht, the fifth Friseland, the sixth Oueryssel, the seventh Groningue and the Ommelandes. To the said assemblee of the generall Estates come (being summoned) the gouernours of euerie province respectively, and the Councell of estate, to helpe to aduise and to resolue of all matters which shall be propounded.

In the Councell of State of the said vnited Provinces, they giue euery man his opinion, the Councillors whereof are appointed by the generall Estates (vpon the election and presentation which is made by euerie province) to whom they take an oath of fidelitie according to the instructions which are made: the which Councell of Estate was made in the yere 1600, of all the gouernours of provinces, and of prince *Henry Frederic* of Nassau, *Maister George Gilpin* Agent for the king of great Brittainie. For the duchie of Gueldres the seigneuries of Oyen and Brynem. The seigneur of Mateneffe for the Nobilitie, *Baron of Dordrecht* and *Boulers* of Amsterdam for Holland and West-Friseland, *Fernand Allenman* for Zeland, *Foocke* for Vtrecht, *Kaminga* and *Frans Iansen* for Friseland, *Itterfon* for Oueryssel, and *Rengers* for Groningue and the Ommelandes, with their secretaries *Christian Huijgens*, and *Zuylen*.

The Estates of euerie province hold their rights, priuiledges, and customes, which they haue of old time enioyed, governing the affaires of the province, as well by themselves, as by their colleagues and officers which they appoint, as well for matters of State, and that which depends thereon, as for war, the treasure, justice, and other things, in a manner after one order.

XIII. As for example, in Holland and West Friseland, the Estates of the province haue alwaies beene represented by the barons, knights, gentlemen, and by the good townes, wherein the Clergie was neuer taken to be a member: which noblemen and gentlemen of note are called to the said assemblee, not onely to giue their opinions and helpe to resolue vpon the points propounded, but also vpon all occurrents concerning the good, peace, tranquillitie, and assurance of the province: the which being thus assembled, conferre and resolue of all matters with the Aduocat of the countie, as the first in the said assemblee of Estates, who receiues their opinions, and deliueres them openly. To the said assemblee are commonly called the chiefe townes of the province, that is to say, Dordrecht, Harlem, Delft, Leyden, Amsterdam, Goude, Rotterdam, Gorcum, Schiedam, Schoonhouen, Briel, Almar, Horn, Enichuysen, Edam, Monyckendam, Medemblyck, and Pumerende: and when there falls out any matter of great importance, as at the reception of a new prince, to treat a peace, or to vnder take a new war, they are also accustomed to call the other townes of the said province, which follow, Vuocerdm, Oudeuater, Gheertruydenberg, Heusden, Naerden, Vuesp, and Muyden: and no others, for that they belong vnto priuat lords, or else they are not townes fashioned as these be. The said townes send their deputies in a competent number, with ample commission and full power in the same forme as we haue said of the nobilitie.

The conuocation of the said noblemen, gentlemen, and townes of Holland, and the principall points for the which it is made, is managed by the Aduocat of the countie, and by the Councillors appointed in the said estates: which Aduocat makes the proposition, and the opinions of the said noblemen and gentlemen being put into forme, he deliueres them with pregnant reason. Which done, he demands in order the opinions of the townes, and in case there be varietie and diuersitie of opinions, he labours to reconcile them, concluding according vnto the pluralitie of voyces, according vnto the which the resolutions are taken.

The chiefe points why they hold the said assemblee, are touching war, by sea and land, for the contributions of money for the reformation of all abuses that may happen, for the quiet & tranquillitie of the countie, to entertaine an vnion and concord throughout all the

A the townes of the province, and generally for all that concerns the Estate of the countie, religion, justice, policie, meanes of forraine contributions, reuenues, cleargie goods, and all to the greatest ease and profit of the province. The said assemblee is commonly held at the Hague, which is an open place, in the middelt of the countie, fixe or six times a yere, vnlesse necessitie of affaires require it extraordinarily, or in some other place: and for the execution and entertainment of the resolutions taken by the said Estates in their assembly, there is a commission given to one of the said nobles, to the Aduocat of the countie, and to one of euerie chiefe towne.

The said deputed councillors haue not onely the charge for the entertaining of resolutions taken in the assemblee of the Estates, but also of all things concerning the good of the Province, the quiet and vnion of quarters, members, and townes, hauing the knowledge and determining of all matters of controuersies touching the contributions of the countie, and of that which followes; together with all matters of confiscation, by reason of the war, of all troubles, tumults, seditions, perturbation of the publicke quiet, treasons, counterfeiting of money, and of all other matters concerning the publicke, in which they iudge by decree.

In matters of ordinarie justice as well betwixt the inhabitants of the countie as strangers, the presidents and they of the great councell haue supreme authoritie in the said countries, who iudge soueraignly and by decree; from whose sentences there is no Cappeale, but a reuision or proposition of error: for the which there is appointed (by the said Estates jointly with the presidents and councillors) certaine reuisors in a competent number.

The gouernor, president, and councillors of the prouinciall court of the said provinces, haue the knowledge and manning of many matters concerning the government of the countie, in cases of ciuile and criminall justice, as also of causes which come by appeale from inferior townes and villages. They make their acts and commissions in the name of the said gouernour, president, and councell: but they do iustice in the right of the souerainie of the said province. For the administration of the reuenues there is a chamber of the maisters, auditors, and registers of accounts.

D And although that the Hague be an open place, two miles distant from the North sea, yet it is the most pleasant aboad of all the seuentene Provinces, exceeding them in wealth, goodly pallaces, faire buildings, pleasant places, and a great number of gentlemen: there are about two thousand faire houses, and they build dayly, yea whole streets. There is the court of the prince or gouernour of Holland, Zeland, and West Friseland, which is at this day prince *Maurice* of Nassau &c. as also the generall Estates of the vnited Provinces hold their assemblies there; and the Estates of Holland, and their deputies, the ordinarie councillors, the presidents, and they of the great councell, they of the prouinciall councell, with the Chamber of accounts.

Besides all these councells, there is also a councell of Brabant for the townes and villages belonging to the iurisdiction of the duchie of Brabant, which are vnder the obedience of the generall Estates of the vnited provinces; whereas all matters proceeding from the duchie are determined, vnder the authoritie, and by commission from the said generall Estates, in the same manner and forme as hath bene alwaies vsed in the chauncerie, councell, and feodall court of Brabant: to the end that by this meanes euery one may be maintained in his accustomed priuiledges.

In the government of the townes and the vnited provinces, and namely in the province of Holland, and West-Friseland, they obserue their ancient rights, priuiledges, statutes, and customes, where for the most part there is a Bailife or Escouet, who is chosen by the greatest part of the said Estates, as their officer. There also are Bourgmaisters, Shierifes, Treasurers, Maisters of the buildings, Maisters of orphans, Councell and Woetschapen, who are chosen out of the chiefe bourgesses.

The bourgmaisters and shierifes are yearly renewed, according to the denomination of double the number made by the voetschapen, and chosen by the gouernor of the province, or (in his absencie) by the president and them of the prouinciall councell, al-

though that in some townes the election of bourgmaisters is absolute, and in some the sherifes are appointed by the officer in the name of the said Estates. The number of bourgmaisters is according to the custome of townes; as in Dordrecht one, and in some, four; who labour most in politticke affaires, for the good government of the townes, for the revenues thereof, and for the quiet and peace of the inhabitants.

The sherifes in most townes are seuen in number, who haue the knowledge and determining of all matters both ciuile and criminall. The treasurers, maisters of workes, and maisters of orphanes are in most townes yearly created by the bourgmaister: the treasurers haue the receipt of the townes revenue, whereof they giue an account: the maisters of the workes haue the oversight of the publicke buildings: the maisters of the orphanes haue the superintendencie and care of pupills goods, to the end they may be gouerned with good securitie: the vuetschapens (who are sworn in counsell) serue in some townes continually during their liues: they are created out of the best bourges of the towne; they and the bourgmaisters representing the whole bodie of the towne, aduise and resolue vpon all things that are propounded vnto them, as well for the general good of the countie, as for the towne in particular.

In regard of money that is coyned throughout all the vnited prouinces of the Low Countries, there are three generally, who being called by the said generall Estates, come whether sooner they be sent for to aduise, touching matters of mint.

The said countie of Holland and West Friseland haue two mints, the one is auncient and more priuiledged, for Holland, in the towne of Dort; the other for West Friseland, in the towne of Horne.

XIII.

The Estates of the countie of Zeland consist of the nobilitie, and the townes of the Islands of Walchren, Schouen, Suytbeueland, Tolen, Nortbeueland (newly recovered from the sea) Duyueland, Wolphaerts-dike, and Philips-land. They hold their generall assemblies at Middlebourg, whereas most commonly the college of their deputies doe remaine, who assemble dayly to treat, dispose, and determine of all matters concerning the State.

The said countie of Zeland hath drawne vnto it selfe, the Chamber of accounts touching the revenues, & generally of all receipts belonging to that Estate, the which in former times was mannaged ioyntly with that of Holland and West-Friseland at the Hague: But now the said Chamber for the countie of Zeland is setled in the court of Middlebourg. Zeland hath also a mint in the said court, the which is subiect to the generalls of the mynt.

XV.

The appellations in ciuile causes of all the townes, places of justice, and bayliwicks of Zeland, repaire to the prouinciall counsell at the Hague; except they of Middlebourg, who by priuiledge may appeale either to the prouinciall counsell, or to the great counsell: but offenders are executed without appeale by the chiefe Iustices, euery one in his owne iurisdiction. As for their pollicie and religion, they gouerne themselves as they do generally throughout all the vnited prouinces, their confederates.

The principallity and Estate of Vtrecht consists at this day of three members, that is to say, the Clergie of five colleges of Channons, the Nobilitie, & Townes: the Clergie who are first, consist of the cathedrall seat of Saint Martin, Saint Sauour, Saint Iohn, and Saint Marie, which are indifferently cholen of the deputies, which are at this present in the college of the said Estates: the Nobilitie stands for the second member: for the third member, the bourgmaisters and deputies of townes of the said principallitie and State. There is also a prouinciall counsell, from the which there is no appellation, yet in case of religion, they may bring it before the Estates of the prouince. The Chamber of accounts is ouerseene by the college of the said Estates. The said principallitie hath also a particular mint, as it hath alwaies had, & it is subiect to the generalls of the mint. The pollicie and religion is maintained as in all other the vnited prouinces their confederates. There is also in the said principallitie foure marshalls, either of which at this day hath his quarter.

XVI.

The estate and lordship of Friseland is diuided into three quarters (which in their language

A guage they call Goucn that is to say, Oostergoe, Westergoe, and the Seuen forrests. But at this day (according to the gouernement of the present time) the townes make the fourth quarter or member of the estate. Oostergoe consists at this present of eleuen bayliwicks, which they call Gritenies: Westergoe of eight bayliwicks; and the Seuen forrests of ten. The Goe or quarter of townes, doth at this day make the fourth member in the assemble of the Estates of the Prouince. The said townes were heretofore affected vnto the Goe, in the which they were situated, either of the Oostergoe, Westergoe, or the Forrest: which townes are eleuen in number, whereof the eight which be walled are very strong, that is to say, Leeuuaerden, Bolswaerden, Dockum, Francken, Harlingen, Sneek, B. Straeren, Sloten; and three others which in old time had the priuiledges of townes granted them, and they are not walled, these be Ift, Worchum, and Hindelopen: of which foure quarters all Friseland consists. The Estates of this prouince haue alwaies bene represented by the gentlemen, and the richest proprietaries, as well of the townes as of the Champian countries. But now at the summons of the gouernour, and the deputies of the Estates, they call vnto the generall assemblies certaine gentlemen, and rich free-holders of the Champian countries, and of euerie towne, to be sufficient deputies, according to the letters of estate which are sent vnto them: the which letters are directed to the Gritiemans or Baylives, and to the Bourgmaisters of townes respectiue. Euerie one of which in his iurisdiction and towne, for his part, calls together the gentlemen and chiefe of the countie, and the Sherifes, Counsell, and Iurats in euerie towne, who haue heard the causes of this commission, they then chuse and depute in euerie bayliwicke and towne two personages, to whom commission and authoritie is giuen to appeare at the said generall assemble, there to resolue vpon those affaires for the which they are sent for, and vpon all other occurrents which may fall out. Euerie bayliwicke doth commonly send two deputies, one of the nobilitie, and another of the best yeomen of the countries, and euerie towne (especially those that are walled) send one of their Council, and one of their Iurats from among the commons, without any respect or degree of gentrie; as also in some places of the seuen Forrests they depute not any gentlemen, for the want they haue of them, but commonly they send their richest yeomen, with the contentment of the gentlemen of other quarters. The said assemble and generall conuocation, is commonly held once or twice a yeare in the towne of Leeuuaerden (now the chiefe of the countie, and situated in the center thereof) vnlesse some extraordinarie affaires, or the necessitie of the time, requires otherwise. These deputies haue knowledge and determine of all matters, concerning the contribution of the prouince, confiscations, clergie goods, bankes and fluces, and finally, of all the administration of politticke affaires, of warre, and the treasure. The Receiuers are bound euerie yeare to come and giue vp their accounts before the chamber of accounts, ouer which there are yearly foure men appointed, that is, one of euerie quarter. The said Estates haue also their particular Mint in the towne of Leeuuaerden, the which is subiect vnto the generalls. The Baylives with the assessors in their bayliwicks ouer the Champian countie; and the Burgomaisters, Sherifes, and Council of townes doe onely iudge in ciuile causes: They giue their sentences in the name of the soueraine seigneurie of Friseland, from the which they may appeale to the prouinciall court, and not to the College of the deputies of the Estates. The prouinciall court consists of the Gouernour, Presidents, and Councillors, to whom onely belongs the knowledge and deciding of ciuile and criminall causes. But the baylives and magistrats of townes must send offenders with their information to the sayd court, where their proceffe is made by the proctor general according to the qualite of their offence: they haue their residence also at Leeuuaerden. The Estates of the said prouince haue of late yeares erected an Vniuersitie at Francker. As for religion it is managed as in other countries.

The estate of Ouertysel, carries that name for that it lies beyond the riuer of Yssel. All the prouince is diuided into three goodly iurisdiccions, the first is Saland, the second Tuent, and the third (which is in the midst of both) Vollenhouen. Saland hath many townes contained in it, that is to say, Deuenter, Campen, Zuul, and others. Tuent hath the

XVII.

the towne of Oldenzeel, Otmarfum, and others. Voolenhoven hath a towne and castle of the same name, at this day, ruined by the last warres (whereas in old time the bishops of Vtrecht kept their court) with the towne of Steenwick, and others. The feigning of this province did in old time belong to the bishops of Vtrecht: but since the coming with the feignerie of Vtrecht, to the emperor *Charles* the first, and to *Philip* his sonne, upon condition that they should maintaine them in their priuiledges; they haue vpon breach thereof withdrawn themselves with the other vniued provinces, from the obedience of the said king *Philip*. The said province hath neuer acknowledged but two members in her gouernment, that is to say, the Nobillitie, out of which the gouernors are chosen, and the three Imperiall townes, Deunter, Campen, and Zuul, by the which two members, all difficulties which doe arise in this estate are decided, and whatsoever is decreed by them, according to the constitutions of the countie, remains firme and stable. And as the Nobillitie in preheminece yeelds not to any, no more doe the Townes, vnlesse it be in their order and degree; whereof Deunter is the first, Campen the second, and Zuul the third: euerie one of which townes doth iudge definitiue, and hath a prerogative to coyne mony. The assemblie of the Estates of the said province, as wel general as particular, is made diuersly, according to their ancient customes and preheminencies, sometimes in one place, sometimes in another, the deputies changing often. Touching religion they gouerne themselves generally, as in other the vniued Provinces of the Low Countries.

XVIII.

As for the estate and gouernment of the towne of Groningue, and of the Ommelands (the which are countie iurisdiccions, consisting in many villages of the territorie of this province) you must vnderstand, that the said towne, and Ommelands, lying betwixt the riuers of Ems and Lauris, make one feignerie and province, the which is numbered among the seuenteen Provinces of the Low Countries. It is indifferently represented and gouerned by the common accord of the Estates thereof: so as all the rights of demaines, which in old time the prince was wont to haue, as Lord of the towne and province, are now managed and gouerned by the common aduice of the said Estates, and also the treasure, reuenues, contributions, and clergie goods, as well within the towne, as within the old Bailiwicks of Goortrecht, and the Ommelands: which Estates, together with their deputies, doe commonly hold their assemblies in the said towne of Groningue. The gouernment of the towne belongs onely to the magistrat thereof, which consists in foure Bourgmaisters, and twelue Councillors, who deale as well in matters of iustice, as of pollicie, and they iudge definitiue: but those things which concerne the priuiledge and good of the towne, must be communicated to the magistrat of the port, and to foure and twentie Iurats. The two old Bayliwicks and the Goortrecht are subiect to the iurisdiction of the towne, whereas they of the Councill do yearly appoint Drossars, and Amptmans, or Baylives (which is all one in effect) from whose iudgement they might appeale before the said Councill, who iudge definitiue. The one halfe of the said Councill and Iurats are euerie year discharged, and their places filled vp againe, that is to say, the gouernour names five persons, among foure and twentie Iurats, which five chuse eight Councillors out of the whole towne. The eight new Councillors, with the other eight which remained, chuse foure Bourgmaisters. Moreover, the said gouernour doth name out of the number of the said foure and twentie Iurats, five other persons, the which doth chuse twelue from among the commons of the towne, to fill vp the place of the other twelue that were dismissed; so as the twelue new Iurats, and the twelue old which did remaine, chuse amongst them three speakers, who during that yeare carrie the word for all the said Iurats. The said towne hath many goodly priuiledges, amongst others it speaks first at the Estates of the province. There is also a mint.

The Ommelands are diuided into three quarters, that is to say, Fiuclingo, Hunfingo, and the West quarter; hauing euerie one their rights, written in diuers feigneries, as seats of iustice, the which they call Gritenies or Bayliwicks.

A

¶ The Religion.

All the countries which the Estates hold, they suffer no exercise of the Romish religion; so as all the churches are conuerred into temples, whereas the ministers of the Protestants religion, say their prayers, and preach, and celebrat the sacraments. If they do find any which exercise the Romish religion in secret, being taken, they are punished by fines, the which happens dayly in Vtrecht: there are few other townes vnder the Estates which are not for the most part peopled with Protestants.

If any one be desirous to know when the Protestants religion entred first into these countries, I will do the best I can to satisfie them, as briefly as I may. About the yeare 1521, whenas *Martin Luther* first began to preach against the Pope and his doctrine, the Emperour *Charles* the first did for the aduancement of the Romish religion, and to root *Luther's* doctrine out of the Netherlands (where it did much increase, and had taken good footing) send forth rigorous proclamations generally against all sects and kinds of religion, yet they were grounded vpon a pretence of punishing the wicked practises and actions of sectaries and hereticks, as against men liuing without all rule, order, or law, as they inferred. By vertue of these proclamations, during the Emperours time, many were put to death for small causes; and to keepe them from multiplying, the Emperour thought it

good, to haue the Inquisition brought in, after the manner of Spaine (the which is the most cruell and damnable inuention that can be practised, for that they make Innocents and Catholicks themselves to rot in prison) hearing that the Lutherans and Protestants were much augmented. But the provinces opposing against this rigorous and cruell proceeding, procured *Marie* Queene of Hongarie then Regent, to go in person to the Emperour her brother, in the yeare 1550, being at an assemblie of the princes of Germanie at Ausbourg: where she acquainted him with the estate of the countie, and procured a kind of moderation of the edicts touching religion, and that the Inquisition should not proceed. After his death, king *Philip* his sonne finding that the number of them that made profession of the Protestants religion increased dayly in the Netherlands, notwithstanding

all the rigorous edicts, whereby he sought to ruine them: he commaunded, there should be certaine inquisitors of the faith chosen, who should haue a care, that not any one should read or keepe in his house any booke mentioned in the edict, containing a catalogue of all the forbidden bookes; and that no man should dispute of the Romish religion, nor contradict it, in any sort: and the better to strengthen the Inquisition, they procured Pope *Paul* the fourth to erect foureteen new Bishopricks in the Low Countries.

The Provinces fearing that this new erection of Bishops was but a deuice to bring in the Inquisition, opposed themselves, and sent their deputies into Spaine to haue them disannulled, the which the Clergie did in like manner, but they could by no suit be freed from the feare of these new Bishops (which were so many Inquisitors) so as the people grew bitter against the Clergie, and fell from their doctrine to the reformed religion; so as the more they persecuted them, the more constant they were in their religion, and the more they increased.

In the yeare 1565 the king of Spaine made his pleasure then knowne plainly by his letters to the duchesse of Parma gouernesse of the Netherlands, and what he would haue obserued touching religion: first, That the edicts made by the Emperour and himselfe should be put in execution: secondly, That the Inquisitors should be fauored in the exercise of their charge, for the good of religion, and that the Inquisition should be put in practise thirdly, That he should assist the new Bishops, and cause the decrees of the council of Trent to be obserued: with which she acquainted the provinciall Councils and the Noblemen; wherewith all sorts of people were much discomfited, fearing the troubles which would ensue by reason of the new Bishops Inquisition, bloudie edicts, and council of Trent. Whereupon the nobles made a confederacie, and presented petitions vnto the gouernesse, the which the Provinces of Brabant and Flanders did in like manner, against the Inquisition: they also sent their deputies vnto the king, to the like effect;

XIX.

fect, but all their suit having no successe, being fed with many delays, the baser sort fell A to beating downe of the images in Antuerpe, where they committed many insolencies: the like they did at Boileduc, Valenciennes, Gand, Audenarde, Bruxells, Vtrecht, Amsterdam, and other places, whereas they spoiled their churches, beat downe their images, and expelled the religious men. They of Bruxells made instance to haue libertie for their ministers to preach, the which they did without any permission throughout all the countries of Bruges, Gande, Ipre, Audenarde, and Antuerpe, whether the Lutherans and Protestants retired themselves. Valenciennes not onely receiued the Protestant ministers, but also to shew a full libertie of conscience, retired it selfe from the obedience of the king of Spaine, and Tournay did the like. A certaine minister presuming to preach in the B towne of Nimeguen, the inhabitants hauing taken armes, depofed fise Senators from their dignitie, suspecting them to be of the religion, and put as many Papists in their place, then hauing expelled the minister, they burnt the pulpit wherein he preached, in the market place.

In the year 1566, *Marguerite* of Austria, duchesse of Parma, the Gouverneffe, hauing dissolved the vnion of the noblemen (who were disperfed and retired to their houses vpon her letters of assurance) began to arme, making diligent search, and punishing all such as had assisted at the breaking downe of images: she also made an edict forbidding expressly the preaching, and all exercises of religion, as well publike as priuat, commanding generally, that the edicts concerning it, and the Inquisition should be put in execution, according to the kings letters. She pacified Friseland, by the meanes of the earle of Aremberg, and recovered Tournay, and Valenciennes, by the lord of Noircarmes, who brake his faith, after the composition, causing many souldiers, ministers, and rich merchants, to be put to death. The earle of Megue reduced Vtrecht to the king of Spaines obedience.

The baron of Brederode, and other of the chiefe confederats, seeing that all tended to the ruine of their countie, and the rooting out of the Nobilitie, sent vnto the Regent to craue leaue to come to court, and to acquaint her with the wrong which was done them, contrarie to the assurance which she had giuen them; but she would not allow of their coming: wherupon they sent petitions vnto her, the which contained, That for as much D as they saw the destruction of the Netherlands to be at hand, and that force was vsed daily against them, contrarie to all promises, they desired to know, if it were her pleasure, that the contract made with them should be obserued, and the preaching, and exercise of religion allowed, as they had in her name assured the people &c. To whom she made a proud answer.

After all these complaints and answers, the Gouverneffe propounded a new oath to all gouernours of provinces, knights of the order, and other noblemen, and councillours of State; by the which among other things, they did sweare to be faithfull to the king, and with all their meanes to maintaine and defend the Romish religion, to root out all new religion, and doctrine, and to punish all breakers of images, and robbers of churches, E which oath was taken by many of the nobilitie; but the prince of Orange, and the earle *Hoochstraten*, refused it, saying, That the oath of their order, and of their governments was sufficient, finding themselves much greeued that the duchesse should doubt of their loyalties. The like answer was made by the lord of Brederode. After this oath, the duchesse caused all them that had carried armes, broken images, or spoiled churches, to be apprehended and executed. They expelled the ministers out of Antuerpe, and their places of preaching were beaten downe, so as the Protestants generally, throughout all the Netherlands, were pursued with all rigour, apprehended, and executed, if they were but of the Consistorie, or had borne any charge in the reformed Church.

In the meane time the duke of Alba arrived with an armie to be Gouverneur of the F Low Countries: at his first entrance he puts in prison the earles of Egmont and Horne, besides many others, and cut off their heads, saying, that they had fauoured the rebels. The prince of Orange before his entrance, hauing tried the inconstancie of some of the nobles, and of the people, and seeing the miserable estate of the countie, retired him-
selfe

A selfe into his countie of Nassau, aduising the other confederat noblemen to doe the like, for their safetie. The king sent a commission to apprehend the Prince of Orange, where: unto he made his answer. The Inquisition of Spain concluded certaine articles against the Netherlands, the which were confirmed by the king. The prince of Orange gathered together a great armie, presuming vpon the affection of the Flemings: But the duke of Alba forced him to leaue the countie, his brother *Lewis* hauing beene defeated in Friseland. It seemed that all had beene reduced to a good estate by the meanes of this victorie, when as the duke by the death of the earles of Egmont, and Horne, and of some other noblemen, had lost the loue of the nobilitie: and seeking also, in the year of our

B Lord 1570, to exact with all rigour the tenth, twentieth, and hundredth penie, he made himselfe odious vnto the people, which gaue subiect to the reuolts which happened. The prince of Orange, and his followers, inuited by the inhabitants of some townes, and assuring himselfe of the discontentment of others, surprised Flushing, Briele, and in a manner all Zealand, except Middlebourg, and all Holland, except Amsterdam (for that the duke hauing neuer made warre by sea, did little esteeme the sea coast, but fought onely to fortifie himselfe within the countie) with Mons, Ruremonde, Macklin, Amesford, Zuul, Campen, Zuphen, and other places of importance: whereas the Protestants vied the Papists verie roughly. The duke of Alba fainting not, gathered an armie together, and besieged Mons; which the prince of Orange came to releue with an armie out of Germany, but not able to effect it, he sends it away, and retires into Holland. After which, the duke recouers Zutphen, and Macklin, then going to besiege Harlem, which yielded in the year 1573, the Protestants laied siege to Middlebourg, the chiefe towne of Zealand. The year following, *Lewis* of Requesens was sent to succed the duke in his gouernement, who sought to releue Middlebourg with a fleet by sea: but they were defeated, and the towne yielded by composition. After which, the Commander besieged Zixree, which yielded in the year 1577: the losse of which place was verie preiudiciall to the prince of Orange, hauing in a manner nothing left but the Island of Walcheren, wherein stand Flushing and Middlebourg. But for that there was thirtie moneths pay or more due vnto the Spaniards, they past vnto the firme land, where mutining, they D fortified themselves in the towne of Aloft, bringing the affaires of their king into worse estate than euer. For many bruits being disperfed of their reuolt, the Estates made a generall vnion, and proclaimed warre against the Spaniards. They put Count *Ernest* of Mansfield, and the lord of Barlemont, with some other of the Councell, in prison, for that they seemed to adhere vnto the Spaniard, and were suspected vnto them of the countie. The castles of Gand and Vtrecht were besieged, and both taken. The prince of Orange was called backe, and there was a league made betwixt the Catholickes and Protestants. They drew together fiftie three thousand foot, and sixteen thousand horse, and in the same armie, they said Masse, and preached after the Protestants manner. By this meane, the Protestants returned to Antuerpe, and recovered some Churches: but E the mutined Spaniards that were in Aloft, and other old souldiers, being drawne into the castle of Antuerpe, forced the towne and spoiled it, making a great slaughter of souldiers and townsmen: the like they did to Maltrake.

At the same time, *D. Iohn* of Austria came out of Spaine to be gouernour of the Low Countries, and applying himselfe to the necessitie of the time, he first made a suspension of armes, and afterwards (being vnfurnished of men, and money, and the States furnished of all things at commandement) he concluded a peace, with the Estates of the Low Countries, called by the name a perpetuall Decree, and the Spaniards left the countie. But yet *D. Iohn* gaue them new causes of ielousie and distrust, filling his court with strangers, enemies to the countie, and the publicke quiet, most part Spaniards and Italians, putting from him those of the countie that were not of that humour, contrarie to the Edict and Accord: whereby they did conceiue that his intent was to entertaine the seeds of hatred and factions among the noblemen, and in the end (when occasion should serue) bandie one against another, and by that meane ruine them all. He sought to draw the generall Estates into warre against Holland, and Zealand, who being resolued

resolved to hold the pacification made at Gand, would referre the decision of all contro-
versies, to lawfull conference, and to attend a generall convocation of the Estates:
whereupon he held them as disobedient, and rebels to the king. After which he began to
discover himselfe, and seized upon the castle of Namur, pretending a conspiracie against
his person, which (as he said) was the cause of his retreat. After all this, the prince of
Orange came to Antuerpe, being sent for by the generall Estates, to assist them with his
advice and counsell, who provided for their defence against *D. John* of Austria, proclai-
ming him and his adherents to be enemies to the king, and all his Netherlands.

The year after, one partie camped before Denremonde, and the other before Na-
mur, whereas *D. John* had assembled his troupes. But the States being forced to raise the B
siege from before Denremonde, and being defeated at Namur, they lost Louvain, Diest,
Arlicot, and many other places. But in the meane time, the prince of Orange had by a
long siege won Amsterdam. And the Estates had drawne downe the Archduke *Ma-
thias* of Austria, with the vaine title of a Gouvernor, and after him the duke of Alençon,
out of France, and duke *Casimir* out of Germanie, with hope of some great conquest.
The Monckes and Jesuits, which refused to hold *D. John* for an enemy to the State, were
expelled Antuerpe, and certaine other townes. They of S. Omer and Grauelin main-
tained themselves in the obedience of the king of Spaine.

The Archduke *Mathias*, the prince of Orange, the Council of Estate, and the generall
Estates, desired a religious peace (as they called it) in Antwerp, for all townes and proun-
ces that desired the same: whereby they had libertie of conscience, and might freely en-
joy the exercise of both their religions, without any trouble or molestation. Duke *Casi-
mir* was called by the Gantois to their aid, from whom he received one hundred and fiftie
thousand florins. They refused to admit of the Romish religion, within their towne
and territorie: whereupon the prince of Orange coming thither in person, in the end
persuaded them to admit of the exercise thereof, upon certaine conditions and articles,
so as all things were reconciled at Gand: but afterwards finding the malcontents vnta-
lable to any agreement; they did stir up the Commons againe, against the Clergie,
where they committed great insolencies.

The Prouinces of Artois and Haynault, with the townes of Douay, Lisle, Orchies, D
and others, disioyne themselves from the generall Estates, and make their reconciliation
with the prince of Parma, being in his campe before Mastrich, who by the death of *D.
John* of Austria, was gouernour in the Low Countries. In Friseland the earle of Renem-
berg, seized upon Groningue, and admits of the Protestants religion. They of Vtrecht,
being vnited with them of Holland and Zeland, abolished the exercise of the Romish re-
ligion in their towne and territorie. In the meane time, the duke of Parma had taken the
towne of Mastrich by force, and the earle of Renembourg changing his opinion, redu-
ced Groningue vnder the obedience of the king of Spaine. King *Philip* sent forth an
Edict of proscription against the prince of Orange, promising great rewards to him that
could kill him, wherunto the prince made an Apologie.

The generall Estates of the vnited Prouinces of Gelderland, Holland, Zeland, Zut-
phen, Friseland, Ouerissell, and Groningue, hauing declared prince *Philip* of Austria, the
second of that name king of Spaine, fallen from the seigneurie of the said Prouinces, by
reason of his extraordinary and violent gouernment, contrarie to their priuiledges and
freedomes; by him solemnly sborne: they tooke vpon them all the gouernment of the
politike Estate, and of the religion of the said Prouinces, in the year 1581, and by an
edict they abolished the subiects from their oaths, and made them take a new oath for the
preseruacion of their countie, and obedience to the said Estates. And the better to main-
taine them, they called backe the duke of Anjou, brother to the French king (who was
then returned into France) at his entrance they created him duke of Brabant, and recei-
ued him with great solemnities into Antuerpe, whereas all the vassalls, and subiects of the
said duchie did him homage, and swore fealtie vnto him: and he was afterwards inueiled
earle of Flanders. But this title lasted not long, for hauing a desire to make himselfe
master of Antwerp, & to draw in his armie, and hauing attempted it, the inhabitants took
an

A an alarm and fell to armes, repulsing the French, & putting them to the sword, in which
attempt there was neere three thousand French men slaine. A litle before, the prince of
Orange had bene shot with a pistoll at Antuerpe, by a young boy, and was sore wound-
ed in the mouth: Finally, on the tenth of Iulie, in the year 1584, he was slaine at Delf,
by one *Balthazar Gerard*, borne at Ville-Franch, in the French countie of Bourgondie. The
duke of Parma remaining maister of the field, recovered partly by force, and partly by
siege or treatie, the townes of Audenarde, Ipre, Denremonde, Viluorde, Gand, Bruges,
Ninieguen, Macklin, and Bruxells, and by a long and painefull siege, in the end he forced
Antuerpe to present him her keys, and Sluce in like manner.

The people of Holland and Zeland (being amased at this fauourable successe) had re-
coured vnto the queene of England for succour, and put themselves vnder her protecti-
on, deliuering into the hands of the English, Flushing, and some other places of impor-
tance. Being vnder the protection of English, they took Steenwicke, Ninieguen, Deuen-
ter, Zutphen, and many other places of consequence: but the queene seeing the armie
of Spaine approaching neere vnto England, and the diuisions which were betwixt the
Estates, and the earle of Leicester (Lieutenant generall to the said queene, Protector of
the generall Estates of the vnited Prouinces of the Netherlands) she called the earle of
Leicester home into England, who deliuered the said gouernment generall into the
hands of the generall Estates, from whom he had formerly received it, vnder the authori-
ty of the queene of England: & so the factions and partialities which had happened be-
twixt the townes and subiects of the said countries, by this means were suppressed.

The generall Estates hauing thus recovered their first soueraine authoritie, did in like
manner create prince *Maurice* of Nassau in the gouernments of Holland, Zeland, and
Vtrecht, and in the Admiraltie and office of captain generall of all their forces; to which
offices they haue since added the gouernment of the duchie of Guelderland, countie
of Zutphen, and countie of Ouerissell, the which he hath held vnto this day, and vnder
whom (since the year 1588) they haue had diuerse and variable successe, as well for the
taking of townes, as fighting of batailles (the which are too long here to relate) as well
against the prince of Parma, as the Archdukes of Austria. To conclude, these countries
D hauing bene in combustions, and ciuile wars, since the year 1566, vnto the year 1609,
the articles of a truce, and cessation of armes were concluded and agreed vpon in An-
tuerpe the ninth of Aprill, in the said year, for the terme of twelue years. For to recite
at length the beginning and progresse of this treatie, that is to say, how the Archdukes
did seek a peace of prince *Maurice* of Nassau, by the seignior of Vander Hoist and by
the same end father *John Ney*, generall of the Order of Saint Francis, and other deputies,
whose propositions and reasons they vsed, as wel vnto the generall Estates and his Excel-
lencie, as to other persons, to moue and persuade them thereunto, with the answers of
the generall Estates, and then what past on either part, the articles which were deliue-
red of both sides, with the reasons and difficulties which followed, and all that depends
thereon, would be too long and tedious to relate: We will onely set downe (as we haue
said) the articles concluded by the deputies of either part, according as they caused them
to be printed in the year 1609.

The most excellent princes, the Archduke *Albert*, and *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, hauing
caused a truce and cessation of armes to be made the foure and twentieth day of Aprill,
in the year 1607, for eight moneths, with the honorable Lords, the generall Estates of
the vnited Prouinces of the Low countries, in qualitie and holding them as Estates, Pro-
uinces, and free countries, ouer whom they had no pretence: which truce must of ne-
cessitie be ratified with the like declaration made by the Catholike king, for as much as
might concerne him, and that the said ratification and declaration should be deliuered
in the hands of the Estates of the vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries, three mo-
neths after the said truce, the which was performed by letters patents the eighteenth of
September, in the same year: and moreover there was a speciall procuracion given to
the said Archdukes, bearing date the tenth of Ianuarie 1608, to do (as well in his name,
as in their owne) whatsoever they should thinke fit and conuenient, to attaine vnto a
good

good peace, or a truce for many yeares. According to this procuracion, the Archdukes by their letters of commission of the feuen and twentieth of the said moneth, had named and deputed Commissioners to treat in the same name and qualitie as hath beene said, and agreed that the said truce should be prolonged and continued at diuers times, and on the twentieth of May, vnto the end of the yeare 1608: and being often assembled with the deputies of the Estates of the vniuersal Princes, who had also a procuracion and commission from them, dated on the fifth of Februarie the same yeare: but they could not agree touching a peace, by reason of many great difficulties which fell out amongst them. Vpon this occasion the Ambassadors of the most Christian French king, of the king of great Brittain, of the princes & palatins of Brandebourg, marquis of Ausbach, B and Lande-Graue of Hessen, being sent thither, by their Lords, Kings, & Princes, to helpe to aduance so good and worthe a worke (seeing the deputies readie to depart, and to breake off all their treatie) propounded a truce for many yeares, vpon certaine conditions set downe in writing, and given by them vnto either partie, requiring and admonishing them to conforme themselves. And for that many other difficulties did arise concerning this matter propounded, therefore these noblemen following, met on the ninth of April 1609, *Ambrose Spinola*, marquis of Benaffro, knight of the order of the Golden Fleece, of the Councell of Estate and war, to his Catholike maiestie, Maister of the Campe, and Generall of his armies, &c. *John Richardot* knight, seignior of Barli, of the Councell of Estate, and first President of the priuie councell to their highnesses &c. *John de Manteidor*, of the councell of warre, and Secretarie to his Catholike maiestie; the reuerend father *John Ney*, generall of the order of Saint Francis; and *Lewis Varrick* knight, Audiencier and first Secretarie vnto their highnesses: by vertue of letters of procuracion from the said Archdukes of the one part, to treat (as well in their name, as in the name of the said Catholike king) with *William Lewis* earle of Nassau, Catzenellenboge, Vianden, Dietz, and seignior of Biffen, Gouvernour and Captaine generall of Friseland, of the towne of Groningue, and of the Ommelandes and Drenthe, &c. the seignior of Walrauen, lord of Brederode and Vianen, Castellano of Vrecht, seignior of Ameyde, Cloetingue &c. *Cornelius* of Gent, Seignior of Loenen, and Meynerlouyck, Castellano and Iustice of the Empire, and of the towne of Nimiguen: *John* of Olden D barnevelt, knight, seignior of Tempel, Rondenris, &c. Aduocat and Keeper of the great Seale, of the Charters, and Registers of Holland and East-Friseland: *James* of Malder, knight, seignior of Heyes &c. the first, and representing the Nobles in the assemblee of the Estates, and in the councell of the countie of Zeland: *Gerard* of Ruesse, seignior of Vander Aa, Strefkerke, Nieuleckerlandt, &c. *Gellius Hillama* Doctor of the lawes, and Councillor in the Councell of Friseland: *John Sleeth* seignior of Sallicke, Drossart of the countie of Vollenho, and Castellano of the Seignourie of Cuinder: and *Adel Coenders* of Helpen, seignior of Faen and Cantes, in the names of the Estates of the vniuersal Princes, also by vertue of their letters of procuracion, and commission on the other part, who by the mediation and aduice of *Peter Iannin* knight, Baron of Chagny and Monthieu, Councillor to the most Christian king in his Councell of Estate, and his Embassadour extraordinarie with the said Lords the Estates, and *Elie* of La Place, knight, seignior of Ruffy, Castellano of Machaut, Councillor in the said Councell of Estate, and Gentleman in ordinarie of the kings Chamber, Baylife and Captaine of Vitry le Francois, and his Embassadour Leeger, with the generall Estates of the Low Countries; Sir *Richard Spencer* knight, Gentleman in ordinarie of the Priuie Chamber to the king of great Brittain, and his Embassadour extraordinarie, with the generall Estates of the Low Countries; and Sir *Ralph Wilmoud* knight, Embassadour in ordinarie, and Councillor of State in the said vniuersal Princes. All which agreed after the maner and forme that followeth.

XX.

First, the said Lords Archdukes declare, as well in their owne names, as of the said king, That they are content to treat with the said Lords, the generall Estates of the vniuersal Princes, in qualitie, and holding them for free Countries, Prouinces, and Estates, over whom they pretend not any thing, and to make with them a truce in the same names and

A and qualities, as they haue done by these presents, vpon such conditions, as are hereafter written and declared.

2 That the said truce shall be good, firme, loyall, and inuiolable, for the terme of twelve yeares, during the which, there shall be a cessation of all acts of hostilitie, in what sort soeuer, betwixt the said Lords, the King, Archdukes, and generall Estates, as well by sea, and other waters, as by land, in all their realmes, countries, lands, and seigneuries, and for all their subiects and inhabitants, of what qualitie and condition soeuer they be, without any exception of place or person.

3 Euerie one shall hold and enioy effectually, the countries, townes, places, lands, and seigneuries which he doth hold and possesse at this present, and shall not be troubled nor diquieted in any sort whatsoever, during the said truce: wherein shall be comprehended the burroughs, villages, hamlets, and Champion countries which depend thereon.

4 The subiects and inhabitants of the countries of the said Lords, the King, Archdukes, and Estates, shall haue all good correspondencie, and friendship together, during the said truce, without any feeling or reuenge of the wrongs and losses which they haue receiued heretofore: and they may also frequent, and remaine in the countries of the one and the other, and there vse their trafficke and commerce with all assurance, as well by sea and other waters, as by land; the which notwithstanding the said king meanes should be refrained, and limited to the realmes, countries, lands, and seigneuries, which he holds C and enioyes in Europe, and other places and seas, whereas the subiects of kings and princes, which are his friends and allies, haue the said trafficke by consent. And in regard of the places, townes, ports, and hauens, which he holds without the said limits, the said Lords the Estates, nor their subiects, shall not vse any trade or trafficke thither, without the expresse permission of the said king. Yet they may trade, if they thinke good, into the countries of all other princes, potentats, and people, that will permit them, yea without the said limits, wherein the said king, his officers, and subiects which depend of him, shall not giue any let or disturbance vpon this occasion, to the said princes, potentats, & people, which haue, or shall suffer them to trade, nor in like maner to them, nor to any priuat person, with whom they haue, or shall vse the said trafficke.

D 5 And for that it is necessarie, that there should be a long time prefixed, to aduertise them that are without the said limits, with forces and ships, to desist from all acts of hostilitie, it hath beene agreed, That the truce shall not begin there, but a yeare hence: It is notwithstanding vnderstood, That if they may be sooner aduertised of the truce, the hostilitie shall cease: But if after the said time of one yeare, any hostilitie shall be committed, the damage shall be repaired presently without any delay.

6 The subiects and inhabitants of the countries of the said King, Archdukes, and Estates, trafficking in the countries one of another, shall not be bound to pay greater customes and impositions than their owne subiects, and those of their friends and allies, which shall be least charged.

E 7 And the subiects, and inhabitants of the said Estates, shall haue the same assurance and libertie, in the countries of the said king, and Archdukes, which hath beene graunted to the subiects of the king of great Brittain, by the last treatie of peace and secret articles, made with the Constable of Castille.

8 In like manner the merchandise, maisters of ships, pilots, mariners, their ships, goods, wares, and other commodities belonging vnto them, shall not be arrested, nor seized, by vertue of any generall, or particular warrant, or commission, nor for any cause whatsoever, of warre or otherwise, neither yet vnder pretext, that they will imploy again for the preservation or defence of the country. Yet they meane not to comprehend herein those that are arrested and seized on by the ordinarie course of justice, by reason of debts, bonds, and vailable contracts of those, vpon whom the said seizures haue beene made, wherein they shall proceed, as is accustomed by law and

And in regard of the commerce of the Low Countries, and of the customes and impositions, which shall be raised of their commodities: if it be hereafter found that they

exceed, and are prejudiciall, vpon the first requisition, that shall be made of either part, A Commissioners shall be deputed to rule and moderat them by a common consent, it it may be: neither shall it be any breach of truce, in case they cannot agree.

10 If any sentences or judgements haue beene giuen, betwixt persons of diuers parties not defended, be it either in ciuile or criminall causes, they shall not be put in execution against the parties so condemned, nor against their goods during the said truce.

11 There shall be no letters of Marke, or Licenses, granted during the said time, vnlesse it be with knowledge of the cause, and in cases allowable by the imperiall laws and constitutions, and according vnto the order established by them.

12 They shall not approach, enter, nor stay in the ports, hauens, and roades, of one B anothers countrie, with any such number of ships and souldiers as may giue cause of suspition, without the leaue and permission of them to whom the said ports, hauens, and roads doe belong, vnlesse they be driuen in by tempests, or forced to doe it by necessity, and to auoid some daunger at sea.

13 They whose goods haue beene seized on, and forfeited, by reason of the wars, or their heires, hauing iust cause, shall enioy the said goods, during the said truce, and shall take possession of their owne priuat authoritie, by vertue of this present treatie, and not before to haue recourse vnto iustice: notwithstanding all incorporations to the treasure, ingagemēt, gifts, treaties, accords, & transactions, or any renuntiations which haue beene made in the said transactions, to exclude them, to whom the said goods shall belong, yet with this charge, that they shall not dispose of them, neither yet change, nor diminish them, during the time of their possession, vnlesse they haue first obtained leaue of the said Lords Archdukes, or Estates.

14 The which also shall take place, to the benefit of the heires of the deceased Lord the Prince of Orange, namely to the rights which they haue to the salt pits in the countie of Bourgondie, which shall be restored vnto them, with the woods which depend thereon. And as for the suit of Chafel-belin, begun during the life of the deceased prince of Orange, in the court at Macklin, against the Catholicke kings proctor generall, the said Archdukes promise faithfully, That they shall haue iustice done them within one year, after that they haue begun their pursuit, without any delay, and with all iustice and sinceritie.

15 If the Fisq or Treasurer, hath caused any goods confiscated to be sold of either part, they to whom they shall belong, by vertue of this present treatie, shall be bound to content themselves with the interest of the price, by reason of the sixteenth penie, to be paid yerely during the truce, by the care of such as enioy the said goods, otherwise it shall be lawfull for them to go vnto the land and inheritance that is sold.

16 But if the said sales had beene made by the course of iustice, for the good and lawfull debts of those, to whom the said goods were wont to belong, it shall be lawfull for them, or their heires, hauing iust cause, to redeem them, paying the price within one yere, to be reckoned from the day of this present treatie, after which they shall be no more received; and the said redemption being thus made by them, they may dispose thereof at their pleasure, neither shall they haue need to obtaine any other permission.

17 It is not meant notwithstanding, that this redeeming shall be allowed for houses situated in townes, sold vpon this occasion, for the great prejudice and notable losse which the purchaser should receive, by reason of the reparations, and alterations, which they may haue made in the said houses, the clearing whereof would be long and difficult.

18 And as for reparations, and betterings made in other houses, and places which are sold, where this redeeming is allowed, if they be pretended, the ordinarie Iudges shall doe right vpon knowledge of the cause, the land remaining liable for the summe whereunto the reparation shall amount: yet shall it not be lawfull for the said buyers, to vse any right of retention, to be payed and satisfied.

19 If any fortifications, and publike workes haue beene made of either part, with permission and authoritie of the superiours, in places subiect to restitution by this present treatie, the proprietaries thereof shall be bound to content themselves with the estimation

A tion which shall be made by the ordinarie Iudges, as well of the said places, as of the jurisdiction which they had there, vnlesse the parties agree by consent.

20 As for the lands of churches, colleges, and other religious places lying within the vnitied Prouinces, the which were members depending vpon churches, benefices, and colleges which are vnder the Archdukes obedience; that which hath beene sold since the first day of Ianuarie 1607 shall be restored vnto them, and they shall enter into it by their owne priuat authoritie, without any minister of iustice, to enioy it during the truce, and not to dispose thereof, as hath beene formerly said: but as for those which haue beene sold before the said time, or giuen in payment by the Estates of any of the B Prouinces, the rent of the price shall be payed them yerely, after the rate of the sixteenth penie, by the Prouince which hath made the said sale, or giuen the said lands in payment, so as they may be well assured: the like shall be done and obserued by the said Archdukes.

21 They to whome any lands confiscated, are to be restored, shall not be bound to pay the arrearages of rents, charges, and duties, especially affected and assigned vpon the said lands, for the time which they haue not enioyed them, and if they be molested of either part, they shall be sent away quit, and absolved.

22 They shall not pretend also for any lands sold or granted, any thing but the remainders, or arrearages whereunto they are bound that are in possession, by the treaties C hereupon made, with the interest of the entrie money, if any haue beene giuen, also after the rate of the sixteenth penie, as before.

23 Iudgements giuen for lands, and rights confiscated, with parties that haue acknowledged the Iudges, and haue beene lawfully defended, shall hold, and the parties condemned shall not be allowed to contradict them, vnlesse it be by ordinarie courses.

24 The said Archdukes shall euerie one for their parts appoint Officers and Magistrates for the administration of iustice and policie, in townes and places of strength, the which by this present treatie must be restored vnto the proprietaries, to enioy them during the truce.

25 Moueables forfeited, and fruits which are fallen before the conclusion of this D present treatie, shall not be subiect to restitution.

26 Mouing actions which haue beene referred by the said Archdukes or Estates to the benefit of priuat debtors, before the first day of Ianuarie 1607 shall be extinct of either part.

27 The time which hath run during the war, beginning from the yere 1567 vnto this present, shall not be reckoned to induce prescription betwixt those that were of contrarie parties.

28 They which haue retired themselves into a neuter countrie during the war, shall also enioy the benefit of this truce, and may remaine where they please, or returne to their ancient houses, there to dwell with all assurance, obseruing the lawes of the countries: neither shall their goods be seized on, nor they deprived of the enioying of them, by reason of their aboad in any place whereforeuer.

29 There shall not any new forts be built, during the said truce, within the Low Countries, of either part.

30 The Lords of the house of Nassau, shall not be pursued, nor molested (during the said truce) in their persons or goods, either for the debts contracted by the deceased prince of Orange, from the yere 1567 vnto his death, or for the arrearages due since the seizure of the lands that were charged.

31 If there be any contrauention made of the truce, by any priuat persons, without the commandement of the said King, Archdukes, or Estates, the damage shall be repaired vpon the same place where the contrauention hath beene made, if they be surprised, or else at the place of their abiding, and shall not be elsewhere pursued, either in their bodies or goods, in any sort whatsoeuer; and it shall not be lawfull for them to come to arms, or to breake the truce, vpon this occasion, but in case of open deniall of justice,

office, it shall be lawfull for them to releue themselves according to custome, either by letters of marke, or reprimall.

32 All exheredations, and dispositions made in hatred of the war, are declared void, and as if they had not bene.

33 The subiects and inhabitants of the said Archdukes and Estates, of what qualitie and condition soever, are declared capable to succede one another, as well by testament, as *ab intestato*, according to the custome of the place; and if any successions did heretofore fall vnto any of them, they shall be maintained and enjoy them.

34 All prisoners taken in war shall be deliuered on either side, without paying any ranfome.

35 And to the end that this present treatie may be the better obserued, the said King, Archdukes, and Estates, do promise respectiue to imploy their forces and meanes, enerie one by himselfe, to haue all the passages free, and the seas, and nauigable riuers secured against the incurfions and spoiles of mutins, pirates, and thecues, and if they can apprehend them, to cause them to be punished with all rigour.

36 They promise moreover, not to do any thing in prejudice of this present treatie, nor suffer to be done directly, or indirectly, and if it were done, to cause it to be repaired without any difficultie or delay: and for the obseruation of all abouementioned, the said King, and Archdukes bind themselves and their successors respectiue, and for the validitie of the said bond renounce all lawes, customes, or any thing whatsoeuer to the contrarie.

37 This present treatie shall be ratified and confirmed by the said King, Archdukes, and Estates, and deliuered from the one vnto the other in good and due forme, within foure daies: and as for theratification of the said king, the said Archdukes haue promised, and shall be bound to deliuer it within three moneths in good and due forme, to the end that the said Lords the Estates, their subiects and inhabitants may effectually enjoy the fruits of this present treatie, with all securitie.

38 The said treatie shall be proclaimed where it doth belong, presently after theratification made by the said Lords, Archdukes, and Estates, all acts of hostilitie ceasing.

Thus it was made and concluded, in the towne and citie of Antuerpe, the ninth of April, in the yeare 1609, and signed by my Lords the Ambassadors to the most Christian king, and to the king of great Brittain, as mediators; and by the deputies of my Lords, the Archdukes, and Estates, and it was subscribed.

P. Jeannin, Elie de la Place, Ric. Spencer, Ralf Windewood, Ambrose Spinola, Fr. John Rygle, Pres. Richardot, Jo. de Mancisor, L. Verreycken, William Lewis Earle of Nassau, W. Bredon, de, Cornelius de Gent, John de Oldenbarnewelt, J. de Maldere, Gde. Renesse, G. Hillama, J. Sleth, Ab. Coenders.

And for that they found afterwards some difficultie and obscuritie in the precedent articles, the deputies of the Archdukes, and of the vnted Prouinces of the Low Countries, made this declaration, and augmentation following, whereof the tenor was as it is here set downe.

The generall Estates of the vnted Prouinces of the Low Countries, To all those to whom these presents shall come, Greeting. We make it knowne, that hauing viewed and examined the points and articles which haue bene concluded the seuenth of this present moneth of Ianuarie here at the Hage, betwixt the deputies of the most excellent Archdukes *Albert* of Austria, and *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, and Ours, by vertue of the procurations giuen respectiue to the said deputies, touching some difficulties and ambiguities proceeding from the treatie of truce, haue agreed the ninth of April 1609 in the towne of Antuerpe, betwixt the said Archdukes and Vs of the one part, and propounded on the other part by the officers and subiects respectiue, and taken to be duly considered of, for the augmenting and more ample declaration of the points and articles whereof the contents doe follow; for that in the treatie of truce made the ninth of April in the yeare of our Lord 1609, in the towne of Antuerpe, betwixt the Commissioners and

A and deputies of my Lords the Archdukes of Austria, &c. and those of the generall Estates of the vnted Prouinces of the Low Countries, some difficulties and ambiguities haue bene propounded of either part by the officers and subiects, and taken into consideration, for the encrease and more ample declaration of the said Articles: in the end it hath bene held fit for the deputies of either part to confesse of these difficulties, and to make some agreement concerning the same. The deputies hauing met and conferred many times together, according vnto their Procurations and Commissions of either side, in the end they hauing agreed vpon the points and articles which follow. For the doing whereof there were assembled the seuenth of Ianuarie, in the yeare 1610, at the Hague in Holland, *Balthazar* of Robiano, Treasurer generall of the reuenues and finances of the said Lords the Archdukes, *Lewis Verreycken* Knight, Seigneur of Hamme, Councillor of the Councill of warre, Audiencer and first Secretarie to their Highnesses; and *John Baptista Maes*, Councillour and Aduocat Fiscall of the Councill of Brabant for the Archdukes, *Henric* of Brien the elder, Seigneur of Synderen, *John Oldenbarnewelt* Knight, Seigneur of Tempel, Ronderys, &c. Aduocat, and Keeper of the great Scale of the Charters and Registers of Holland and East Friseland, *James* of Maldere, Knight, Seigneur of Hayes, &c. the first, and representing the Nobilitie at the Estates, and in the Councill of the Countrie of Zeland, *Justus* of Ryfembourgh, Seigneur of Ryfembourgh, first Bourgmaister of the towne of Vtrecht, *Timo* of Ornema, Iustice of Scooterland, *Ernest* of Interion, *Drogart* of Tuuent, and *Abel Coenders* of Helpen, Seigneur of Faen and Cante, on the behalfe of the generall Estates of the vnted Prouinces.

First, That the Inhabitants of the vnted Prouinces of the Low Countries, coming into the Countries and Prouinces vnder the Archdukes obedience, shall haue, and enjoy (gouerning themselves according to the said treatie) the same libertie that the subiects of the king of great Brittain haue: and to the end that Articles which concerne it shall be sent vnto all gouernours, magistrats, and officers, and they of the vnted Prouinces of the Low Countries may, throughout all their Highnesses obedience, imploy such Aduocates, Proctors, Notaries, Solicitors, and Executours, as they shall thinke good, who (being required) shall be appointed by the ordinarie Iudges.

Secondly, That the first of all their Highnesses shall provide and appoint fit and honourable places to be the bodies of such of the Estates subiects as shall die in any place vnder their Highnesses obedience.

Thirdly, That the said Lords the Archdukes, & the Estates may not receiue, without their limits of either part, goods, passing either by water or by land, entring or going forth.

Fourthly, That the subiects of the said Archdukes, and Estates, shall reciprocally enjoy in the countries one of another, their ancient freedoms and rights of customes, the which they did quietly enjoy before the warre.

Fifthly, That the frequentation, conuersation, and commerce betwixt the subiects respectiue shall not be hindered, and all lets shall be taken away.

Sixthly, That all lands and rights which (according to the treatie) haue bene restored, or ought to be restored to the old Proprietaries, or to their heires, or to any one that hath action, may be sold by the same Proprietaries, without any necessitie to sue for a particular consent, notwithstanding the thirteenth Article of the said treatie, where it is otherwise said, except the proprietie of rents, which shall be acknowledged by the Treasurer of the place where the lands are sold, as also the actions and rent, being vnder the Treasurers charge respectiue.

Seventhly, That all lands concealed, or rights, moueables or immoueables, rents, actions, debts, or any other thing which hath not bene seized by the Treasurer vpon good certifiat, before the ninth of April, in the yeare 1609, the Proprietaries and their heires, or they that pretend action, may enjoy it, withall the fruits, reuenues, and profits, freely, and at their owne disposition; and the concealors, nor their heires shall not be in any sort molested, in regard thereof, by the Treasurer of either part; but the Proprietaries, their heires, and they that pretend action, shall haue, touching the matter, law against every one, as if it were their proper good.

8 The trees which have bin cut since the last day of Ianuarie, in the year 1609, and at A the day of the conclusion of the said treatie were remaining vpon the ground, and in like manner those that were sold the same day and not cut, shall remaine vnto the Proprietarie, notwithstanding the sale, neither shall they be bound to pay any thing.

9 The fruits, hire of houses, farmes, and reuenues of seigneuries, lands, teuths, fishing, rents, and other reuenues of lands, which (according to the treatie) haue beene restored, or ought to be, falling due after the ninth of Aprill, in the year 1609, shall be payed for the whole year vnto the Proprietaries, their heires, or to them that pretend any action.

10 For lands sold, or rents discharged, or the chiefe stocke leuied by the Treasurer of either part, they shall giue letters to the Proprietaries, their heires, or to them that pretend action, the which shall serue them as a declaratorie prooffe, conformable to the treatie, with assignation of a yearly payment to be made by the Receiuer in those Prouinces where they haue beene sold, or redeemed, which shall be named after the first publike sale, or otherwise, as it shall be fit: and the rent of the first year being due, it shall be payed on the ninth of Aprill in the year 1610.

11 The hire of lands confiscated (although they haue beene ser for many yeares) shall expire with the year 1609, according to the custome of those places where the lands and goods lie, and the said hire or rent falling due after the ninth of Aprill (as hath been said) shall be payed vnto the Proprietaries: but withall, it is agreed, That if he which employes the said land hath bestowed any cost for matters concerning Haruest which doth C ensue, that the said expences (according to the custome, or discretion of the Iudge of the place where the lands doe lie) shall be payed by the Proprietarie to him that hath held them.

12 The sales made of lands confiscated, or registred, since the conclusion of the said treatie, shall be held void, and in like manner those which had beene made before, against the Accord made with certaine townes in particular.

13 Satisfaction shall be made vnto the Proprietarie, for lands or goods employed in fortifications, publike workes, or Hospitals, according to the nineteenth Article of the treatie.

14 The houses of priuat men, which haue beene restored, or ought to be, according to D the said treatie, shall not be charged with garrisons, or otherwise, more than the other subiects which are of the same condition.

15 If they make difficultie in any place to restore the lands and rights which are to be restored, the Iudge of the said place shall take order that restitution may presently be made, and shall therein vse the shortest course, without any pretext that the tax hath not been payed, or otherwise, contrarie to the contents of the thirteenth Article of the treatie, whereby the restitution may be delayed.

16 And where it shall be found, that all the lands of any one of either partie haue been confiscated, or registred in such sort, as he had not any meanes left whereby to pay the rents and interests of his debts, made during the confiscation or annotation, he shall not E onely be free from all charges and rents, according to the said treatie, but also from the generall and personall charge of rents and interests due in the said time.

17 It is meant, that vnder exheredations made in hatred of warre, are also comprehended exheredations made by reason of any thing proceeding from warre, or that depends of it.

18 No man of either partie, may be hindered, directly or indirectly, changing the place of his aboad, if he pay the rights which he ought to pay, and all lets and hinderances since the conclusion of the treatie shall be really taken away.

19 Vnder the restitution of lands and rights granted by the treatie, is also vnderstood the lands and rights lying in the Counties of Bourgondie and Charolois, and that F which, according to the treatie, hath not beene yet restored, shall of euerie side be faithfully and speedily restored to the Proprietaries, their heires, or them that pretend any action.

20 The said Lords the Archdukes, and the Estates, promise to accomplish, and cause

A to be accomplished, all and euerie the said points faithfully: whereunto they bind themselves according to the bond contained in the principal treatie, and in such sort as if these points also had beene mentioned.

21 Finally it hath beene agreed that all and euerie of the points and articles of the treatie of the ninth of Aprill last past, whereof there hath not beene any alteration expressly made, nor a more ample declaration, shall remaine in force, without any preiudice, or interest, & that whatsoeuer hath beene herein treated, or propounded, either by word or writing, or vrged of either part, shall not tend, or be interpreted to helpe or hinder any one, directly or indirectly: but as well the said Archdukes, and the generall and particu-

B lar Estates, as also all princes, earles, barons, townes, colleges, knights, gentlemen, bourgeoisie, and other inhabitants of prouinces respectively, of what qualitie or condition soeuer, shall remaine in their rights, according to the tenor of the said treatie: and my said Lords, the Archdukes, and the Estates, shall within on moneth next ensuing confirm this treatie, and shall deliuer their letters of aggregation one vnto another in due forme.

Thus agreed and concluded at the Hage in Holland, the day, moneth, and yere aboue named. In witness whereof these presents were confirmed and signed by the deputies of either part, *B. de Robiano, Verreycken, I. B. Mafius, Hen. Van Brien en de Alst, Ide Oldenbarnevelt, Ide Mulder, Iustus de Ryckenbourg, T. O. Ocnama, Erneft de l'iter sum, Ab. Coenders.* After

C mature deliberation we haue accepted, allowed, confirmed, and ratified, and doe accept, allowe, confirme, and ratifie, by these presents, the same points and articles, promising faithfully to obserue them, and to cause them to be obserued in euery point, as if we our selves had treated and promised them, and neuer to do any thing contrarie, nor suffer to be done, directly, nor indirectly, in any sort whatsoever, binding therefore all our lands, and of our successors. In witness whereof, we haue caused these presents to be sealed with our great seale, and to be signed by our Register in our assemblie at the Hage, the nine and twentieth of Ianuarie, in the year 1610. Signed vnderneath *I. Mafius Vr.*

And lower, By the commaundement of my said Lords the generall Estates, signed, *C. Aerffen.*

D Now that the generall Estates of the vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries make one bodie of a common weale, since that they haue shaken off the yoke of Spaine, and haue disfracted themselves from other Prouinces, with whom they were gouerned vnder one prince, I haue thought it fit, as I haue set downe in the discourse of the Archdukes Estates, the Earles of Flanders; in like manner to propound and set downe in this place the Lords and Earles of the chiefe vnited Prouinces, that is to say, of Holland, Zeland, and Friseland: for you shall plainly see by the succession of the Lords, what was the gouernment of the countries which they held, before they tooke the forme of a Commonweale, and how from all antiquitie they had distinct Lords and Earles, vntill in the end vnder Philip the first of that name, they began to be vnited to the other Prouinces of the E Low Countries.

¶ The Earles of Holland, Zeland, and Lords of Friseland.

T He countrie of Holland was erected to an Earledome in the year of Christ 863. Charles the Bald, king of France, for the commendable vertues of Thierry of Aquitaine, gaue him all the countrie of Holland with a portion of Friseland: and afterwards in the yere 868 on the thirteenth of Aprill, Zeland was giuen him by Lewis king of Germany, at the request of Emme wife to king Lewis.

Thierry the second by the death of his father Count Thierry of Aquitaine, was second E Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and Lord of Frisland.

Arnold in the year 988 after the death of Count Thierry the second his father, succeeded in the countries of Holland, Zeland, and Friseland. This Arnold obtained of the Emperor Otto the third, to hold his counties of Holland and Zeland, and the Estates of Holland, barely in fee of the Empire, and no more of the crowne of France, as he had done

denevnto that day. The said earle *Arnold* was slaine in a batraile against the Frisons the A
 eighteenth of October 993, having gouerned Holland and Zeland.

Thierry the third of that name, after the death of his father *Arnold*, was the fourth
 Earle of Holland and Zeland, and Lord of Friseland.

Thierry the fourth of that name, after the death of *Thierry* his father, was the fift Earle
 of Holland and Zeland, and Lord of Friseland: he was neuer married, and died the fif-
 teenth of May 1108, having gouerned his countries nine yeares.

Floris the first of that name, was before Earle of East-Friseland, who after the death of
 his brother *Thierry* the fourth, who was the fift Earle, was made Earle of Holland, Ze-
 land, &c. who hauing gouerned his countries foureteeen yeares, was put to rout in battell B
 with two thousand and six hundred of his subiects, neere vnto Heusden, in the which
 he was slaine.

Gertrude widow, mother and Gouvernesse to young Count *Thierry*, sonne to *Floris*, go-
 uerned the countrie one yeare.

Robert called the Frison, married *Gertrude*, widow to Count *Floris*, with the consent of
 all the Nobilitie, and the Estates of Holland and Zeland, who also made him Curator of
 young Count *Thierry* sonne to *Floris*.

Godfrey the Crooked, Duke of Lorraine, was ninth Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and
 Lord of Friseland, by viurpation.

Thierry the fift of that name, tenth Earle of Holland, and Friseland, sonne to Count C
Floris, after the death of *Godfrey* the Crooked, recovered his patrimoniall rights, and en-
 tered into Holland, from the which he had bene so long expelled, and there was general-
 ly receiued with great ioy and magnificence, and acknowledged for their Earle and natu-
 rall Lord: so as falling sicke, he died in the yeare 1092, the fiftieth Calends of Iulie,
 after that his mother *Gertrude*, from the decease of her husband, had gouerned two yeares,
Robert the Frilon his father in law eight yeares, *Godfrey* the Crooked foure yeares, *William*
 Bishop of Vtrecht one yeare, and he himselfe fiftieth yeares, making in all thirtie yeares
 from the death of his father.

Floris called the Far, the second of that name, and the eleuenth Earle of Holland, and
 Zeland, and Lord of Friseland, sonne to Count *Thierry* the fift, who hauing gouerned D
 his countries peaceably for the space of one and thirtie yeares, died in the yeare 1133, the
 fixt of March.

Thierry the sixt of that name, sonne to *Floris*, was the twelfth Earle of Holland, and
 Zeland, and Lord of Friseland, hauing gouerned his countrie fortie yeares, he died in the
 yeare 1163. He had great wars against the Frisons, and his other neighbours.

Floris the third of that name, after the death of *Thierry* his father, was the thirteenth
 Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and Lord of Friseland. He had much trouble in his time,
 and died in the voyage of Palestina, hauing gouerned his prouinces twentie and seven
 yeares.

Thierry the seuenth of that name, after the death of Count *Floris* his father, was foure- E
 teenth Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and Lord of Friseland: Hauing ruled his countries
 in great and continuall wars thirtie yeares, he died in the yeare 1203.

Ade, the only daughter of *Thierry* the seuenth, succeeded her father, and was Countesse
 the fiftieth, but she ruled but one yeare, and died without children.

William, the first of that name, the sixteenth Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and Lord of
 Friseland, being before Earle of East-Friseland, brother to *Thierry* the seuenth of that name,
 hauing bene expelled by the Nobilitie of Holland, he made all Holland and Zeland
 subiect, and died after he had gouerned the said countries nine yeares, in the yeare 1223.

Floris the fourth of that name, by the death of Count *William* his father, was seuen-
 teenth Earle of Holland, and Zeland, and Lord of Friseland, who after he had gouerned F
 his countries with great honour twelue yeares, died at Clermont, and left one sonne cal-
 led *William*, being only six yeares old.

William the second of that name, after the death of his father, was the eighteenth Earle
 of Holland, and Zeland, being six yeares old, he was gouerned by his vnckle *Otto* Bishop
 of

A of *Vtrecht*, and after the death of the Emperour *Frederic*, he was chosen king of Romans,
 and was proclaimed Emperour by Pope *Innocent*, in the towne of Lyon, foure yeares after
 his election, who died in the yeare 1255, after that he had gouerned his countries of
 Holland and Zeland one and twentie yeares, and the Empire seuen yeares.

John the first of that name, after the death of *William* his father, being only halfe a yeare
 of age, was nineteenth earle of Holland and Zeland, and lord of Friseland, who died after
 he had gouerned his countries, by himselfe, and his tutors, 42 yeares.

John, first of that name, twentieth earle of Holland and Zeland, &c. succeeded his fa-
 ther, and died without children, the fourth of the Calends of Nouember, in the yeare
 1300, in whom fayled the race of the Earles, issued from the direct line of the Dukes of
 Mountaine, which since *Thierry* the first had continued foure hundred thirtie and seuen
 yeares: and by his death these countries fell to the earle of Haynault, who descended by
 the mother side from the Earles of Holland.

John, earle of Haynault, second of that name, was one and twentieth earle of Hol-
 land, and Zeland, and lord of West-Friseland: He was sonne to *John* of Auesnes and to
Eladie *Alix*, sister to king *William* earle of Holland, &c. and so sonne to the great aunt
 of this last earle *John* the first.

William, third of that name, before earle of Oosternant, by the death of his father, was
 the two and twentieth earle of Holland and Zeland, and lord of Friseland, added to his
 Countie of Haynault. For his good life, he was called the Good, and died the ninth of
 Iune, in the yeare of our Lord 1337, hauing gouerned his Prouinces peaceably, for the
 space of three and thirtie yeares.

William, fourth of that name, and three and twentieth earle of Holland and Zeland,
 and lord of Friseland, and earle of Haynault, after the death of his father *William*, called
 the Good, he was slaine in an encounter against the Frisons, and died without children,
 the foure and twentieth of September 1346.

Marguerite the emperesse, wife to the emperor *Lewis* of Bauaria, the foure and twenti-
 eth, being in Holland and Zeland, &c. sister to Count *William* the fourth, was in the same
 yeare 1346 honourably receiued, and acknowledged Ladie and Princeesse of the sayd
 D countries, and hauing receiued the homages and fealties, she did greatly augment their
 liberties and priuiledges.

William of Bauaria, fift of that name, eldest sonne to the Emperour *Lewis* of Bauaria
 and to the Ladie *Marguerite*, was the five and twentieth earle of Holland and Zeland,
 lord of Friseland, and earle of Haynault.

Albert of Bauaria, brother to *William* of Bauaria, first of that name, was six and twen-
 tieth earle of Holland and Zeland, lord of Friseland, and earle of Haynault.

William of Bauaria, sixt of that name, after the death of his father *Albert* of Bauaria,
 was seven and twentieth earle of Holland and Zeland, lord of Friseland, and also earle of
 Haynault.

Jacqueline of Bauaria, onely daughter and heire to *William* of Bauaria, sixt of that name,
 succeeded after the death of hir father, in all his feigneries and earledomes, being about
 foureteeen yeares old: and in the same yeare 1417 she was receiued, and tooke possession
 of all hereditary countries, of Holland, Zeland, and Friseland, as she had done before
 in Haynault. And yet to the prejudice of the said *Jacqueline*, *John* of Bauaria, bearing
 him to be Tutor of Holland, obtained also from the Emperour *Sigismund*, vnckle to his
 was the Countie of Holland and Zeland, and feignerie of Friseland, in fealtie and ho-
 mage, being fallen to the Empire by the death of Count *William* of Bauaria, his bro-
 ther, to the Ladie *Jacqueline*, being dead without heire male. He died at the Hague
 on Twelfth day, in the yeare of our Lord 1429, hauing gouerned the coun-
 tie of Holland, Zeland, and Friseland, in qualitie of Auoic, or Gouverneur, about six
 yeares, during the which time, the countries were alwaies in warre, but in the end, he
 made peace, in the yeare 1429, on the nineteenth of Iulie, with *Jacqueline* of Bauaria,
 who after the death of hir vnckle *John*, enioyed all her feigneries. She was married foure
 times, and was forced (to recouer her last husband, who was a prisoner in the hands of
 Philip

the duke of Bourgondie, at that time Gouverneur of Holland &c.) to transport all her A
seigneuries in general, to the said duke of Bourgondie, dying without children. After
which transport, within short time she died, having bene ladie, and true heire, of the
counties of Holland and Zeland, and lordship of Friseland, with great troubles and af-
flictions (which grow by the ambition of the duke of Bourgondie) the space of nineteene
yeares. She lies at the Hague, having lived but six and thirtie yeares.

Philip, first of that name, earle of Holland and Zeland, and lord of Friseland, sonneto
John duke of Bourgondie, by resignation of the ladie *Jaqueline*, the last Countesse of
Holland, of the house of Bauaria, who died without heires. He being heire, as well by
the father-side, as the mother side, succeeded in the said countries. Thus he was duke of B
Bourgondie, Brabant, and Limbourg, earle of Flanders, Artois, Bourgondie, Haynault,
Holland, Zeland, and Namur, lord of Friseland, Salins, and Macklin, Marquis of the
Sacred Empire. A while after he did purchase (having first conquered it by armes, in the
name of the widow to the deceased duke) the duchie of Luxembourg. He was borne on
Saint Peters day, in the yeare of our Lord 1359; his mother was the ladie *Marguerite*
of Bauaria, sister to Count *William*, father to the Countesse *Jaqueline*, and the ladie
Marguerite of Bourgondie, mother to the said Countesse, was sister to John duke of Bour-
gondie, and therefore aunt by the father-side to the said duke *Philip*: so as by the father-
side, and the mother-side, the said countries fell vnto him without any difficultie. He was
a valiant and couragious prince, and feared of his enemies. He was of a tall stature, faire
C of countenance, and subiect to choller, yet a lover of peace, and furnished the Good,
but wonderfull ambitious of greatness, the which he shewed by his bad dealing with his
cousin *Jaqueline* Countesse of Haynault. He died the first of Iune, in the yeare of our
Lord God 1467, being seuentie three yeares old, having gouerned the countries of
Holland, Zeland, Haynault, Friseland, and others, as well in qualitie of Earle and Lord,
as of Curator, about fortie yeares.

Charles, called the Warlike, the onely sonne of the good duke *Philip*, borne at Dijon,
in the yeare 1434, by the death of his father, succeeded in the duchie of Bourgondie,
Brabant, Limbourg, and Luxembourg, in the counties of Bourgondie, Artois, Flan-
ders, Haynault, Holland, Zeland, and Namur, the seigneuries of Friseland, Salins, and
Macklin, and in the Marquisat of the sacred Empire. He did purchase, or had in mor-
gage from *Sigismund* of Austria, the countie of Ferrette, in the countie of Alsatia, neere
vnto Basil in Suisseerland. He required the emperor *Fredericke* to make Bourgondie
a Realme, the which he refused. He was slaine at the battaile of Nancy, in the yeare
of our Lord God 1476.

Marie, daughter and onely heire to *Charles* called the Warlike, was duchesse of Bour-
gondie, &c. and succeeded in all the said Prouinces, after the death of her father, being
but eighteen yeares old, and vnder the guard and gouernment of the duke of Cleues,
and the lord of Rauefeyn his brother.

Maximilian, Archduke of Austria, sonne to the Emperour *Frederic*, being about the
age of twentie yeares, married with *Marie*, duchesse of Bourgondie, &c. and was, in the
right of his wife, duke of Bourgondie, &c. and earle of Holland, Zeland, &c. which
countries he gouerned twelue yeares, or thereabouts. He died in the yeare of our Lord
1519, and lies at Nieuusad in Germanie.

Philip, second of that name, earle of Holland and Zeland, and lord of Friseland, onely
sonne to the Archduke *Maximilian* of Austria, afterwards Emperour, and of *Marie* du-
chesse of Bourgondie, &c. daughter to duke *Charles* the Warlike, was borne at Bruges
the twentieth day of Iune, in the yeare of our Redemption 1478. He was about fourte
yeares old when his mother died: After whose death, the Archduke, king of Ro-
mans, his father, gouerned his countries in qualitie of Regent, or Curator, with great
troubles, by reason of the factions which raigne, as well in Holland as in Flanders, vnto
the yeare 1494, when as the Archduke *Maximilian*, king of the Romans, by death of
his father, was crowned Emperour.

Prince *Philip* his sonne, being then sixteen yeares old, was called Archduke of Au-
stria,

A *Aria*, duke of Bourgondie, Lothier, Brabant, Stryer, Carinthia, Limbourg, Luxembourg,
and Guedres, earle of Hasbourg, Flanders, Artois, Bourgondie, Ferrette, Kyburch, pa-
latine of Haynault, Holland, Zeland, Namur, Zutphen, marquis of the sacred Empire,
and of Berou, Landtgrau of Elfsathen, lord of Windmark, of Portenau, of Salins, and
Macklin. He died in Spaine being young, his father yet liuing, in the yeare 1505, and
lieth at Granado.

Charles, second of that name, five and thirtieth earle of Holland and Zeland, and lord
of Friseland, eldest sonneto *Philip* of Austria, was borne at Gand, the foure and twen-
tieth of Februarie, in the yeare 1500. After the death of his father, he did succeed in all his
B duchies, earledomes, and seigneuries, having gouerned his countries about foure and for-
tie yeares: he resigned the Low Countries in the yeare 1549, vnto his sonne *Philip*, and
died in Spaine in the yeare 1558. He lies at Granado.

Philip of Austria, the six and thirtieth Earle of Holland, Zeland, &c. onely sonne to
the Emperour *Charles*, who in his life time caused him to come out of Spaine into the Low
Countries, to make him (if he could) succeed as well in the Empire, as in his other realms
of Spaine, Naples, and Sicile, as of the Netherlands, and other Prouinces, whereof the
Emperour dispossessed himselfe in his life time, and his sonne tooke possession of the Low
countries, and received the oath of fidelitie of the Noblemen, and of all the deputies
of Prouinces and chiefe townes. The Lady *Marguerite* of Austria, base daughter to the
Emperour *Charles* the first, wife to *Ottavia Farnese* Duke of Parma and Plaisance, having
bene preferred (by the aduise of the Cardinal of Granuelle) before all the Princes of
Austria, the Prince of Orange, and the Earle of Egmont, to gouerne the Low Countries
in the kings absence; being come to Bruxells, whereas the king had called an assemblie
of the Estates of the Low Countries, he appointed her Gouverneesse generall of all the
seuenteen Prouinces, in the yere 1559, to the end that the might haue the chiefe man-
aging of all the gouernment of the said countries: the which caused great diuision be-
tweene the Noblemen, and others of the Councell of State of the Low Countries, vnder
whom also there were great combustions for religion in the said Countries; which diu-
D sions and troubles, were the cause that in the yeare 1581, the prouinces of Holland Ze-
land, and Friseland, vnited themselves, and altogether haue framed a kind of Common-
weale, which they called, Estates, who at this day gouerne the said Prouinces.



THE COMMON-WEALE OF GENEVA.

The Contents.

1. *Ntiquitie of the town of Geneva, and the situation.* 2. *Wherein the soile abounds;*
the fruits which grow in the countie, and the goodnesse of the aire. 3. *The Ge-*
neuois growe by nature, and not very courteous to strangers. 4. *Wherein the little*
of this Common-weale consists. 5. *Geneua a strong towne, and well garded: of the Ar-*
chduke and of the forts which are in that countie. 6. *For of Saint Catherine, and others, pa-*
trich Henry the Great, the French king. 7. *Of the Earles of Geneva, why the Dukes of Sa-*
int pretend that Geneva doth belong vnto them, When and how they came to hold the iurisdic-
tion of the said Earledome. 8. *A soueraine court of Geneva consisting of five and twentie Sena-*
tors, what be the laws and statutes of this Common-weale. 9. *How the Caluanities pro-*
cesses brought in, and sealed in the towne of Geneva.

H h

The



THe towne of Geneua comprehended within Sauoy, is very ancient, for that *Cæsar* himselfe makes mention thereof in the first booke of the *Gaules* wars, assuring that there was a bridge passing ouer the *Rhoshie*, the which in histime was vnder the power of the *Suisses*. The situation of this towne is pleasant, and of that side whereas the *Rhoshie* comes out of that great Lake, which in old time they called Lake *Leman*, it is low, but since it hath bene raised vpon a little hill. There is at Geneua as it were two townes, through the which the river of *Rhoshie* doth passe, whereon there is a bridge which ioines them together: the great townie is towards the South, and the lesser to the North; which the *Germanes* call *Genf*.

¶ The Qualitie.

II.

THe soile neere vnto Geneua is fruitfull, for it yeelds come, wine, turnups, and other roots, melons, all sorts of pulses, barley, oates, and haie: the ordinarie fruits are fruit, apples, pearces of many kinds, cherries of diuers sorts, mulberries both blacke and white, chestnuts, and almonds; but there grow few figs. The aire is good and wholesome, and Winter is not so cold and nipping as in *Germanie*, nor Sommer so tedious and hot as in many places of *Dauphine*. Within the lake of Geneua they take very goodly fish, an excellent tast, especially salmon-trouts which they carrie to *Lion* and other places, and wherof they make very great account, as of the most delicat meat that can be eaten.

¶ The Manners.

III.

THe inhabitants of Geneua are somewhat grosse in their manners and conuersation, but they haue good wits, and can manage their businesse well: they haue no great desire to see strangers with their towne, especially if they haue any doubt that they are *Catholikes*; they exact of them in their Innes as much as may be. They are grown somewhat familiar with the French, since that the king was in Sauoy, and that demanding his right with his sword in his hand, he persued them from many daungers which might haue fallen vpon them, especially by *Saint Catherines* fort which was raised. The women seeme to be more chaste than in any place of the world, and yet some of them will make loue in secret: they do in general make shew to be graue and staied. The men of qualitie which vse to speake French, speake it as ill as may be, and the common people speake Sauoyard: they do all go modestly attired, neither is it their custome to haue any excessie in apparrell, as in other places, which if they should their reuenues would be much decayed before the end of the yearre.

¶ The Riches.

IIII.

IT is most certaine that the inhabitants of Geneua are not very rich, and it is as much as they can doe to entertaine themselves with some toile in an honest libertie: and were not the great paines they take in printing of bookes of all sorts, and in inuening and making of silkes, this Common-weale would soone be poore and ruined: they do also vse a good meane to maintain themselves by their temperance, for that sparing is very much practised there, and it is in a manner their greatest reuenue. They do send into other parts good cheefes, fat capons, and gold thred very well wrought.

¶ The Force.

V.

THe towne of Geneua is well fortified, and furnished with artillerie, and all kind of munition for war: they do dayly keepe a good guard, and when any stranger comes into the towne, they haue an eye vnto his actions, and obserue whatsoeuer he doth. If any

A one presume to walke vpon the walls and to view them, they will not onely fetch him downe presently, but he shall be committed to prison, and drawne into question for his life. There is an Arceall neere vnto the court, which is stored with all sorts of armes, and furnished with all things that are necessarie to endure a long siege. There are and haue bene many forts in this countie, and amongst others that of *Saint Catherine* in the towne. The Duke of Sauoy had his ordnance to batter Geneua; but it was taken by that Duke, and being built right against it by them of Geneua, was also beaten downe and cast: all matters. The third, called *Ripaille*, came into the power of them of Geneua, by the meanes of the French, in the yearre of our Redemption 1589, and was named, and so was a forth, when it was also taken by the Geneuois. There are some towers amongst which they call one the Mistres Tower, which defends Geneua towards the Lake, and Sauoy: Another is called the Tower of the Island, or of *Cæsar*, which is situated vpon the top of the Island, to defend the bridge, which diuides the townes belong vnto the *Suisses*. And seeing that we haue spoken of the preparations which the Duke of Sauoy had made to beleige it, I thinke it verie fit to shew why the Dukes of Sauoy pretend that Geneua doth belong vnto them.

The Bishops of Geneua were most commonly in quarrell with the Earles for the government of the towne. But to make it short, after the death of a certaine Bishop called *Hubert*, his successour went vnto the Emperour *Fredericke* the first, and obtained of him that he should be sole Prince of Geneua, and not subiect to any one in temporall things, but to the Emperour, and withall, that he should remaine free from all tributes. But after the Bishops returne to Geneua, he was still disquieted in his gouernment, until that the Earle, called *William*, did incurre an imperiall proscription or banishment, by reason of his rebellion, and was deprived of the see which he held of the Bishop. The war hauing continued long, and the forces both of the Towne and Bishop being much decreast, the Geneuois called in an Earle of *Morieime*, who was afterwards Duke of Sauoy. But there was also much warre betwixt them, so as this Earle held many small Townes, Villages, and Castles, which did belong to them of Geneua, and drew neere vnto the Towne. And not contenting himselfe with that he had vsurped vnder the title of an homage not done, he required satisfaction of all that he had disbursed for the charges of those warres. But the Bishop hauing answered him, That he should rest satisfied with that which he had giuen him by right of see, there grew many new quarrells: so as most of the people fearing that this Earle of Sauoy would be content, and make a peace with their common enemy to their preiudice, they graunted that he should hold within the towne all that the Earle of Geneua had formerly enjoyed, and that by way of ingagement. But for that, being entred, he intreated the Geneuois tyrannously, some Chanoins, and Citisens, conspiring against him, called home their Earle, who comming with a small armie, was vanquished by the Sauoiards who held the towne, and then they entred into the conspiratours houses, taking, and defeating all they could. This discord continued vntill that the Earles of Geneua failed, and were extinct, after which the princes of Sauoy drew vnto them the iurisdiction of the said Earles. Finally, *Amé* prince of Sauoy being discontented to see himselfe vnder a Bishop, obtained from the Emperour *Charles* the fourth to be Vicar of the Empire in this Countie, meaning, that by this title, the Bishop of Geneua, with his iurisdiction, should be subiect vnto him. But the Bishop opposed himselfe courageously against the Earle, whereby he persued his authoritie, and the peoples libertie, vntill the time of the eighth, nephew to the first *Amé*, who was the first duke of Sauoy, and afterwards Pope, called *Felix*. He obtained from Pope *Martin* the temporall iurisdiction of Geneua: but he could not enioy this donation which had bene made vnto him, no more than his successours.

Hh ij

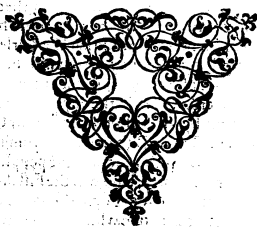
¶ The

The Government.

XXII. Here is a Court at Geneva, whereas five and twenty Senators assemble euerie day, for the affaires of the Common-weale. But it is noted that they doe not verie good justice at Geneva to a stranger who demands anything of a towne dweller, so as they all depart the court, when as they haue any business of this nature. If any one desire to understand the Lawes and Statutes of this Common-weale, there is a Booke newly printed at Geneva, which may content the curious. The towne is gouerned by a Council of two hundred, called the Great Councell, out of which the five and twenty Senators are chosen, and of these there are foure men elected, called Sindicks, who haue the government of the whole estate, vnlesse it be in some cases wherein the whole Councell is called in interest, as in making of peace and warre, in offensive and defensive league, &c. They are iudged by the ciuile law, and there is no appeal, but to the Councell of two hundred.

The Religion.

XXIII. They of Geneva make profession of the Protestants religion, and they haue not any exercise of the Masse or Poperie, but their towne is a retreat to all such as are opposite to the Pope of Rome, and a Seminarie of Ministers, which go from thence into other countries. Euerie man knowes how that this towne was sometimes the seat of Bishops, but about the yeare of our Lord 1539, they banished the Masse, and imbraced the Gospell, wherein they were instructed and confirmed by Calvin, and other good Ministers, the which it is not now possible to alter, but by the ruine of the whole towne. The Ministers haue a Consistorie, vnto the which they may call publike offenders, and such as giue cause of scandall, and there reprove them: If the crime be great, and the party obstinate, they forbid him the Communion; if notwithstanding he persist, they may excommunicate him. But the Ministers cannot call any before them into their Consistorie, but by the authoritie of a Sindicke, who must assist them, otherwise they haue no power to summon any man. They haue their maintenance out of the common treasure, and deale with no tithes.



THE

THE COMMON-WEALE OR THE CANTONS AND LEAGVES OF THE SVISSES.

The Contents.

THe description of Swisserland. 2. Of the Grisons country, and the limits. 3. Of the Valaisiens. 4. Division of the Swisses into thirteene Cantons. 5. Of the Canton of the Vry, called Toraen in Casars time, from whence it tooke the name. 6. Vry, a village diuised into ten communalities, and first of Suittz. 7. Of Vnderwald. 8. Of Lucerne, and what places are vnder the iurisdiction of this Canton. 9. Of Zurich. 10. Of Zug. 11. Of the countrie of Glaris. 12. Of Bearne, when it was built, and the townes and dependances. 13. Of the Canton of Fribourg. 14. Of the countrie of Schaffhouse, and whence it tooke the name. 15. Of the countrie of Appenzel, why it was so called, and diuised into twelue communalities. 16. Of the Valaisiens diuised into high and low iudicature, and of their communalities. 17. Of the Canton of the Grisons diuised into three leagues. 18. Of the fertilitie of Swisserland, and wherein it abounds, and what the countrie of Zurich and other Cantons do bring forth. 19. Of the nature and manners of the ancient Swisses, and of their valour in war in Casars time. 20. Of the disposition of the Swisses at this day, and of their inclination to armes and wine. 21. Barrennesse of Swisserland except pastures. 22. Situation of the countries of Swisserland naturally strong by reason of the Alpes, which serue as rampiers and defences. 23. Common-weale of Swisses consisting of three parts, and how many Cantons euery part contains. 24. When and how the Swisses cantoned themselves, and framed their Common-weale. 25. Of the league of three Cantons made at Berne in the yeare 1325, and what it contained. 26. Of an other league of foure Cantons of Lucerne, Vry, and the articles. 27. An assemblie made at Saint Gal betwixt the foresaid Cantons, concerning the force of a law and league. 28. The league of Zurich, with the foure Cantons, and the articles. 29. The league of Zug with the five Cantons. 30. The league of Glaris. 31. The league of Berne with the three Cantons. 32. The hereditarie league made betwixt the Emperor Maximilian, Charles duke of Austria, and the Swisses. 33. The vniou of the three leagues of the Grisons with the Cantons. 34. Conclusion and articles of the common league with the Lords and countries of the Valaisiens. 35. League of Saint Gal and the form. 36. The last peace made with them of Zurich, on Saint Olaus day in the yeare 1531. 37. The league of Berne in the yeare 1537, and the articles. 38. The means which the most famous Common-weales, both ancient and moderne haue held, to enlarge their Estates. 39. Of the countie counsell, established in the townes of Zurich and Basle, and of how many persons they consist. 40. Of the generall diet and assemblies of the Swisses. 41. Of the diuersitie of their religion.



- V**E are now to treat of many Estates, which are as it were vnited into one bodie by the meanes of their confederation and good intelligence, the which they haue maintained long, no man attempting to invade this Nation, or if he hath, his desaigne hath not taken effect: and in truth the Suisses are at this day to vnited as any prince that should refuse to dissolue their alliance, vnto that end all possible art, should neuer see it effected. But to come vnto the point and according to our order consider the whole limits of the countrie, I say that Suisseland is a Prouince of Germanie, which hath for her bounds vpon the East, the Grisons, Constance, and a part of Suabe; towards the West, Valais, and the countie of Bourgondie; vpon the South, the Estate of Milan neere vnto Como; and vpon the North, a part of Alfatia, for that they put Basil in the Suisses countrie, being one of the thirteen Cantons, and yet it stands in Alfatia. There are moreover the three leagues of the Grisons countrie, which in former times were called High Selesia, the which are allied to the Suisses: then the abbey and towne of Saint Gal, Mulhausen, and Rotuul.
- I.** The Grisons countrie hath for limits on the East the countie of Tirol, vpon the West, the Suisses, vpon the South the state of Milan and the countie of Bergamo, and towards the North, the king of Romanes countrie: and they haue much of their jurisdiction which lies intermixt with them.
- II.** Moreover they do reckon the seuen Wards or tenths of the Valaisiens called sometimes Sedunois, who dwell vpon the river of Rhone, and confine vpon the East with the Suisses, vpon the West with Sauoy, vpon the South with the great Lake and Piedmont, and vpon the North with the Lake of Geneva and a part of Suisseland. All these confederat countries are diuided into three parts, that is to say, Suisses, Grisons, and Valaisiens.
- III.** The Suisses are afterwards distinguished (leauing the most auncient diuisions, as Engouies, Turgouie, Verland, and such like) into thirteen Cantons, the which are Vry, Zuitz, Vnderual, Lucerne, Zurich, Zug, Glaris, Bern, Basil, Fribourg, Soleurre, Schafusen, and Appenzel.
- V.** The first Canton, which is that of Vry, hath not any towne, but the principall place and that which is head of the rest is Aroff, an open place about an Italian mile from Lucerne: the jurisdiction of this countie extends beyond the mountaine of Saint Gotard. They say that it was called Toreau, in the time of *Iulius Caesar*, and that the name came from thence, for that they of Sibental do at this day call Buls, Vry; and this countie hath for armes a Bulls head in a field Sinople. The inhabitants say that they are descended from a race of Pagans called Gots and Vres, who were afterward made Christians. Hauing often changed their Lords, this part falling in the end from the Germanes, returned to Zurich, at such time as the Empire was transported into Germanie, and that all the countries which had bene sometimes vnder the Romane Empire, recovered their libertie, beginning to gouern themselves vnder forme of a Common-weale, acknowledging no other Superiour than the Romane Empire; as we may see by the priuileges which were granted them by *Redolf* of Ausbourg king of Romanes, and by other Emperors, and they were neuer subiect (as some will haue it) to the house of Austria, for that the Empire being in this house, they obeyed the Emperor newly elected, but not the successores of this house. This village of Vry is diuided into ten parts or communalities, which they call Gnosfammen.
- VI.** As for Zuitz, it is a towne seated vpon the bankes of the Lake of Lucerne, vpon the right hand comming from Aroff to Lucerne, and this towne doth impart her name to the whole countie of the Suisses. This towne was built by some which came out of the realme of Suecia, which we call Sueden, to seeke a new dwelling. They haue giuen the name of this towne to the whole countie, either that they did first fight for their libertie in the countie of Zuitz, or for that they of Zuitz were first of all exposed to the spoiles and

A and incursions of them of Austria, and were the strongest of those three Cantons which entered into league, so as this name past to all their allies.

Vnderuald lies beneath it vpon the East, and is diuided into the higher and lower: The West of Kernouald passeth by the middelt of it, and yet all the countie is called Vnderuald.

Lucerne takes the name of the place where it is situated, the which in old time was called Lucerne, by reason of a Tower in which they did set a light all night. The beginning of this aboad was a monasterie, the which was built by one *Vincard*, in the year of our Lord 840. It hath bin built neere vnto the Monasterie, and partly by reason thereof. There is within the towne it selfe, a riuer called Ruffi, which comes out of the great lake of that towne, as the Rhine doth at Constance from the lake of that towne, and as the riuer of Lindmar flowes at Zurich from the lake of Zurich. From this lake they go to the three townes of Vry, Sultz, and Vnderuald, at the foot of a verie high mountaine, called Blus hill. The places of the jurisdiction of Lucerne, are Vuiken, and Sempach, Vuilliam, the valley of Entlibouch, Rorembourg, or Rot, Habsburg, Brone, Chelampt, Mecheuanden, Ebicome, Horbe, and Krient.

The towne of Zurich is auncient, and seated in a pleasant place, at the end of the great lake, into the which the riuer of Lindmar doth enter neere vnto Glaris. This lake diuides the towne into two parts, whereof the one is called the great Towne, and the other the lesse, the which notwithstanding are ioyned together by three faire bridges. This towne hath vnder it the gouernement of Kybourg, and Grinou, Audelfingen, Grisenfe, Eglishou, Regensperg, Vadefuillane, Vuadischouil, and Louffen, Vinterhur, and Steine, the which are two townes subiect to them of Zurich.

Zug is a towne whereof a small countie takes his name. This countie confines vpon the North with that of Suits, and the towne is situated vpon a little lake. This towne hath vnder it the towne of Champ, the villages of Andre, Hunelbererg, Ouacheuille, Seethese, and S. Vnolfang.

As for the countie of Glaris, it is a valley neere to the riuer of Lindmar. It is not verie big, and about three German leagues long: It is so called of the chiefe towne of the countie, which is Glaris. This countie is inuironed of three parts, with verie high mountaines, and confines vpon the South, and East, with the Grisons, and vpon the West with the countries of Vry and Suits. The earledome of Hambur is in this countie, and the Barronie of Humburg, and Ringenberg. Glaris commands ouer the countie of Fribenberg, which the magistrats of the countie bought for their Common-weale in the year of our Redemption 1517.

Berne was built by *Berold*, fourth duke of Zeringen, and earle of Verlande, who gaue the name of a Beare, which he tooke a hunting, the which in the German Tongue is called *Berp*. This towne is in a manner an Island, the which the riuer of Ar doth make, containing it of three parts, and at the end of it there is a bridge of stone. Of that side of the towne which lookes towards the South, this riuer passeth in a valley from West to East, and then returning, it goes towards the West againe, within a cannon shot. If there were a channell or trench made vpon the strait or istmus, Berne should be an Island. Vpon the South and North parts it is verie high about the riuer which runs below, and vpon the East part, there is an easie ascent to go vnto the highest part of the towne. Berne is seated in the towne of Lozanne, which hath a strange situation, containing two opposite valleys, and a valley in the middelt of them. It hath also the valley of Hasly, the towne of Zuzen, the high and lower valley of Simme, Frutengen, Sane, Aelen, Thun, Siganau, Dracheluald, Brandis, Sicomifouald, Burgdorff, Bierenack, Landenberg, Auberg, Nidouu, Erlach, Vuangen, Arouangen, Arburg, Biberstein, Schenkenberg, and then the free townes of Zoffingen, Arau, and Bruck.

Basle is seated vpon a mountaine supported with steepe rockes, and on the other side is a valley close to the mountaines, which are not verie rough, and about the mountaines, in the lower part of the towne, there passeth a riuer, which is not verie big. The seat of iustice stands vpon a hanging rocke. The mountaines support the walls, but vpon

VII.

VIII.

IX.

X.

XI.

XII.

XIII.

upon the East part there are no buildings except Towers and Forts. Wherefore they A go through the towne, they must ascend or descend.

Soleure, which in old time was but a castle, is at this day growne to be a towne of good command, and hath vnder it both land and men. It is seated in a plaine, and is the place whereas Saint Vrs of the Legion of Thebains suffered Martyredome, with fix tie fix of his companions.

XIII. The countrie of Schaffus lies vpon the frontiers of Germanie, neere vnto the river of Rhyne, and the blacke forrest. This countrie takes his name of the chiefe towne, whose walls are washed vpon the South-side by the Rhyne: behind towards the North there is a little mountaine, and within the towne, there are many goodly fountaines. Neere vnto this place is the towne of Bade.

XV. The countrie of Appenzel, so called of a village of that name, is diuided into twelue communalities, which the Swisses call Roden. There are six communalities vnder the parish of Appenzel, and the other fix are vnder the rest of the parishes. They containe in all eight parishes, that is, Appenzel, Gays, Vmelschen, Trogen, Tuffen, Herisgoun, Hunc, Duuy, and the parish of Fosse. The communalities without are Herisgoun, Hunduill, Trogen, Vmelschen, Gays, and Tuffen, and those within, are Appenzel, Schuendy, Brulifou, Gontes, Vuinkelbach, and Haslem.

XVI. The Valaisiens are diuided into high and low. These dwell at Chablais, neere vnto Saint Maurice, and the others in a valley which begins at the mountaine of Fourche, and goes towards the river of Rhosne, from East to West, three journeys from Saint Maurice, with diuers valleys of either side. It is inclosed with high mountaines, for the space of fiftie miles and more, the which are so narrow in some places, as it doth scarce giue passage for the river of Rhosne, as we may see at Saint Maurice, whereas the mountaines are so neere one vnto another, as they passe vpon a bridge made of one arch. The Valaisiens are also diuided into free men, and subiects. The free men are distinguished into seven communalities, that is to say, Syon, Sierue, Leuque, Baronnie, Vespach, Brigue, and Gomefe. The subiects are diuided into two bayliwicks, that is to say, Saint Maurice, and Mont Olon: the river of Morge parts them. Syon the chiefe towne of Valais is seated vpon two mountaines. The river of Rhosne, which passeth neere it, riseth at the foot of the mountaine of Fourche, joyning to that of Saint Gotard; it runs through the valley, and then falls into the lake Lemane, which extends from Chablais vnto Geneva, for the space of eight leagues. Chablais confines with the countrie of Fossigny.

XVII. The Grisons dwell Southward of the Swisses, betwixt la Garde, Ade, the countie of Tirol, and the river of Tefin. They are diuided into three Cantons, whereof the one is called Grise, the other of the house of God, and the third the Communalities. Grise contains the valley of Mesolce, and Calanquen, with the lands of Rogoret and Mufoc, and seven other valleys beyond the Alpes, by the which passe the rivers of Rhyne, and Glenner. The Canton of the house of God contains Coire, which they of the countrie call Chur: this is a reasonable faire towne, and the river of Lascar passeth by it. The neighbour countrie is also vnder this Canton, the which in former time was subiect to the Bishop and Church of Coire. And moreover, it doth enioy the valley of Agredine, above and beneath, and Bregailly, which make neere fiftie and twentie communalities. The third Canton confines with Tirol. They place Valtelline vnder the Grisons, the which hath many castles and good places, and about one hundred thousand soules. The chiefe places are Bormie, Sondrie, Tiran, Morbegne, and Posclau. Valtelline confines with the valley of Chiucenne, in which the towne of Puir stands. Both these were vsurped by the Grisons, vpon the Viscons, dukes of Milan, as many other valleys were by the Swisses, with the townes of Brifacq, Locame, Bellinzone, and Lugnam. Yet some write that Maximilian Sforce, duke of Milan, made an alliance with the Swisses, and gaue vnto the Cantons, Lugano, Lucame, Mendrie, and the valley of Madia; and to the Grisons their confederate, the valley of Tellinaor Volurena.

¶ The Qualitie.

Switzerland containes many mountaines and valles, whereof the last are somewhat low, although the first be craggie and rough, yet their tops are as greene and as fertile as the fairest fields; wherefore they feed great store of cattell there. The countrie abounds in wild beasts and tame of all sorts, and therefore they haue great store of butter and cheefe. As for the aire it is good and wholesome, and the inhabitants haue bin industrious to manure the land, as it not onely yeelds all things necessarie for the life of man but also for delight: it brings forth wheat in abundance, and yet in many places they should sow in vaine if they did not first burne the ground; but the labour and industrie of the inhabitants hath preuented this inconuenience. There are many places where there grows so good wine, as it doth far exceed that of the Rhin, both in tast & strength. We must adde hereunto the goodly meadows, whereas they feed great troupes of cattell: this countrie doth also breed great store of beares, stags, fallow deere, wild goats, hunces, wild boares, and other beasts which they of the countrie hunt, neither doe they want great store of wild foule.

But to the end we may come to euery Canton in particular, the countrie about Zurich is very fruitful, and yeelds great store of wine and wheat: yet the wine is most commonly sharpe, and doth not come to any perfect maturitie, by reason of the neerenesse of the Alpes, but being kept long it doth ripen, and growes more pleasing. The Lake of Zurich doth breed great store of fish.

The soile about Basil is good, and yeelds abundance of good wine and wheat; so as the inhabitants releue their neighbors with their commodities in the time of dearth and neede; there are also in this countrie goodly pastures. The countrie of Berne beares wine and wheat sufficient: and as for that of Fribourg it doth produce all things necessarie, except wine, which they fetch from other places.

As for the countrie which lies alongst the Lake Lemane, the inhabitants complaine of the heat of Summer, and the sharpenesse of Winter; and yet the Lake, and the river of Rhosne do seldom free, neither is Summer so violent as in the neighbour countries there are in France: The soile is fit and easie to be manured, and is very fruitfull: for they gather abundance of wine, come, all sort of pulses, hay, oats, and barley, their ordinarie fruits are nuts, apples, pearces of many sorts, cherries both sweet and sowre, mulberries white and blacke, chestnuts, and almonds, but figs grow very rarely: they want neither wilde fowle, fish, nor venison.

They of Lucerne haue in a manner more commoditie from the Lake which is neere them than from the land, and yet there are goodly meadows and pastures fit for the breeding of cattell: this countrie is not so hillie and rough as the rest. As for the countrie of Vry, Suintz, & Vnderuald, they yeeld sufficient wherewith to feed the inhabitants. In the countrie of Glaris there is great store of butter, cheefe, and cattell. In the straits of the mountaines they sow little come, neither do they plant any store of vines: there are great orchards of fruit, and goodly meadows: they bring wine and wheat from other places. The Lakes furnish the countrie with fish, and the mountaines with venison; they haue also store of wild foule.

They of the countrie of Valais, the tops of the mountaines are alwaies white, but beneath in the valleys they are greene and pleasant; so as this countrie doth bring forth plenty of (if they will take any paines to plant them) pomegranets, figs, & oranges, and much in come, wine, saffron, butter, and cheefe. There breed vnto beasts in the countrie, and amongst others a wild bucke, which is like vnto a stag in bignesse, and is like a goat, his hornes are like vnto a fallow deere, he wil get vp into any place, he may but stay his foot, he leapes from precipice to precipice with wonderfull agility, he liues vpon the top of the mountaines, whereas the yce is exceeding cold, whereas the cold ceaseth his sight failes him. There are in these mountaines valleys of yce which haue bene long congealed, so as it cannot be distinguished from cristall.

the hill : and in some places it is so deepe, as it sometimes makes admirable breaches and A
structures of three hundred foot thicke and more. There the huntsmen hang their veni-
toe, to the end it may keepe the longer by reason of the violent cold. There are vaines of
silver, and some of lead, copper, admittall, and agatrick. In the
the mountains, they dispeuted in the year 1544 aountaine of salt : there are foun-
tains of many lands, and bathes which are exceeding wholesome : there is
the mountains, which burne coming neere the fire.

the mountains, which burne coming neere the fire. The mountains of the Grisons although it be hilly for the most part, yet there are
the mountains, which burne coming neere the fire. The mountains of the Grisons although it be hilly for the most part, yet there are

The Manners of the Ancients.

XIX

The Suiffes have alwaies been valiant and good souldiers as we may see by the oppo-
sition which they made against *Caesar*, who fearing them whenas they demanded
to cross the Romane Prouince, and to go into Xaintonge, ther to settle their
abroad, he caused a wall to be made to hinder the execution of their disleigne, remem-
bering that this people had vanquished the Consul *L. Cassius*, and defeated the Romane
army. They did not care much to manure their ground, so as they found not sufficient in
the country to maintaine them, for want of husbandrie, nor through any defect of the
the which at this day they haue made yeelding, and profitable in all places. It is also
most certaine that in *Caesar*'s time they were diuided into Cantons, as they are at this day,
but they had but foure, whereof the chiefe was that of Zurich. They were the Suiffes
that first defeated the Romanes, and they were also the first that repented it. We may
judge of their resolution and the confidence they had in their forces, for that they burnt
their houses and left all things desolate whenas they were compelled to seeke a new dwelling.
but this was an act full of inconsideration and barbarisme. As for their quicknesse of wit
it was not great, yet in *Caesar*'s time they found letters written in Greeke in their campe,
and tables which contained the number of them which came out of their houses, and
who were to beare armes, neither had they forgotten the number of their women and
children, which amounted to three hundred three score eight thousand persons. This
may shew that they were not so barbarous as they were held, and that they were giuen
to studie the Greeke as well as the Gauls. As touching their vulgar tongue, there are
many learned men hold that it was rather priuat to the countrie, than of Germanie, and
that it hath bene corrupted since that straungers came from diuers places and vnto
Gaul. If I should produce all that defend the one, and maintaine the contrarie, I should
trouble the reader as much as my selfe; it sufficeth to send the curious to them that haue
made whole discourses, who hauing labored much to proue the one and the other, haue
in the end, prevailed in a manner as much as if they had written nothing, like vnto those
which seeke hidden reasons to fortifie their coniectures.

We must not doubt but that these people for the most part haue followed the manners
of the Gauls, of whose number they were for a long time held : but afterwards it was
filled with multitudes of Cimbrians, who being forced to abandon the countrie by an
inundation of the sea, ouerran Germanie, and held a part of Gaule Belgick : but this
countrie not being able to maintain them, they came vnto the river of Rhodan, & deman-
ded lands of the Romanes, who hauing refused them, one part past into Italie, where they
were defeated by the Romanes; and the other which staid on this side the moun-
tains, remained in Suifferland in the countries of Suitz and Vry.

Some others write that, in the time of *Sigisbert* king of Sueden, these Northern people
did abound, as part of them were constrained to seeke new countries. These hauing
past the Rhin, defeated the Gauls : whereat other countries being amazed, sent ambassa-
dors vnto them, of whom they demanded no other thing, but that they would suffer
them to liue and till their land, without any preiudice to others : by reason whereof the
Suiffes suffered them to dwell in the inner part of the countrie, which is full of moun-
tains

A taines and lakes, where they tilled the land and made it fertile. Since, Histories report,
That neere vnto the German Ocean there dwelt three kind of people, called Saxons,
Angles, and Vietes. The Angles, with part of the Vietes, went into great Brittain, at
this day called England, and there planted their seat. The other part of the Vietes went
into Suifferland, and stayed there, and they were called Suiffes. In the end, these people
took the manners of all these nations : so as they made a mixture, whereof we cannot
speake by coniectures, full of vanitie and confusion.

The Manners at this day.

XX.

It seemes that nature hath fashioned the Suiffes to armes, and necessitie hath forced
them to apply their minds seriously vnto it : The countrie, which is full of rockes and
mountaines, rough, and hard to manure, and in old time desart and sauage for the most
part, doth not onely harden the inhabitants to endure all toyle and labour, but also
makes them more strong and vigorous, and consequently more fit for warre. They are
borne (as a man would say) all souldiers, and there is not any Suiffe, being growne to age
and disposition of bodie, but you shall see in him the markes of a souldier. They are com-
manded throughout all Suifferland to haue armes, according to their meanes, and
there are certaine prizes propounded in publicke for them that shoot best with the har-
quebuz, not onely in towne, but also in villages. All their other expences, whatsoeuer
they be, fauour of warre, they are so naturally inclined to armes. At certaine times of
the yeare, the chiefe magistrats make generall musters of all their men in armes, as if they
were to go against the enemy, although there be no bruit of warre : and these musters
are sometimes made at the dedication of Temples, and sometimes in faires, and in many
places when as the subiects take the oath vnto a gouernour that is newly sent into a Bay-
liwicke. The Suiffes practise swimming more than any other nation : being idle, they
spend their time in hunting, through the high mountaines and rockes, which are in a
manner inaccessible, after wild goats, buckes, beares, wolues, boares, and such like, and
they hold it a great honour, hauing taken any of these beasts, to fasten their heads at the
D entrance of their gates, and the seigneurie doth sometimes reward him that hath taken
them. The Suiffes which be professed souldiers, are commonly well furnished with
armes in their houses : and sometimes the townes doe furnish them out of their store-
houses with armes, the which are the harquebuz, the pike, the halbert, and the two-
hand sword : they are much giuen to warres, and obserue good order : they loue the
corder and pike, with a long sword and a dagger, and also serue with a harque-
buz. They are of meane stature but strong. The countrie, which is not verie fruitful, is
the cause why they giue themselves to liue of their industrie. They spend little in clothes,
or in their feeding, vnlesse it be in bread and wine, as for the rest, they content themselves
with what they haue, & do not regard what they want, yet they haue good store of fiesh,
butter and cheefe : they desire to haue a house, where they may defend themselves from
the cold. They haue small store of moueables in their houses, and are rude in their con-
structions, and in a manner void of all ciuilitie.

They are much giuen to drinking, where in they spend whole daies and nights, and they
are growne to that excess, as before they will dispatch any businesse, or contract any
friendship, they will drinke extreameley : and they that drinke most, or are drunke, are
held dear and honest men than they that refuse it : yea they will quarrell if any refuse
to drinke with them. Yet we must confesse that they are witty, and well aduised, seeing
they haue bene able to maintaine themselves so long in libertie, and to liue peaceably
among themselves, notwithstanding that they differ in religion. Moreover, they carrie
themselves in such sort, as the greatest princes of Europe seeke their alliance, and enter-
taining them with great yearly pensions.

In regard of learning, notwithstanding that they haue good Vniuersities, yet are they
much giuen to studie as in other Countries, but their chiefe profession is armes.
They haue learned men, and haue at this day, but the number is verie small, and I
speake

Take notice of that which is generally practised in the countrey. Also, to speake the truth, they haue no excellent wisdome, but saue some thing of the roughnesse of the mountaynes: yet when they studie or meditate of any thing, they conceiue it well, although it be with much paine. There are few that liue out of the countrey, but the still retaine something of the behaviour of the countrey, and they seeme to affect it in their apparell and other things: yet they that haue liued out of Suisseiland, grow politticke, and are harder to circumuent than other people which are held more subtile. In former times the Colledges of Saint Gal and Coire among the Grisons were verie famous, but of late yeares they are much decayed. Pope Pius (called before *Eneas Sylvius*) erected an vniuersitie at Basle, from whence haue come many learned men, as their writings doe witnesse. There are publicke Scholes at Zurich and Berne: and there is one also at Lausanne, built by the seigneurie of Berne. There are faire Printing-houses at Basle, Zurich, and Geneva, the which haue a perpetual and strict league with them of Berne. Moreover, the Suisse are louers of vertue, especially of iustice, the which maintaine peace, their lawes are grounded vpon great equitie and iustice, like vnto other Commonweales, whereas crimes and offences are severely punished without respect of persons. They make their alliances with all integritie and fidelitie, seeking that euery one may enjoy his owne quietly, and that all violence may be banished. The Suisse are Protectors of the oppressed, and many strangers haue had recourse vnto them, and haue made them arbiters of their controuersies. They haue bene a waies recommended for honestie, and haue bene charitable towards the poore.

¶ The Riches.

XXI. WE must not speake of Suisseiland, as of a rich countrey, and abounding in all things, for that the situation doth hinder it, but it is rather to be much esteemed for that it is able to nourish all the inhabitants. If they did liue there as they doe in many other countries whereas all things abound, they should soone be brought to extreme miserie and pouertie: But their great sparing is a good reuenue, and withall the money which they draw from neighbour princes, keeps them from those wants which they should endure, if they payed not deare for their alliance: I must confesse that many times they owe them great atterages, but in the end they are payed after some sort: and the verie children, who haue no knowledge of that which is giuen them, are entertained by foraine princes, who seeke by all meanes to draw this nation vnto them, and then to keep them. But to speake something of the profit which they make in the countrey, for that I haue made some mention thereof, describing the qualitie, I will only say, That they do sometimes make much money of the feeding of their cattell, and of their pastures. They sell so great abundance of wheat at Zurich, as it is almost incredible. Basle hath also a great concourse of Merchants, and the riuer of Rhine is verie commodious: they carrie many printed bookes out of this towne into all other parts of Europe, for the which the Merchants receiue great summes of money. Lucerne is a passage for all merchandise which they carrie from the Franche Countie, and other neighbour countries, into Italie, and for those which they bring out of Italie into other countries: for that it is the way from Italie to passe by Mont Saint Gotard, and the merchandise of Italie descend by the lake, and the riuer of Russe into the Rhine, and then into the Sea. But all their wealth is not to be much regarded.

¶ The Forces.

XXII. THE Suisse countrey is so inclosed of all sides with the Alpes, the people so valiant, and so obligate to defend their libertie, and they that haue attempted against this nation, haue had but ill successe, as there is not any prince in Europe that would undertake to make war against them, and to make himselfe master of those places which they defend. Moreover, they should reape so little benefit by this countrey, hauing taken it, as they

As they that should dare to attempt it would alwaies fie that enterprife as indiscreet, the which would breed them more losse than contentment. They do also maintaine themselves vnited, as it would be hard to force them, and to obtaine an absolute victorie. They haue some townes and strong places, which want no kind of necessarie prouision of ammunition for war: they are able to maintaine long sieges, and to endure all hardnesse and discomfort: but they are not fit to besiege a place, nor to go vnto a breach. No man should attempt to force them in their owne countrey, without doubt they would raise an armie, and if it were possible giue him battaile, as they haue often done to their aduantage; and euery man should feare to speed ill in his dissignes, seeing that in the beginning, whenas they were not vnited and in league together, handfulls of men haue vanquished great armies: what may they not expect or rather feare of a whole nation which knowes not what flying meanes, but are resolu'd rather to die than to shew themselves cowards. All these Cantons together are able to make fiftie or sixtie thousand foot: whereof the thirteene Cantons of Suisse leaving their townes and forts well furnished, are able to send forth sixteene or seuentene thousand foot: the three Cantons of the Grisons are able to send forth ten thousand foot, the Valaisiens can send forth about six thousand foot; and the Abbot of Saint Gal, foure thousand. But for that they differ in religion, they are all very warie how they send great numbers of souldiers out of their countries to serue a foraine prince, fearing least the contrarie partie should make some attempt against them; yet they liue in good peace among themselves, and are so strictly allied, as they are very well able to defend their countrey, but they are not fit to make any attempt for the foresaid reason, neither haue they any publicke reuenues, able to entertaine ten thousand foot for three moneths space. These people liue with as great libertie and assurance, as any nation whatsoeuer: they are no friends to the house of Austria, by the reason of the old quarrells and war which they haue had with the house of Hapsburg their predecessors: and for the outrages receiued, and the battailes fought with the house of Bourgondie; and last of all, by reason of the spoiles committed by the duke of Sauoy.

All these people obserue this custome, in giuing their footmen to him that demands them: They first of all chuse in euery communaltie the souldiers and capitaines which are demanded, hauing still a principall care to leaue their places furnished with men of valour, and the communalities stand bound to pay these men, in case that he that entertaines them doth not content them: after this choise, the communalities suffer them whome they haue chosen to aduance their standards: neither may any one of the communalities (of the which that standard is) carry armes against them, vpon paine of death, and confiscation of all their goods: and these standards are diuers and many in number. First the thirteene Cantons of Suisse, the Grisons, Valaisiens, & Abbot of Saint Gal, haue altogether one standard generally, the which may not be aduanced, if in the armie which is raised, there be not souldiers and capitaines chosen throughout all the communalities of the said places, for that they must all consent together, the which doth seldom happen, for that it is not the custome of the said communalities to send forth their men together. This is called the generall standard of the league. When it is aduanced, there is not any souldier subiect to the communalities, that may beare armes against it, without incurring the confiscation of goods and losse of life; and the Armes of all the communalities of the leagues are painted in it. Besides this generall standard, the thirteene Cantons of Suisse haue one amongst them, with the Armes of all together; and they may not be aduanced but with the consent of the thirteene Cantons, as hath bin said. The Suisse may go to battaile against this standard. There is also a particular standard for the three Cantons of Suiz, Vry, and Vnderwald, which is giuen by these three communalities as the rest, and no souldier of those communalities may go against it. The Valaisiens, and the Abbot of Saint Gal haue either of them a standard, the which is not giuen, but to such souldiers as they haue chosen, neither may any of their armes beare armes against them: so as by reason of this custome obserued by these people, it is a hard matter for a prince to leaue any souldiers or capitaines of this Nation,

if they be not chosen by their communalities, and haue their standards deliuered vnto them as I haue said. Pope *Inno* for the succours he receiued from the Suiffes against the French, gaue them the title of Defendors of the Church: he enrich their standards with certaine images, and publickly gaue to the whole nation of the Suiffes two great standards, which they call *Paner*, and also a sword and a cap for markes of libertie. As for their inrolling of souldiers, if they make warre within the countrie, all that are able to beare armes, furnish themselves, and run to succour it, as to a generall fire which all must quench: and in time of peace, every Canton hath certaine capitaines, ensignes, and men chosen, which must be ready for all euents. They are forbidden vpon paine of death to abandon their ranks or troups, untill that the enemy be in rout: and then whenas their capitaines haue giuen them leaue to spoile, all the bootie is brought in common and distributed among them. The Cantons hauing made war together, do also diuide the publicke spoiles by equall portions, as artillerie, castles, and countreies conquered, tolles, and other reuenues. The souldiers are extraordinarily recompenced which haue done any brave exploits in war about their companions. The battallion of Suiffes is much esteemed, consisting of pikes cross, resembling a hedgehog.

¶ The Government.

XXIII.

WE are now come to the principall peece of the Suiffes Estate, which is their government, every Canton hauing their distinct officers and magistrats for the government of the said Canton. The chiefe magistrat of every towne and communitie is commonly called *Aman*, he is chosen by the peoples suffrages, and continues three years in his place; who although he be the chiefe among them, yet doth he differ little from them in his habit, onely he hath some more attendance: next vnto the *Aman*, is the officer of justice, who is like vnto the Chancellor, and the second person of that State: next vnto him are certaine Councillors, men of experience in affaires of princes: then comes the Chamberlaine who hath the charge of the munition and publicke treasure: and next to him are four Deputies, who are greater in authoritie than the Councillors, and may do many things in the absence of the *Aman*, if the Chancellor be present: these with the *Aman* make a Councell of fiftene, which gouerne the State both in peace and warre, and are euer present at the hearing and deciding of all causes that arise in the iurisdiction of their Canton.

These in effect mannage all the affaires of the Communitie: they are confirmed from yeare to yeare by the people, and yet they continue in their offices three yeares, as the *Aman* doth. They appoint capitaines and gouernours of places, and for the deciding of petrie matters they allow of ten persons chosen out of the manner fort; but the parties contending may appeale to these fiftene, about whom there is no other Iudge nor appeale. The partie condemned is severely punished, neither will they suffer any of their subiects to appeale out of the countrie, but to the great councell, which is a great offence and sharply punished. There is no place in the world where lawes are obserued with lesse partialitie; for they are neuer altered according to the inconstant humor of the people, nor violated, without due punishment.

In matters of importance which concerne the generall estate of all the Cantons, they appoint a generall Diet, which is to be held in one of the cities which they thinke most convenient, wherunto every Canton sends two or three embassadors or deputies, wher as they consult and treat of all matters touching peace and war, or any thing that concerns the generall good of their whole Estates, and they giue audience and answers to embassadors of forraigne princes: where all things being debated at large, they conclude according to the pluralitie of voices. For these many yeeres their generall Diet hath been kept at *Baden* in *Eugovie*, which is one of the five Cantons, whereof the *Seigneurs* of *Zurich* are the chiefe. But let us examine every Canton in particular: the countrie of the Suiffes is diuided into four parts, which they call *Gou*, of a German word which signifies countrie: these four parts are *Zurichgou*, *Vindligergou*, *Argou*, & *Turgou*.

And

And this Common-weale is composed of three parts: In the first are the thirteene Cantons, which the Germans call *Ort*; these haue alone that power among all the allies, that they deliberate of all matters which belong to the Common-weale in their publicke assemblies, and giue their voyces, and doe participat of all commodities and discommodities of the alliance. In the second part, they doe reckon the Abbot and Towne of *S. Gall*, *Prisons*, *Valaisiens*, *Romuel*, *Mullusen*, and *Biel*. In the third they put those places which are come into the power of this Common-weale, either by free will, or by conquest, as *Turgou*, which was reduced vnder the Suiffes dominion, in the yeare 1460; *Baden* (not the Marquisat which lies in another place) subdued in the yeare 1415, and *Subic* to the eight first Cantons; *Rhegu* conquered in the yeare 1513, and gouerned by the thirteene Cantons; *Sarungans* sold in the yeare 1483 by *George* earle of *Vuerden* to the seuen first Cantons; The free Prouinces taken in the yeare 1415, acknowledging the authoritie of the seuen first Cantons. *Lugan*, *Locarne*, *Mendrelle*, and the valley of *Madia*, are come vnder the Suiffes iurisdiction by the liberalitie of *Maximilian* *Sforce* duke of *Milan*, who gaue these vnto them in the yeare 1513. These places call all the Cantons, except *Appenzel*. *Bilione* and *Bellinzone* obey the three first Cantons.

But to vnderstand after what manner the Suiffes haue thus cantoned themselves, and haue framed a common-weale so much redoubted and feared: After many changes of Command, the countreies of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald*, came in the end to acknowledge no other superiour but the Roman Empire, as we may see by the priuiledges which were granted vnto them by *Rodolphe* of *Ausbourg*, king of *Romans*, who reigned in the yeare 1201, and another Emperours his successeurs: neither were these people euer subiect, as some suppose, to the house of *Austria*, but the Empire being in this house, they onely obeyed the Emperour being chosen, and not his successeurs of the house of *Austria*.

The *Valleis* being then in libertie, the Emperour sent them German gouernours, who meddling with the gouernment of the Common-weale, should doe justice to the people, whereof some of these gouernours were expelled, and others slaine for their cruelties; for that many times they vsed many strange outrages against the people, as *Dietrich* gouernour of *Vnderuald* did, commanding that one of them should be put into a *man*, which he refusing to vndergoe, he commanded that he should be cast vnto it by force, but the man ranne sodainly away, whereat the gouernour was in such a rage, as he caused his fathers eyes to be pulled out that had so escaped.

This happened another in the said valley, whereas the gouernour pressing a woman in the face of her husband, to prepare him a hot bath, and to enter into it with him; the woman hauing delaied the time vntill her husbands returne, the gouernour being in a rage, slew her with a hatchet.

Another, the gouernour of *Suitz* and *Vry*, puffed vp with vanitie and pride, planted a *tree* in the which he set his hat, commanding, That all which past by, should doe homage thereto: there was one *William Zen*, who refused to doe it; whereupon he called him *Rebelle*, and commaunded him to take an apple from off his sonnes head with his *owne* bow: the father refused to doe it for many daies, but in the end (not being able to obeyed, and (by the helpe of God) strooke the apple from his sonnes head, and thus ending his life, and for that he had brought two arrowes, the gouernour demanded to what end he had brought the other: to whom *Zen* answered, That in case he should misse with the first, he was resolved to shoot the second at himselfe: the gouernour hearing these words, caused him to be taken, and hauing put him into a *carriage*, came him into a Palace of his, betwixt *Vry* and *Bruch*, he escaped, and flying into the mountains which are about the Lake, he prepared himselfe for reuenge.

These of these three valleis, being incensed at these outrages and many others, sent their gouernour, and to free themselves, and then the Emperour sent them *Judges*, which should be of their owne feignerie.

Nowing a diuision in the Empire, in the yeare of our Lord 1314, for that some of the electors had chosen *Lewis* duke of *Bauaria* for Emperour, and the rest, *Fredericke*

I i j

Archduke

Archduke of Austria, they contended for the Empire: These valles refusing to acknowledge *Frederic* for Emperour, for that he had fewest voyces, he made warre against them, and sent *Leopold* his sonne to invade the countrie of *Suitz*, assuring himselfe that *Lewis* should not be able to releue them. *Leopold* entring with a good armie into the countrie of *Suitz*, which is enuironed of all sides with water and mountaines, and being come to *Marguten*, he was defeated by the men of the three valles of *Suitz*, *Vry*, and *Vnderuald*: whereof the narrownesse of the countrie was partly the cause, and the season also, for that there was much yce in the wayes, so as the horses could doe no seruice in this battaile, and the *Suiffes* casting stones onely from the mountaines did so amaze them, as they did willingly leape into the lake.

At the same time (by the commaundement of *Frederic*) they were invaded by the Earle of *Strambourg*, who remained at *Veldane*, neere vnto *Vnderuald*, but the *Suiffes* coming thither, would not suffer them to passe a place called *la Bouche*. All these things they did without the assistance of any forraigne forces: Hauing maintained this warre for the space of two whole yeares, they resolu'd, for their greater safety and quiet, to vnite themselves together, making a league, which was called, of the three Cantons, as followeth.

¶ The league of the three Cantons of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald*.

- XXV. *In the name of God, &c.* For as much as the memorie of man is weake, and doth soone forget the successe of affaires; and for that it is verie profitable and necessarie that those things which bring peace, rest, profit, and honour, should be set downe in writing.
- For this cause, we the countriemen of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald*, make it knowento all that shall read or heare these presents, that to prouide for and preuent the difficulties and inconueniences of times, and the better to remain in peace and concord amongst our selues, and to the end we may the better defend our selues, and maintaine our bodies and goods, we haue tied our selues by a perpetuall and firme oath one vnto another, and by this oath we doe promise to counsell and assist one another with our persons and goods both within and without the countrie, against all that shall wrong, or attempt to wrong any one of vs, either in his bodie or goods, so as it may be preiudiciall to any one of vs, to whom we are to giue all the aid we can, causing the wrong and losse to be repaid either by accord or by some other meanes.
- Secondly, we haue ordain'd amongst vs of this league, That not any of our countries or Cantons, and much lesse any priuat man, shall make himselfe lord, nor receiue any lord, without the consent and counsell of the rest; but euerie one both male and female shall be obedient to his true lord or seigneurie, in all due and honest seruices: but not to any lords that shall seeke to take any of our countries by armes, and force vs to any vniust thing, in which case they shall not doe any seruice whilst they are in discord with vs.
- We haue also agreed, That not any of our Cantons, nor allies, shall aid any stranger without the aduice of the other Cantons and allies.
- None of the confederats shall treat with the said strangers without the knowledge and consent of the rest, whilst that the Cantons are not subiect. If it happen that any one betray one of the Cantons, & deliuer it into the hands of another, or shall not obserue what is seuer here is written, he shall be held for a traytor, and a man without faith, and his person shall be deliuered into the hands of the Cantons, and his goods shall be confiscat.
- Moreouer, we haue agreed, That not any of vs shall support or receiue any Iudge which buyes his office for money or any other thing, but he shall be of the countrie.
- If there grow any quarrell or warre betwixt the confederats, the best and wisest shall pacifie this discord, and end the quarrell by accord: and if one of the parties be obstinate and refuse, then the rest of the confederats shall assist the other at his charge that doth contradict. If any one of the allies doe kill another, he shall loose his life, vnlesse he can proue (the which is allowed him to doe) that he had committed this murder for the defence

A defence of his person: and if the murderer slie, he that lodgeth him or defendeth him in the countrie shall be banished, and shall not returne into the countrie but by a common consent of the Cantons.

If it also happen that any one of the allies shall set fire of anothers house, he shall be for euer banished, and he that shall lodge him or assist him shall be bound to pay the damages of the partie interessed and complaining.

No man shall distraine another but for assurance, the which he cannot do without the permission of his Iudge: and euery man shall be obedient to his Iudge, and shall present himselfe before him when it is needfull. If any opposeth himselfe against his Iudge, and is disobedient, or shall preiudice any one of the allies by his disobedience, then they of the league shall force him to make reparation.

Wherefore, to the end that this present league and capitulation, and all the causes therein contained may remaine firme, and in force for euer: We the countriemen of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald* haue set our seales to this present, made at *Baren*, in the yeare 1325 the first Tuesday after S. Nicholas Feast. In the same yere all their priuiledges were confirmed by the foresaid Emperour *Lewis*.

The discissions of the Empire being pacified, some other countries moued by the bad vsage of their gouernours, and drawne by the sweetnesse of libertie, entred into league with the said three Cantons: *Lucerne* entred first in the yeare 1332, then *Zurich* in the yeare 1351, and in the yere 1352 *Zugh*, *Glaris*, and others. The contract of the four Cantons was after this manner.

¶ The League of the foure Cantons of *Lucerne*, *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald*.

WE the Senate, Councillors, and Citizens of the towne of *Lucerne*, and we the countriemen of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald*, do make knowne to all that shall read or heare these presents, That to the end we may defend our persons with lesse difficulty, we haue reciprocally promised to aide and counsell one another, in all the matters here vnderwritten, and in all others that shall be honest and reasonable, we of *Lucerne*, *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald* haue excepted the Emperour or Lord, and the Romane Empire, and that wherunto we are bound in his behalfe, as we haue beene accustomed in all antiquitie: and moreover we the said of *Lucerne* haue referu'd our towne, the Councillors, and all their Estates, with the good customes towards the citizens and strangers, as they haue beene obserued by our auncellors.

We the said doe also referue in our selues a particularitie in our bounds and limits according to our statutes and good customes, as our predecessors haue formerly done: and we the citizens of *Lucerne* shall content our selues with such rights, towards the three Cantons, as hath beene formerly said.

We the said citizens of *Vry*, *Suitz*, and *Vnderuald* shall rest satisfied of the citizens of *Lucerne*, as before: but if it shall happen (which God forbid) that any one of vs, either within or without, shall wrong or preiudice another; then the partie offend'd shall vpon his faith consider if this preiudice was done wrongfully vnto him, and then the said partie shall aduise the other, and both with the towne of *Lucerne* shall assist him against whomsoever, with their persons and goods.

We the citizens shall at our owne charge aid the said Cantons: and contrarywise we the said Cantons shall at our owne charge assist the citizens of *Lucerne*, all which shall be done faithfully and without contradiction.

If by chance there shall grow any controuersie among vs, in that case they shall chuse the most discreet and best aduised, who shall friendly reconcile all our controuersies, and in case that the one partie shall contradict this accord, the other allies shall assist the other at his charge that disobeyeth.

If there shall happen any disorders betwixt the three Cantons, and that the two were agreed, in that case we the said citizens of *Lucerne* shall helpe to reconcile the third vnto the other two, if we the said citizens of *Lucerne* doe know and find any thing which shall come better vnto vs for the two Cantons.

We haue also agreed that we the said citizens, and for the abouenamed countreimen A
of Vry, Sultz, and Vnderuald, and likewise the abouenamed for the citizens of Lucerne, may be warrant one for another, and that no one of vs shall enter into league or
capitulation with any one either within or without, without the knowlege and consent
of the rest of the allies.

None of the allies shall distraine another but for rent, the which shall not be done but
after sentence giuen.

Whosoever of the allies shall contest against a sentence giuen, or shall disobay, if this
disobedience be prejudiciall to any of the allies, he shall be forced to make reparation of
the damage.

If any of the allies shall commit an offence for the which he shall be banished out of
his jurisdiction, so as this banishment be signified vnto the other jurisdictions, with letters
patents, & the seale of the countrie or of Lucerne, he shall also be banished from the
rest, and if any one doth assist him, or giue him meat, being knowne, he shall vndergo the
like punishment, but he shall not incurre death.

And moreover we haue ioinly resolved that if any one of the allies shall nor observe
all the articles abouementioned, and euery one of them, he shall be held for a man which
hath broken his faith and word: and to the end these things may be inuolably observed
by all and euery one of vs, as it hath beene concluded, we the said senat, counsell, and
citizens of Lucerne, haue with our common seale, and of euery particular Canton, caused
these presents to be sealed, in testimonie of all things abouewritten. Made and past the
first Saturday before Saint Martin in the year 1332.

*An Assemblée made at Saint Gal, betwixt the foure Cantons, which hath the
force of a law and league.*

XXVII. WE the Senate, and Councell of a Hundred, which they call the great Councell
of Lucerne, and we the Amans, Councell, Countreimen, and all the Communalities
of the three Cantons of Vry, Sultz, and Vnderuald, aboue and beneath Silue,
are fallen into question betwixt vs the three Cantons, and the other parties; for that according
to the tenor of the article of our league, which speakes of Will and Accord, be
they made or treated of, for a law, suit, or sentence: that as many men, as we the said of Lucerne,
shall put into any garrison, or employ in any business, we the abouenamed three
Cantons shall be bound to put as many of euery particular Canton. The which we (say
of Lucerne) haue thought very vnsitt, dishonest, and vniust, and these words hauing
not beene well explained in the perpetual league, for that there was no mention made of
these aides, haue for this cause in this present diet, by a common consent, willingly agreed,
that in regard of this article, we of Lucerne shall place as many persons, as the said
Cantons of Vry, Sultz, and Vnderuald, and all three together shall yeeld to all questions
and businesses that shall happen, and no partie shall be more or lesse than the other. E
In like manner if there should euer happen any controuersie betwixt vs the three Cantons,
and that it were needfull to expound the tenor of this perpetual league, in regard
of these words Will, Accord, and Writ, these controuersies shall be ended with equall aid,
as hath beene said.

And if such disorders or controuersies should grow betwixt vs of Lucerne, and any
one of the Cantons, they shall be ended with equall aid as before. And to the end the
said things may last perpetually, we haue confirmed them by an oath, and haue bound
as well our selues as our successors to observe them inuolably, and to that end we haue
sealed them with the seale of Lucerne, and of the three Cantons of our countries, and
haue caused foure to be dispatched with the same words and the same seale, one for vs, F
another for Vry, the third for Sultz, and the fourth for Vnderuald, all of one forme. Made
the Wednesday before Palme Sunday, in the year 1481.

The

The league of Zurich with the foure Cantons.

XXVIII. WE the Bourgmasters, Councillors, and common Citizens of the towns of Vry, Sultz, and Vnderuald, make knowne vnto all, &c. That with good Councell, and
mature deliberation, in regard of a good peace and defence of our goods and persons, and
of all our townes and countries, and for the generall good, haue assembled together, and
sworne before God and his Saints, as well for our selues, as our successors, whom we
will haue to be perpetually comprehended in our league, especially to haue and ob-
B serue an euerlasting confederation, which hath beene, and shall for euer be firme and
stable.

And for that things that are inconstant, are subiect to forgetfulness, and all things in
this world change; for this cause, we the said Townes and Communalities, giue this per-
petuall faith and testimonie one vnto another, by letters and writings; so as we will be
readie to succour one another without any contradiction, as well with our goods as per-
sons, against any one that shall seeke to wrong any one that is comprehended in this
league, in his person, goods, or honour, be it present, or to come, within the limits aboue
written.

First of all, whereas Are doth rise, which is called Grial, and from thence downe.
C ward, and those of Berne, whereas Are falls into the Rhyne, and from thence vnto that
part where it riseth, and from that bridge by the Grisons, to the Fort called Reingem-
bourg, beyond S. Gotard, vnto the mountaine of Platier, and from thence vnto Torsel,
and Crinisel, whereas Are or Arole hath his spring.

But within these bounds there were any one comprehended in this league, that were
damned in any fort, either in his goods or person, then the Councell and Communitie
of the towne or countrie where he hath receiued wrong, shall take knowledge thereof:
And when as this Councell or Communitie, or the greatest part of the towne or coun-
tie which hath receiued the wrong, hath considered what succour shall be needfull for
this business, they shall aduertise the other townes and countries comprehended in
D this league.

And when this aduertisement shall be made, they must aduertise by a Post, or by let-
ters from the Councell, or the Communitie of this towne or countrie, the Councillors
of the three Cantons, without any intermission, to the end they may giue aduice vnto
the townes of that whereof they haue beene faithfully aduertised: And they shall soadainly
prepare themselves withall that shall be needfull to assist them that haue beene dam-
nified: And no one of vs of the said Cantons shall treat in any fort with any of this present
league, nor doe any thing in word or deed, whereby these succours may be stayed or hin-
dered: And euery towne or countrie shall make readie these succours at their owne
charge without any question.

E If it should happen that any one comprehended in this league should receiue any
wrong, which requires present helpe, then must we all presently succour him, in such
sort as the wrong may be repaired or reuenged without any delay.

But if the matter were of such importance as it should require an assemblie of a Diet,
and that in the meane time if one of the townes comprehended in this league should need
succours, they must soadainly go vnto the Diet, at the house of God, in the Abbey of S.
Mazie, & aduise what shall be most fit to releue them speedily that haue sent vnto them.

If any one were besieged, they should entertaine them that did aid them, or that they
haue receiued for their succours, and these charges shall be in regard of raising the siege.

F If any one without iust cause should doe wrong vnto another comprehended in this
league, and that this man shall dwell out of the foresaid bounds, when as they haue com-
plained of him that hath done the wrong, or granted any letters of reprisal, and he shall
fall into the hands of our confederats, they shall distraine and sequester such a person, and
them that shall ayd him, and their goods, and force him to make speedy reparation of
the damages.

If

If it should happen that we the abouenamed of Zurich, should haue any controuer. A
 sic with our aboue named allies of Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, or with any one
 in particular (the which God forbid) we shal come for that cause to the Diet of the house
 of God in the towne of Lucerne, the three Cantons altogether, or else one in particular,
 which hath this controuerfie with vs of Zurich: there they shal chuse two discreet men,
 and we two others, and these foure shall sweare before God and his Saints, to dispatch
 this businesse presently, either by accord, or by justice, and that which shall be concluded
 by these foure, or by the greatest part, shall be obserued by both parties without any in-
 terruption.

But if it did happen that these foure which should be chosen to such a businesse were B
 equally diuided, or that some question were growne among them, then shall they vpon
 the faith which they haue sworne, chuse a man out of our league, which shall be held in
 the faith, and not to incline to the one or the other. And as for him, whom they haue
 voluntarily chosen, they of that towne or countrie shall commaund him to attend this
 businesse with those foure, and endeaour vpon his faith to end it speedily. And in regard
 of money which is due, euery one shall pursue it by law in the towne or country where
 as the defender dwells, whereas they shall presently iudge and dispatch those affaires.

None of those that are comprehended in this league shall be arrested or sequestred
 one for another, vnlesse the suretie which the creditor hath accepted be not allowed: ha-
 ving also agreed that no confederat comprehended in this league shall be distrained for C
 another in any sort.

If any person comprehended in this league should for any offence be banished out of
 this iurisdiction, and that notice were given therof by the seale of such a countrie to ano-
 ther iurisdiction, he shall be also banished out of the same Communalitie: and he that
 shall then lodge him, or giue him meat, if it be knowne, shall incur the like punishment,
 but he shall not be in daunger of his life.

We haue also reserued for our selues together, or for any one of our townes or coun-
 tries in particular, that would allie themselves with any Lords or Citizens, that they
 cannot conueniently doe it, but this league of the one with the other shall be perpetual,
 firme, and stable, and they shall keepe all the things declared in this present writing.

We haue also concluded and declared, That if any one would molest the Seigneur D
Rasse Brueren Knight, who is at this present Bourgmaister, and the Councillors of this
 towne in their iudgements, and the laws which they haue made, being comprehended
 in this league: Vhen as we the abouenamed of Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, shal
 be onely aduertised by a Bourgmaister, or a Councillor of Zurich, then vpon our owne
 faith we shall be readie to ayd them, in such sort as the Bourgmaister, Councillors, and
 Tribunes shall enioy their power, laws, and iudgements.

We the said of Zurich, Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, haue reserued vnto our
 selues in this league our Lord the King, and the sacred Empire, and that whereunto we
 are bound by all antiquitie and good custome.

And moreouer, we of Zurich haue reserued our confederations, leagues, and approb- E
 ations which we haue made before this league.

And we of Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, haue reserued the leagues and vnions
 which we haue together, the which shall go before this.

After this, they must vnderstand that we haue plainly concluded in regard of those
 which are of this league, that they remaine in their full liberties, rights, and customes, as
 they haue done vnto this day, in such sort notwithstanding, as no man shall molest or
 hinder another.

It is also particularly concluded, to the end that this league may be alwaies firme, that
 ten yeares hence, about the month of May, before or after, without any delay, as the F
 said three townes haue ordained, we shall cause this league and vnion to be renewed by
 words, writings, and oaths, and that all things necessarie shall be done, and all they that
 shall exceed the age of ten yeares shall sweare to obserue this league, and all the Articles
 therein contained, without any contradiction.

But

A But if it should happen that all things were not done precisely within the time prefix-
 ed, and that they should prolong the businesse vpon some consideration, it should bring
 no preiudice to this league, seeing it is plainly concluded that it shall remaine firme and
 stable for euer, with all the points and present articles.

In like manner with good and mature consideration we haue reserued, that if for our
 good by a common consent, either now, or hereafter we shall doe or say otherwise than
 we haue done or written in this league, we may do all this one with another, for that we
 who are comprehended in this league will alwaies take counsell together, and resolu-
 e vpon that which shall be held most profitable.

B And to the end that all that is written by vs at this present, and shall be hereafter, as
 well by vs, as by our successors, may remaine firme and stable forever, we the said towns
 and countries of Zurich, Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, haue caused our seales to
 be set to these presents, at Zurich, the first day of May in the yeare 1351.

Zugh entred into league with the said Cantons in the yeare 1352, as followeth.

¶ The League of Zugh, with the five Cantons.

WE the Bourgmaisters, Councillors, Citifens, and Communalitie of the towne of XXIX.
 Zurich, Councillors, Citifens, and Councillors of Lucerne, the Amans, Coun-
 cell, and common Citifens of Zugh, and all that beare office: the Amans, Councillors,
 and Countmen of the three Cantons of Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, make knowne vn-
 to all, &c.

The articles contained all that was concluded betwixt Zurich, and the foure Cantons,
 giuing the same confines; and this league was all one with the other, there was onely
 Zugh added. It was concluded at Lucerne in the yeare 1352, the first Wednesday after
 Saint Iohn Baptift.

Glaris allied it selfe with the other confederates in the yeare 1357, as followeth.

¶ The League of Glaris.

D WE the Bourgmaisters, Councillors, and common Citizens of Zurich, the Amans XXX.
 and Commons of the countries of Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, & Glaris, make known
 &c. as in the precedent.

And we the said of Zurich, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald in regard of a good and parti-
 cular friendship, do giue leaue vnto them of Glaris to allie themselves at their pleasure
 with our confederates of Berne, Lucerne, and Zugh, or with any one of them in parti-
 cular; vpon condition notwithstanding, that this league shall precede the other, and shal
 be perpetual: and we the said of Glaris shall not allie our selues with any, be he Lord or
 other, without the consent and leaue of our said confederates, of Zurich, Vry, Suintz, and

E Vnderuald. In witnesse wherof, as in the other letters, putting Glaris &c. Given the Mon-
 day in Whitsoun weeke 1357.

¶ The League of Berne, with the three Cantons.

WE the Senat, Councillors, and the two hundred Citizens, Commons of the XXXI.
 towne of Berne in Heucheland, and we the Amans, and Commons, countmen
 of Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, make known &c. It contains the same in words and forme
 that the league of Zurich with the four Cantons: but the place of diet is Riembolt.

F We the said of Berne may aduertise the said three Cantons against them that would
 annoy vs and our citizens, or them that are vnder our protection, and are properly ours,
 and none others, and against such they shall be bound to ayd vs, and in all the causes we
 the said three Cantons shall send our succours by the Brunigh vnto Vnderfueren, and
 they of Berne shal giue pay vnto all our men that we shall send armed vnto them, for the
 time that they shall retaine them in their seruice, wherewith we shall rest contented, and
 that

tharour men shall leave their seruice at Vnderfueren: And if we of Berne shall send our A
mento succour the said three Cantons, or any one of them in particular, the same article
shall be obserued vnto Vnderfueren. And if it did happen that they should be generally
besieged, then we of Berne shall send vnto them at our owne charge.

And if there should fall out any war which should concerne all, and that we the said of
Berne, or the three Cantons should go against the enemies & annoy them in any place,
for all this, none that shall be comprehended in the league shall reckon any charges to
the other.

If we of Berne doe inuade our neighbours countrie aboue, then the three Cantons
shall be bound to assaile the enemy, and for this faction we shall not reckon any charges B
one vnto another: and contrariwise if we the said three Cantons shall inuade, they shall
obserue the same article.

We the said of Berne haue bound our selues, that if they of Zurich, and Lucerne haue
need of ayd, and require it of the said three Cantons their allies, whenas we shall be ad-
uertised by the three Cantons, we are bound to send our succours speedily at our owne
charge, who shall go as far as the rest.

And if they of Lucerne and Zurich should not send succours, together with them of
the three Cantons, to assist vs of Berne, we shal not pay any thing to them of Zurich and
Lucerne: and if it should at any time happen that we of Berne, and we the said three C
Cantons should send our men to succour one another, we haue concluded, that if one
part should go and annoy the enemy &c. as in the second article.

If any one comprehended in this league shall haue any complaint, or demand against
another, he shall go vnto the Diet as before: and the Elector shall chuse a man out of his
countrie or towne, who shall be indifferent, and they of his partie shall entreat him to
imbrace this businesse faithfully, and then the parties contending, shall either of them
chuse two for this part, and these five shall speedily dispatch the businesse, either by Ac-
cord or Iustice, without any contradiction. The rest is as in the other articles.

If any one comprehended in this league be in possession of any thing, no man shall
take it from him without reason, but euery one shall ayd and defend him in the countrie.

After all these leagues and alliances, the Swisles had great wars by reason of the great D
league of Suabe, which was made against them and their libertie: and on the other side
the better to resist and make head against their enemies, they made a perpetuall league
with the Grisons; and about that time Lewis the twelfth (who desired to recouer the du-
chie of Millan, which he pretended to be his right) sought the friendship and alliance of
the Swisles, who haue alwaies fought valiantly for their libertie, as they haue forced
their enemies to come to composition, and to secke a peace vpon condition, that they
should enioy their full libertie, and should be confirmed in all the places which they had
formerly taken from them of Austria, and that the iurisdiction of Turgow in criminal
causes, which they of Constance had enioied, should be giuen them: they had war with
the Grisons against John Iacques of Medici, lord of Muse, to maintaine the libertie of the E
countrie. A while after the peace made betwixt the Cantons, and the house of Austria,
which duke of Wirtemberg made a league for twelue years with the Commonweale
of the Swisles: and the Emperor Maximilian renewed the hereditarie alliance made be-
fore with duke Sigismund, wherein the house of Bourgondie was included in the yeare
1517, as followeth.

¶ An Hereditarie League made betwixt the Emperor Maximilian, and Charles
Archduke of Austria, and the Swisles.

WE Maximilian by the grace of God, Emperour of Romanes, alwaies Augustus, F
king of Germanie, Hungarie, Dalmatia, and Croacia, Archduke of Austria,
Bourgondie, Brabant, Count Palatine, &c. for vs, that is to say, in our owne proper name,
and also as Protector, and in the name of the most famous Charles, Archduke of Austria,
and duke of Bourgondie and Brabant, prince of Spaine, earle of Flanders and Tirol, &c.
of

A of the one part, and we of the league of the Swisles, that is to say, of Zurich, Berne, Lu-
cerne, Vry, Suintz, and Vnderuald, aboue and beneath Silue, Zug with the officers with-
out, Glaris, Basle, Fribourg, with the Abbey and Towne of Saint Gal, and the countrie
of Appenzel on the other part, confesse, publish, and doe make manifest to euery one by
the tenor of these presents, That Wee Maximilian, elect Emperour of Romans, vpon
our bountie and speciall grace, and by duetie, are readie (as it is fit) to gouerne all our
subiects, and those that be of the sacred Empire, in peace, tranquillitie, and concord,
especially our hereditarie and faithfull subiects, of what degree or condition soeuer they
be, to encrease their goods, and to fore-see that hereafter they receiue no harme; hauing
B to that end graciously considered of the commoditie of our noble houses of Austria and
Bourgondie, being neighbours vnto the said league of Swisles, and may much auaille
them, notwithstanding that it hath bene courteously done by our vnckle Sigismund of
Austria, as hauing had a perpetuall vnion by our deare brother Lewis the French king,
for himselfe and the said Swisles, the said letters were giuen at Macklin the tenth of Iune,
in the yeare 1474, and in forme of an hereditarie vnion.

Of that which was made at Zurich the Monday before Saint Galin in the yeare of our
Lord God 1477, with accord, That the Swisles should be subiect, and shew themselves
faithfull, and full of loue, and be good neighbours to the said Emperour of Romans, as it
is sitting, and to the said houses of Austria and Bourgondie, and that for the honour of
C Almightie God.

We Emperour Maximilian, as Archduke of Austria, by reason of the countries which
are come vnto vs by the death of our said vnckle Sigismund, and for the appurtenances
thereof, as Protector of our deere and welbeloued Charles Prince of Spaine, by reason of
his countie of Bourgondie, with good and mature counsell, true knowledge, and full de-
liberation haue ordained the perpetuall vnion of king Lewis, and the following heredita-
rie vnions one with another, as followeth.

First, we the said parties, and in like manner all our heires and successors, subiects, and
countreimen, and all they that shall descend of vs, may and ought for euer hereafter haue
part in the said vnion, with true defences and promises, and all other things that may
D assist them, by euery of our Principalities, Earledomes, Seigneuries, Towns, Countries,
and limits, and they shall haue right to buy, and to trust one another, without danger or
preiudice of enterprises, and they shall be assured in their persons and goods, and they may
also treat and deale in all places without any let, burthen, or innouation of any of our or-
dinances in any sort whatsoever, and without any fraud or preiudice.

In like manner, we the said Emperour, and Charles, ordaine, That none of our succel-
sors or subiects shall doe any thing in generall or particular against the general league,
nor shall doe wrong to any of the confederates, whereby any warre may grow.

Also we of the common league of the Swisles ordaine, That we, and our successors, as
well those that are ours at this present, or shall hereafter any way belong vnto vs, both
E men, townes, and castles, with all our subiects, shall not doe any wrong, nor commit any
scandall whereby any warre may grow with the gracious Emperour, and the Archduke
Charles, their heires, successors, and subiects, comprehended in this league, or others that
shall be their adherents in generall or particular.

And to the end that this commendable conclusion and vnion betwixt vs the said par-
ties, and our successors, and subiects, may continue with greater intelligence, we haue de-
clared, That if it should happen within any short time, that Wee the Emperour in our
countries comprehended in this vnion, and Wee Charles Archduke in our countie of
Bourgondie, should be assaulted, or our heires and successors, That we the said Swisles
shall haue a faithfull regard vnto the Emperour and to his, to the end they may not be
F vnjustly molested.

And for a better peace and tranquillitie, we the said parties haue specially consented,
That Wee the Emperour Maximilian, and Charles the Archduke, with our countries
and subiects comprehended in this perpetuall vnion, with all those that hereafter shall be
vnited

vnited and belong vnto them, shall nor doe any thing that may breed warre, and we the said Suissees shall doe the like.

They that in generall or particular, at this present or hereafter, shall haue need of protection and defence, and which are, or shall be hereafter vnited, and belong vnto vs the Archduke of Austria, and to our principalities, townes, and iurisdiccions comprehended in this league, or those which in the same forme, at this present, or hereafter, in generall or particular, are, or shall be, vnited, or belong to vs Suissees, and which shall haue any complaint, suit, action, or pretension, if the parties may with reason be reconciled, the plaintiffe may require his aduerse partie to come vnto reason, and to that end the defendant shall present himselfe without any delay before the Bishops of Constance and Basil, present, and to come, vnlesse the lawes doe otherwise ordaine, and this businesse shall be ended within three moneths: after it is begun and if the partie doth not appeare nor obey, then their sentence shall be put in execution without any appeale, or request, vnlesse he doth make it appeare that he was hindered by some vrgent and necessitie let, or otherwise.

The controuerfies for hereditarie fees, immouable goods, violences, small debts, and such like, shall be pleaded after the forme following: these fees shall be pleaded before the lord of the fee, and according to the right of inheritance: and other causes shall be tried in those places where the goods are, and where the violence hath bene done, vnlesse that he which had done the violence had retired himselfe out of the said iurisdiction, and meant to flee, then euerie man may seeke further for justice against him that flies: other suits and controuerfies shall be pleaded before the ordinarie Iudges of those places whereas the defenders dwell, and whatsoever shall be adiudged reasonable in the said causes, shall be observed by all the parties without any delay, appeale, or request.

And to the end that hereafter euerie man may be preferred from violence, it hath bene concluded, That before they enter into law, according to the ordinance, that either partie shall giue securitie, that (loosing his cause) he shall make satisfaction of the damage.

The parties which shall plead, shall bind themselves by writing vnto the Iudges which shall be chosen to end the suit, not to conceiue any bad opinion: as it was concluded by the most Christian French king *Lewis*, in the perpetual Intelligence, and in the Hereditarie vnion made by our vnckle the Archduke *Sigismund*, where the eight Cantons of Zurich, Berne, Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, Zug, and Glaris, are comprehended.

But we the said townes of Basil, Fribourg, Schaffhausen, with the said eight Cantons of the said league, and also we the Abbot, with the Abbey and Towne of Saint Gal, and the Countie of Appenzel, with other Townes, Castles, Countries, and places as of late come with the said twelve Cantons, and the countries adioyning, &c. as before.

And we the Emperour *Maximilian*, and *Charles* the Archduke &c. doe accept into this perpetuall vnion, as before, the said Cantons of Basil, Fribourg, Soleurre, and Schaffhausen, with the Abbey and Towne of Saint Gal, like vnto the other abouenamed Cantons.

And to the end that in the said place all discord may be taken away, it hath bene concluded, That of all fides, all dishonest words and deeds shall cease, and whoeuer shall infringe it, shall be condemned according to the manner of his speech, without any fauour.

In like manner, euerie ten yeare, either of the parties shall cause this present vnion to be read, the better to vnderstand what must be observed.

And also we the said parties haue referred in this vnion the holie See, and the sacred Empire, with all others to whom we are bound. We haue also referred, That the league, vnion, and intelligence, ciuile law, and right of parties, and this our hereditarie vnion, declaration, renewing, with all benefites, shall, both in generall and particular, by vs the said parties, and by our heires, succcessors, subiects, &c. be for euer hereafter inuolubly observed without any fraud.

And

A. And hereupon, by speciall grace, we haue consented, We the Emperour for vs, and as Protector to *Charles* the Archduke, for the increase of loue, to giue yeerly vnto euery one of the said Cantons of Suissees two hundred florins of the Rhin, to be paid in the towne of Zurich on the day of the holy crosse in May; and to the Abbot of S. Gal, and to the countie of Appenzel, one hundred florins euery yeare to either of them, vntill that the said Archduke *Charles* shall enter into possession of his hereditarie Estates.

And We the Emperour will, that the said *Charles* being come to the age of maturitie, shall confirme this present vnion with an oath, &c.

In witness of these presents, sealed with the seale of vs the Emperour and the Archduke *Charles*, and the heires and succcessors of vs two, we bind our selues inuolubly to observe all the articles and points of the league, and to that end we haue set our seales and swome, &c.

Giuen at Buda in Hongarie the seuenth of Februarie 1517, of our Empire the fiftenth, and of our raigne of Hongarie the one and twentieth.

The three Cantons of the Grisons entered into league first with the seuen Cantons of Zurich, Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, Zug, and Glaris, vpon the conditions aboue mentioned, and it was concluded in the yeare 1393. But afterwards there growing great controuerfies betwixt the said Grisons and the countie of Tirol, in the yeare 1471, for their greater assurance they allied themselves againe with all the Cantons of the Suissees, with the French king, and some other princes: and these Cantons do enioy the valley of Voltoлина in Italie.

The Grisons were in former time called Rhetiens and Canines: for *Bello Nesius* hauing past into Italie, with a great number of Gaules, about one hundred eightie seuen yeares before the coming of Christ, he ceased vpon a great part of Tuscanie and expelled the inhabitants, who vnder the conduct of *Rhetus* came to dwell in the strepe and craggie mountaines of the Alpes, where are the two springs of Rhin and Tesin, building certain castles for their abode in the mountaines and valles, and called the countie by the name of their Leader. In time they multiplied, and extended their limits vnto the Lake of Constance; and in Italie, they enioied Como, Verona, and Trent.

D. In the yeare of our Saluation 357, the Emperour *Constantine* before he would make war against the Germanes, led his armie into Rhetia, and staid in the plaine at the entering of the mountaines about a mile from the Rhin; and this part tooke the name of Curia, of that stay: and the armie being parted, they began to build a towne, called in their language Chur, and by the Italians Coira. The Bishop of this towne with his colledge, vnited themselves and made the first league for their defence against strangers, and this was in the yeare 1419: by their example the Abbot of Zizaris, the Earle of Mauan, and the Baron of Bezuns, made also league, and it is called Grise: and in the end all they that dwell in the valley of Segonia allied themselves, and were called the ten iurisdiccions, but afterwards they were all three vnited, and made one bodie.

E. The Valaisiens entered into league with some of the Suissees in the yeare 1517. All this countie of the Valaisiens hath for their Prince and Lord both for spiritual and temporal, the Bishop of Sion, by a grant from *Charlemaine*, and confirmed by other Emperours vnto this day: and this bishop is chosen by the Chanoins of Sion, and by certaine deputies of the seuen Communalities, to whom they do afterwards giue a Iudge for ciuile causes, who is called Capitaine; and euery two yere at Christmas, the Bishops deputies and the communalities chuse a new capitaine. In the yeare 1528 the league was renewed by the Bishop, the Chapter, and the seuen communalities of Vallois, with Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, Lucerne, Zurich, Fribourg, and Soleurre: and in the yeare 1475 they had allied themselves with Berne.

F. Besides the thirteene Cantons of the Suissees, the Grisons, and the Valaisiens, there was another league and perpetuall alliance made by the Abbot and towne of Saint Gal with the Cantons of Zurich, Lucerne, Suintz, and Glaris, in the yeare 1454, notwithstanding that Saint Gal is a feudatarie to the Empire. This towne is not far from the Lake of Constance, and is aboue the said towne of Constance towards the Grisons in a rough valley:

Kk

valley: the Abbots of that place obtained many great priuiledges from Emperours and Kings, whereby they enlarged their iurisdiccions, so as they affected the name of Princes, and were more giuen to armes, than to a monasticke life, and they did often make warre against their neighbours, especially against Appenzel, seeking to make them pay vnreasonable charges; but they were often defeated during the space of seuen yeares: since which they made this league with the Suisses.

Mulheuson is a countrie in Sauoy neere vnto the riuier, not far from Basl, and it belongs vnto the Empire, the which made a perpetuall league with all the Cantons of the Suisses in the yeare 1515.

Rotuuil is seated vpon the riuier of Necar in Suabe, it is a towne well fortified, the countrie is peopled with a warlike nation, which were the remainders of the Cimbrians defeated by the Romanes. This Rotuuil is an Imperial towne, the which being molested by Edward duke of Vittenbergh, was forced to make a league with the Suisses, the which was afterwards confirmed and sworne in the yeare 1519.

Bade stands vpon the riuier of Limante in Ergouia, vpon a plaine in the which there are an infinite number of hot bathes, both publike and priuat. There the confederat allies do celebrate their Diets: it was sometimes an Earledome, and came vnder the power of the Suisses, in the time of the Emperour *Sigismund*, and they ruined the castle.

There hath beene in our times certaine wars betwixt these two confederats, by reason of religion: but they were afterwards reconciled, as may be seene by these accords vnder written.

¶ The last peace made with them of Zurich, on Saint Oclauians day, in the yeare 1531.

XXXVI. WE Captaines, Bannerals, Councillors of war and peace, and Communalities of the fise Cantons of Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, and Zug of the one part, and we of Zurich, Berne, Basl, and Schaffhouse on the other, all things laid aside, are come to a true and brotherly peace together &c. This peace contains certaine articles of religion, and some that are priuat, &c.

- First that the fise Cantons shall remaine in the Romish religion, with their adherents.
- That they of Zurich &c. shall continue Protestants.
- That they shall not contemne one another, by reason of their beleefe.
- That it shall bein force as the other leagues.
- That they shall serat libertie all prisoners taken in this present war, paying reasonably.
- That all controuerfies, growing betwixt vs during this present war and before, shall be made void.

¶ The peace of Berne in the yeare 1537.

XXXVII. THIS peace was concluded by the mediation of the French king, there being a war betwixt the said fise Cantons and the rest, by reason of religion, for that they followed the Romish Church: where it was concluded that euery one should beleefe as he thought good: and first of all, that from the Protestants opinion they might turn Papists, or continue in the faith wherein they were.

- Brengard, Maligier, and Frimon, and either of them referues his friends & adherents.
- They shall not contemne one another by reason of their beleefe.
- Both parties shall retorne vnder the forme of the sworne leagues.
- They of Berne shall pay vnto the fise Cantons fise thousand crowns of the Sunne, for the damages done to many churches.
- The prisoners shall first pay their charges.

In regard of this present peace, all controuerfies growing before shall be abolished, and neuer more called in question.

These are the treaties that were made among the people, whereby the reader may be

A in a manner fully instructed after what manner they are gouerned.

This people are diuided into nineteene members, whereof there is one entire bodie made, and these members are the thirteene Cantons, the Grisons, the Valaisiens, S. Gal, Mulhuson, and Rotuuil. Whereupon we must obserue, that all Common-weales wherof there is any memorie, haue held three courtes to enlarge their estates.

The first was that which the Spartains and Atheniens did obserue, who after they had conquered any cities, made them presently subiect, but being notable to vndergoe great a burthen, they ruined them: for it is hard to hold places subiect, by force, which haue been accustomed to be free; and this course is more vnprofitable than any other.

B The other meanes was held before that the Roman Empire grew great, by the Tuscans, who had twelue townes, among the which were Fiezoli, Arezzo, and Volterra; and there was a league of many Common-weales, among the which there was no difference of authoritie, but they made those places which they conquered companions of their power.

The third course was held by the Romans, who did associat vnto them many Common-weales, which did liue vnder the same law, yet the Romans reserued vnto themselves the sole authoritie of command. This manner was held the best, as doth appeare by the effects. After this, we may put that of the Tuscans with the which they held the Empire of Tuscaine, and a great part of Lumbardie, and did continue long free, and in C peace, vntill that a greater power supprest theirs.

Their manner is obserued at this day by the Suisses, and their confederats, who make all one Common-weale diuided into many, amongst the which there is no distinction of degrees, hauing expelled all their lords who had any iurisdiction in their estate, and there is not amongst them any other superiors, but such as are magistrats; all the rest are equal, notwithstanding that there are some which are much esteemed among the rest for their wisdome and judgement, and among them, they do also much esteeme gentrie, as they do at Argentine, whereas no man may be admitted to be a magistrat, or to haue any dignitie in the towne, if he doe not proue himselfe a gentleman by foure descentes.

D But to speake something more than hath beene said of their gouernement, you shall vnderstand, That they doe chuse out of euery companie an equal number of persons, when there is question to go to any publike Councell.

There are two publike Councells in the towne of Zurich, and Basl, which are of great authoritie, that is to say, the Great Councell, when as many assemble in the name of all the people; and these doe not meet but for the most important and weightie affaires of the Common-weale: and the Lesser, which gouernes the Common-weale daily, and takes knowledge of the controuerfies of the Citizens. At Zurich the Great Councell consists of two hundred, and at Basl of two hundred foure foure: The Lesser Councell of Zurich is of fiftie men; and that of Basl of fiftie foure, for they put twelue of euery Companie to the Great Councell: but at Zurich they chuse eightene from among the Nobles. They of Zurich giue three men out of euery Tribe for the Lesser Councell, and they of Basl foure. They add thereto two Consuls, which are chiefe of the publike Councell in euery towne. Moreover, they haue at Basl two Tribunes, whom they call Heads with the Consuls. Besides, at Zurich, the Companie of Gentlemen send six men to the Pettie Councell, whereas the other Companie send but three, and the other six are chosen out of what Companie or Tribe it pleaseth the Magistrat. The Pettie Councell is diuided into old and new.

They call them the old Senat, which haue left their office for the space of halfe a yere: notwithstanding that these assemble when as they hold a Councell, yet are they not always called, and there are some things done onely by the new Senat. At Basl, the great Councell is diuided after the same manner, and the pettie Councell assembles commonly thrice, or foure times a weeke. Euery Senat hath for head a Consul, whom they call Bourgmaiter, that is to say, Maister of the Citizens, who is chosen by the great Councell. They that haue greatest authoritie next vnto the Consuls, are the Tribunes, whom they of Zurich call Oberstemeister, and they of Basl Zunfsteimeister. There are

XL.

three at Zurich, and two at Basil. And thus much touching the gouvernement of these A
two townes.

Let vs returne now to the generall gouernement. The Suisses Common-weale inge-
nerall, is mixt of an Aristocraticall and Popular gouernement, for that among all these
people, whereon the whole Common-weale of the Suisses is compounded, there are
some whose gouernement belongs meerely to a Democratic, where in a manner all
things are done by the peoples Suffrages, as in those Cantons which haue no townes,
that is, Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, Glaris, and Appenzel: and Zughe also, although it be a
towne. The rest are gouerned by Magistrats or chiefe men, as the townes of Zurich,
Berne, Lucerne, Basil, Fribourg, Soleurre, and Schaffouse: but for that the soueraignty B
belongs vnto the people, who chuse these head Magistrats, these Commonweales con-
sist of two sorts of gouernement, whereof some are more Aristocratically, and some more
Democraticall or popular. All these Cantons liue in forme of a Common weale, for
that altogether make one bodie, and being diuided they are members; yet euery Canton
hath a head taken out of the chiefe Towne or Borough: For euery one makes his priu-
at assemblee, but when they treat of any thing of great importance, they hold a gene-
rall Diet in one of the townes appointed by them, to the which two or three of the chiefe
men of euery Canton comes. In their consultations they agree well, neither hath one
towne more authoritie than another. If it happen that warre be made for all the Can-
tons, euery one payes his part for the charges of this warre, and that which is conquered C
is common to them all. But if two or three Cantons get any thing by armes, the con-
quest doth not belong to the rest, but to them onely that haue made it. And although
it hath seemed in some adions that they should participat, yet could they not do it, for
that the French king did adiudge (being required by them in the like difficultie) that a
priuat conquest did belong to priuat men. And for this cause when as a Canton would
make a priuat warre, they leuie men in their owne iurisdiction. But if they be to raise an
armie (as for example the French king) of twentie five thousand foot, they strike vp the
drum, and all the Cantons send what men they will, and then the Captaines chusing
25000 out, or 35000, or 40000, they send backe the rest to their houses: and euery
Canton hath his Standard.

This Common-weale of the Suisses, hath no common Magistrats, vnlesse we shall
put in this number, the Bailiffs and Gouernours which are sent forth here and there, not
by the Council of the Common-weale, but by euery Canton in particular. Their gene-
rall Assemblee or Councell is not alwaies equall in number, for that sometimes besides
the Cantons, their other allies and confederates, especially the Embassadors of Saint
Gall and Mulhouse, of the Grisons, & Valaisiens assemble; and then it is called the grea-
test Councell, the which is not often held, but when as they treat of peace or war, or of
other affaires which belong equally to all the confederates. And most commonly there
are none but the Embassadors of the thirteene Cantons which meet for the affaires of
the Common weale (as hath bin said) euery one hauing a deliberative voice: and two or E
more Embassadors being sent from one Canton, they haue but one voice, for that their
voices are gathered according to the Cantons, and not according to the number of Em-
bassadors and Deputies. Yet all the Cantons do not alwaies send their Embassadors to
all assemblees; as when there is question of bailiwicks, gouerned by the feuen or eight
first Cantons, or of other things which depend thereon; then onely feuen or eight Em-
bassadors meet, which giue their voices. But touching the bailiwicks of Italic, belong-
ing to the twelue first Cantons, their twelue Embassadors assemble. There are at this
time particular assemblees, by reason of the difference of religion; so as the five Can-
tons of Lucerne, Vry, Suintz, Vnderuald, and Zughe, which hold the Romish religion, as-
semble oftener than the other Cantons, and haue as it were a Councell a part: and for F
this cause when they speake of the five pettie Cantons, they meane the abouenamed,
and not the five first in league: as in their generall Councell of all the Cantons they take
knowledge of lawes and customes; yet euery Canton hath his particular lawes and cus-
tomes, the which remaine firme and inuolable. If they send any Embassadors out of
the

A the countrie to compound any controuerfies, to contract a league, to congratulat any
prince, or to persuaide or dissuade any thing, to demand any thing, or to denounce
war, or if within the countrie they are to negotiat with any Canton or Towne; the coun-
cell determines what is to be done, whether it be fit to send Embassadors from all the
Cantons, or from some of them. Whenas they are to contract any league or alliance, all
the Cantons send Embassadors, but in many other affaires they name foure or five Can-
tons which send Embassadors in the name of all the rest. This Councell resolues of the
things which they are to make to the Embassadors of Kings, Princes, and Common-
weales: they haue charge to prouide for the Prouinces belonging to the Cantons, that
B they may be duely gouerned: if there be any difficult suit in any of the Cantons, it is re-
ferred to the Councell; but if the counsell of the Bailiffe seeme vnjust to either partie,
he may appeale to the Councell of Suifferland. The Gouernors and Bailiffs are bound
to giue an account vnto the Councell, of the tolles, reuenues, and fines. The annuall
reuenues of Bailiwicks are distributed by equal portions among the Cantons to whom
the bailiwicks do belong. To conclude, the counsell takes knowledge of all that con-
cernes the gouernment of the Prouinces belonging to the Cantons; they cause gouer-
nors to giue vp their accounts; they giue audience to any that will accuse them, and pu-
nish them if they haue deserued, or depriving them, they send vnto the Canton which
had giuen them the charge, to appoint others. The Canton of Zurich (which is the first in
C ranke) hath power at all times to assemble the Councell, & to demand aduice of it: at this
day their custome is to hold their generall Councell at Bade, but they are not tied vnto it
by any law or decree. The Catholicke Cantons assemble often at Lucerne, sometimes
at Beckenried in the territorie of Vry, or at Brumen, which belongs to them of Zuits.
Every yeare about the middelt of Iune, they hold their generall Councell at Bade,
whereas the Bailiffe and Gouernours of Prouinces giue an account of their charges be-
fore the Councell, and they also attend to end the suits of Prouinces: and at the same
time the Embassadors of the twelue first Cantons meete at Lugano, and make the foure
Bailiffs of the Prouinces of Italic giue an account: then they iudge of causes of Par-
pele, so as they may appeale from them to the Councell of Bade. The Councell or Par-
pele assemble, either by an order from the Cantons, or to finish that which was left
vndone at the precedent Diet; for causes of importance are not alwaies ended at the first
assemblee, either for that they do not seeme vnto the Senators and Councillors to be of
merit, or for that they haue not full power: wherefore by a common consent they ap-
point another day; and in the meane time the Embassadors demand aduice of the Seig-
nours of their Canton, to know how they shall gouerne themselves. And sometimes for
a matter of consequence which doth suddenly happen, the Canton of Zurich, or some
other, will appoint a Diet, if it be any matter which concernes the whole Common-
weale.

The day before that a Councell or Parliament is appointed to be held, the Embassi-
dor of the Canton of Zurich sends the Lieutenant of Bade into all the Innes to know
what Embassadors are come: and this Lieutenant salutes them, and receiues them hono-
rably in the name of the whole Commonweale, and the next day he calls them to come
vnto the Towne-house. If the Embassadors of all the Cantons be come, they are called,
and they treat of matters concerning all the Cantons in generall. But if at the day ap-
pointed they of the new Cantons, as of Basil, Schaffuse, Soleurre, or of Fribourg be, not
yet arrived, as it doth often happen, feuen or eight of the first Cantons assemble, and
treat onely of that which concernes themselves. The Embassadors being all set in coun-
cell according to the order and number of the Cantons, he of Zurich hath the first place,
F who salutes all the rest: then hauing made a short speech and excuse, according to their
custome, he declares what the Embassadors had in charge at the last Diet to consult of
at their next meeting, the which is most commonly called to that end; and if there be
any thing happened since, he doth also propound it: after which he adds what his Mai-
ties had giuen him in charge to say touching the point which was then in question. The
other Embassadors do the like in their ranks, and deliuer what their superiors had com-
manded

maunded them to say. All the Embassadors hauing deliuered their Commissions, and what they had in charge to say, the Gouernour or Bailife of Bade, of what Canton hee uer he be, demands the aduice of euerie Councellor in order, touching that which hath bene propounded; first of that of Zurich, and then of the rest in their ranks: hauing all spoken, the Bailife reckons their voices according to the number of the Cantons, and not by Councellors, for that one Canton doth sometimes send two Embassadors, who may assist in Councel, and giue their opinions, but they haue but one voice, as hath been formerly said.

They obserue the like order in priuat causes, but they that haue any causes to plead at such Diets, first demand audience of the Embassador of Zurich, who appoints them a day, and enters their names into the Roll, and they appeare before the Councell, where they either plead their causes themselves, or by their Aduocats, whom they bring with them, not according vnto the ciuile law, or by the opinion of Lawiers, but with equitie, and according to the lawes and customes of the people: but the Iudges and Officers of euery Canton iudge of all controuerfies betwixt the subiects.

Moreover there are Iudges of publike suits, which are controuerfies which happen betwixt two or many Cantons, or of certaine priuat men against one Canton, wherein the confederats are of the same condition with the Cantons: for the decision of which controuerfies, either of the parties doth chuse two Iudges, who absolue of the oath which they owe vnto their Canton, promise to iudge according vnto right and equitie. The Cantons haue seuerall places of meeting, whether they send their Embassadors and Arbitrators to decide their controuerfies: when the voices of these Iudges are equall, they chuse a fift Iudge or Arbitrator, whom they call *Ein Obmann*; this Iudge giues no sentence, but doth only approve one of those which the Arbitrators haue pronounced.

To speake something more particularly of the Common-weales of the thirteene Cantons, they may be referred vnto three formes; for as there are three names of soueraigne Magistrats among the Cantons, they haue also so many formes of Common-weales, not onely differing in name, but also in matter and substance. In some of the Cantons the chief of the Councel are called *Amanas*, as at Vry, Suint, Vnderuald, Zug, Glaris, & Appenzel, whereas the soueraignie belongs to the people. The Common weales of Berne, Lucerne, Fribourg, and Saleurre are gouerned by a forme of Aristocratie: but the towne built by certaine princes, or that haue bene subiect vnto them, are gouerned by the Auoyer, whom they call *Schultheisz*, who is the chiefe of the Councell; the other towne of the Cantons are diuided by certaine companies, out of which, by their owne election, are chosen the Lords of the Councel, and the soueraigne Magistrat & head of this Councell is by them called *Bourgmaiter*; and after this manner the Common-weales of Zurich, Basil, and Schaffouse are gouerned, whereas they haue (as I haue said before) two publike Councells, which haue the principall authoritie, and in euery one of these towne there are two Consuls or Bourgmaiters who be the heads and Presidents of these Councells.

But omitting the manner of the election of these Councellors and Consuls, for breuities sake, and of many other inferior offices, and courts of justice in the said towne: you shall understand, That in these Common weales, ballards are deprived of all honours and dignities, neither is it lawfull for them to come to Councell, nor vnto their Courts of justice. He that hath not bene a dweller ten yeares within the towne of Zurich, cannot be chosen of the publike Councell. They that are borne out of Suisseerland, cannot be of the pettie Councell at Schaffouse: but if they haue been Bourgesse twenty yeare, they may be admitted into the Great Councell, and into the number of the Iudges. Their publike estates and offices are of diuers sorts, in these Common-weales, and more in number according as the towne are peopled. The highest degree next vnto the Bourgmaiters and heads of Companies, are the Purse-bearers, and Treasurers, hauing charge of the publike treasure.

The other Cantons, and Common-weales, are gouerned in like manner, by two seuerall Councells, but their electors are diuers, and the heads of their Councells haue di-

Auers names, for in some they are called Auoyers, and in others Ammans.

The Abbot, and Abbey of S. Gal, holds the first place among the confederats of the thirteene Cantons: The Abbots of S. Gal haue great reuenues, and are princes of the empire: They are lords of the countrie of Turgout, and Wile, where they haue a great territorie wel peopled, the which is diuided into certaine Chastellenies, and Prouostships, whither the Abbot doth send his Prouost: He hath also his Ammans, and other officers, with two seuerall Councells, so as the forme of gouernement of Saint Gal differs little from that of the Cantons.

As for the Grisons, they gouerne themselves popularly in their seuerall leagues, which B be three, in euerie of which, they doe yearly chuse a soueraigne magistrat whom many doe call Amman, who, with the assessors, doth execute justice: There is a great Prouost of all the first league, which is called Grise, he is chosen in the generall assemblee of all the Communalities, and is President at the meetings and judgements of all the league. The assemblies of this league, are held in the village of Trumb. The second league is called of the house of God, or of Cade: the towne of Coire is the chiefe of this league and Commualtie, the which hath a Common-weale a part, in a manner like to that of Zurich, and others, gouerned after the same manner. Euerie Commualtie (whereof there be cleuen) hath his Ammans, Podestats, and Ministraux (as they call them) with their laws and customes, vnder the which they maintaine themselves in libertie. The third C league is called the Ten iurisdicions. Taffas is the first of the ten Communalities, whereof eight doe acknowledge the Archduke of Austria for soueraigne, who appoints a gouernour there, yet he is chosen from among the Grisons vnto this day: this gouernour is President in criminal causes, and doth mannage and maintaine the Archdukes rights; yet euerie iurisdiction hath his particular priuiledges and customes. The ten iurisdicions allied themselves together, in the yeare 1436, vpon condition that they should assist and aide one another in all things that were iust and reasonable against their enemies, with other conditions: The yeare following, they made a perpetuall alliance with the other two leagues; and so the three leagues were vntied as it were into one bodie. So there are three leagues of the Grisons which haue fiftie Communalities, and make but D one Common-weale.

The Councell of the leagues, is called the assemblies of the Embassadours of euerie Commualtie of the Grisons; whither some Communalities send two Embassadors, and others but one. If the Councell be ordinarie, the Grise league sends eight and twentie Embassadors or Councellors; that of Cade three & twentie; and that of the iurisdicions fourteene. The Councell generall of the whole nation doth sometimes assemble, but it is seldome. The Councell of the Grisons is almost like vnto that of the Suiffes.

The countrie of Valais is diuided into high and low: High Valais hath seuen iurisdicions or Communalities, which haue thirteene parishes: Basse Valais hath six Communalities, and foure and twentie Parishes: The higher commands the lower, and sends them E gouernours to iudge of causes, and to mannage affaires of State. The Bishop of Syon, called Earle and Gouernour of Valais, is (as I haue formerly noted) Prince of the countrie; he is chosen by suffrages of the Chapter of Syon, and of the seuen Communalities of high Valais: The next dignitie vnto the Bishop, is the Capitaine or Bayle of the whole countrie, whose charge continues two yeares, and he doth iudge of ciuile causes; he is chosen by the Bishop, and the Embassadours of the Communalities. Euerie Commualtie hath his magistrat, which some call Maior, other Chastelain: He doth iudge of all suits, yea and of crimes, with some Councellors of the Commualtie: They haue Ammans also, which are soueraigne Magistrats in certaine Cantons of the Suiffes; but they of Valais are inferiour Iudges to the Maiors.

F There are other Common-weales and people gouerned in common by the Cantons of Suiffes, whose chiefe officers are chosen by the generall Councell at Bade, or by those Cantons to whom they doe particularly belong, and their gouernment is like vnto that of the Suiffes.

¶ The Religion.

XLI.

OF the thirteene Cantons there are some which are wholly Catholickes, others are mixt, and some are altogether Protestants. The Catholickes are Sultz, Vry, Vnderwald, Lucerne, and Zug, which ioyned one vnto another; Fribourg, and Soleurre, are diuided from the five, and among themselves, for Soleurre is for the most part Catholicke, and Fribourg Protestant, and so are Zurich, Berne, Basill, and Schaffouse; the mixt are Glaris, and Appenzel: these two being betwixt the Catholicke and Protestant Cantons, participat of both their qualities. It is true that the chiefe of Appenzel, and the greatest part of the people are Catholickes. The first Canton which received the Protestants religion, was that of Zurich: they say it grew by reason of a certaine discontentment, for want of pay, which the inhabitants pretended to be due vnto them, from Pope Julius the second: Whereunto they were incited by *Zuinglius*, so as in the yeare of our Lord 1526, they did abolish the Masse throughout all the countrie, and did bring in the Communion. And this profession of the Gospel extended it selfe to the Cantons of Fribourg and Basill, so as on the six and twentieth of Ianuarie, in the yeare of our Redemption 1528 at Berne, after a long disputation before the Senat, they ouerthrew their Images, and rooted out the Masse.

As for the Grisons, they of the league called Grise, are for the most part Catholickes, and the rest in a manner all Protestants, which follow *Zuinglius* doctrine: yet they say the Romish seruice at Chur, and at Fustenberg, whereas the Bishop is bound to remaine halfe the yeare, and at Roslin, a fee belonging to the Archdukes of Austria. In the valley of Agnadine, and in the Pregalia, which belongs vnto the league of the House of God, and in many places of the eight countries, there are villages where there hath not been any Masse said for many yeres. Posclaua, a place of the league of the House of God, is diuided into Protestants and Papists; but the one haue a minister continually, whereas the Papists haue had no Priest for some yeres. It is lawfull for euerie one among the Grisons to liue as he shall thinke good, and to follow what religion he please, yet many times the Protestants insult ouer the Papists, for, notwithstanding that they are serued by Ministers of any nation, yet will they not suffer the Papists to haue any Priests that are strangers, and they of the countrie, that do their duties, are subiect to outrages.




THE



THE ESTATES OF THE DUKE OF SAVOY.

The Contents.

1.  Onfines and limits of the Duke of Sauoies countrie, diuided into two Estates, Piedmont and Sauoy. 2. Description of the duchie of Sauoy in particular, with the Earldomes and Baronies. 3. Description of Piedmont, and the chiefe townes. 4. Of Turin, the chiefe towne of Piedmont, famous for the aboad of the Dukes of Sauoy, the vniuersitie for all sciences, and a stately parke newly made. 5. Of the Marquisat of Saluzes, and the most important places. 6. Of the chiefe places of Piedmont which are walled in, besides Episcopall townes. 7. Of the Marquisat of Cheuc. 8. Of the countie of Nizze, diuided into foure vicarships, or vicegerents, with the townes and places. 9. Fertilitye of the townes of Sauoy and Piedmont, with their lakes and chiefe riuers. 10. Quarries of marble newly discovered. 11. The humor and disposition of the Sauoyards and Piedmontois. 12. Riches of Piedmont in mines of gold and siluer, in trafficke of yron, cattell and cloth of Pignerolle. 13. A computation of the reuenues of the Duke of Sauoy. 14. Of the Duke of Sauoies forces, his forts and places of defence, his alliances and confederations. 15. The pretensions of the Duke of Sauoy to other Estates. 16. The government of the duchie of Sauoy: of the Senat of Sauoy, and of that of Piedmont. 17. A catalogue of the Dukes of Sauoy, which haue ruled vnto this day.



LI the countries which are vnder the power of the Duke of Sauoy, being taken together, confines vpon the East with the Estate of Milan and Monterrat, vpon the West with Bresse and the Franche county, and towards the South with Prouence, Dauphine, & lower with the territorie of Genoa and the countie of Nizze, which is watered by the Mediterranean sea: finally, they confine vpon the North with the Cantons of Suisses, of Berne, and Fribourg. But to the end I may be vnderstood more plainly, I will diuide all into two parts, therein following nature, for that the mountaines haue diuided this Estate into Sauoy and Piedmont.

The duchie of Sauoy hath for bounds vpon the West, the two riuers of Rhin and Rhone; and towards the North, from the lands of the Suisses iurisdiction, and Mont Luza, to the riuier of Genoa, and the riuier of Var which diuides France from Italie: on the other side the countrie of Sauoy confines with the new Lands which were giuen to the French king in exchange for the Marquisat of Saluzes, and goes vnto Lozanne, and other places which are vpon the lake Leman, the which were sometimes vnder the duke of Sauoies iurisdiction.

They do account the Earldome and countrie of Maurienne, with the Marquisat of Suse, for parts of Sauoy. The countie of Maurienne extends vnto the riuier of Arche, where stands the town of Saint Iohn of Maurienne, where lies interred *Humbert* the first, who receiued the countie of Maurienne, & the duchie of Sauoy, from the Emperor *Henri* the third. The countrie of Tarantaise lies enuironed by the Alpes, and the riuers of Arche and Are, which mingles it selfe with Arche neere vnto Chamois: the chiefe town of this countrie is Moutier in Tarantaise, where lies buried *Humbert* the second Earle of Maurienne,

Maurienne, who added Tarantaise to his lands. There is moreouer the seigneurie of T. d. A. signy (in the which Ripaille stands) a very very pleasing place, and very famous, for that *Amadee* the eighth, the first duke of Sauoy, having giuen ouer his estates, made profession of a Monastick life, and being there, was chosen Pope by the Clergie, being assisted at the Councill of Basil, in the year 1440. There is also the duchie of Chablais, and the baronies of Raud & Gaz. The chiefe towne of Sauoy is Chambary, which stands among the mountaines, and is reasonably well built: the others are Nizze, Saint Iohn of Maurienne, Moulrier, Tonon, Montmelian, and some others.

III.

Piedmont, not comprehending the countie of Nizze, extends it selfe from the riuier of Cessavnto Dauphine, betwixt the Alps, Montferrat, and the Estates of Milan and Genoa: B. it hath for bounds vpon the East the riuier of Po, vpon the South the mountaines of Genoa, vpon the West the Alps towards Gaul, and vpon the North the riuier of Doria: some giue it for limits toward the East the riuier of Cessia, vpon the West the mountaines of Tende and Corre, on the South the Marquisat of Montferrat, and towards the North the French Alps. The chiefe towne of Piedmont is Turin, the other townes are Vercel, Ast, Iuree, Oste, Mondeui, Fossan, Saluzze, and Carmagnole; whereof Ast, and Iuree were Colonies of the Romans as well as Turin. Ast & Vercel are of great circuit, & reasonably well built, especially Ast, which may be compared to the most stately townes of Lumbardie for the greatness of her Pallaces. Vercel a most auncient towne is the chiefe of the Lybick people, which are betwixt the riuers of Cessia and Doria: there it was whereas *Leo* the ninth did celebrat a generall Councell against *Berengarius*. Iuree (which writers at this day call Lamporeggio, and which the Ancients haue named Eporedia) is the chiefe towne of the Salassians, at this day called Canauois: it is at the entrie of the valley of Ost, vpon the riuier of Doria, in so commodious a situation, as *Berengarius*, and after him *Arduin*, who were Marquises, had the courage to aspire to make themselves kings of Italie. Oste (built by *Augustus*) is at the mouth of the Alps which were called Greeke, and Penine, and at this day the great and lesser Mont Saint Bernard: by the greater, they passe into the countie of Valais, and by the lesser into Tarantaise: this towne is the chiefe of a valley which hath taken her name of it. There are at this day many goodly antiquities to be seene, and amongst others a very faire Bowe.

IIII.

Turin is at this day very famous for the residence of the Dukes of Sauoy, & for the vniuersitie which is there: it was in former times bigger than it is now, but the French holding it, cut off some part, that they might make it more strong: it is situated nere vnto the riuier of Po, in a verie important place for Italie; by reason whereof the Romans brought a Colonie thither, and *Augustus* did honour it with the Gate, which they call at this day, the Gate of the Pallace: and the Lombards did establish the seat of one of their foure dukes there. The duke of Sauoy hath caused a park to be made there, the which is five or six miles in circuit, and it is in one of the most pleasing situations in Europe. This park is enuironed by the riuers of Po, Doria, and Sture: it is full of woods, little lakes, fountains, and all sorts of game, which the duke hath drawne thither: and round about Turin, there are so many villages and houses of pleasure, as they seeme to be another Turin. Mondeui (which some thinke was built by the Emperor *Conrad*) is seated vpon a little hill, with great suburbs round about it: but the greatest are at the foot of the said hill vpon the riuier of Elle, the which (two miles off) falls into that of Tanare: it is better peopled than any other towne of Piedmont. Among the rest of the suburbs, there is that of Vig, from whence a new deuotion which they haue to our Lady hath taken the name, to the which the duke of Sauoy hath built a Church, and in it a Chappell, whereas he hath ordained that the dukes of Sauoy shall be interred. Fossan is seated vpon a little hill vpon the riuier of Sture, in the middelt of a field: among the other buildings there is a castle reasonably pleasant.

V.

The towne of Saluzze stands nere vnto the Alps, and is the chiefe of the Marquisat, which is called by the same name, whereas the riuier of Po hath her spring: this towne is reasonably big, it hath a great castle, where there are places to lodge in Winter, and others to remaine in Summer. The most important places of this Marquisat, are Dro-

A nere, and Carmagnole. There is also Raul, and Doglian, by the which most of the trafficke doth passe which is made betwixt Piedmont and the riuier of Genoa: then Verzol, Mantre, and Pagny, with the rich Abbey of Staffarde. This Marquisat, with some lands of Prouence, which lie on that side of the Alpes, were vnted vnto Piedmont in the year of our Redemption 1600, and the duke of Sauoy gaue in exchange to the French king, to whom it did belong, the countie of Breffe, with other lands thereabouts, the which is of greater extent than the Marquisat of Saluzzes.

B. But in Piedmont, besides the Cities or Episcopall townes, there are about two hundred and fiftie places walled, whereof there are many which yeeld nothing to many townes which are held good, as Biele, Quiers, Cune, Sufe, Auiglane, Riuele, Pinarol, Moncalier, Carignan, Raconis, Queyras, Bené, Villefranche, Vigon, Panchalier, Bûfque, Bargé, Lauenne, Sauillan, and Cheue. Biele, and Pinarol, are in a manner after the same forme, diuided into hill and plaine: But the towne of Biele hath a great circuit, and faire buildings, among the which they doe much esteeme the Conuents of Saint Ierome, S. Dominic, and Saint Sebastian. At Pinarol there is a castle. Quiers was honoured by *Frederic Barbarouffe* with the title of Great Towne: and so it is in deed, for the goodly Churches, faire Conuents, and Houses, and for many noble Families, and rich Merchants which remaine there. Cuni is situated betwixt the riuers of Sture and Gessé. Sufe was in former times a big towne, and of great importance; but since that it was C. sick and burnt by the Emperour *Frederic Barbarouffe*, it could neuer come to that greatness: yet it stands in a verie important situation, for that there are two waies which part, and go by the Alpes, the one tends by Effilles to Briançon, and the other by Mont Senis to Lyon. Auiglane is a good towne, rich, and of fr. sick; it hath a castle seated high vpon a little mountain, where there is a spring of running water. Riuele vaunts of the birth of the duke of Sauoy that now liues, who makes a stately building there. Moncalier is a reasonable big towne; and Carignan is famous for the castle, and for the long siege which they did once endure: There are many noble families in it, who, among other things, haue founded a Monasterie of Nuns, the which must be all gentlewomen. Queyras is pleasing for the streets, which are both freight and large: and Bené is strong D. of situation. They doe esteeme Raconis for the Pallace, and the Fissipondes: and Bûfque, for the title of one of the seven Marquisats of the descendants of Aleran. Sauillan is famous for the beautie of the Market-place, and of the Monasterie of Saint Benet, but the situation is such, as the Emperour *Charles* the first, passing that way in his voyage to Prouence, said, That he had neuer seene any countie more fit to entertaine an armie: And duke *Philibert Emanuel* found this place so much to his liking, as he had a desire to settle his aboad there, and to make Sauillan the head towne of the prouince.

Cheue is the chiefe towne of a goodly Marquisat, which contains six and twentie places: It embraceth (among other things) the riuier of Tanare, vpon the which stands the said towne of Cheue, and Binalque, Garesse, and Ormece, thence miles from the which the said riuier springs out of a great fountain. They passe out of the estate of Cheue into that of Mare, and Oncille. After which they find Mulazan, a place of passage, and hauing past the Pex, they come into Quisole, a countie fit for a Summers dwelling; then the Trinitie, and Montee; then Grane, the chiefe of a valley; and after that Chental, sometimes fortified by the Marshall of Bellegarde. Polenze, where stood the auncient Polence, Genole, Carai, and betwixt Maire and Verzite, Caualemor, Calgrasso, Cauallion, Castagnol, and Ruffie: then betwixt the riuers of Gilbe and Po, Morete, a fee of importance, Scarnafis, Lignaques, Irafque, Villar, betwixt Po and Pele, Tarday, Staffarde, Cauer, Garfillane, Villar de Bobbi. A little on the side stands Lucerne, the chiefe towne of a countie, and of a great valley, which contains about twentie thousand soules, beyond the which is Perouse, with her valley. After which, betwixt the riuers of Pele and Quisole, stand Scalengue, Cercenaf, Viré, Piobes, and Vinoua, with a verie stately Pallace belonging to the lords of Rouere, Lombriase, Cumiane, Pionas, Obazan: and betwixt the riuers of Sangon and Dore, Arpignan, Colegne, and Monestherol. Then come they to the valley of Stoure, and then to Lanz, with her

VI.

VII.

little valley, and lower is the pleasant countie of Chirré. Afterwards they enter into the A valley of Pont, in the which stand Cornié, and Valpergue. Somewhat lower, they discover the rich Abbey of Saint Benigne. There are many castles betwixt Orque, and Quiselle; and in the end is the strong place of Chiua: then (having past the river of Dore) they come to Baucie, Masin Countie, Cilian, Crechentin a verie pleasant castle, Stropian, Saint German, Sancier, famous for the vnsfortunat siege of the duke of Alba; and a little above it Candell, a place containing about seven hundred families: Andarne, of about one thousand three hundred holdreds; and so is Dioglie: Mos is of seven hundred fiers; and Gattinare, a towne built by the Lords of the house of Arbore, who afterwards tooke the surname, and haue bene maisters thereof for some ages. During the B warres which were betwixt the Emperour Frederic, and the Popes, these Lords retired themselves from the subiection of the Empire, and liued after that manner, till (feeling the ambition and power of the dukes of Milan) they cast themselves into the armes of C Amé the first, duke of Sauoy. Beyond the river of Po, they discover Bra, in the which are about seven hundred Families, Caramagne, Somerieu, Gerisoles, famous for the defeat of the Marquis of Guast by the duke of Anguien. Then may you see Villastellon, Poerin, Villeneuse, a strong place, Canuelle, and Cortemille, diuided into two parts by the river of Bormie. After which there are to be seene an infinit number of castles belonging to the countie of Ast; and about it Coconas a countie, which hath of late yeres been made subiect to the house of Sauoy, by the meanes of duke Charles.

VIII.

The countie of Nizze is two and twentie leagues long, and eleuen broad, betwixt the river of Var (beyond the which notwithstanding, there are some places belonging to this countie) Dauphiné, Piedmont, and the river of Genoa. This countie is diuided into foure Vicarships or Vicegerents, whereof the chiefe townes are Nizze, Poget, Barcelonette, and Sospelle, to the which we may add Saint Stephens with her valley, although it beare not the name of Vicegerent, yet it is gouerned apart. And in these Vicegerencies, they doe reckon about thirtie walled townes, besides many others which are not. The most famous of these places is Villefranche, for the commoditie of the Port, called by the Ancients, Port Hercules Monaca. Next is Eise, and farther off, Zobia, the place wheras the Emperour Pertinax was borne, and where are yet to be seene the Trophies of the Emperour Augustus. The other places most remarkable of this countie, are Contes, Peille, Saourge, which hath a strong castle, Brique, which contains about foure or five hundred Families, Lantusque, a reasonable good place, and the chiefe of a valley, as S. Dalmace is of the plaine; Boglie, the chiefe towne of a rich Countie: Poget confines with Prouence: Barcelonette the countie of Cardinall Hugues, the chiefe of a valley, and a place of good traffike: Sospelle is a goodly place, well built, where, among other things, there is a fontaine of delicate water, which they haue brought from the neighbour mountaines. But to speake something in particular of Nizze, it is a faire towne, strong, and well peopled; the houses are five and six stories high, and the streets verie straight, especially that which goes from the foot of the mountaine, vnto the Port of S. E Aloy. The countie of Tende ioynes to that of Nizze, and this countie extends to the confines of Cune. They may passe foure wayes out of Prouence into the Countie of Nizze, by the mountaine of Conue which leads to Tende, by that of Fencitre to Saint Martin, by that of Arnouue vpon Vaudere, and by Argentiare, which goes to Barcelonette.

¶ The Qualitie.

IX.

Sauoy hath great store of corne in the valles, and much pasture in the mountaines: and in some places it beares verie good wine, as at Montmelian, and Morienne. There are also some lakes that abound with fish: but the most famous are they of Nicé, Bourget, F and Geneva. It contains many great mountaines, so as he that will trauell through this countie, shall daily discover new things, for that sometimes he shall see the passages open, and grow large, and sometime the mountaines grow narrow, sometimes they are high, sometimes low, sometimes they aduance themselves, and then they retire againe, sometimes

A sometimes they lead thee into a plaine, and by and by they shut thee vp into a valley: It hath nothing in it that is particular or remarkable. The aire is reasonable wholesome: but there are certaine waters which make their throats to swell that drinke of them: this swelling is called by them of the countie, Goytre, that is to say, a great throat.

As for Piedmont, it is watered by the rivers of Po, Tanare, Stouré, Dore, and about 28 other rivers great & small, & with diuers channels, whereof there are 8 in the territorie of Cune. They hold that there is no part of Italie more pleasing, more abounding in corne, wine, fruits, venison, cattel, cheefe, chefnuts, hempe, flax, & minerals. The countie about Ast is watered by riuers, shadowed by woods, raised by pleasing hills: it hath goodly B plaines, & brings forth store of excellent fruits, especially melons, which are the best that can be eaten. At Vercel, they eat the whitest bread, and the fattest capons that can be seene. Plinie makes mention of some mines of gold in the countie about Vercel, whereof there are some marks yet to be seene towards Ponderan. Neere to Lamporggio is great store of hempe. The vallie of Ost is of two daies iourney, on the left hand it is full of corne, and on the right planted with excellent vines, whereof the best are those of Calogne. A quarter of a mile from Turin on the banks of Po, is a mountain which doth rise & fall aduante and retire in diuers places softly, as it hath water in all places: it beares hay, fruits of all sorts, and very good wine. The territorie about Mondeui is of a great circuit: there grows excellent wine on the side of the hill, great store of graine in the plaine, and an infinit number of chefnuts on the mountaine.

X.

They haue discovered goodly quarries of marble, & among others one of white marble, with little veins which are like to metall. The countie about Fossan abounds in wheat, whereof the haruest doth yerely amount to about 50000 charges or horseload, and for that it is overflowed by the means of great waters, it abounds in good pastures, and so by consequence in flesh. The marquisat of Salusses hath a verie temperat aire, by reason whereof, they haue in their orchards all kinds of fruits. Doglian and Pagny beare good wines. About Pignerol there are such goodly vines, as who soeuer sees them, may thinke that they are able to furnish others with wine. Neere vnto Cune there are so many channels of water, as the territorie is made exceeding fertile, although it be light, and stony by D nature: it abounds in chefnut trees, among which they sow wheat, so as the inhabitants gather from one place two nourishments for life: neither doth this countie want vines or meadows. The countie about Suise yeelds store of wine, Auzilane hath a soile distinguished into little hills, valleys, plaines, & into two lakes. Riueli may vnto haue a good aire, & a pleasant soile. Montcalier is famous for the excellencie of her wines, and so is Reuallig which is neere vnto it, and the places of Gaz, Saint Mor, and Saint Rafael. Bené enioeth a very wholesome and temperat aire. The soiles of Vigon, Pancalier and Villefranche are exceeding fat. The Marquisat of Cheue abounds in chefnuts and cattel, and in some places they make much wine, especially at Prier, where they are very good. The valles of Marre, and Oneille, are so well manured as they seeme gardens, and there is such E store of fruit, & especially so good oyle, as the bountie cannot be spoken, and the quantitie is so great as Piedmont hath not any need of oyle from strangers. They haue excellent wines at Gatanare.

In regard of the countie of Nizze, although the countie be for the most part rough and full of mountains, yet it is so well manured, as they haue not any need of their neighbours, except Nizze which wants wheat: there run through the mountains of this countie about twelve riuers, which abound with trouts. The countie neere vnto Contes yeelds great store of oyle, and abundance of chefnuts: and that about Peille abounds in wine, corne, and oyle, the which is much esteemed for the bountie. Saourge, hath the F like qualities. Brique yeelds abundance of white wine, corne, and excellent honic: there they find also great store of partridges, and pheasants: they do also gather much namurpentine, agarie, and excellent simples: there runs a riuier through that valley called Laurence, which comes out of a fontaine, the which in a short space grows great, then diminisheth, and in the end is quite lost. The soile about Boglie yeelds much corne and pulles, but it wants wine and oyle; yet about Sospelle there is wine, corne, olives, cattell, and

and chestnuts. But Nizze which abounds in other things, hath neither come nor flesh for halfe the yeare; by reason whereof they prouide wheat from Prouence, and flesh from Piedmont.

¶ The Manners.

XI.

Although it seemes that the Sauoyards should fauour of the manners of them of Dauphine, or of the Piedmontois their neighbours, and that the inhabitants of Piedmont should be reserved for a generall description of the manners of Italie, yet it shall not be vnfit to speake something of the one and the other. The Sauoyards are naturally so simple and dull, that although they loose it by their conuerſation with other Nations, yet they retaine something in their language and outward shew, and there is such difference betwixt the Dauphinois and the Sauoyards, as is easie to distinguish them at the first sight. Most of the common people beleue that the Duke of Sauoy is the first prince of the world, and there are not any people so grosse and rude in all things; and their simplicitie was very great before the last wars: but without doubt the gentlemen are of a pleasing conuerſation, as ciuile as their neighbours, and affecting all vertue and good exercise; so as there may be seene daily in Chambery as much good companie, and as well appointed, as in many of the best townes in France. The people are not warlike, and few of another nation are able to make a great number of them flee. As for the gentlemen, they want no courage, but many of them want dexterity to fight on horsebacke.

The Piedmontois are good ſouldiers, and apt to learning, open, round, and free, ciuile enough, and courteous to strangers. They of Vercel make profession of nobilitie and great ſie, and desire to be esteemed of their neighbours. The inhabitants of Turin haue few words, they are high minded, foden, and make profession of nobilitie: there raignes yet amongst them the factions of the Guelles and Gibellins, which are extinct in all the rest of the prouince. They of Biele are subtle headed, aduise, and careful in their affaires, neither will they be easily deceived in their contracts. The inhabitants of Quier and Cune are very industrious and valiant, whereof they haue made prooue in three great sieges. Bené hath inhabitants fit for armes and learning. Barge is famous for the great number of milles and shops whereas they make great store of armes, the which the inhabitants can vse vpon any occasion. The people of Nizze are cunning, ciuile, and neat, and fit as well for trafficke as armes. Finally, touching the generall, there are many good ſouldiers among the people, and few which giue themselves to mechanicke arts, the which they little esteeme, contenting themselves with food and clothing, and imitating therein the gentlemen, vsing no trade of merchandise, notwithstanding the commoditie which the riuer of Po doth offer them, to trafficke with them of the duchie of Milan, and with the Venetians: but they do not much regard it, suffering strangers to get great wealth by linnen cloth, hempe, wooll, and silke; so as we may say, that whatsoever the merchants gaine, they receiue it in gift from the Piedmontois, who might get it if they would; but they haue no other thing in recommendation, but to liue well, and make good cheere: yea the handicrafts men are accustomed to fare well, so as they vse to consume all they get in good cheere. The duke is much discontented to see them so carelesse, and offers them meanes to trade in merchandise, and to gaine, causing channells to be made, and vsing all art to quicken them. The Piedmontois want industrie, but they recompence this defect by their obedience to their prince, and their manner of liuing simple, and without reproach: for they are milde & courteous, partly by a natural instinct, and partly also for feare of iustice, so as they liue louingly together, and there are few murders committed.

¶ The Riches.

XII. Sauoy makes little money of any thing they send to forraigne countries: but Piedmont hath many commodities, wherewith it doth furnish others; so as they may thereby reape a great yearly reuenue: it did well appeare how much the countrie did abound in all things, during the wars betwixt France and Spaine; for that the armies continued there

A there for the space of three and twentie yeares, with great garrisons of either side, and yet they neuer had any want of victuals: and the riches of Piedmont is well knowne, in that it did contribute to the duke of Sauoy during the last warres of France (in the heat whereof Monsieur Leslequiers drew the warre into Piedmont) eleven millions of crownes extraordinarie, in few yeares, besides the lodging of ſouldiers. They send forth come, cattell, much hempe, store of rice, cheefe, wine, paper, tustian, and raw ſilke. It contains about fiftie Earledomes, and fiftene Marquisats, with a great number of other Lordships which doe not yeeld to the best, besides twentie rich Abbeyes, with many good Benefices. There is not any exceedingly rich, for that the wealth is distributed in such sort, as euery man in a manner hath a share: yet there are gentlemen of foure, six, eight, twelue, and fiftene thousand crownes a yeare rent. And that which shews their wealth is, that the countrie is generally so inhabited, as a Knight of Piedmont being asked by a Venetian gentleman, what Piedmont was, he answered fitly, That it was a Towne which had three hundred miles in circuit. There is in the valley of Ost, mynes of gold and siluer. They of Salusses make trafficke of yron and cattell with them of Prouence, and there are verie rich Merchants in this Marquisat. They doe also carrie cloth from Pignerol, which is verie good. They of Barge and Iauenne make great trafficke of Armes which they make: and they of Iauenne doe also make much money of their hides and linnen cloth. At Mos they also make much cloth which they transport into forraigne Countries. The Countie of Nizze sends forth oyle, wine, fruits of all sorts, pulses, linnen cloth, store of thred which they sell to the Cattelans, paper, course cloth of many kinds, salt-fish, some little honie which is excellent, Firre Trees for the Masts of Ships and Gallies, the which they conduct by the valley vnto the Sea, and they are sometimes sold to the Geneuois for one hundred crownes a peece. And to be short, this Countie makes such vse of trafficke, as betwixt Genoa, and Marseille, there is not any towne that trades more, nor that hath more money; and it is as it were the Store-houſe of all the woollen cloth which comes from Languedoc, and of the silke which they bring from Genoa. But to speake truth, the countrie is naturally poore, and sometimes they find not all things necessarie for money: so as when the duke of Sauoy's Court continues there but two moneths, they are driven to great want; but for that the men of that Countie haue aduise spirits, they get great wealth by trafficke. Some haue calculated the reuenues of the Duke of Sauoy, the which they account after this manner.

The custome of salt, fiftie thousand crownes yearly.

The toll of Suse, twentie foure thousand crownes by the yeare.

The forraigne Imposition, eightene thousand crownes yearly.

The other customes comprehending the toll of Villefranche, fixe and twentie thousand crownes by the yeare.

The auncient Ordinarie, with the Bayliwicke, seuentie thousand crownes yearly.

The Ordinarie taxes in Piedmont, with the change of salt beyond the Mountaines, reduced to an ordinarie and perpetuall toll, two hundred sixtie three thousand crownes by the yeare.

Confiscations of goods, condemnations, increase of tolls, composition of Mortuaries, which are men that cannot dispose of their estates, vntill they compund with the Prince; the tribute of Iewes and such like, fiftie thousand crownes. So as they haue made the Duke of Sauoy's reuenues to be but fixe hundred thousand crownes a yeare. But it appeares plainly by the eleven millions of extraordinarie, which he hath drawne in few yeares out of his Countrie of Piedmont, and by the summes which he drawes out of Sauoy, that his reuenue is about a million of crownes a yeare, and that he is a prince which will not want money, when he shall desire to haue a good summe from his subjects, and yet they shall not be overcharged.

Ll ij

¶ The

XIII.

¶ The Forces.

XIII. There are in Sauoy some places of strength, whereof the chiefe is Montmelian, whose castle hath been alwaies held impregnable, vntill that of late yeares *Henrie* the Great, the French king, tooke it. It was somewhat commanded, so as they might easily discover them that were within the place: And the Gouernour was much amazed, hearing himselfe to be saluted early in the morning with the cannon, from that place whither they had carried it with great diligence. Some say that the duke of Sauoy hath caused that place of command to be cut away, and that this castle is not now subiect to any command. It is wonderfull strong, and of importance, being neere the Frontier. There is also the places of Conflans, Charbonnières, and the Annonciado, neere vnto Romilly: but all these forts are of small import. That of Saint Katherine was good, but it was ruined in the yeare of our Lord 1600.

As for Piedmont, there is a Cittadell which hath five Bastions, it is so faire and great as you shall hardly find any one to equall it. And omitting the great number of instruments of warre that are in it, it shall be fit to speake something of an admirable well or pit which is in the middle of it, whereas five hundred horses, yea a thousand or more may go and drinke together, without any hinderance one vnto another, either in going downe or coming vp. The duke doth commonly entertaine for the guard of this Cittadell three hundred souldiers, or more, well payed. Besides this garrison, he hath fiftie souldiers at Canas, one hundred at Cune, at Villefranche fortie, and in many other places which are not immediatly frontier townes, as at Quiers, Foslan, Bentes, Villefranche of Piedmont, and at Suerne in the valley of Angrogne. He also entertaines some souldiers at Cahors and Sufe, for that the power of his neighbours requires it. Iures or Lamporegio hath a castle flanked with foure good Towers, and is let in one of the best situations that can be desired. The valley of Ost is so strong, by reason of the narrow entrees and the vnease passages, and for the multitude of people that inhabit there, as what stranger foeuer hath made himselfe master of the neighbour countrie, durst neuer attempt it. Salusse hath a good Castle; but Carmagnole is in a manner impregnable, where there is great store of cannon, munition, and victuals. Pignerol hath a castle of importance, which doth command all the neighbour vallis. Auiglane hath a castle which in former times, vnder Duke *Charles*, endured a long batterie. Briquiras stands in one of the best situations that can be seene, but it is not fortified, as it were fit. Centalis reasonably well fortified: and Cinas is a place which they hold among the best. There are garrisons also at Baid and at Monquier, two places which are reasonably strong and good.

As for the Countie of Nizze, the roughnesse of the Countie is the cause that there are many places exceeding strong, and many passages so narrow as ten men may make head againt ten thousand, as is that which they call the Pace of the Virgin. They haue added to this naturall strength, that of certaine Castles, which may be held impregnable, by reason of the places where they stand, among the which is that of Saourge. Poget, which is vpon the frontier of Prouence, is a reasonable good place, whereas the Duke of Sauoy entertaines a Garrison. Villefranche stands below, and is not verie bigge; but the Fort may be held impregnable, for that it is cut out of the rocke, and all that is required in fortification hath bene verie curiously obserued; there are commonly one hundred souldiers at the least in pay, which be strangers. As for the Towne of Nizze, we may say that it is no Fort, but an assemblie of Forts. First the Towne is inclosed with a good and strong wall, flanked with good Bastions. There is a Mountaine in forme of a Cavalier, the which is about the third part of a mile in circuit, and is verie steepe of euery side. In old time the noblest part of the Towne was there, with the Cathedrall Church, the Bishops Palace, a Monasterie of Virgins, and a little Fort, which they call at this day the Donjon. They say that *Charles* of Bourbon passing out of Italie into Spaine, and hauing well obserued this place,

A vied these words to them that were about him, Behold a situation, whereof they know not the importance. The Patron of the galley in which he was, dwelling at Nizze, obserued his words, and informed duke *Charles*, who hauing more carefully considered of the situation, ordained, that it should be fortified, and made it so defensible in few yerres as it endured the assaults of *Barbarousse*, in the yeare 1543, who presented himselfe before it with neere two hundred saile, and battered it furiously. If this fort could not then be taken, being vnfinished, what shall it be at this present being so fortified, that hauing well ballanced the naturall situation, and that which hath bene added by art, together with the countrie wherein it is situated, betwixt Italie and France, one hundred and twentie miles from Genoa, and one hundred and thirtie from Marseille; they may rightly say, that it is rather the first, than the second place of Italie, and as it were her bulwarke. Among other things, there is a Well, which *Muse* of Lustinopolis, who remained sometime at Nizze, had bene accustomed to number among the miracles of the world; the which they made after this manner: They imagining that there would want nothing for a sort of so great importance, but a spring which might neuer faile, a Germane Engineer promised duke *Charles* to find one; who hauing scene water to come forth in many places at the foot of the mountain, and especially a fountain which ran down into the sea, he thought that in digging deepe into the rocke, he might come vnto these springs: and setting himselfe to worke with this imagination, he laboured for certaine moneths, but being come low enough, and finding no water, he fled to Venice, despairing of his enterprise: the which the duke *Charles* vnderstanding, he called him backe to Nizze, and encouraged him to continue his desseigne, the which was accomplished with a happie successe.

On the highest part of the fort stands the dungeon, diuided from the rest by a wall; and throughout all the place there are little risings which may be to fortified, as the whole place may be defended by degrees. To the fortification of duke *Charles*, duke *Philbert Emanuel* added that which they call the Cittadell, with the which he embraced the place, whereas the Turkes being camped, had planted their batterie. The duke of Sauoy doth commonly entertaine in this place a garrison of foure hundred souldiers, and a sufficient number of cannoniers of great experience.

Betwixt Nizze and Villefranche is the fort of S. Alban, the which is in a manner equally distant from the one and the other of these two townes. And for that places serue for no purpose in a countrie, if they be not furnished with good men, the duke of Sauoy doth commonly entertaine good garrisons of souldiers in Sauoy and Piedmont, and he hath the inhabitants of Piedmont, which are for the most giuen to armes.

It shall be conuenient to speake something touching that which he may feare, and whereon he may be assured. First according to the outward apparence, he hath no cause of feare towards Milan, by reason of the strict alliance which is betwixt him and the king of Spaine. And notwithstanding that this king doth see plainly that his highnesse doth not affect him so well as he hath done, for some reasons that are better concealed than spoken, and that this coldnesse hath bene the cause why he hath put the Spanish garrisons out of his forts, and will not (as they say) receiue any more pension from Spaine; yet we must not perswade our selues that his brother in law will breake quite with him, especially for that one of the apparant reasons of this change is, for that they do not performe the promise which was made vnto him marrying the *Infanta* of Spaine, which was, to deliuer in to his hands the duchie of Milan: and that which will alwaies keepe backe the king of Spaine, will be the consideration of the passage for his souldiers, in case that wars should be renewed againe with the vniued provinces of the Low Countries; for that if he were in bad termes with the Duke, it were impossible for him to find a passage. He is tied in friendship to the Princes of Germanie, for that he holds it would be alwaies profitable vnto him. But he is especially in good termes with the Princes of Saxony, for that he is descended from their house. He hath also good intelligence with the Suisses, and especially with the Catholicke Cantons, by reason of their trafficke of come which he doth allow them, and is necessarie for them. This good intelligence with the Suisses will alwaies be

be a great support vnto the duke, as we may judge by things past: for whiles that *Charles* A his grandfather had alliance with the Suiffes, he liued peaceably in his Estate; but when as he had broken with them, not paying them their promised pensions, and so by consequence caring little for their friendship, at the coming of king *Francis* he suddenly lost his Estate of Sauoy, the which was not only not defended by them, but was for the most part taken by them, saying, That they would pay themselves for their old debts.

He might feare the allies of them of Geneua, whose open and sworn enemy he is: but they will not put themselves to field so lightly against this duke, as we may see by the attempts which he hath made against Geneua: and as for this towne, it is too weake to make any enterprise, and it will be sufficient, if it shall be able to keepe and defend it selfe from being taken.

As for the duke of Mantoua, the marriage of the children of these two dukes, will keepe them hereafter (as we may judge) in good termes, and league, notwithstanding the ancient quarrell for the Marquisat of Monterrat which hath ceased by this marriage: but the late death of the young prince of Montoua, hath reuiued this quarrell, whereupon both these dukes are fallen to armes, he of Sauoy hauing sealed vpon some places in the Marquisat.

As for the French king, since the exchange of the Marquisat of Salusses with Bresse, and other lands adjoining, they speake of nothing but friendship betwixt the king and his highnesse, and especially since the duke was distast of the Spaniards: yea they expect daily a subiect of stricter friendship betwixt these two princes.

¶ The pretensions of the duke of Sauoy.

XV. For that it may be sometimes profitable to vnderstand the rights which the duke of Sauoy hath to other Estates, I haue thought it fit to set them down in few words.

First he hath pretensions to Geneua by many good reasons, since that the Geneuois retired themselves from the obedience of this duke, in the year 1535, as euery man knoweth.

The first reason is, that they find declarations of Emperours, wherein it is specified, D That although the Bishops of Geneua were lords spirituall and temporall, and termed themselves princes of the Empire, yet they should acknowledge the duke of Sauoy & his successors, for Superiour, and swear fealty vnto them; as they find in acts made by the said Bishops vnto the year 1530, at what time they did coine money at Geneua, with the names and formes of the dukes of Sauoy.

Moreover they did alwaies obserue vntill that time, that the dukes of Sauoy might pardon any crime whatsoever at their pleasures: and neither the Bishop nor communalitie might in cases which came to their knowledge pronounce sentence, and execute it, before they had first acquainted the dukes magistrates therewith, to the end they might see if it were iust, and needfull to be published, or else pardon him that was accused of any E crime.

They of Geneua had in the year 1519 made a league with them of Fribourg, and the duke contradicting it, they had arbitrarie Iudges, who gaue sentence in his fauour; by the which it was said that the league was void without his consent: and all the other Cantons made their declarations against Fribourg, who would haue maintained this league, the which was dissolved by this means.

But to omit many others, it shall suffice for the clearing of this title, to say that duke *Charles*, grandfather to this man, went often to Geneua with the lady *Beatrice* his wife, at which time they presented the keyes of the towne vnto him, and made many other demonstrations vnto him which are accustomed to be done to foweraigne princes.

He pretends the Marquisat of Monterrat for three reasons: the first for that it was promised in dowrie to a duke of Sauoy, in case that the masculine line of the *Palologues* (whose house is extinct) should faile: the second, for that they promised him for this dowrie one hundred thousand crownes, the which were neuer payed, and the condition

dition was, That in case that it were not payed by a time prefixt, they should giue him Monterrat: the third, for that the Marquis of Monterrat being in warre with the duke of Milan (who rooke his Marquisat) the duke of Sauoy at that time with an armie which he led and maintained at his owne charge, restored him to his estate, by reason whereof the Marquis, in acknowledgement of so great a fauour, made himselfe his perpetual feudatory. But this Proceffe being handled before the Emperour *Charles* the first, he broke the condition, which was, That the issue male of the house of *Palologues* failing, the Marquisat should come vnto the house of Sauoy; neither had he any regard vnto the other two causes of pretention, for that the duchesse of Montoua was daughter vnto the said Marquis, saying, That seeing she was his daughter, she should also be his heire.

He hath also a pretention to Achaia, for that *Philip* of Sauoy, sonne to *Thomas* the first, married a daughter to the Prince of Achaia, called *Iambe*; and by the means of this marriage, he made warre against the Despot of Greece and his subiects, who being vanquished, left him absolute Maister of his Countrie: He had one sonne called *Iambe*, who was Prince of Achaia, and he had *Amedee* for his sonne, who succeeded in the third degree, and dying without issue male, had for successeur *Lewis* his brother, who had no son: And a Queene of Sicile, pretending that the fee was fallen vnto her, yielded the rights to the great Maister of Rhodes, after which the Turke seized thereon.

¶ The Gouvernement.

There is a Gouverneur in Sauoy, who makes his ordinarie residence at Chambery. XVI. The Senat of Sauoy also remains there, which serues for the whole countrie on the side of the mountaines, with administration of ciuile and criminal matters, and affaires of State, which concern Sauoy. Yet they do not trouble themselves much with this last point, for that the duke of Sauoy will manage them for the most part himselfe: by reason whereof the Senators take knowledge of no more than shall please the duke.

There is also in Piedmont another Senat, like vnto that of Sauoy, the which doth iudge of all ciuile and criminall causes, and is continually much busied, for that euerie place or place of that estate hath a Iudge, who is appointed by the Duke, or by the Feudatarie of the place: and the first knowledge of euerie cause goes vnto this Iudge, the second to the Senat, and the third to the duke, who refers it afterwards to his Councell of State.

The head and president of this Senat, and of that of Sauoy is the high Chancellour, who serues for both Prouinces, and vpon him doth the greatest part of the gouernement depend: yea if he were more active he might be tearmed a second duke. But for that he cannot embrace so many busineses, the duke employes many others, that is to say, Counsellors, Maisters of requests, and Martiall men.

¶ The Dukes of Sauoy.

They are descended from the house of Saxonie, and especially from the stemme of the Emperor *Otho* the second: and this race continued vnder the title of Earles, neere thousand years, vntill that *Amé* was created duke by the Emperour *Sigismund*, at the Councell of Constance. But to the end that we may take this House from the first beginning, you must vnderstand, that when as *Raoul*, and *Boson*, reigned in Bourgondie, and the third held the Empire, *Berold* or *Beroul* issued from the house of Saxonie, and by consequence a neerer kinsman to the Emperour, being without land, or at the least having not so much as he desired, was inuested by the Emperour in the lands of *Sauoy* and the valleis and parts of Piedmont: And *Boson* and *Raoul*, kings of Bourgondie, consented to this imperiall donation; so as it was not by the sword that *Berold* made himselfe earle of Sauoy, as some would affirme.

This *Berold* had for his successeur *Humbert*, surnamed White Hands, who held the countie of Sauoy in the years of Christ 1000, and was the first earle of Maurienne. He married

married *Adheleide* the onely daughter of the Marquis of Sufe, whereby this Marquisat A came vnto the house of Sauoy.

Of this *Humbert* came *Amé*, the first of that name, earle of Maurienne, who was also the first earle of Sauoy, yet others attribute this to *Amé* the second. He married *Joane* of Bourgonie, by whom he had two sonnes, that is to say, *Humbert* and *Amé*. In his time *Berengier*, Archdeacon of Angiers, spred his opinion.

Humbert the second was successour to *Amé* the first. He married *Laurence*, daughter to the earle of Venice, and he conquered the countrie of Tarantaise, then he went the voyage of the Holie Land with the other Christian Princes who crost themselves for this conquest. *Adheleide*, daughter to this earle, was married to *Lewis* the Groffe, king of B France, of which marriage came *Lewis* the Young. And at this time began the order of the Carthusian Monkes.

Amé the second succeeded *Humbert* the second, who hauing assisted the Emperour *Henrie* the fourth, when as he went to receiue the Crowne at Rome, was in recompence thereof inuessed in the countrie of Sauoy, and his countrie made a fee of the Empire. *Amé* had war against the earle of Geneva, for that he had promised to marrie his daughter, and did not performe it, but tooke to wife *Guigonne*, daughter to the earle of Albon. *Amé* went also to the Holie Land, and died in the realme of Cypres, in the yeare of our Lord God 1154, in the time of the Emperour *Fredericke Barbarosse*, and of *Lewis* the Young, king of France. C

Humbert, the third of that name, his sonne, and second earle of Sauoy, succeeded him: he married *Mahaut*, daughter to *Tierry* earle of Flanders; and afterwards *Anne*, daughter to a German earle; and to his third wife he tooke *Parnelle*, daughter to the earle of Bourgonie, and widow to the duke of Austria; by whom he had one sonne called *Thomas*. Then he made the voyage to Ierusalem, with *Philip Augustus* king of France, in the yere of our Redemption 1188.

Thomas remained verie young, and was brought vp by the earle of Bourgonie, his vncle by the mother-side: He married *Beatrice*, daughter to *Guy* earle of Geneva, in despite of her father, and forced him in the end to take the oath of fealtie, and to hold his earldome of Geneva in homage of the house of Sauoy. This Earle *Thomas* made the voyage against the Albigeois, who had withdrawn themselves from the obedience of the Church of Rome. Of this Earle *Thomas* came many children, whose names I will set downe, to giue knowledge of the Genealogies.

First he had of the said *Beatrice*, *Amé* the third of that name, who first of all married the daughter of the Dauphine of Viennois; but she dying without children, he tooke to wife *Cecile*, daughter to *Raymond* earle of Saint Gilles. The second sonne of the said *Thomas* was *Humbert*, who died in the warre which the great maister of Prusse had against the Infidells in the yeare of our Lord 1235. *Thomas* was the third sonne of earle *Thomas*, who married *Joane* Countesse of Flanders, daughter to *Baldwin* Emperour of Constantinople, as the Annales of Sauoy say: But the Cronicles of Flanders and France speake little of this *Thomas*, nor of his marriage with the daughter of Flanders: but after the death of *Ferrand* of Portugal, and of this *Thomas* there came no issue by his first wife. But hauing taken to his second wife a Ladie of the house of *Fiesco* of Genoa, he had *Amé* who was afterwards earle of Sauoy. *William* of Sauoy, was the fourth sonne of *Thomas* Earle of Sauoy; he became a Churchman, and followed Pope *Innocent* the fourth, who made him Bishop of Valencia. The fift sonne was called *Amé*, who being a Leper, retired himselfe to Solitairinesse. *Peter* of Sauoy was the sixt, who afterwards commanded ouer the countrie of Sauoy. *Boniface* was the seventh, who following the Church, the Pope gaue him the Archbishopsrick of Canturburie in England. The eight was *Philip*, a valiant man, who also was earle of Sauoy. The daughters were *Beatrice*, wife to *Raymond* earle of Provence: one of whose daughters was wife to *Charles*, brother to Saint *Lewis*, who was afterwards king of Naples and Sicile: and the other was *Marguerite*, married into Germanie.

Boniface succeeded *Amé* the third, who being more hardie than wife, and giuing bat-

tail

A tale to the Marquis of Montferrat, was vanquished and taken, so as he died in prison for griefe, hauing no children, for that he had neuer beene married. *Peter* brother to the deceased *Boniface* succeeded in the State, notwithstanding that *Amé* the third had left a daughter, called *Constance*: but in Sauoy the daughters are excluded from the inheritance. This Earle conquered the countries of Val d'Ost and Chablais.

Being dead without children, *Philip* of Sauoy his brother came vnto the succession. He was before of the Church, and had great spirituall livings: but leauing it all he married *Alix* Countesse Palatine of Bourgonie, and was afterwards possessor of his brothers Estates, the which he did not long enjoy, for he died of a dropisie, hauing no children of his bodie.

Amé the fourth his nephew succeeded him, being sonne to *Thomas*, he had married a niece to Pope *Innocent* the fourth: this man was furnished the Great, by reason of his valour and goodly stature. He married *Syble* countesse of Baisé, and lady of Bresse, and by this marriage, these two peeces were vnto the house of Sauoy. He had war against the Dauphine of Viennois, and the earle of Geneva his ancient enemy, and was chosen prince of the Empire, by the Emperour *Henry* of Luxembourg: after which he died in the year of Grace 1323, going to Auignon to visit the Pope.

His eldest sonne to Count *Amé* succeeded his father, and was more bountifull than his father, whereby he did wonderfully oppress his subiects. He married the duke of Bourgonie's daughter, by whom he had one daughter called *Marguerite*, whom he married to *John* of Brittain, sonne to *Arthur* earle of Richmond, and died without issue male.

Amé his brother the fift of that name succeeded him, depriving his neece of the inheritance according to the ancient law and custome of Sauoy. He married *Toland* daughter to the marquis of Montferrat, issued from the race of *Palcoques*, and had one sonne called *Amé*, as himselfe, and one daughter married to *Galeus* earle of Vertuz, and afterwards duke of Milan: he had also another sonne, but he died young.

After the sixt his sonne succeeded him, & by reason of his infancie, he was pupill to *William* of Baume. This earle hauing gotten the prize at a tournee which was made the first day of May, was called the Greene Knight. *Amé* married the lady *Bonne* sister to *Lewis* duke of Bourbon. This earle instituted the first order of the Annonciado; they do weare for their badge the image of our Lady saluted by the Angell. Afterwards he made a voyage into Greece to succour his cousin the Emperour *Alexis*. Before his death he married his sonne to the duke of Berryes daughter, then he made a voyage to Naples with the duke of Anjou, and there died old, being famous for his vertues and valour, in the yere 1383.

Amé the seventh succeeded his father, and to him after the eight, who was created duke of Savoy by the Emperour *Sigismund* at the council of *Constance*, then he resigned his Estates vnto his sonne, and was afterwards made Pope: besides his sonne *Lewis*, he had a daughter called *Mary*, who was married to the prince of Milan, of the race of the Viscontes: but for that she had an apostume in her thigh, her husband did neuer accompanie with hir, and by this meanes he had no heires: and he being dead she became a Nunne in a monastrie which she had built, imitating therein the deuotion of duke *Amé* his father.

After the ninth of that name who was troubled with the falling sicknesse, and endured it with much patience: he was brother to the abouenamed duke *Lewis*, and married *Charlotte* the onely daughter of *John* king of Cipres; but he could not enjoy the realme, by reason of the opposition of *John* the bastard, who was supported by the Soldan of Egypt. In the end *Amé* married *Toland* daughter to *Charles* the seventh, the French king, by whom he had four sonnes, and as many daughters.

His eldest sonne to *Amé* the ninth succeeded him. *Charles* his brother came to succeed him in his Estates, and married *Blanch* marquise of Montferrat, by whom he had *John Charles*, who was also called *Amé*, he died young, and left for successor

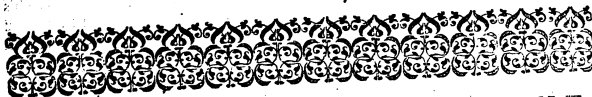
Philibert his vncle, who married *Marguerite* daughter to the duke of Bourbon.

Philibert

Philibert the second succeeded him; he was sonne in law to the Emperour *Maximilian*, A and liued not long, leauing for successor *Charles* his brother, who married the daughter of *Emanuel* king of Portugal, and sister to the wife of the Emperour *Charles* the first, and of this marriage came *Charles* who died very young in Spaine, and *Philibert* in his fathers life time was receiued prince of Piedmont.

Philibert Emanuel succeeded *Charles* the third, he was expelled his Estates by king *Francis* the first, and then restored by the means of a marriage which was made betwix him and *Marguerite*, daughter to the said king *Francis*.

He had for his successor *Charles Emanuel* duke of Sauoy, who liues at this present, and hath had many children by *Catherine* daughter to *Philip* the second, king of Spaine.



OF THE ESTATE OF THE CHVRCH OF ROME.

The Contents.

- I** *He limits and bounds of the Popes Estate: his countries and chiefe towne.* And of the absolute power which he pretends ouer many realmes. 2. Description of the citie of Rome, the ordinarie seat of the Popes, and of the Antiquities, and first of the bridge of Saint Angelo. 3. Of the Island Tiberine. Of the Pyramides, Colomnes of admirable heighth, Thermes and Stoues, Antoniennes and others, Sepulchres of Emperours, Theatres, Arches, Temples, and Porches. 4. The circuit of old Rome fiftie miles, D at this day sixteene. 5. Of the gates of Rome, diuided in old time into fourteene regions, and at this day into thirteene, and what are the names, as well auncient as moderne. 6. The waies and mountains which are comprehended within the circuit. 7. Taken and spoiled seven times, and by what Nations. 8. A particular description of the Popes countries and estates, and first of Latium, or Campania of Rome. 9. Of the Patrimoine of Saint Peter. 10. Of Vmbria and Sabinum, or Campania of Rome. 11. Of the Marquisat of Ancona. 12. Of Romania and the chiefe citie Raucenna, the seat of the Exarques of the Emperours of Constantinople. Of the beginning of the Exarcat, and when it ended. 13. Of the Estate of Ferrara, the length, breadth, and confines. 14. Of the countie of Venisse, the towne and walled places, among the which Auignon. 15. Fertilitye of Italie, and the bountie of the soile of Campania, Vmbria, Ferrara, and non. 16. Fertilitye of Italie, and the bountie of the soile of Campania, Vmbria, Ferrara, and non. 17. Fertilitye of the fields and meadows of Terny, which are mowed foure times a yeare. Of the terrarie of Riatti, whereas the grasse cut in the day growes as much the night following. 18. Bathes of all sorts at Tioli, and in other places. Mines of Allum at Stolf, the Salt pits of Ostia, &c. Flax of Esyence, wood of Bologne, Manna of Saint Laurence in Campania, Wine of Sese, Fayence, &c. 19. Of other things werewith the Estate of the Church of Rome abounds. 20. Of the deficits, and first of the vnholsome aire of the Campania of Rome. 21. Romanes in old time inclined to armes and learning, and their admirall frugallitie, women and maidens forbidden to adme to armes and learning, and of their libells of repudiation. 22. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 23. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 24. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 25. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 26. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 27. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 28. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation. 29. Of their Obsequies, and of their ceremonies of marriage, and of their libells of repudiation.

A Church; wherein they consist. 30. Of the fortification of Rome, made at diuers times. 31. Of the Sea forces of the Church. 32. Why the people faile in many parts of Italie. 33. Of the Government of the auncient Romans. Of the Senat instituted by Romulus, what it was before and after the Monarchie; and of their Magistrats. 34. Of the Popes gouernement, and first of the College of Cardinalls, and their Consistorie. 35. Of the great Penitencier, and his iurisdiction. 36. Of the Court of Rome, with the two Audiencies. 37. Of the Chancerie and vnder-wardens. 38. Of the Apostolicke Chamber, to what end it was erected. 39. Of the Pretor or Secretary of the Campidoglio, and his substitutes. 40. Of the Popes Vicar ouer Priests, and of twelue masters of causes in the sacred Palace. 41. Of the creation of Popes, and assemble of Cardinalls. 42. Of the superstitious religion of the auncient Romans. Of their Augures, and manner of divining, and the institution of all their Priests. 43. A Catalogue and succession of the Popes vnto this day. 44. Of the institution of the three orders of Cardinalls, and their titles.

I His Estate (not comprehending Beneuent nor Auignon) is at this day greater than it was euer, since that Ferrara, Comachia, and Romagna, were added vnto it. It is about three hundred miles long, and neere a hundred broad. It contains the Countries of Ferrara, Bologna, Romagna, the Marquisat of Ancona, Vmbria, Sabina, Perugia, with a part of Tuscany, the Patrimoine, Rome, Latium or Campania of Rome. And in this continent they doe number about fiftie Bishopricks, and neere a million and a halfe of persons. There is one towne of the first rancke of Italie, which is Rome; one of the second, which is Bologna; and many of the third and fourth, the which are Ferrara, Peruse, Aicoli, Ancona, Forl, Ravenna, Ferme, Viterbe. There is in this Estate one of the foure Duchies instituted by the Lombards, which is that of Spoleum. There is the greatest part of the Exarcat of Raucenna; then one of the Marquisats of Italie, which is Ancona. This Estate extendeth from one Sea vnto another: It hath vpon the Tyrrene or Tufcan Sea the Port of Civita Vecchia, and vpon the Adriatique that of Ancona and Commachia, and the mouthes of Po, and with little charge they might make a Port at Terracina, and at Neptunus. That countie which going out of Rome bends towards the realme of Naples, is called the Campania of Rome, and in like manner that which is on the other side towards Florence is called the Patrimoine; the Marquisat of Ancona is towards the realme of Naples; and Romagna towards Ferrara, with the which Bologna doth also confine, and Vmbria lies in the middlest. Besides those towne which we haue already named, this Estate comprehends those of Rimini, Cesene, Fayence, Imola, Macerata, Camerin, Spoleum, Norcia, Rieti, Terni, Narni, Oruieto, Affisi, Foligno, Todi, with about thirte others. Besides all this, it comprehends the Countie of Venisse, or of Auignon; and the towne of Beneuent in the realme of Naples. As for their temporall iurisdiction, the Pope pretends to be Soueraigne of the realmes of Naples and Sicile, of the duchies of Vrbino, Parma, and Messeran, and in former times they haue vniuently challenged homage for England and Ireland. But before I proceed, in my opinion it will be fit (for the contentment of the curious) to describe the Citie of Rome, the chiefe of that Estate, and the ordinarie aboad of Popes, and to make mention of her Antiquities, which some may desire: for that there are many which would be glad to be fully instructed of this Most Noble Citie of the world.

To satisfie this desire, I will begin by the bridge of Saint Angelo, which the Auncients called Pons Elius. When you are vpon the bridge, looke downe, and you shall see within the riuer of Tybre some remainders of the triumphall bridge, by the which all the Emperours did in old time passe, going to the Capitall. Turning vpon the right hand you shall see the Castle, the which was properly the Sepulchre of the Emperour *Adrian*, vpon the top whereof, there was a vessel or bowle of brasie guilt of an admirable greatnesse, the which stands at this day vncouered in the middlest of Saint Peters Court. But before you part from Saint Peter, you may see Belueder, where there are many goodly Statues in the spaciuous Garden, and especially that renowned *Laocoon*, after the Modelle whereof, that

that which is in the Gardens at Fontainebleau was made. And in Saint Peters place, is A the Obeliske, which was sometimes behind the Church, and was brought thither with great charge by *Sixtus* the fifth.

After this you must come behind to the Port of the holie Ghost, and being without it, you shall see on high, vpon the right hand, a certaine little Church called S. Onofre, from which place vnto S. Peter Monitorio, you see the little Hill which the Ancients called Ianiculum, one of the seuen Mountaines of Rome, and the little Hill which is before S. Peter called Vatican, is also one of the seuen Mountaines. Looking from Saint Onofre, vnto Saint Peter Monitorio downward, you shall descouer the place where was the Circus or place for games of *Iulius Caesar*, the which was verie long and broad, B as may be seene going vpon the Mountaine before the Port of S. Peter Monitorio.

Going thus straight on by the street which bends towards Ripa, you come vnto Saint Marie in Trafsuere, or beyond the riuer of Tybre, where there is at this day the Church to be seene which the Ancients called *Tiberina meritoria*, for that when as the fouldiers came maimed from the warres, they were entertained there all the rest of their liues. And before the great Altar the place is to be seene, where (as they say) did spring a fountaine of oyle at the birth of our Sauour, and did run abundantly a whole day.

Going still towards Ripa, whereas they sell wine, there are many goodly Gardens, Houfes, and Churches to be seene, in the same place whereas in old time the Romans Arcenal or Storehouse for armes did stand, the greatnesse whereof may well be conceiued by the markes which yet remaine. And vpon the left hand also is an Island which the Ancients called Tyberine, wherein now are the Churches of S. Bartholomew, and S. Iohn, in the which remaine the *Faste benfraelle*. There were two Temples in this Island, the one of *Iupiter Licoia*, the other of *Esculapium*, whose figure was brought thither in forme of a Serpent. This Island hath the forme of a Ship, wide in the middle, and some quarter of a mile long, and narrow at either end. There are two bridges to come in to it, the one was called *Pons Fabricius* by the Ancients, for that *Lucius Fabricius* caused it to be made, and it is now called the bridge of the foure Heads. The other bridge which ioyne the Island to the riuer of Trafsuere is called Saint Bartholomews, of the Church which stands in the Island dedicated to that Apofle. It was in old time called D *Sextius*, and *Elquilinus*.

After this, passing from the other side of the said Island, you go alwaies towards Trafsuere, by a street which they find at the foot of the bridge of the said Island, and going on straight, you come vnto a new bridge, the which is called at this day Saint Marie Egipciaca, of a Church thereby dedicated to that Saint, and the Ancients called it *Pons Senatorium*. At the foot of this bridge, you find a ruined Palace, the which according to the common opinion, was *Pilatus* Palace. But the iudicious say, That this was the Palace of *Nicholas Renze*, or of the Virfins, as doth appeare at this day vpon one of the gates in two verses. Right against it is to be seene an ancient Temple of the Moone, and of the other side, that which was dedicated to the Sun. Having past them, you discouera E a great peece of white Marble, the which is round, and within it like vnto a mans face, the which they commonly call the Mouth of truth, leaning against the Church of S. Marie in Cosmedin, called the Greeke Schole, whereas S. *Augustine* did read. After that, you come to the foot of Mont Auentin, neere vnto which are to be seene the ruines of a bridge in the riuer the which in old time was called *Sublicius*, the which *Heratius Cotes* defended against all the power of the Tuscans, who had defeated the Romans, and pursued them to enter the Citie, but he stayed them by his valour, until the bridge was broken downe behind them, and then he leapt into the riuer, and saued himselfe by his skill in swimming.

Going vnder the said Mountaine neere the riuer of Tybre towards S. Paul, you may F see vines vpon the right hand towards the riuer, in the which the Romans had one hundred and fortie Storehouses, the which were verie great, as appeares by the ruines of those that are in the Vineyard of *Iulio Caesarin*. Having past this, you go still towards S. Paul, and find a verie goodly meadow, where as the Romans made their *Olympike* games,

A games, and in this meadow you see the mount called *Teflaccus* made of broken pots, for that they say the Potters dwelt neere vnto it, and cast their broken pots and vessels vpon the place.

Looking towards the gate of Saint Paul, you shall see a very auncient Pyramede shut in with wall, the which they say was the sepulture of *Sextius*: and taking the way vpon the right hand of Saint Pauls gate it leads you to S. *Gregorie*, where passing Mont Auentin you see great ruines of buildings, and in this way there is a little riuer whereas the people do commonly wash beneath Saint *Gregorie*; and here you must obferue it well, for that you are in that great Circus whereas they were wont to run with their coaches, and to make their naull battailes for pleasure. There are also three rankes of high pillars to be seene one vpon another, the which they call *Septizonium Securi*, or the leuen rankes or girdles of *Seneca*.

A little aboue it, are the Thermes or Stoues of *Antonine*, the which are wonderfull to behold: and on the other side, neere to Saint *Balbina* is to be seene the Churchyard of *Marcellus* and of *Basil*, but all is ruined. Going afterwards to the Church of Saint *Sixtus* the straight way which goes, to Saint *Schastian*, you enter on the left hand into a little lane which leads to Saint Stephen the Round, or *Rotundo*, the which was in old time the temple of *Fannus*: and afterwards you shall see certaine high wals the which they say were part of the Aqueducts which went to the Capitoll, and in this place is Mont C *Caelius*, which they passe vnto S. *Iohn de Lateran*, where you shall see the auncient building sanctified by the New, which was made by *Sixtus* the fifth. Then you take your way to the holie Croffe in Ierusalem, where before the Church doore, you find a place in which was the *Venus* Temple, whereas the curizans of that time were wont yearly to celebrate their Feast on the twentieth of August: and some say that the Theatre which is in the Church of the holie Croffe, was that of *Statilius Taurus*, the which was great and faire, may be easily coniectured.

After this you must return towards old Rome, and take the way of Port Maior, which goes to Saint Marie Maior, so passing straight on, you shall find the Trophies of *Marinus*, which are exceeding faire.

D Then coming afterwards towards Rome, you passe by *Galiens* Arch, the which is now called the Arch of S. *Vite*, and it is yet entire, where were tied the keys of Tiuli vnderneath neere vnto the Inne. And thus you haue viewed one quarter of the citie.

To obferue the other part of Rome, you must beginne whereas you see behind the Church a great part of *Augustus* Sepulture, the which with the wood did extend vnto the Church of S. *Marie del Popolo*, and the Spire which lay in that street hath bin transpored to S. Marie Maior to be set vp there.

The port which they now call *del Popolo*, or of the People, and which was called by the Ancients *Flaminia*, or *Flumentana*, is ioined to the Church *del Popolo*: this hath bene enlarged and beautified much by Pope *Pius* the fourth, who hath also repaired the way *Flaminia*, but you may consider it better whenas you shal go to the great vineyard of *Salustio* the third. Now you must retume backe towards the Trinitie, vnder the which was that great Circus of *Augustus*: and in the place whereas stands the Trinitie Church, going vnto Mont Cauallo, were (as they say) the goodly gardens of *Salustius*. Going afterwards towards Mont Quirinal, which at this day they call Mont Cauallo, vnder the Cardinal of Ferrares vineyard, are to be seene certaine ancient grotts or caues, neere vnto the which the Romans made their Florall games; and many curizans and loose women lined in those caues; and vpon the place which may yet be seene, in the said Cardinalls vineyard there was an altar dedicated to *Apollo*.

F Afterwards you enter into a little street which goes vp to Mont Cauallo, being there you shall see two horses of marble, sent out of *Egypt* to *Nero*, whose pallace is neere vnto it: and on the other side is the Church which they say was sometimes the temple of the Sunne; but it is not true, for that it appeares vnto this day, that there was a secrete way made vpon very goodly pillars, which came from his pallace, vnto a place called *Oratorium Neronis* or *Neros* Oratorie, where there is a great part of the Church yet standing.

standing. Afterwards you must take the right hand way to the Bathes of *Dioclesian*, and ^A on the left hand, where are the vines of the Cardinal of Ferrara, began the Stoues of the Emperour *Constantine* which did reach vnto Saint Sufanna: and on the other side of these Stoues was the Senat of Matrons poore Widowes and Orphanes, where before the Romanes did enter, they did visit the Altar of *Apollo*, which was right against this place.

Then they come to the Stoues of *Dioclesian*, the which are such, as it seemes the like cannot be built, and some say there are caues vnder them, wherof the one goes to the Capitoles, the other to S. Sebastian, and the third vnder Tiber to the Vatican.

After which, you shall see the street called *Pia*, the which was made so straight, long, ^B and broad, by Pope *Pius* the fourth whose name it carries: there may you also see that admirable and pleasant vineyard of the Cardinal of Ferrara, as also that of Pope *Sixtus* the fifth, with goodly buildings: and neere vnto it is the vineyard of the Cardinal of Carpi, full of anticke and moderne things, which are very rare: and vpon the same way are many others which are faire, but not to be compared to the three former. At the end of this goodly street, there is a port answerable vnto it, the which was made by *Pius* the fourth, whose name also it carries.

From thence you may go vnto Saint Agnes, by the way called *Nomentana*, where you shall see a little ancient Temple very faire, the which they say had bene dedicated vnto *Bacchus*, and in like manner there is a tombe of *Porphyrie* the greatest and fairest that ^C can be scene. But returning to *Dioclesians* Stoues, which were dedicated by Pope *Pius* the fourth, to the honour of the Virgin *Mary*; you must take the way which goes to faint *Mary* Maior, & you shall find vnder that Church in the valley, a Church which they call Saint *Potentienna*, the which in old time was the Stoue called *Nouatien*: and vpon the top of the mountaine whereas now stands the Monasterie of Saint Laurence in *Valfoppe*, were the *Olimpicke* Stoues, which did reach from one side vnto the other: and whereas the Church of Saint *Mary* Maior stands, the same was in old time the Temple of *Iſis*, which the Romanes had in great veneration; and whereas the Chappell of S. *Luke* was (neere vnto Saint *Maries* Church downe to the bottome) they did beheld the wood consecrated to *Iuno*, the great goddesse of the Romanes, the which is at this day incorporated to the vineyard of Pope *Sixtus*.

About it in the vineyard of S. *Anthonie* was that rich and admirable temple of *Diana*, whereas the Romanes made their sacrifices with great charge: on the other side whereas now stands the Church of S. *Martin*, was in old time the Temple of *Mars*, whom they held for the god of war. Having past the said Church, you come vnto a street which doth lead directly to S. *Peter* in *Vincula*, or in bonds: but leauing this street, and taking the first lane you shall find, you shall see an admirable house which the Emperour *Titus* made for his high priest.

Having scene this, you must descend by the first street, among the vines which leads to S. *Clement*, a conuent of religious men: then comming to that admirable Theatre *Ves-* ^E *pasian*, called the *Colifus*, you shall see a wonderful structure and masse of stones, for that ninetie thousand persons might sit and see the fights at ease.

Having past vnto the other side you shall see *Constantins* Arch, which is yet worth the viewing: and neere vnto it in the garden of the Monkes of Saint *Mary* the New, you shall see some remainders of the Temple of the god *Serapis*. And going on you shall passe *Vesepasians* Arch, which they did erect for him whereas he returned in triumph from *Ierusalem*. Farther on, you shall see the Temple of *Peace* in a manner ruined: and right against it *Mont Palatin*, which they cal at this day the great *Palace*, where there is a goodly vine of the *Farneses*.

Neere vnto this place was the Temple of *Romulus*, the which is conuerted into the ^F Church of S. *Cosmo* and *Damian*: and joining vnto it is the Temple of *Marcus Aurelius*, and of *Faustina* his wife, daughter to *Antonino Pius*, whose *Pallace* is behind the said Temple. Right against it, there was a goodly Temple dedicated to the goddesse *Venus*, the which is now conuerted into a Church called Saint *Maria Liberatrice dalle pene d'in-* ^{ferno}

Aferno, or which deliuers from the paines of hell. The three pillars which are scene in the middell of the field of *Oxen*, were, as they say, a bridge which went from the Capitoles to the great *Palace*, and they say that the Lake of *Curius* was in this place.

In the Church whereas you see a brazen doore neere to the Arch of *Septimius*, was (as they affirme) the Temple of *Saturne*, in the which the treasure of the people of Rome was kept; but it is now called S. *Adrian*.

The Arch whereof I spake, was made by *Lucius Septimius Severus*, and is verie faire. In the corner of the street you shall see a statue leaning, which they call *Marforio*. On the other side of the Arch, where there are three pillars to be scene, was the Temple of *Concord*: and as you come vnto the Capitoles, at the foot wherof was the Temple of *Iupiter*, the which was neuer reedified since the Capitoles was burnt. There was also neere vnto this Temple, that of *Ceres*, and vpon this place is to be scene at this day a Brazen man on horsebacke, the which is the Emperour *Marcus Aurelius*. From this place you may view the greatest part of all Rome, in a goodly prospectiue. But from thence you must turne a little backward, to the foot of the backside of the Capitoles, where you shall find certain deepe Cellernes made by the Romanes to keepe their salt and corne, and these places were in old time called *Horrea* or *Storehoules*.

From thence you passe neere to S. *Marie* of *Consolation*, and not farre from thence you see the Arch of *Beeues*: and you may also see the Theater of *Marcellus*, which is now the *Palace* of the *Sauelli*, and in this Theater was the Temple of *Pictie*. Neere vnto it, going towards the *Fish-Market*, were the Porches of *Ostiaua*, sister to *Augustus*, but there are scarce any markes now remaining. And at the entrie of S. *Ange*, are the Porches of *Septimius Severus*. Going afterwards vnto *Campo di Fior*, or the field of *Flowers*, you find the *Palace* of *Vrsinus*, the which was in old time the Theater of *Pompey*, whose porch was behind. Neere vnto it is the goodly *palace* of *Capi di Ferro*, or *Heads of yron*, and beyond it is that of the *Farneses*, made with admirable *Architecure*, and full of goodly *Antiquities*.

But to finish this *Suruay* of Rome, we must begin the third time at the field of *Mars*, or to speake better, at the place called *Coionne*, where you shall see the Pillar of *Antonius* ^D *Pius*, one hundred feuentie seven foot high, with a *Staire* case within it, made like a *Snail*, where there are one hundred and fortie steps, and six and fiftie windows. Having scene this, you must go to the place called *Charrre*, and turne vpon the right hand being at the *Spicerie*, the which descends vnto the *Vestall Virgins*, a Temple in old time much esteemed by the Romanes, and now full of *Orphanes*. Then must you returne by the same street, and go alwaies right on towards S. *Marke*, vntil you come vnto a place called *Martello de Cerui*, where you shall see *Tratans* Pillar, the which is one hundred twentie and three foot high, and hath a *staire* within it of 155 steps, and five and fortie windows.

Then returning backe, you see the Church of *Minerva*, which in old time carried the same name, but it was afterwards ruined, with another goodly building. But I had forgotten, that if you desire to see rare things as well for carving as painting, being vpon *Mont Citorio*, you must aske for the house of *Ierome Garimbert*, where you may see many rare things.

Not farre from thence on the other side, is the *Pantheon*, at this day called *Rotundo*, a goodly ancient place built by *Marcus Agrippa*, and behind it whereas they sell *Tables* of wood, were sometimes the *floues* of *Agrippa*. Behind S. *Eustache* were the *floues* of *Nere*, which are partly in our *Ladies* *palace*: you shall see goodly remainders thereabouts.

There is now a *palace* built by the *Abbot Vento*.

Having past our *Ladies* place, you enter into that of *Nauone*, whereas euerie *Wednes-* ^F *day* there is a *Market* kept; but the Romanes made it for their playes and shews.

At the foot of this place, vnder the great *palace* of the *Vrsinus*, is the Image of *Peſquin*: And these be all the *Antiquities* which are to be scene in Rome, the which I haue described vnto you as well as I could: but before I leaue it I will add something more.

Rome contained in *Romulus* time *Mont Capitolin* and the *Palatin*, with the valleys which are in the middell, & with three ports; the first was called *Trigonia*, for the triangle

it made neere to the foot of Mont Palantin, the second Pandana, for that it was continually open, and it was also called *Libra*, for the commoditie of the entrie; the third *Carmentale*, of *Carmenta*, mother to *Euander*, who dwelt there, and it was called *Scelerata*, or *Wretched*, for the death of the 300 *Fabians* which went out at that gate, and were all slain in one day neere vnto the riuer of *Aron*. But by the ruine of the towne of *Alba*, and the peace betwixt the *Sabins* and the *Romans*, they began to augment the circuit of their towne, compassing in *seuen Mountaines*, as we find it at this day: so as in the time of the Emperour *Claudius* there were six hundred and thirtie towers, and 22000 porches. And as for the circuit of the walls, some Authors write, That it was of fiftie miles, others of two and thirtie, some of eight and twentie: but at this day, with the *Traiteuere*, and the suburbs of *S. Peter*, *Rome* hath but fiftene miles about, and some say but fourteene or thirteene, measuring it from *Port* to *Port*.

As for the *Ports*, there is a difference among Authors, as well in regard of the number, as the names: for some say thirtie, and others 24: but at this day there are but 18 open, which shut vp the *seuen hills*: and the whole *Citie* is diuided into *seuen Regions*.

The chiefest *port* is that of *del Popolo*, called in old time *Flumentana*, for that it was neere vnto the riuer of *Tyber*: it was also called *Flaminia*, because that *via Flaminia* pass by it.

Pinciana, so called of *Pinciano* the Senator; it was also in old time called *Collatina*, of *Collatia*, a castle not farre from *Rome*.

The *port Salaria*, so called of the *Salt* which was brought from the *Sabins* to *Rome*: It had also the name of *Quirinale*, being neere vnto that *Hill*, and also *Agonale*: the *Gaules* entred by this *port* when they sackt *Rome*.

The *port* of *S. Agnes*, it was called in old time *Viminalis*, as some hold of the Temple of *Iupiter Vminco*: it was also called *Figulense*, for that the *Potters* dwelt without the gate; and *Numantina*.

The *port* of *S. Laurence*, sometimes called *Tyrburtina*, and also *Taurina*, by reason of a *Bulls head* which is yet to be seene vpon the forefront towards the East.

The *port* of *Major*, called by the Ancients *Labicana*, *Preneftina*, and *Neuia*, of a wood of that name neere vnto it.

The *port* of *S. Iohn*, called *Celimontana*, of *Mont Celio*, *Septimia*, and *Afinaria*.

Port Latina, so called for that it was the way to *Latium*, and doth still retain the name; it was sometimes called *Florentina*.

The *port* of *S. Sebastian*, it is so called for that they go that way to *S. Sebastians Church* without the *Citie*: it was also called *Appia*, of *Appius* the *Censor*, who made the way *Appia* out at this gate; *Fontinale*, of the abundance of fountains; and *Capena*, of a towne of that name, whereunto they went by this gate. The *Horatij* being conquerors entred by this gate.

The *Port* of *S. Paul*, it is the last of this side the riuer of *Tyber*, it was in old time called *Tergemina*. By this gate the *Horatij* went forth to fight with the *Curiatij*, whom they vanquished.

Beyond the riuer of *Tyber* is the *Port* de *Ripa*, called by the Ancients *Portuense*, for that by it they went to the *Roman Port*, built by *Claudius*.

The *port* of *S. Pancratia*, called in old time *Aurelia*, of the Emperour *Aurelius*, or as some say, of the way *Aurelia*.

Septimiana, so called of *Septimius* the Emperour, and repaired by Pope *Alexander* the first, and it was also called *Fontinale*.

Port Torronio, built by Pope *Nicholas* the fifth, it was otherwise called *Posterula*.

The *port* of *Petrusa*, that of the holie Ghost, that of *Belueder*, and that of *Cencello*, sometimes called *Anea*.

As for the chiefest waies, there were nine and twentie, and euery gate had his: but the most famous were first, the *Appian way*, which *Appius Claudius* the *Censor* caused to be traced from *S. Sebastians gate* to *Capoua*: *Traian* continued it to *Brindes*, and it was called the *Queene of Wayes*, for that in a manner all the triumphs passed that way.

The

The *Flaminian way* which *Carus Flaminius* (being *Consul*) caused to be paved from *del Popolo* vnto *Rimini*, and it was also called the *Broad way*, for that it went to the *Capitole*.

It was paved by *Lepidus* and *Flaminius* (*Consuls*) vnto *Bologna*.

Appia began about the *Collicie*, and went to the *Church* of *S. Luce* in *Orsee*.

The *new way*, began neere vnto the *Arch* of *Constantine*, & went vnto that of *Titus*, the place of *Rome*, called *Forum*, vnto the *Capitol*.

The *new way*, went by the great *Pallace* vnto the *Septizone*, and so vnto *Antonies*.

The *triumphall way*, went from the *Vatican* vnto the *Capitole*, *Vespasian* repaired it, as may be by an inscription of *marble* which is in the *Capitole*, before the *Pallace* of *Emperators*.

The *Vatican way*, went from *Mount Ianiculum* vnto the sea.

The *Straight way*, was to the field of *Mars*.

The *new way* was built vpon *seuen hills*, the first and most famous was *Mont*, *Capitolin*, or *Capitol*, and *Saturnin*, at this day called *Campidoglio*, or *Capitole*, vpon the which

were sixtie Temples, Chappells, or houses consecrated to the gods; and the most famous of these Temples was that of *Iupiter*, into the which they that came in triumph

when it was ended, to giue thanks for the victorie which they had gotten. *Mont* was at this day called *Pallace Maior*, or the great *Pallace*: it is inhabited and full of people, and hath a mile in circuit. *Romulus* began the towne there, for that he was bred vpon

the *Capitol*: and *Helioabulus* caused it to be paved with *Porphyrie*.

The *Quirinal*, or *Querquetulan* which hath about two miles in circuit, is that where the *Church* of *saint Sabina* stands.

The *Celio* is that whereon are the *Churches* of *saint Iohn* and *saint Paul*, vnto *saint*

Agatlan.

The *Equilin*, or *Cespian*, where are the *Churches* of *saint Mary Maior*, and *saint Peter*.

The *Viminal*, whereon stand the *Churches* of *saint Laurence*, and *saint Potentienne*.

The *Quirinal* or *Agonia*, called at this day *Mont Cauallo*: these are the *seuen hills* of *Rome* stands on this side *Tyber*. Beyond the riuer or in *Traiteuere* is

Mount Ianiculum, whereon *saint Peter Montorio* stands, and that of *Pincia*, on which is the *Capitol Church*.

There are also other small hills, as the *Vatican*, whereon stands *saint Peters Church*.

The *Popes Palace*, the *Citorie* sometimes called the *Citorie*, for that they did cite

thither when they did assemble to make new *Magistrates*. That of the *Hortu*

ple Gardens, whereas *Mont Pincia* begins at the *port Salaria*, and goes vnto that

of *del Popolo*, and it was from this hill, that they which did affect and labour for any of

ascended into the field of *Mars* to demand them of the people.

As for the *Regions*, *Rome* had in former times fourteene, but there are at this day but

three: that of the *Mounts* which hath for their armes three mountaines: that of *Co*

which hath a pillar: that of *Trejo*, three fowles: *S. Eustache*, hath a *Sauioir* be

two homes: that of *Pont*, hath a bridge: that of *Regola*, hath a flag: that of *Ripa*,

hath a wheele: *Traiteuere*, a *Lions head*: *Campidoglio*, a *Dragons head*: *Parion*, a

Capitol: *Pigna*, a vessell: *Campo Marzo*, or the *Region* of the field of *Mars*, hath for

the *signe* the *Moon*: and *S. Ange*, an *Angel*.

The towne hath bene *seuen* times taken by diuers nations: three hundred sixtie and

yeares after it was built, it was taken by the *Gaules* *Seanois*, vnder their captain

the second, eight hundred yeares after it was taken by the *Visigots*: foure and

yeares after, the *Vandales* entred: and eightene yeares after them the *Erules*: then

yeares after, the *Ostrogothes* forced it: twelve yeares after, *Totila* made himselfe

thereof: and last of all in the yeare 1527, on the first of May, it was taken by the

of the Emperour *Charles* the fifth, being led by the duke of *Bourbon*. But notwith

standing that it hath bene so often ruined, and that they haue torne in peeces those rare

antiquities with all those proud buildings, yet if you looke vnto the statlineffe of Palaces, Churches, and other buildings, the beautie of the streets, and the greatnesse of the citie, it will fill thew it selfe to be Rome.

Let vs now see the rest of the state of the Church, seeing that we haue taken a survey of the chiefe citie.

VIII.

Latiū or Campania of Rome is diuided into old and new: the old extends it selfe from the mouth of Tyber, vnto the mountaine of Circe, for the space of fiftie miles: the new, from Mount Circe to the riuier of Gaillan entering into the realme of Naples. In old time this countrie was very well inhabited, and full of great and famous townes, which receiued their greatnesse by the neighbourhood of Rome, and were afterwards renowned by the courtes & spoiles of the Barbarians. Rome stands in Latiū. The other places are, Ostia, Ardea, Neptun, raised out of the ruines of Anze, Terracina; and within the countrie Prenestina, Fimoli, Anagnia, Fregolone, Veruli, Alatri, Bauco, and Segna. At this day, this countrie is diuided into three parts, that is to say Latiū, Campania of Rome, & Marmonia, which is the sea coast. The Estate of the Church ends at Terracina, against the which is Gayette the key of the realme of Naples.

IX.

The Patrimoine of Saint Peter left vnto the Church of Rome, by the countesse Matilda in the time of Pope Pascal in the yere 1100, stretcheth from the riuier of Pelche which falls into the sea, on this side Mount Argentarius, and from Saint Quirice vnto Cepetan. Betwixt the riuers of Quiane and Tyber is the lake of Trasiuenum, and beyond it is Peruse, a famous towne: and betwixt the riuier of Fiore and Tyber stands Pii-gliano, Aquapendente, Ormiere (famous for the scitination, for a Well, and the Cathedrall Church) Belfene with her lake, Montefiascon, Bagnaree, Castro, Nepe, Viterbe famous for the long residence of Popes whilste they were molested by the Senators of Rome; Orte, Gallese, Ciuita Castellana; and towards the sea, Cornette, Toscanella, Ciuita Vecchia, Porto, Braccian vpon the lake of Sabbatin, Roncillon, Sutri, Martian where was the towne of the Veientis.

X.

Hauiing past the Tyber, you enter into Vmbria, which goes at this day vnder the name of the duchie of Spoletum, and is for the most part shadowed with the Apennine hills, by reason whereof it is called Vmbria. The chiefe townes are Borgo of S. Sepulchro, Circ de Castello, Augubio, Todi (all vpon the riuier of Tyber) Terni, Spoletum, Norcia, Foligno, Assisi, Nocera, Camerin, and Amelia.

Sabina is a countrie compass in on either side by the Apennin: it is narrow, and long from Tyber vnto Lamentana. Others bound it betwixt the riuier of Negro and the Apennin, and betwixt Tyber and Teueron which parts the Sabins from the Equicoles. The chiefe places are Riete, Narni, Orticoli, Magliane, Farfe, and Palumbare.

XI.

The Marquifat of Ancona extends it selfe betwixt the Apennin and the sea, from Trecene vnto Feuilta, or Foglia, and contains many good places, amongst which Fabrian is very famous, with eleuen Archbishops and Bishopsricks. Amongst these townes that of greatest trafficke is Ancona, the most powerfull is Ferme, the strongest la Rocca, the fairest Alcoli, the fairest Iesi, the most fauoured Macerata, for that the Governour of the prouince remains there, and Rota, but that which is esteemed most holie is Loreta.

XII.

Romagnia stretcheth from Foglia, vnto Panare, and from the Apennin vnto the riuier of Po. The chiefe townes are Rimini, Cesena, Fayence, Rauenna, Forli, Imola, Sassina, Ceruia, and Bertinora. Six miles long, and six broad, hauiing sixteene thousand inhabitants. The noblest of all these townes is Rauenna, whereas some Emperours made their aboad, and then the Exarques or Governours for the Emperours of Constantinople. And for that Histories make often mention of the Exarcat, I thinke it fit to speake of something of the beginning, progress, and end thereof. The Exarcat began after that Neris, Captaine to Justinian and Iustin Emperours, had expelled the Gothes out of Italic: and the first Exarque (which is as much to say as a Soueraigne Magistrat) was Agaton, who making his aboad at Rauenna, as the kings of Gothes had done, changed their

manner of gouernement throughout the Prouinces, putting a Captaine into euery of importance; the like did he at Rome, displacing the Senat and Consuls. The Exarcat contained Rauenna, Sarcina, Classe, Forli, and Imola, which townes made one Estate, and they called it Pentapoli: and with that estate, it contained Bologna, Reggium, Modena, Parma, Plaisance, with other places betwixt the Appennin Hills and the Po. It ended in the yere 751, whenas King of the Lombards, tooke Rauenna; so as it continued one hundred eightie yeres. And it is a thing worthie of consideration, that the Roman Emperours, especially Marcius, then the Exarques, and last of all the kings of the Gothes, held Rauenna all the townes of Italic, worthie of their aboad.

The insolence of the Exarques towards the Pope, was the cause that the Archbishop of Ravenna revolted also against the Pope, in the time of Emerald: this rebellion continued the time of Pope Donne, as others say of Agaton, whenas the Archbishop Theobalding himselfe ill intreated by his Clergie, submitted his Church vnto the Pope. A province (whereof we now treat) was first called Flaminia, but Charles the Great, to giue the name of the Exarcat, and to make the people more affectionate to the Church of Rome, called it Romagnia.

The estate of Ferrara is great and commodious, for that comprehending Modena, which bene lately dismembred, it is in length from the Adriaticke sea vnto the Po about one hundred and sixtie miles, and it hath in bredth about fiftie, from the Po to Magnauaca are nine miles, from Magnauaca to Yolane eighteene miles, from Yolane to Gorre eighteen miles, and from Gorre to the Venetian confines six miles. On the other side in Lombardie, it is from S. Ambrose, a place of the Boulonois countie vnto Castelfranco five miles, from Modena to Reggium fiftene miles, from Reggium to Berfel fiftene miles. It is broader in some places, and in others narrower. The estate of Ferrara confines with those of Rauenna and Bologna. This estate confines with the Venetians by the Polifelle. The countie of Mirande confines with a castle belonging to Ferrara. The duke of Mantoua confines with Stellata, Ferrara and Reggium, which be mightie townes, there is Comachia in the maritime Adriaticke sea, and many other castles in Romagnia, Grassignane in Tuscanie, Carpi, a place of importance, seated in the heart of this Estate. This place was by the Emperour Charles the first to duke Alphonso, for that part which was fallen to the Empire by the rebellion of Marck by the Lord thereof, and this duke obayned Marck, giuing him the seigneurie of Saxole in exchange: but Lionel de Pij who yeeld his part for any reasonable price or exchange, was expelled out of that estate by this duke, with the Emperours permission, who then did lay in deposit the estate thereof one hundred thousand crownes into the Banque of Venice, the duke would neuer accept. The towne of Ferrara hath in circuit fix or seuen miles, with goodly streets, honourable places, and a good number of Churches and Monasteries with a castle where the dukes did usually abide. There is also an Vniuersitie, for the studie of students in all arts and sciences.

The countie of Venisse belongs vnto the Pope, and they doe number in it foure Cities to say, Auignon, Carpentras, Cavaillon, and Veson, the which are bathed by the Rhone, Durance, and Sorgue. Moreover, there are eightie places that are in the countie of Auignon was bought by Clement the sixt, of Queene Ioane, daughter to Robert King of France, in the yere of our Redemption 1352, but the countie of Venisse was confiscated by the Apostacie of Count Raymond of Tolosa. The said towne of Auignon, whose beginning there is no certaintie, hath in a manner all this of the number of seuen Parishes, seuen Hospitalls, seuen Convents of religious men, and seuen of women, seuen Colledges, and seuen Gates. This Towne did win great reputation by the Popes which the Popes made there for the space of seuentie yeres, from Clement the sixth to Gregorie the eleuenth.

XIII.

XIII.

¶ The Qualitie.

A

XV. The Campagna of Rome hath a verie good soyle which yeelds much, and is watted by many rivers, notwithstanding that there be some places which are rough and stonie, yet are they not desart and vnfruitfull, but fit for pastures, and tull of woods. Vmbria is a countie verie well inhabited, and yeelds much, for there are some write, That a part of the Province is so fertile as (omitting to speake of the rest) their catel haue two young ones at euery time. The rest of this Estate is for the most part distinguished into plaines and little hills, which are verie fruitfull. All the territorie of Ferrara displays it selfe into goodly plaines, as also a good part of that of Bologna, of Forli, of Rauenna, and Romagna.

1412

¶ *Cornelius Tacitus* commends the fertilitie of Italie, in the fields of Rieti, and Terni. *Plinie* writes, That the meadows of the territorie of Terni (which they may ouerflow) were mowed foure times a yeare, and those which could not be watted, thrice. But the bountie of this countie may well be known by the greatnesse of their Turnups, and *Cadages*. *Plinie* writes of the territorie of Rieti, That grasse being cut in the day, it grows to salt in the night, as the morning following a pole lying vpon the ground will be all covered. The plain which stretcheth from Spella vnto Spoletum, and is eightene miles long, and foure broad, is full of come and fruit; and that which extends from Peruse vnto Assise and Tondi, and the fields of Viterbe, and of Rome, are no lesse fertile. After which, that part of Bologna which drawes neere to the Appennin, and all Romagna, are distinguished into little hills, plaines, and some valles. The Marquisat, and the other parts of the Churches Estate, are so well situated, as we may say, That this countie contends wherein it excells most, either for fertilitie or pleasure.

But the territories of Rimini, of Fano, of Ascoli (especially from the mouth of Tronto, vnto that of Asone) of Fermo, Peruse, & of Cornet, are exceeding delicate. They abound generally in come, wine, and oyle, and send forth great store, especially of wine and oyle. There are many Lakes, amongst which is that of Peruse, fuller of fish than any of the Lakes of Italie; that of Bolsene, Brassian, of Vic, of Picidulco, of Subiogo, of Foglian, and of Neme. The two principall rivers of Italie passe by this Estate in their greatest bredth, that is to say, the Po and Tyber. And besides these, there are many others, for that Tyber alone receiues seuen and twentie torrents or riuers.

XVI.

There are baths of all sorts, at Tiuali, Lamentana, Strigian, Vicar, Anticola, Viterbo, Porrette, and at Scarpette. There is a rich Myne of Alum at Stolle, store of Salt pans at Ostia, Ceruia, and Comachia, where is the greatest fishing for Eeles that is in Italie. There grows excellent Flax and abundance at Fayence and Lugo; Hempe at Cento, Butrio, Pieue, and about Peruse. There is Wood in the territorie of Bologna, of Castell-Bolonois, and of Forli. There comes also Manna at S. Laurence, a place in Campagna. I will not dilate much vpon the wines, but it shall suffice to say, That all Romagna, Vmbria, the Patrimonie, Sabina, and the Campagna of Rome, beare as good wines as can be drunke; and it were superfluous to make mention here of the wines of Cefene, Fayence, Rimini, Oruiete, Todi, Montefalcon, Abban, and of many others. Neither will I speake of the Grapes of Amelia, S. Gemini, and Naray.

XVII.

What shall I say of other things, wherein this Estate abounds? It doth breed Oxen which are great and strong, especially Romagna, and Campagna, and the fesh both of them yeales and beepes is excellent sweet in tast, as also their swines fesh, especially that of the Mountaines. They haue great store of Venison, especially in the Campagna of Rome, towards Sermoneta, Terracina, and Neptun, whereas they find wonderfull huge wild Boares.

The Campagna of Rome hath races of horses, which yeeld little to them of the realme of Naples. They want no Forrests also, where there is great store of Acornes, and much good wood for Building, and for many other necessarie vices.

In

In many places they haue quarries of good stone for buildings, among which those of Cornet (which they dig out and cut with great facilitie) carrie the price: and they do resist the weather, but they grow better and more firme with age.

Marquisat of Ancona hath plaines and valleys which are rich in oyle, come, and the countie of Venisse is also very pleasing, and yeelds much vnto the owners, especially of wines, the which are nothing inferiour in strenght and bountie to any other. In France they haue good store of come and abundance of fruits, as good as can be found in any other place; the which may be seene in Auignon, where fruits come from all parts, which are exceeding faire and good.

¶ *XVIII.* Concerning we haue sufficiently made knowne the good qualities of the Estate of the Church, I shall not be vnfit in my opinion to obserue the defects, to the end they may be remedied and prevented: you must therefore vnderstand, that there are six qualities re- quired to the perfection of an Estate, that is to say, bountie of the aire, abundance of wa- ter, traffick of merchandise, safetie, and aboue all, store of inhabitants, for thereon consisteth the greatest part of the rest.

For the aire, we must confesse that the Estate of the Church is somewhat incom- mod and annoyed; for that the part towards the sea, all the countie of Cornet, and Campagna of Rome, hath a troublesome and an vnwholesome aire; the which is caused from the Forrests, which couer the greatest part of the countie along the sea, and the marishes: the which cannot be prevented but by cutting down the woods, and making the land fit for tillage, and drying vp the marishes, but especially in making places for habitation. For the territorie of Rome and Campagna, are in a manner full of many inhabitants, the Peasants growing sicke, not onely by reason of the bad nature of the ground, whereon they sleepe: and in like manner for the heat of the sunne, and the coldnesse of the Moone, against which inconueniences they haue no other remedie, but by their buildings, which may defend them from the bad nature of the aire, and the Southerlie winds. And although that it be a difficult thing to make it more easie than it seemes, if princes were as willingly drawne to make en- richment for the good of posteritie, as they are to those whereas they hope to reape a pre- sent. For why should not Anze, Ardea, Citia-Launia, and Asture, be healthfull at this time, when the aire was not vnwholesome in former times?

¶ The countie of Pontin (where in old time there were foure and twentie townes) was for the most part and made labourable by *Cethegus*, and then by *Theodoric* king of the Goths, but afterwards the fields were ouerflown againe. *Sixtus* the fift had the same countie a little before his death, employing not his treasure, but his authoritie, and by the territorie of Sezza and Piperno were much enlarged; and the aire of Ter- racina much betted, and in many places they haue made many goodly ponds. There is another thing for this effect, but a continuation of labour and charge, with the which may keepe cleane the channell of the riuier of Aufente, and the other chan- nels, as the water being gathered together runs towards the sea. And for that this countie of water cannot be supported by priuat men, being only capable for them to get great wealth; therby it happens that the thing hauing bin hitherto in the hands of persons, who dying, or wanting meanes, it hath not taken effect. The euent may be good, if they did charge the people of Rome, or some other neere communal- ly, to be rich, or some religion which had great meanes, as that of S. Benedict, with this charge.

¶ The countie of Ferrara hath need of the like helpe: for in like manner they must make passage to the waters of Aufente, to the end they do not drowne the terri- torie of Terracina, and those that are neere: also it is necessarie to make deeper the chan- neller of Po, which passeth beneath Ferrara, & to reduce it to the former estate, and it may not drowne the countie. The charge must not diuert them from this, for that besides that no honorable adion can be vnderaken without expence, the reason doth allow that a merchant should run into great charge to make his countie a prince should forbear to better his Estate, for feare of expence: for that a

prince

without disbursing any thing of his owne, might bring this enterprife to a good A
and by his only authoritie, and the charge of priuat persons, or else of communalities.
May the like of the spacious fields of the territorie of Rauenna, of Bagnacuallo, of
Lugo, and of Bologna, the which are drowned by the riuer of Paduse. *Hercules* the first
Duke of Ferrara died vp Samartina, Hippolytus, Piatris, the Rauode, and the Lamberts
Pogge.

Alphonso the second, duke of Ferrara leauing the profitable, for the pleasing, imployed
at Mesola, the time and labour, which the communalities were bound to giue for the con-
taining of the riuer of Po within herbed, and to assure the fields from the inundations
of this floud; he caused them to toile in the making of caufies, digging of ditches, plan-
ting of woods and such like, which were appointed to keepe and maintaine the bankes of
Po, vpon pretext that it was not necessarie. In the mean time the riuer did eat the banks,
and carried away the caufies, and many of the countreymen died at Mesola by reason of
the bad aire; wherefore the countrie being depriued of the labour, yea & of the countrie-
men themselves, it could not resist the violence of the riuer Po, the which hauing made
irreparable breaches in many places, it hath done more harme to the territories of Fer-
rara and Comachia, than can be valued: the which had not happened if *Alphonso* had im-
ployed that diligence about the riuer of Po, which he vsed at Mesola. It may be that *Al-*
phonso being out of hope, that the duchie of Ferrara should remaine in the house of Est,
cared not to leaue it annoied, and dammished in so many places: yet I wonder that fore-
seeing this, he did not rather attempt to beautifie Modena, or Reggium, than to be-
stow such cost at Mesola.

But as for running waters, wheron tillage, and the fertilitie of the land doth partly de-
pend, although the Estate of the Church hath no want of riuers nor lakes, yet the terri-
torie of Rome might be much bettered, bringing the riuer of Teueron into the towne,
the which *Sisus* the first had projected. And it is said of *Claudius* the Emperour, that he
brought the little riuer of Anien to Rome, with a new channell of stone, and diuided it
into many goodly lakes; and by the meanes of this riuer, besides the good which this
water would do vnto the land, and the commodities it would bring to the inhabitants,
besides the facilitie it would adde to the conduct of victuals and other things, and be-
sides the profit it would bring to gardens, and to trafficke, it would also make the aire bet-
ter and more healthfull, as well for the freshnesse which the running water doth cause, as
for the change of the aire which it doth make: for among other reasons of the bad aire,
which makes the countrie neere vnto Rome inhabitable, they say, that the soile being
made like vnto waues, the aire being kept in, betwixt the one and the other for want of
agitation and passage, comes to be corrupted like vnto a dead water; and the running wa-
ter of Teueron would preuent this mischiefe.

After all this, the commoditie of waters and places should inuite men to build pala-
ces, mills, storehouses, and such like, and to plant orchards and woods vpon the bankes of
the riuer; and all this would serue to make the aire more wholesome, or lesse offensive, &
preferre the labourer and husbandman, and fill the land with fruit: this should be ac-
companied with another benefit of great importance, for that drawing the riuer of Te-
ueron beyond S. Paul, the inundation of Tyber (which hath bene so prejudiciall to the
citic of Rome) should not be halfe so offensive, for that it should want both the ordina-
rie, and extraordinary water of the said Teueron, the which is not so litle, but that it
doth raise Tyber some faddomes.

We haue no cause to feare that drawing Teueron vnder S. Paul, the water of Tyber
would loose her bountie, the which proceeds from the Sulphurous waters which are
brought into it, by Teueron, from the fields of Tiouli; for as physicke cannot helpe the
indisposition of one member, but it shall hurt another: in like manner in ciuile affaires, &
we cannot provide so safely, that if an action be beneficiall to one part, it shall not be
prejudiciall to another; but it sufficeth of two mischiefs to auoide the greatest. We
must adde herunto that the waters of Tiouli (drawne down by Teueron) are not neces-
sary for the bountie of the water of Tyber, for that those which it brings are sufficient: and

of Noire, or Nere; besides, her waters whose colour doth plainly shew how
they are, bring many other waters of diuers vertues, the which we see spring
in many places.

In this discourse, I say that the countrie about Rome, within thirtie miles
rounde this discourse, I say that the countrie about Rome, within thirtie miles
is verie fertile; and doth yeeld abundance of corne and cattell, as it would
be, if the inhabitants, especially strangers, for their health, or rather for dain-
tie, were not more pleased with the wines which come from Corsegue, from the riuer
and from France. But this countrie which is so fertile, is in a manner desolat,
for the inhabitants, and for this cause, there goes yearly from diuers places, espe-
cially of Lombardie, at the least fortie thousand labourers, to manure their grounds,
either in their haruest, and when all is done, they that are liuing, returne to their
owne some corne; for that the greatest part of them doe commonly die, by reason
of the heat of the Sunne, or of the winds which come from the Sea, the which are
pestilentiall, for that they bring with them abundance of vapours from the
ground, which they passe, not being hindered at this day by the woods, all which
is offensive: but much lesse in the citie of Rome than in other places. So as
the countrie which did containe an infinit number of persons, remains now emptie and
desolate, and the plaine which they call Romagnia, from Port Hercules beyond Terracina,
about one hundred and fiftie miles long, hath not aboue eight thousand inhabi-

¶ The Manners of the Ancients.

Men were borne to warre, and did much affect it, making litle account (in
learning) of learning: but in the end, hauing somewhat extended their Em-
bracing at their ease, the greatest and richest amongst them embraced the sci-
ence themselves wonderfully to learning. Yea they that led armies were verie
careful, it was not a thing vnworthie of a commander, and of a great familie, to haue
learning; but contrariwise, young men of the greatest houses of Rome, pleaded
before the Senat, and gaue themselves to the knowledge of their lawes,
and to speake in a word, they sought to be perfect in all sciences, seeing
they were tied one to another. In the beginning they were verie sober, they conten-
ted themselves with verie litle, and contemned great wealth; so as there had been some
of the citie, as *Valerius Publicola*, whom they were forced to burie at the pub-
licke charge. Others busied themselves to seeth Turnups in their litle cottages, hauing
led armies: another held the plough when they came to tell him that he was
a senator: and another, after he had bene Generall of an armie, demanded leaue
to take order for the tillage of two or three acres of land, and for other per-
sones house. But hauing had the spoyle of many provinces, and hauing tasted
of strangers, they did so fauour it, as excessive, and dissolute, crept in
in such sort, as they did exceed all the nations of the world. Moreouer, au-
thors desired to get at what rate soeuer, did so possesse them, as they made no difficul-
ty to seeke out exactions in their provinces, and to lend at vnreasonable interest:
in the end, to banish and murder their fellow citizens, that they might enioy their
country that had the greatest reputation to be wisest, were most couetous, as we
see in *Seneca*, who had foure or fife hundred thousand crownes in England alone, for
he got great interests. In the beginning they had no care but of the greatnesse
of common weale, but afterwards they were carried away with desire of their priuat
after which, all things declined, and the ambition of the citizens of Rome ouer-
came common weale, and reduced it vnder the command of one alone. They tooke
care to see blond spilt in those places which were appointed to that end, where-
of, Thracians or Myrmillons, and the Retiars did fight with all violence to
entertainment to the people. Lyons and other wild beasts were not spared to please
the people, who were so accustomed, and did so affect these spectacles, as he that would
please them, had need of no other thing but to make a great preparation of sword-
players,

XIX.

ers, beasts, comedians, tumblers, and such like : and whosoever had most, was best
 liked of the people. Moreover, the greatzell were alwaies accustomed to preferre vnto
 the people fow many measures of come, and of so much wine by the head, and to make a
 large life of pieces of flauer, which they called *Miffillia*. The fathers comming out of the
 powne, or before euen come out of their lodgings, kiss their daughters, to find if they had
 drunk any wine, which they held to be verie dishonest among the Romans. They did
 not suffer their children to goe out of their houses, neither did they allow them to speake
 vntill they were called. Then sent them into *Tulcany*, to *Athens*, and *Rhodes*, to learne the
 artes and sciences. These children did neuer shew themselves in publicke, vntill they were
 asked, and then they went to be inrolled into the Tribes. Then they shewed them-
 selves at the age of *seuenteene* yeares, whenas they left the *Pretext* or garment of
 a child, and tooke the *Virile robe*, and hauing taken it, euery young man went con-
 siderablye and adoring his much honour ; and whenas the Senat did assemble, these
 young men came in as a companie vnto the Court some one of the Separators, their kinsmen
 or friends, their fathers, and did attend him vntill he came forth, and conduct him to his
 house. As for their marriages, they were accustomed to adoe the wife which went
 for a dowrie, after this manner : first they gaue her a key in her hand, they put vpon her
 a star which had laine a fencer, they put a girdle about her made of sheeps woll,
 which the husband did afterwards vndoe vpon the bed : she did carrie vpon her head
 a garland, which was called *Flammieum*, a garland of *Verueine* mixt with other
 heabes, and they did make her sit vpon a sheeps skinne : and when she went to find her
 husband, she was accompanied by three children, which should haue both father and
 mother, one of them carried a torch burning before her, made of *White thorne* (for that
 these ceremonies were done in the night) and the other two went of either side. They
 did also, before her a dilasse couered with flax, with a spindle full of thread, and after-
 wards they made her touch both fire and water. They did not light about fire to-
 till the marriage, which the *Adiles* were wont to kinde. They vied three kinds of
 separation in marriage : The first was called *Repudium*, whence comes our word to *Repu-*
diat, and they vied this manner, whenas the man left his wife without her consent, and
 the first that vied it was *Cornelius* a hundred yeares after that *Rome* was built, for that his
 wife bare him no children. *C. Sulpicius* repudiated his wife, for that she had beene out
 of the house in her haire, and had no vyle vpon her head. *Q. Antistius* left his wife, for that
 he had seene her talk secretly with a woman that was a *Libertine*. *P. Sempronius* left the
 life, for that his wife had gone to the publicke shews without his priuatie : and *Cesar* put
 away his wife for the jealousy he had of *Clodius*, who was found attired like a woman at
 the feast which *Pompey* had celebrated to the honour of the good Goddesse. The second
 manner was called *Diuorce*, and this kind of sepeation was by the consent of both par-
 ties. The third was called *Separation*, and it was done at the Princes pleasure.

XX. — The ancient Romans did view them that were dead after two manners, and they had two kinds of obsequies: The first was, to cover the dead with earth, and to bury them as E we doe: the other, to burne their bodies; but this manner did not continue long, and the first Senator they burnt after his death was *Silla*. *Numa Pompilius* was the inuenter of obsequies, and he instituted a high Priest who had the charge. The first honour they did to famous men at their funerals, was to praise them with an oration, as *Cæsar*, being but twelve years old, commended his grandfather; and *Tiberius* at the age of nine years, praised his father. The second was to make Sword-players to fight: *Marcus*, and *Decius*, comes to *Iulius Brutus*, were the first that did practise this, in honour of their father. The third was to make a stately feast. The fourth to giue meat to all the people: the first which did thus bury, were those which had the charge of the funerals of *P. Licinius*, a citizen of Rome, who was held to be verie rich. They did also strew certaine flowers and perfumes upon the Tumble, as the people of Rome did at the funerals of *Scipio*. They did also fit up in their Temples and publicke places certaine ornaments, as Scutcheons, Crownes, and such like: and they that could not be interred with all this pompe, for that the charge was verie great, were buried in the cuning by certaine men who had that charge, being

The Manners of this time.

XXII

1557

The Romanes of this time retain many things of the Ancient, as the granitic, which seems to be borne with them, the magnificence, and a certain greatnesse of courage particular to this nation, who know how to gouern it with more discretion than the Spaniards with their affected granitic. Finally Rome is in a manner full of strangers, which come from all parts of Europe; so as we may say that the manners of all these Nations are practised there, and therefore we can't set downe little in particular, the manners of the one and the other are so different. We must onely say that it is a citie, whereas they live with great art, and whereas they beare much respect vnto the poorest that are capable of it to any greatnesse; for that in this place they haue seene so many wonders of fortune, as there is not any one so miserable, but he may be happie, being of the condition and capacity required; so as they feare to incense the meanest, least hauing one day means to reuenge it, they should seeke it. But to speake of them of the countrie, they are like to all other Italians, full of deceipt, they do not easily forget iniuries, they live wickedly in their houses, but they are prodigal when they are to make any outward expence: the gentlemen there are courteous, affable, and very ciuile, fit for armes, and to continue in war: but the common people of the Campagna of Rome, are very grosse, rude, and savage, but they are full of courage and strong, as well as the Ancient. They of the Marquifat of Ancona are of a fierce disposition, and therefore they are fit for war: they are rude in their conuersation, and giue themselves to husbandrie, not caring much for merchandise, it may be for that their countrie hath no navigable riuers, nor goodly plaines, nor any other port but that of Ancona, which is not so good, as they make it, for that it is all filled vp, and is not very safe. In Italie, they call them of Ferrara subtle, them of Bologna wild and vntractable, them of Payence courageous, them of Ostia importune, and them of Rome cruell and villaint. The Romanes bring vnto the warre persecution, the Ferrarois amerie, and they of Viterbe spurs: they say also that they of Ancona are wretched, they of Rimini great eaters of geese, and they of Peruse eaters of fish, doublet, and moreover that they dissemble their pleasure when they haue received any wrong: but the Ferrarois seek to reuenge obstinately, like vnto the Romanes, who are more cruel than any other. As for their reception of strangers, the Ferrarois are rude, and they of Spolitiu grosse, and in all things close. Touching the women, they say that the women of Peruse are very neat and handsome, they of Beneuent rude, they of Bologna somewhat glorious, they of Cesena catching and subiect to take, the Romanes graue, the Ferrarois greedy, and they of Rauenna courteous. To end this discourse, all the Italians in general are so full of ielousie, as they keepe their wives continually lockt vp in their houses, as in prisons, not suffering any man to see them, nor their most priuate friends, if it be not by an extraordinarie fauour, and with so many to obserue them, that to watch their actions, that although the women had a will to make loue, yet were it impossible for them to effect their desire, but with incredible art and extreame paine: they are very false hearted, and hauing once done them any wrong, there is no hope euer to be reconciled, as in other countries, for they will keepe this hatred in their breasts whilest they live, and will continually studie of reuenge, yea many will make shew to haue forgotten the iniurie, to the end they may with more commoditie take reuenge: but the best is, neuer to trust them whom you haue once discontented, for in the end if they can, they will make you know, how iustly it is vnto them.

To be noted vnto all that write of the Riches.

XXIII

The Estate of the Church abounds so in corne, and in all commodities, as it shall hardly fall into any want through defect of the soile, for that all the prouinces being diuided into plains and mountains, the yere must be very vnseasonable if all parts faile at any time, and also there is such store of corne, wine, and oyle, as it doth furnish other countries

thereof Tuscany, Genoa, Venice, and Sclauonia are witnesses. Wherefore death by their transportations, the which it is hard to preuent, for that they wholly by the disposition of the prince. But there may be abundance in some one countrey, yet they shall haue no meanes to enioy it, by reason of the multitudes of Banished men, who commit a thousand villanies, with an infinit number of spoyle, which to which inconuenience it seemes that the estate of the Church is particularly subiect. And in truth many places of this estate lie wast, many fields are not manured, and many people are in miserable estate, by reason of the infinit spoyles which they commit. This might be remedied by being in good accord with the neighbours, by taking away the commodities of the woods and retreats of such people, and by the wayes broader: By this meanes Augustus thought to preuent the murders, which were committed throughout all Italie. If they seeke to hold the field, the first needfull to keepe them from joyning together, and if they make a head, to some meanes to make them jealous and distrustfull one of another; and for conclusion to follow the course and proceeding of Sixtus the fift, and of Clement the eight, who in a manner rooted out the whole race.

Magna makes salt which they carrie into other Countries. The Marquifat doth beare vent one hundred thousand Settlers of wheat, vnto the Venetians, and great oyle. The Patrimonie and the Campagna of Rome haue many times assisted with corne, and sometimes the realme of Naples.

The citie of Rome there are some Princes and Barons which haue fiftie, and a thousand crownes a yere rent, and some more; but they are generally rather rich, the which must of necessitie follow, where there is not any proper art, which the people may entertain themselves, for that in a maner all things which are brought from other countries, and especially their woollen cloth, and silkes, are brought from Lucca, Florence, Genoa, and Naples. It is also verie remarkable to obserue, that which is brought to Rome, from all parts of Christendome, partly for the strangers which remaine there, and partly also for the expeditions which are made, and particularly for the bulls of benefices, and partly also for the inuestiture of lands, or for profit, or ambition.

For traffike, we cannot denie but the Estate of the Church sayles in this respect, the renewes of the Princes lands are not proportionable to the greatnesse of it. But to make it of greater traffike, there are two things required. The one is to be rich, especially that of silke and wooll, which are of so great importance, as there is most part depends the greatnesse of Venice, Milan, Naples, and Genoa, where the people entertaine themselves, and for the most part grow rich.

In case thing to plant Mulberrie trees about Rome, and other townes of the which they haue done in the territories of Verona, Vincenza, and Milan. The soyle is soile and as fertile as any other. If the order of the Humbled, in the beginning of the reformation, were able to bring in the art of Wooll to Florence, and into other places, it would be difficult for the Popes authoritie, and for a people that would employ themselves? or why might not these arts which flourish so in other townes, be transported to Rome, Ancona, Ascoli, and Rauenna? The other thing is, the commoditie of traffike, for the which it is necessarie to cleanse and accomodate the porte of Ciuita, and Ancona, to draw the traffike of the West vnto the fift, and that of the East vnto the last, and they must also draw Merchants thither by goodly priuiledges and exemptions, and entertaine them kindly: wherein they must not be sparing, for that the more of states, and the riches of princes consists for the most part in the great access of Merchants.

The Popes renewes, they consist in the custome of Rome, and other tolls vpon the bodies in the imposition of meale and salt at Rome, in the custome of oyle and wine, and the estate of the Church, and in the custome of cattle in the Patrimonie, in the Tofse, the Controller generall of the Posts, crimes at Rome, in the three payed by the Clergie, imposed by Paul the third for once, but afterwards made perpetual,

A Settler of wheat weighs 240 pounde Some write it twice it is twelve bushels.

perpetual; in the three yeares ayd paid by the religious of Italie, which are not of the A
 tugging orders; in the collections of Spain, Portugal, and Italie; in the rents of S. Peter
 payed by the realm of Naples, and the duchies of Vrbino, Parma, Placentia, and others;
 in the Datarie, which is the Disputcher of the Popes Bulls; and moreover, in the ordi-
 nary reuenues of the Province of Rome, of the Marquisat, the Patrimoine, Campagna,
 Vmbria, Ferrara, Cambrin, Peruse, Bologna, Beneuent, and of many villages, and other
 small reuenues.

I doe not put into this account the profit of legations, and gouernements retained
 (as I haue said) by the Pope: For that it may be equalled with the pensions which he
 giues vnto diuers Cardinals that be poore. I doe not also reckon the Annates, and first
 fruits of benefices, and pensions for the expedition of Bulls, for that they come not to
 the Chamber, but are affected to diuers officers. Many of these reuenues haue bene
 alienated by diuers Popes, and yet at this day they yeeld about a million and a halfe of
 crownes.

These Alienations haue bene made vnder diuers names, either of Offices, or of
 Monts. The offices are in a manner all the Ordinaries of the Court, and many other
 Ordinaries are added, the which haue this condition, That they are voyd by death, or
 that when as he that holds them is made a Cardinall, and then the Chamber sells
 them againe: and they make account that this profit doth yeeld 300000 crownes.

The Monts are of two natures, either voyd by death, and these yeeld twelue in the C
 hundred by the yeare; or else they passe vnto their heires, and they yeeld seuen, or seuen
 and a halfe, the which the Chamber payes yearly.

Besides this, there are many charges vpon the reuenues, as the gouernement of
 Rome, and the Provinces, and that which is giuen to the officers of the people of Rome.
 Moreover, the expences of the household, of the guard of Suisses, and light horse, of the
 guard of the Castell S. Ange, Ostia, Ciuit Vecchia, Terracina, and Oriuete, of the
 Singingien, and many other expences of the Chappell, of Trumpets, pensions of diuers
 Officers, Noncious, Poets, Almes, and gifts. But notwithstanding all these things,
 and the great treasure which Pope Pius the first employed in many buildings, yet he ma-
 naged his estate so thriflingly, as in five yeares that he was Pope he layed vp foure mil-
 lions of gold in the Castell of S. Ange. For the Pope hath alwayes meanes to raise mo-
 ney speedily, by two wayes especially, the one in creating of Cardinalls, if not openly
 for money; yet at the least by reason of the Benefices and Offices which shall be voyd:
 the other by opening his hand a little, allowing of Resignations, and giuing other gra-
 ces, as hath bene accustomed. But for the doing of this, the Pope must applie his con-
 science to his affaires: and therefore Sixtus the fourth said, That he would neuer want
 siluer whilst he had a hand and a pen: And in truth, Pius the fourth did draw from the
 orders of religious men onely foure hundred thousand crownes, and might haue had a
 million, if he would (as some aduised him) haue admitted of the Resignations of Benefi-
 ces, with this clause, That if he to whom it was resigned, died, it should returne to the Re-
 signor: and for the composition of Offices. Paul the third entred into league with the
 Venetians and the Emperour against the Turke, for the sixt part of the charge; and he
 sent to succour Charles the first, twelue thousand foot and five hundred horse entertain-
 ed, and yet he aduanced his house to that greatness wherein we now see it. Pius the
 sixt sent foure thousand foot, and one thousand horse, to Charles the ninth the French
 King.

So let the Reader see more plainly the Popes reuenues, and expences, I haue
 thought it fittest to set downe a particular estate, such as I could collect.

XXV.

The customes of Rome haue bene vniuersally rented out to him that would giue most,
 for nine yeares, that is to say, after the rate of five and thirtie thousand crownes, or f
 thereabouts, a yeare, and in deducting all the Regalities, with the Augmentation, the
 receipts which are vied, the wines of Embassadors, and religious places which are free,
 and others that are priuiledged, there will remaine at the disposition of the Chamber
 17000 crownes.

The

the custome of salt in Rome let out commonly for seuen yeares to him that will giue
 and deducting all regalities, and charges, there remains yearly for the Cham-
 8950 crownes.

Composition of two carlins for the grinding of corne in Rome, was erected by
 the third, and afterwards it was augmented vnto the summe of 21333 crownes,
 the rate of seuen and a halfe for the hundred, and afterwards they were reduced to
 the rate of the fit, and assigned to the Maisters of the building, and the whole reuenue
 of the manning is giuen to the people of Rome, with the ourfright of one of
 16000 crownes.

Maisters of the Chamber) amounts to
 doe let out the custome of the Quatrin vpon flesh at Rome, after the rate of
 20000 crownes.

Composition of four Iulios vpon the tun granted to the people of Rome 3000 crowne.
 Composition of a Quatrin vpon euery pound of flesh in the Estate of the Church, ex-
 cept of Rome, Bologna, Cambrin, and Beneuent, is let out commonly for 60000 crowns
 but by reason of the expences and regalities there remains not yearly vnto the
 5000 crownes.

Maister of the posts at Rome, and throughout all the Estate of the Church,
 for 5000 crownes, but deducting all charges and recompences, there remains
 2000 crownes.

Maisters of Tulse were sometimes let for 64500 crownes a yeare, whereof they
 6000 crownes to the makers of alum, and the rest to diuers others, with the rights
 Maister of the Chamber, so as there remains nothing for the Chamber.

Composition of candles is let yearly at
 of S. Peter comes yerely to 31000 crownes, and they demand it euery yeare
 Peters day 31000 crownes.

Clergie compounding for their spoiles, pay yerely to S. Peter 2160 crownes,
 quarter of religious Monkes, amounts yearly to 30662 crownes, whereof they
 3000 crownes to Mont Nauinall of the Monkes, the which they extinguish, and the
 15702 to Mont Pie, so as there remains nothing for the Chamber.

Trienniall subsidie of the Marquisat, amounts to 60000 crownes of gold, after
 Iulios to the crowne, whereof they leaue 400 crownes for the building of An-
 2000 crowns for the walls of Fane, and 1160 crownes for the walls of Ciuita No-
 to Mont Cosere, sold vnto the Seigneur John George Cesarin, and 25 crownes for
 salures wages, and they pay yerely 4000 crownes vnto the Depositarie; so as in
 of the yeare there remains vnto the Chamber 4958 crownes.

Trienniall subsidie of Rome amounts to 40304 crownes, whereof they deduct
 priuiledges, and 223 crownes are left to the Treasurer of the Province for the
 ward, whereof he makes account, and other 5400 crownes to the Colledge of
 of the Chamber for the three which be added, and 203 crownes to the Treasurer
 of this subsidie, for his wages, and the carrying of money to Rome; so as there
 remains vnto the Chamber 29778 crownes.

Trienniall subsidie of Vmbria & Peruse 39701 crowns after 11 Iulios to the crown,
 they deduct for lands that are priuiledged 741 crownes, and they pay yearly to
 Treasurer of Peruse 9485 crownes, to supplie the payments of the Treasure: but
 shall haue hereafter, and they haue at this day the greatest part: and 290 crownes
 for the carrying of money, and they haue bene accustomed to leaue 200
 a yeare more for wages; so as there remains to the Chamber 29076 crownes.

Trienniall subsidie of the Campagna of Rome, with the maritime places, comes
 to 15565 crownes: the lands being taxed at
 which were set in the yere 1551 by the Pope at 1755 crownes of gold, and in the
 1571, by Pope Pius, at 1553 crownes, and deducting 770 crownes which they did
 for the impossibilitie of the exemptions, and 120 crownes for the Collectors
 transportation of money, there remains 14643 crownes of gold, whereof there
 13632 crownes.

Money vnto the Chamber about
 Nn iij
 The

The tax of horses in the Marquisat amounts to 77221 crownes, and they are assigned to the Treasurer of the Province, so as the revenue which enters into the said Treasury is yearly 77221 crownes.

The tax of horses of the Patrimoine comes to 978 crownes, and was given in assignation to the farmer of the customs of the Patrimoine, and they collect 978 crownes.

The tax of the horses of Romagna amounts to 5027 crownes, whereof some part is paid for the recompence of the mills of Rauenna, and part to the Colledge of Mont Pa: not void; so as there comes yearly vnto the Chamber, which they draw out of the Treasury of Rauenna, but 800 crownes.

Tyulipais for yearly rent 200 crownes, the which was sometimes given to the deceased Cardinal of Ferrara, and at this day is paid to the Depositarie 200 crownes.

The augmentation of the triennall subsidie of the Marquisat, amounts to 10134 crownes, after twelve Julios to the crowne: they deduct 202 crownes for the charges, and twentie for the Collector, and for the carrying of money; so as there remains for the Chamber 9912 crownes.

The augmentation of the province of Romagna comes to 6512 crownes of gold, they deduct 114 crownes for the lands which pay lesse for the subsidie of three yeares, and 70 crownes for the Collectors wages, and the carrying of money, there remains for the Chamber 6325 crownes.

The augmentation of the province of the Patrimoine is 2423 crownes: they deduct 305 crownes for those lands which pay no subsidie, and 100 crownes for the Collector, and carrying of money; there remains 2018 crownes.

The Treasurership of the Marquisat, with the tax of horses of this province is commonly rented at 6215 crownes.

The Treasurership of Romagna is let at 3597 crownes, at ten Julios to the crowne, and for the gouernement of that province, and the Prerogatiues of the Seigneurs of the Apostolicke Chamber, and to the Popes Depositarie 1270 crownes.

The Treasurer of Romagna receiues for the Triennall subsidie 2720 crownes, and 2000 crowns for the Legats Estate, and 3360 crownes for the guard, and 2220 crownes for the Bol; whereof they deduct 1700 crownes for the Vice-Legats entertainment, and 1068 crownes for the guard. There remains to the Chamber 7548 crownes.

The Customs and Treasurership of the Patrimoine is let for 66377 crownes: but for that there are many prerogatiues and disbursements, there remains little for the Chamber.

The Treasurership of Camerin is rented at 24500 crownes for nine yere: but by reason of many payments there remains little for the Chamber.

The Treasurership of Peruse and Vmbria, with the taxes of horses of the said province, is commonly let for 20300 crownes, but by reason of the great regalities and payments there remains little for the Chamber.

The Treasurership of Alsoli is rented for five yeares at 6354 crownes, but by reason of many regalities and payments, there remains little for the Chamber.

The Treasurership of Campagna yeelds 10000 crownes, but by reason of diuers payments, there remains nothing.

The Treasurership of Norcia held by *Nicholas Spinelli*, having aduanced money to the Chamber, and to keepe the account of the revenues of the communalitie, yeelds no account vnto the Chamber.

The Treasurership of Cascia was sold in Aprill 1572 to *Ioseph Ieronimo* of Foligno, who gave 500 crownes of gold vnto the Chamber, and he yeelds no account.

The Treasurership of Beneuent pays 254 crownes to them of the Chamber, 728 crownes for wages and diuers charges, 768 crownes to the Gouernor, and 50 crownes to him that holds the place; therefore there remains little to the Chamber.

The impost of Spoleum hath bene let for 4260 crownes yearly, whereof they pay 2000 crownes to the Treasurer of Peruse, and 1260 to the Gouernor of Spoleum; so as there remains for the Chamber 2219 crownes.

The

The custome of Ancona is farmed to the Colledge of Mont Pie for 3500 crownes a yeare, assigned to the Colledge: And moreover, the transportation of 1000 Charges of wine, which not being leuied, payes vnto the Chamber 1000 crownes a yeare, and 3500 crownes for the Prerogatiues of the Maister of the Chamber, 3500 crownes.

The custome of Amaragh, of Ciuita Noua, is let yearly for 13000 crownes, whereof 117 to the Apostolicke Secretaries, and to the Nuns of Viterbe 173 crownes: there remains for the Chamber 12710 crownes.

The custome of Biede is 1030 crownes, the which they pay vnto the Depositarie.

Casal of Magrotte did yeeld yerely to the Chamber 9240 crownes, and was sold to *Paul* the fourth to the Hospitall of the Holie Ghost.

The custome of the Quattrin vpon euerie pound of flesh, at Bologna, amounts yerely 6038 crownes, assigned to the Mount of Augmentation at Bologna.

The triennall Subsidie at Bologna for 9900 crownes, was assigned to the Mount of Augmentation. Some hold that it doth amount to 30000 crownes yearly, all the office their assignments there.

The rent of Rierte was sometimes ingaged to *John Baptista* of Serene, for 400 crownes, the sonne of *Peter Paule Mignanel* did enjoy it: It yeelds yearly the summe 816 crownes.

These last passages were accustomed to be let yearly for 250 crownes, but they were sold to *Francis Fontaine*, and afterwards held by *Ierome Coeli*.

The Minutes of the Chancerie yeeld yearly 10000 crownes, and are in a manner all his Holiness officers, and household seruants.

The Mount of the Religion brings vnto the Chamber 16338 crownes. The toll of wine was rented at Bologna at 6000 crownes.

The confiscation of Fane for crimes was assigned to the Treasurer of the Marquisat, there remained nothing but the transportations, the which doth amount yearly 1000 crownes.

The lands of Seiches, did in former times pay yearly 140 crownes.

The custome of making of Alum doth come yearly to 2000 crownes.

The custome of Salt of Sclaunia yeelds yearly 750 crownes.

The profits of Mont Pie, which should be extinguished, they draw by the yeare 2350 crownes.

The toll of the Mont of Auignon, they make yearly 616 crownes.

¶ The Renewers of the See which are uncertaine.

The first yeares of Pope *Sixtus* did yeeld 13000 crownes.

They say that the collection of Spaine, one yeare with another, amounts vnto the 44000 crownes.

The of Portugal amounts one yeare with another to 22000 crownes.

The of Italie, one yeare with another 12000 crownes.

The transportation of come, out of the Patrimoine, the Marquisat, and Romagna, one yeare with another, come to 30000 crownes.

The profits of the Mont vacable haue yeelded one yeare with another 1000 crownes.

The profits of Monts which are vacable comes yearly to about 7500 crownes.

The managing of Ecclesiasticall liuings comes yearly to 3500 crownes.

The Depositarie or Confignation of Bologna; yeelds yearly about 4000 crownes; the same remains within the towne.

The Chancie, or Dispatcher of the Popes Bulls, yeelds yearly. 68250 crownes.

¶ What the Pope giues to Cardinals, and what he spends in other things.

He giues yearly in pensions and fees to Cardinals, to some more, to some lesse, the summe of 1310 crownes.

The

There is commonly giuen to his Holinesse high Steward for his yearely expence, the A
 summe of 6000 crownes.
 More to him for aid of Court, 12000 crownes.
 For the renewing of the Cupboord twice a yeare, 200 crownes.
 For the apparrell of the household at Christmas, 1720 crownes.
 For the apparrell of the Gromes of the stable twice a yeare, at *S. John Baptista*, and at Christmas, 1350 crownes.
 For the charges of his Holinesse office of Secretarie yearely, 332 crownes.
 To a Clarke vnder the Secretarie yearely, 180 crownes.
 All the Singingmen of his Holinesse Chappell, haue for their yearely wages the B
 summe of 4656 crownes.
 To the Apothecarie for the wax of the Chappel, which he doth furnish for the Popes 1590 crownes.
 For the wax at Candlemas, 1500 crownes.
 For the Greene Cloth, 240 crownes.
 For the charges on Thursday before Easter, 250 crownes.
 For the Oliue branches, 270 crownes.
 For the role of gold which he giues, 240 crownes.
 For a Sword, Girdle, and Hat, imbroydered with pearle, 380 crownes.
 For a Canopie of cloth of gold, for Christ, and the Virgin *Marie*, with the fashion, C
 the summe of 3000 crownes.
 For the tents on *Corpus Christi* day, with all the preparation, 250 crownes.
 Wages of Esquiers and Groomes of the Chamber by the month, 20 crownes.
 To them that keepe the Records monethly, 25 crownes.

¶ What he giues to his *Religios*.

XXVII. T O his Noncio which is with the Emperour, euerie moneth, 230 crownes.
 To the Noncio that is in France monethly, 145 crownes.
 To his Noncio which is at Venice monethly, 230 crownes. D
 To his Noncio in Saucy by the moneth, 115 crownes.
 To his Noncio with the duke of Tuscanie, 57 crownes.
 To his Noncio in Germanie by the moneth, 115 crownes.
 To his Noncio in Poland by the moneth, 230 crownes.
 To his Noncio with the Princes of Germanie, 130 crownes.
 To his Noncio at Naples.
 To his Noncio in Spaine.

¶ The Popes Guards.

XXVIII. T O the Capitaine generall of his Holinesse guards, yearely the sum of 2400 crownes. E
 To his Lieutenant by the yeare, 639 crownes.
 To his guard of men at armes, and light horse, 10077 crownes.
 To the Swisses by the yeare, 10932 crownes.
 To the Swisses for their apparrell, 2600 crownes.
 More to them for their caps and feathers, 200 crownes.
 For their lesser and greater ensignes, 1000 crownes.
 To giue at Christmas, and other times, 2000 crownes.
 For the hire of horses for the Swisse, when his Holinesse goes out of Rome, the summe F
 250 crownes.

¶ The Forces.

XXIX. F or souldiers, the generall opinion is, That the best souldiers of all Italie are in the
 of the Church, and they make account that the Marquisat and Romagna are
 able

with twenty and six thousand men fit to beare armes, and it may be the Patri-
 and Campagna as many. And without doubt, there is no question but a Pope
 accompanied with some others, may with his meanes and forces, do good and
 when he pleaseth, especially in Italie, where he hath so great a share, whereof we
 want of examples, which teach vs that Popes with lesse forces than they haue
 maintained their authoritie against the mightiest princes; that they deposed
 Kings, and changed Estates at their pleasures: yea we know what Pope
 could doe in the time of our fathers, who drew the French king to passe the
 and to put all Italie into combustion.

For tenth, and *Clement* the seventh settled the greatnesse of their houses by many
 which they made alone, and accompanied with others; and *Clement* after that he had
 some crosses and misfortunes grew greater than he was before. *Paul* the third
 ed the dignitie of the Church, and the quiet of Italie, betwixt two mightie
 more by his authoritie, than by armes: he made war against the Turke, and left his
 in that greatnesse we now see it. *Julio* the third taking arms in Italie, brought all
 fusion: and *Paul* the fourth spent many millions of gold, and left a remarkable ex-
 which may grow by the ill gouerned desires of a Pope. Wherefore as the An-
 are accustomed to sacrifice to some gods for the obtaining of good, & to others
 harme; so it hath beene held wisdom to be alwaies in good termes with Popes,
 good or otherwise: for as the fauours which wel affected Popes may do, are pro-
 in warre and peace; so the harmes which we may receive from ill disposed
 enemies, are very dangerous, and he that hath a will to trouble others shall
 men to thrust them on.

For reason, all the princes of Christendome both great and small, either moued
 or with some other considerations, haue humbled themselves vnto the Popes,
 general, were they neuer so great, haue sought to make them their friends, or
 not to be opposit vnto them. But to returne to the people which are vnder the
 power, haue shewed what numbers may be drawne out of two or three prouin-
 ces, we must consider the qualitie of these men.

The Marquisat is full of warlike men, and for this cause fit to keepe an enemy from
 and to make him repent it, if he shall land.
 These are the Latins and Romanes, the subduers of the world, and they of Ro-
 whose valour, we will say no other thing, but that by their meanes Italie was
 from the barbarous nations which did tyrannise it, and recovered her first glorie.
Virgile earle of Cuni, hauing gathered together twelue thousand fighting men,
 called the companie of *S. George*, he pursued in such sort the forraigne nations
 of Italie, as he expelled them all, & restored the discipline of war in such sort,
 before was ill vnderstood by the Italians, as they did not hold him a capitaine
 but marched and fought vnder his command.

The Marquisat were the first which began the Sociall war, the which the Ro-
 held to be one of the most dangerous they euer had. There you see the *Vmbrians*,
 assistance *Hannibal* felt, after that he had vanquished the Romanes at the Lake of
 Lake, not being able to make himselfe master of Spoletum; whereby he found
 that it would be to subdue Rome, seeing that after so great a victorie, he had at-
 tained this towne in vaine.

The discipline of capitaines is no lesse, than the valour of souldiers, in the Estate of
 war: for there are many families able to furnish all the princes and common-
 of Europe with capitaines: so as it is no wonder if in the war of Ferrara, happily
 in that time, there were neere twentie thousand foot, and two thousand horse
 to armes, all out of this Estate, almost in one moneth, the which few other prin-
 ces could haue done.

In situation, this Estate lies betwixt the Adriatique and the Tyrrhenes sea, and is
 in the middle of Italie, wherefore as it is secured from the spoiles of the Barba-
 rians, so it is fit to trouble Italie, or to keepe it in peace.

There

There is not any port capable of a great fleet, and the Romane coast is much subject to A tempests, like vnto that of the Marquiss and Romagna; so as he cannot be assaulted by sea, neither with great forces, nor without danger. We must adde hereunto that the part which lies vpon the Tuscane sea is vnsafe, the which alone were sufficient to encounter and defeat an enemy.

Moreover the Marquiss and Romagna haue for a rampire and bastion, on this side Sclauonia, and on the other the two Siciles: the which doth sufficiently appeare, for that the Turke cannot durst approach it, notwithstanding that they haue much desired it: and by land there are not any confines which he should feare, for he exceeds Tuscane in forces, and doth not yeeld to the realme of Naples: for notwithstanding that this realme be greater, richer, and better peopled than the Estate of the Church, yet is it nothing inferior in many things.

First, being long and narrow, there is much more difficultie to vnite her forces: besides it is not subject to conquest, so as the prince cannot vse the seruice of those people with the like assurance, as if they were his natural subiects, for that he is forced to maintain great garrisons, wherein the king of Spain doth in a manner spend all the reuenues. But the Pope is natural Lord of this Estate, for the preservation whereof he shal not be enforced (in regard of his subiects) to spend any thing: I leaue the authoritie which religion giues vnto the Pope, and the interest which other princes haue in the preservation of the Churches estate, whose fall would be their losse; and I also forbear to shew with what readinesse foraine princes would vndertake the protection of the Church, either for glorie, or for some reason of State. And therefore we did see *Gregorie* the seventh, and *Alexander* the third, make head against princes which had the forces of the Empire (being then more powerful than they are at this day) vnto the two Siciles.

What shall I say of the forts of Oruicete, Ciuitastellana, Castro, Palliano, of the castell of Spoleum, Peruse, Ancona, Forli, Bertinor, the towne and citadell of Ferrara: and in like manner we may say that Vmbria by reason of the straight passages, and the strength of the situation, is nothing but a fort.

This Estate might be fully assured, either by fortifying it with places of strength, as the Venetians doe, or with souldiers as the Turke, or with the one and the other, as the French king, and he of Spaine vse to do.

As for forts (I speake in hereditarie Estates, and not of conquest, and gotten by force and violence) it is questionable, Whether it be better to fortifie the frontiers, or the heart of an Estate, or both together? Whereupon I say, that of chiefe townes, some are like vnto the heart, as well for their situation, as for their office: for that they are in the middell of Estates, as Lisbon, Prague, London, Florence, Paris, and Madrid, by reason of the office, for that with their riches they giue strength to the other members: some are like vnto the heart touching the office, and to the head in regard of the situation, for that they are not in the middell of the Estate, but vpon some extremitie, as Naples, Palermo, Messina, or Genoua, which is seated in the middell of the riuer or prouince, in regard of the length, but vpon an extremitie in respect of the breadth.

Chiefe capitall townes which are in the middell of Estates, should rather be safe than strong, and the safetie consists to be farre from danger: this is obtained by the fortification of frontiers and passages. For the fortification of a chiefe towne seated in the heart of an Estate, doth first of all make them faint hearted that dwell in the rest of the countie, and doth also blemish the princes authoritie and reputation, as if distrusting to be able to defend the rest, he should seeke to save himselfe in the heart of his Estate: for that whereas the naturall heart rests in the feet, legs, and other remost parts vnto the head, there is little hope of the patients health; so whenas a prince doth fortifie the towne of the head, and the middell of his Estate, it seemes that he is without courage, or meanes to defend his frontiers. Moreover, sauing the extremities, he shal preserve the middell, but not contrariwise: and therefore the middell must employ it selfe for some good to fortifie the extremities; the which cannot be done if you do fortifie the middell, for that it will be necessarie to put into the fortification and supplying of this middell,

that which should be fit for the extremities, that is to say, victuals, artillerie, munitions, and souldiers. And for that the chiefe cities are commonly great, they require great expence and prouision, as there will be no meanes remaining to fortifie the frontiers. This hath bene tried by the duke of Mantoua, in the fortification of Casal. And by this meanes (in my opinion) I haue answered that which was desired, that we may fortifie the extremities and the middell altogether.

And the end of all frontiers and extremities is to keepe the enemy out of the middell part, must haue a speciall care to furnish the extremities; as we see that hath life and soule, the office of the hands is to keepe it from dangers, and the heart to furnish vigour and force to the hands. Besides, a chiefe Citie shall haue better meanes to succour the extremities not being fortified; but also will be in more care, being forced to lodge all her hope in the safetie and defence of the frontiers. Therefore I conclude, that such a towne is fitter to keepe the enemy farre off, than the frontier with all her forces, not being fortified, than with part of the forces being put in defence. All which is spoken of Estates that are somewhat greater than the small ones, whose extremities are in a manner joynted to the heart, the fortification of the middell is verie necessarie.

The chiefe cities being seated otherwise, and which are more like vnto the head than the heart, not being safe, for that they are neere vnto some extremitie, haue need to be fortified. Wherefore, as nature doth assure the heads of some beasts, not only with their hands, but also with homes; so the reason of State and warre doth not onely enuiron the heads with walles, but doth also fortifie them with citadels.

And I say, That townes seated in the center of an Estate, doe as much resemble the heart, for they doe impart to places which are about them, not onely spirit, but also power, in fortifying the one, it cannot be denied in the other. It is not hard to see the difficultie: For first of all, the head in beasts serues both for head and for hand, for that it contains the braines; and for hands, for that this beast vseth his mouth. And there are some beasts which doe it with the mouth, and to this effect, as the Dogge, the Wolfe, the Lyon, Fish, and Fowle: some with their horns, as the Bull, the Stagge, and the Bugle: others offend with their teeth, which are extraordinarily long, as the Boare, and the Elephant, who hath his tuskes or snout, for that the office of the head is not to fight, but to foresee and to manage wherewith it is indowed, and it is the hand which must repulse all blows, and preuent dangers. Wherefore the head of beasts is not armed with the head, but as the hand. Moreover, the gouernment of the State, doth not onely place, but of the Prince and Magistrat, who remains sometimes in one place, and sometimes in another.

Which caused the Pope to remaine sometimes at Viterbe, sometimes at Oruicete, at Anagnina, at Rieti, in Auignon, and Ferrara. But as for the giuing vigour to the frontiers, it depends vpon the heart of the Estate; by the greatnesse of the reuenues, by the multitude of munition and victuals, multitude of men, and commoditie of situation; which cannot be transported from one place vnto another.

Some is not in the middell of the Estate of the Church, for that it is farre from the heart of Ferrara, and neere vnto the frontier of Abruzzo, and yet it is not vpon an extremitie, or neere vnto an enemy: and therefore it is not fit that it should be fortified, nor altogether weak and neglected, but as we see it, with the borough, it is fortified, and the rest rather walled than well rampired: for if it were altogether weak, it would cause the disorders and inconueniences whereof we haue spoken of before, the Estate, consume the enemy, and giue time to succour, it shall suffice, the hand Castle be fortified.

And I haue something of that which they haue done at diuers times, touching the city of Rome: *Belisarius* repaire the ruined walls, but with a farre lesser circuit of walls being afterwards ouerthrowne, *Adrian* the first redified them; and *Leo* the fourth

XXX.

to keepe the Sarazins from entring into Rome, comming vp the riuer, he built A
seene Towers about the Citie, whereof there were two verie necessarie, that is, one
upon either side of the river of Tyber. He compassed in the Vatican with a wall, which
is called by his name *Leanine*. *Nicholas* the third did wall in Belucder. *Paul* the third
began to wall in the Bocca, with a designe, That Rome being verie solitarie towards
the East, and the wall came from the places inhabited, and for that cause not to be well
fortified, he did not to be defended with few men, the people might have there at
the first some refuge for a time. *Pius* the fourth did finish this fortification, and in-
habited the Castle. There remaine thereto have the frontiers fortified.

The Church confines with the realme of Naples in all places crossing Italie from one B
Sea vnto another: the Perusin, and the Patrimonie, confine with the great Duke; the
Counties of Ferrara and Bologna with the duke of Mantua. Moreover, the interest of
Princes will not allow, league and vniion among them against the Church, for that it is
more expedient for them all to maintaine her in her greatnesse, than by her fall any prince
should grow greater, being already mightie of himselfe: For as the Pope is vniuersall
father, as they say; so it seemes that the Estate of the Church, is an Estate from the
which all should attend succours, as the Venetians haue often had against the Turke,
the Knights of Malta in their necessities, and the Emperour *Charles* in the warre of Saxo-
nie, for that all these haue bene relieved with men and money from Popes. I doe not
speake of the Emperour *Ferdinand*, or of *Maximilian*, or of *Rodolfe* which last raigned, C
or of the Prince of Transiluania, which haue all received succours of horse and foot
against the Turke, with great summes of money from *Clement* the seuenth, *Paul* the third,
Pius the third, *Clement* the eighth. Wherefore (in my opinion) it doth
more import the Pope to maintaine himselfe in the reputation of a common father, and
not to breake with any one, than to fortifie his places: for that as by this meanes he doth
assure all the neighbour Princes to his Estate; so they will all secure him, and strue to
serue and succor him. But if he shall fortifie any place, let it be in the remotest parts, which
are those of Ferrara and Bologna. As for Ferrara, it is so strong, as the Church cannot
receiue any losse on that side. The countie of Bologna is weake, for that the Citie is
not strong, not well fortified; by reason of some places which command it. So as to ad-
D
dresse the State of that side, the best course will be to fortifie Castel-france, the which for
that it stands in a plaine, and is not subiect to any command, is capable of any fortifica-
tion; and for that it is in a fruitfull countie, and hath Bologna for neighbour, and in-
teressed in her defence, for her owne good, it may be easily furnished and supplied. *Pius*
the first began the fortification of Castel-franco, but he gaue it ouer at the first; by reason of
the bruit of the war of Cyprus. With these two keys of Ferrara, and Castel-franco, the
Estate of the Church should be secured from all stormes which may happen on the other
side of the Alpes and Lombardie. Towards the realme of Naples, the length of the fron-
tier would require many forts. Wherefore, towards the Marquisat, they may fortifie
Tranfome, Otranto, and Alcolit, but Ascoli being a good towne, strong of situation, and of E
people, and situated beyond the river of Tront in the enemies countie, were able to
trouble them in their owne Estate, as the true reason of warre doth require. Towards
Sabina, it will suffice to haue Rieti, a reasonable good towne, and in a good countie, the
which must not be abandoned to the enemy. Towards Campagna, although it would be
a matter of importance to fortifie Terracina, Frosinon, Fierentin, Segni, and Anagnia, yet
it is hold that it would suffice to make Frosinon and Anagnia defensible, ruining all the
other forts which are neerer to Rome, so that the enemy should not lodge there and
be so strong. Towards Tuscanie, the Church hath the townes of Castello, Perufe,
Castello, and Viterbe, which fortie most part are of good strength. But to speake
of the State of the Church, being in most danger towards Tuscanie, not in re-
gard of the forces of that duke, but for the passage he may giue vnto the enemy, as they
did vnto *Charles* the eighth, the French king, and to *Charles* duke of Bourbon, it shall be fit
for the Pope shall alwaies endeavour to haue the duke of Tuscanie for friend, so as he
may be a defence for him against strangers.

XXX

shall now speake of the Tuscan sea: and doubtlesse it is fit that the Pope haue
the galleys well appointed, as well to assure the sea and navigation, as for a certain
reputation; for that it would seeme an vnworthie thing to abandon this
the which the Church hath so many places: & it seems that a prince which doth
his sea forces to them at land cannot be held powerfull: but the galleys might
in command to some order of knights, to whom they might giue the Island
for their aboad. But to know of what sort this order should be instituted: the
of the great duke *Cosmo* doth shew it, the manner whereof would be tedious to
were fit that the chiefe of the order should remaine at Ponze with the galleys;
that the galley-slaves and the other people, whom the bad aire consumes at Ciui-
chia would be more healthfull there, and more lustie; and also that by their aide
which is eightene miles in circuit, and hath nere vnto it Palmaioule which hath
and Ianuco six, with three other smaller Islands, all fertile (the which in *Strabo*
are full of inhabitants) should be secured from pirats, and manured. And they
also draw some profit from this sea, which abounds in fish, & especially pilchards,
the galleys should be in a fit place to discover the sea, and more commodious
if pirats, which should go towards the land to get some bootie, or in their return
is not any thing whereof they should haue more care, than to preferue and
the inhabitants of the State, for thereon doth the greatnesse of all principali-
tye depend.

Upon I thinke it fit to discourse of the reason why in many parts of Italie the
their inhabitants faile, that we may preuent it in the Estate wherof we speake.
The faile partly by naturall causes, as the plague, and partly also by causes which
are naturall and humane, as famine (for that it doth seldom happen that nature
faileth, without the concourse and counterneesse of men) and partly by causes
merely humane, as war, thefts, spoiles, and such like. Men decay also for that
they pay for forraigne princes, and go to serue in their wars; and in this point
any Estate that smarts more than the Church, for that it is as a common field,
where any one hath his desseignes, and whose forces they all employ. Men decay al-
so, the prince ouerchargeth his countie with taxes and impositions, by reason
the people not able to maintaine themselves, marrie not, or else they leaue the
country, or if any marrie, and make their aboad there, they haue no means to entertaine
them, much lesse to breed vp their children, by reason whereof the high waies are
deserted. Men decay also in those places whereas the prince not onely takes away
their substance, but also shuts vp the money which he drawes from them; for ha-
ving away their siluer by impositions, he doth also deprime them of their liues, in
that he taketh all means of getting, to pay those impositions: but he doth worse;
he deprime his subiects of all means to get, but will also haue the gaine
of the traffike. Warre enterprises a far off which consume many, for that
the which the Spaniards find in their enterprises of America, and haue tried
of Flanders, and the Portugals in their voiaiges to the East Indies: the Turkes
the like in their wars of Persia, and in like manner in those of Hunga-
ry, that makes a people miserable and the countie desert, is gluttony and pompe.
These are the cause that they which should be able to feed ten persons with their
owne care, are able to maintain one, and that laboring in vaine and superfluous things,
the profitable and necessarie. The people also decay if the profits first distri-
buted come into the hands of few: the which happened to Italie vnder the
the reason whereof *Plinius* saith, That it was without inhabitants, for the great
destruction of wealth.

XXXI.

XXXII.

¶ The Government of the ancient Romanes.

The Romanes government hath bene so good, as in a manner all their enter-
prises succeeded happily, I thought I should giue content vnto the Reader, if I did
make

IX XX make a briefe description of the auncient government of those who made themselves A
 successful to all that were knowne vnto them, as well for their wisdom, and admirable
 conduct, as for their valor. I will therefore begin with the Senat, of whom depended all the
 government of affaires, and I wil shew how it was before the Monarchie, and what after.
 XXXIII. The order of Senators was instituted by *Romulus*, who considering that his towne was
 fortified with able and able young men, and that it was of no lesse importance to streng-
 then it with counsell, he made choise of a hundred of the chiefe citizens at that time,
 whom he called Fathers by honour, and Senators in regard of their age; and they that
 were afterwards borne of these fathers, were called *Patricij*. *Tullus Hostilius* made this or-
 der more perfect after that he had ruined *Alba*, and carried the inhabitants to Rome: B
 hereafter then among the Senators, the *Tullij*, the *Servilij*, the *Quintij*, the *Gregantij*,
 and the *Cludij*; but when the kings were expelled, *Brutus* the Confull seeing the Senat
 destitute of good men, would haue the chiefe of the Order of Knights made Senators,
 and called them *Pares Conscripti*, that is to say, ioined with the fathers. These Senators
 took vpon them so great authority, as they gouerned all the affaires of the common-
 weale; for as neither the Kings, Confulls, nor Dictators, nor any other Magistrat, did any
 thing, but what was first resolved in the Senat; and *Tarquin* the Proud hauing done many
 things without the authority of the Senat, was called Tyrant, & in the end lost his Estate.
 And there were three orders of Senators; for that some were called *Patricij*, others *Pe-*
darij, and the third *Conscripti*: we haue spoken of the *Patricij*, and *Conscripti*; but as for C
 the *Pedarij* they were so called for many reasons: some say that they might not speake
 their opinions in the Senat, but did consent to others, or *Pedibus ire in sententiam aliorum*:
 others affirme, that many Senators being in office, they went to the Senat in Litters or
 Coaches, and that the rest who were no Magistrats went on foot, and for this cause were
 called *Pedarij*. *Varro* saith that there were certaine knights who hauing executed the
 greatest offices of magistracie, being not yet comprehended in the Senat by the Censors,
 could not deliuer their opinions in the Senat, but onely assist there, and assent with the
 opinions of others. But to set downe the order of giuing their opinions in the Senat, I
 find that in the beginning they were accustomed to suffer him to giue his opinion first,
 who had bene appointed head of the Senat by the Censors. Sometimes also they that D
 were chosen Confulls began. *Tully* in his discourse de *Senectute* saith, that in old time
 they gaue this preheminence to the most auncient; yet they say that he which was entrea-
 ced by the Confull, should speake his opinion first, according to a custome which had bin
 brought in, for he might not entreat any one that was not of the Consular order. *An-
 tius Gellius* saith that *Varro* writes of those that might assemble the Senat, and name a Dicta-
 tor, a Confull, a Pretor, a Tribune of the people, and the Prefect of the towne: he adds
 the Tribune of the war, who had bene Proconfulls, the *Decemviri* or ten men, who had
 then Consular power; and the two men created to order the Common-weale: he saith
 thus he doth not remember whether the Prefect of the cite of the Latins had this au-
 thoritie; for that he was no Senator, nor gaue his opinion in the Senat. *Varro* saith, that E
 the Prefect of the cite might assemble the Senat, and the Tribune of the people might
 do the like. But in the Law *Calpurnia* although he were no Senator; but they hold that
 in regard of the place whereas they might assemble the Senat, it could not be but where
 the *Ides* were appointed, which was by them called Temple. And the Senat being as-
 sembled in the court of *Capitolus*, of *Pompey*, and afterwards in that of *Italia*, which were
 the same places, the *Augusti* ordained that they should be made Temples, that accord-
 ing to the custome of the *Indians*, the deliberation might be in the shade. As for the time
 of assembling, the same author saith, that there was no fixed time, it was made before the
 Summer time, or after the setting; and moreover, that the Censor should appoint the
 time to deliberate. As for the age of Senators, since that which happened to *Papirius Pre-
 textum*, it was ordained that no man vnder the age of threescore and twentie yeres should remain
 within the Senat, as we read in *Plutarche* in the life of *Pompey*. *Varro* saith also that he that
 should enter into the Senat, should first sacrifice; and that their resolutions were after di-
 vers manners, either by dispute, or if the matters were doubtfull, by euery mans opinion, and

they set a fine vpon euery one that came not vnto the Senat whenas it assembled.
 Whithemes that were borne after their fathers death, were notwithstanding called
 the Senat. But they that were conceived and borne after that their fathers had
 put out of the Senat, were not held for Senators children: and contrariwise, if
 they were conceived before this accident. But if the children conceived of a father which
 was put out of the Senat, he dying, they came after his death into the power of
 another a Senator, they were of the Senat.
 As for the Tribunes of the light horse, *Romulus* did first institute them whenas he ad-
 dressed hundred Knights, the which he employed in all the necessities of the Com-
 weale, and called them *Rammesijens*, *Tatiens*, and *Luceres*.
 The creation of Questors is most auncient, for they were ordained in a manner before
 the Magistrats; for it is certaine that *Tullus Hostilius* created them: and whereas
 it is said that *Romulus* had two Questors, it is not certaine. They say they were called
 for that they were to exact the publicke mony, and had the charge of the pub-
 licke treasure, and that one part of these officers went throughout the Prouinces to col-
 lect money due for customes; and the other part had the charge to read in the Senat
 the letters which came from all parts. We read, the Questors did sometimes examine
 the Kings; and *Varro* affirme, that they were called Questors of the question or torture
 they ordained should be giuen to malefactors. Their manner was to chuse Que-
 stors well from among the people, as out of the *Patricij*. And for that the Confulls
 did condemne a citizen of Rome to death without commission from the people,
 it is said, That the Questors should haue the charge of capitall causes: and these
 were the Questors of murders.

As for the Questors of murders, whenas we now looke into the beginning of the *Duumviri*, or two men, we must bring
 us to the time of king *Tullus Hostilius* who ordained them, whenas *Horatius* reur-
 tedious of the *Curiatij*, had slaine his sister. This king seeing that euery man con-
 sidered him to die, he appointed these two men to be Iudges of the fact, who condem-
 ned him; but he appealed from their sentence, and was absolved by the people. This was
 the beginning of the two men, to whom they added a third, and for that they had the
 charge of capitall crimes, they had also the gouernment of the prisons of malefactors:
 as *Lucius* saith, that this Magistrat was employed in the condemnation of *Caius
 Calpurnius*; and they also did punish all them that were found to be of *Castellus*
 race.

As for the Prefect or Gouernour of the Citie, his iurisdiction extended throughout
 the Citie: he took knowledge of all crimes that were committed: he gaue audience to
 all that fled vnto the Statues and complained of their Maisters. He had also power
 to punish all those which accused any woman to haue committed adulterie with her
 Maisters, and Curators appeared also before him for all matters which concerned
 the Citie, and they took knowledge of the ingatitude of freemen to their Maisters.
 He had the charge of all things that were sold, that the prices might be reasonable. He sent
 to all parts, to giue him intelligence what was done. Finally, his creation hauing
 lasted long, his iurisdiction was giuen to the Pretor of the Feries, or feasts, vntill that
 he began to create him againe.

As for the most auncient Authors affirme, That the Consuls power was instituted in imita-
 tion of the kings: for the kings being expelled, they found two men which had the like
 power, but limited in regard of the time, for that it continued but a yere. They had
 the same marks, and all other marks which the kings were wont to haue. And for
 that they should counsell that which was profitable for the Common-weale, they were
 called Consuls. The first Consuls after the expulsion of the kings, were *Lucius Iunius Bru-
 tus* and *Tarquin Collatinus*. *Brutus* agreed with his companion, That but one of them at
 any time should march with the royall ensignes, to the end that the people, seeing them
 with these marks, should not complain that they had gotten two kings for one.
 There were twelue *Lictors* which carried rods with Axes, and went before the Con-
 suls. The Consull was Authour of a law, by the which it was lawfull to appeale
 from

from all Magistrats; and then the Consular authoritie began to be lesse than the Regall. A
In old time the Consuls were chosen from among the Senators; but in the end, the
Romans being tyred with the seditions of the Tribunes, they suffered one of the Con-
suls to be chosen from among the people. The first Consul of this order was *Lucius*
Sequanius.

The Dictators authoritie was so great, as there was no appeale from his sentence, and
he had souveraigne jurisdiction ouer the people of Rome. They were not accustomed
to create a Dictator, but vpon some occasion which did threaten ruine to the citie. In the
beginning they might not chuse a Dictator which was not a *Patricius*; yet in the warres
which the Romans had against the *Faliques*, they did chuse from among the people C. B
Marius Rutilius to be Dictator. The first Dictator at Rome was *Titus Lartius*. This of-
fice (by reason of his power) might not be held above six moneths: but vnder the name
of this office, *Lucius Scilla*, and *Julius Caesar*, made themselves maisters of Rome, and
sought by that meanes to auoid the odious name of Tyrants.

The Maister of the horse had jurisdiction ouer all the souldiers: The first was called
Spurius Cassius, who was created by *T. Lartius* the first Dictator. Finally, the office
of *Magister Equitum* was the same with the Dictator, that the *Præfectus Prætorio* was
with *Cæsar*.

The occasion of creating Tribunes, was the diuision of the people with the Senat: So
as when the people were retired to the sacred Hill, they pacified them, promising. That
there should be Magistrats of the people; to whom they gaue then two Tribunes, that
is, *A. Virginius*, and *T. Vetulius*. Then there happening another seperation, they ad-
ded three more; and afterwards five: so as the Romans had ten Tribunes, whose autho-
ritie grew so great, as whatsoever the Senat had concluded, was good, if the Tribunes
did allow of it. They stood at the entrie of the place where the Senat did assemble, who
acquainted the Senat with what they had decreed, to allow thereof, or to add, or take
away what they should thinke profitable for the Common-weale, and for a signe of
their Confirmation, they should add vnto the writing the letter *T*. The greatest im-
portance of the institution of Tribunes, was, That they interposed themselves at inter-
cessions, that no violence might be done by other Magistrats: and the lesfer was, That
they presented lawes vnto the people, which they called *Plebeiscita*, in the which the
authoritie of the Senat was not required. They did also assigne Prouinces to them
that went to gouerne them in the place of Consuls, as we read in *Plutarch* in the life
of *Cato*. They did also obserue, That if all the Tribunes were agreed except one, he alone
might contradict and crosse all the rest.

In the warre of the Eques, the Consuls *Albus Posthumus*, and *Sp. Furius* created *T.*
Quintius their Proconsul or Lieutenant: since which time there haue beene Procon-
suls, which haue had all the markes of Consuls, onely they had but six Licitors, whereas
they vied their jurisdiction committed by the Consuls, yet soone after they began to
haue a priuat authoritie: for the bounds of the Empire being large, it was decreed, That
they that left to be Consuls, should begin to be Proconsuls, and so they should gouerne
the Prouinces of the Empire, diuiding them among them by chance. The Proconsul
had no jurisdiction out of the Prouince that was fallen vnto him, although it were volun-
tarie, as to make men free, and to adopt. If he carried his wife with him into the Pro-
uince, he might punish her if she committed any offence. He might not buy any thing
but victuals within the Prouince. He might not determine any causes which required
examination, but whereas it required no such diligence, as when there were question
of the obedience of children to their parents, and such like, he might iudge summa-
rily. He might also giue commaundement to whip Libertines that were ingratell to
their maisters.

The Proconsuls were accustomed (by reason of the multitude of their affaires) to
send Legats into their Prouinces, who did exercise jurisdiction, not of their owne autho-
ritie, but as deputies to the Proconsul, who could not substitute them before he came
into the Prouince. If the Legats found any manner of importance which required the
diligence

of the Iudge, the Legats were to referre that to the Proconsul, for that they had
authoritie, either to beat or to put to death; yet they might giue a Iudgeto them that
were tutors to pupills.

The Ediles of the people, ordained that they should make the publicke feasts, where-
of must spend according to their dignitie and patrimonie. *Pedius* saith that *Pompey*
became made Edile, and hauing at his owne charge caused a very rich theatre
to be built, would haue therein a chariot with certaine elephants, besides the stately
which he caused to be made. The Ediles had the charge to see euery Romane set in
the order of his dignitie: if the buyer were deceiued by the seller, in
the price of a beast for a found, he had recourse vnto the Edile, who had charge of the
ditches, aqueducts, and buildings.

The Prefect of wheat had the charge to provide corne from all parts, and command
it had more than would serue his owne turne, to sell it, setting a reasonable price.
The people of Rome were often relievied by this Magistrat, whereas they were in want.
His businesse of corne grew to be of such authoritie, as all persons which in other
things were not allowed to accuse, were admitted in this, as whores, and such like.

The Tribunes Militarie, whom they tooke indifferently from the people or Senat, were
created onely three, which were *A. Sempronius Amatinus*, *L. Atilius*, and
M. Ciceronius, and they came from being Consuls to be Militarie Tribunes with Consular
authoritie, when as *M. Genucius*, and *P. Horatius* left their consulships: and this Magistrat had
authoritie with the Consuls, onely the name is changed, and the people deale in it.
The Censors, although in the beginning they were of small authoritie, yet it grew so
great, that it depended the manners and discipline of the Romanes, the government
of the priuat men, and the tolles of publicke places belon-
ging to the Romanes. They tooke out of the Senat such as they held vnworthy, and ad-
mitted they thought good: they tooke horse and armes from souldiers that were
of infamie, and put out of the armie. In the beginning when as one Censor di-
died, the other would serue for both: but it was decreed that one Censor
should, the other should leave his office, and they should create two new: the reason
of that at such time as the Gauls tooke Rome, one of the Censors being dead, they
created another in his place, the which afterwards they held for a bad presage. The
Censors had also power to limit vsurie.

The Pretor of the citie had authoritie to make new lawes, and to disannull old, and in
whatsoever he ordained was called *Lex honoraria*. They granted vnto the Pretors
signes, and in a manner all consular Ornaments. This Pretor of the citie did ride
in white.

There being a concourse of all nations to Rome, they created a Pretor, which
was *Publius Perperna*, who heard the causes of strangers; and in the end the number
of Pretors, as there were sometimes eighteen Pretors. But after they had taken *Sardi-*
niam, *Spaine*, and the prouince of *Narbona*, they created as many Pretors as there
were Prouinces taken, to the end that some of them should take knowledge of the affaires
of the Prouinces, and the rest of the businesse of the Prouinces. Afterwards *Scilla* added the
charge, as for counterfeits, parricides, and poisoners, and he created four Pre-
tors, and added two Pretors, and two Ediles, who had the charge of corne, and they
were called *Cereales*, of the name of *Ceres*. *Augustus* afterwards made sixteene Pretors,
and added two, whereof *Tiberius* tooke away one, and *Nerva* added another.

The Tribunes of the light horse were with the kings, or the Maisters of the horse
the Dictator, such were the Prefecti Pretorij with the Emperors: for these holding
the place vnto them, and being to correct the publicke discipline, their authoritie
was great, as whereas in the beginning they did appeale from the Prefect, this appeale
was away by the prince, who thought that such as had attained to that dignitie by
merit, should iudge as himselfe. These Prefects had a priuiledge, that Minors against
whom

whom they had given sentence could have no remedie, whereas they might have had, being condemned by other Magistrats.

Augustus thinking that the preservation of the publicke did not belong to any but himselfe, ordained seven troupes of souldiers in such places of the citie as had most need, to the end they might speedily releue such places as should be set on fire: and the order was such as one troupe or companie did keepe two regions of the citie, and the Tribunes were the heads of these troupes, and the Prefect of the guards had the command of them all: he took knowledge of causes concerning fire, and theif, if the crime were not too great, it was needfull to deliuer the partie into the hands of the Prefect of the citie: besides, the Prefect did watch a good part of the night, and went armed throughout the citie, warning euery man to haue a care of fire, and to keepe water in their houses.

It remains that we speake of *Cæsars* Procurator, who was Iudge betwixt *Cæsar* and the people. This Magistrat had ample authoritie, so as whatsoever he did managge for the Emperour, was of as great force as if the Emperour himselfe had done it. But if this Procurator did alienate any thing of the Emperours as his owne, it was not therefore held that the Emperour had alienated it, which might not be done without the Emperours consent. Finally if he treated of sale or of donation, he did nothing that was of force, for that his office was not to alienate the Emperours lands, but to managge his affaires diligently. And when as a slave of *Cæsars* was made heire by testament, he ordained that he should succeed in this inheritance, which came directly to the Emperour, for that the slave gets all to his maister. But if *Cæsar* were heire, and his Procurator did enter into the inheritance, he did thereby put the Emperour in possession. This Magistrat had no power to banish.

The name of President is general, for that the Proconsuls, the Legats of *Cæsar*, and all that gouerned provinces (so as they were Senators) were called Presidents.

¶ The Government at this day.

XXXIII. The Popes authoritie disperseth it selfe into so many members, as they of his court grow commonly old before they vnderstand this government; the which I will endeavour to relate as briefly as I can. There is first the Colledge of Cardinals, whereof the Pope is head: and of these the number hath not beene certaine in our time, although we find that in sometimes there were but twelue, after the example of the Apostles. These Cardinals were accustomed in old time to go vnto the Popes twice a weeke, but affaires of importance increasing in our time, they assemble but once, and their assemble is commonly called the Consistorie. There they appoint them that are chosen Bishops and Archbishops, or made Patriakes when the seats are void, whose election doth not belong to a chapter, a towne, a province, a king, or to any other persons: for in that case they are chosen by the Pope, and by this Senat to whom this reservation belongs by a priuiledge from all the Popes, and this reservation hath beene accustomed to extend it selfe to certaine Monasteries which are found taxed in the booke of the Chamber, and which they giue in charge to men that are capable, and therefore they call them Consistoriall Monasteries, for that none but the Consistorie disposeth of them. Finally here they treat of all things which belong vnto the faith and religion, to the peace of Christians, and to preservation of the temporal estate of the Church. Here the Provinces, the Regulars, and Kings, haue their Proctors, whose charge is to propound the elections, and other causes of their provinces to the Senat: and he that propounds is accustomed to dispute here them that oppose it, there he any, and to seeke out many things that are required in his person whom they are to choose for the Church that is void, and which belong vnto the said Church: this is also done by the meanes of witnesse (which search they do commonly call processe) and all these things are set downe in writing in the Senat, and he deliuer the Senat answer to them that attend, signing and sealing with the Seale of the Apostolike See the answer, the which is presented by them that attend vnto the Vice-Chancellor, who makes another certificat in his name, by the which he doth atteste all the officers which are to make the dispatches, making a repetition of the whole

to finesse. After this report, the Petitioners sue to haue a triefte, conformable to the Court, that is to say, it shal be first done by them that make the abridgements, and afterwards written by the Clarke, then dispatcht by others, by the Chancerie, or Apollotamber, and sometimes extraordinarily by the Secretarie: and when all is done, the seal of lead.

The great Penitencier, in that which belongs to his absolution, doth exercise the iurisdiction which hath been committed vnto him by the Pope, by many Vicars and Substitutes, which they call Penitenciers, who are diuided throughout all the greatest Cities of Rome, as *S. Peter*, *S. Iohn de Lateran*, and *S. Marie Maior*. But he grants no dispensation for the obseruation of humane laws, but in some cases: and he himselfe, by a Commission from the Pope, heares suitors, then hauing knowne their demands, hee any reason why the Petitioner should be heard, and that which he requires being accustomed to be graunted by the Pope, he writes by authoritie of his office, by vertue of his generall Commission from the Popes mouth, and assures in his letter by vertue of his Commission, he writes from the Popes mouth: writing alwaies in one of these manners, *Fiat in forma*, *Fiat de speciali*, *Fiat de expresse*, and by these diuersities of speaking, he lets them that tax vnderstand the importance of the Request: the writing of the Penitencier doth varie in forme, so the taxes of the payments are by the officers. And the multitude of humane laws, both of the Pope, of Countie, of Monasteries, is so great at this day, as men being in some sort bound, and desiring their ancient libertie, flee with great humilitie to the Penitencier, who makes the Suppliants demands; then they dispatch the Bulls vnder his name. And for that many times he doth not write backe precisely, requiring some more of the Suppliant, he appoints Iudges by his writing, who shall take knowledge of the fact, and herein he puts others in his place. This office hath for the greater efficacy of them which come for expeditions, foure and twentie men to defend suitors, these are called Proctors of the Penitenciarie. He giues Dispenfations to marriage, and degrees prohibited, as also he admits the Legitimation of bastards. He dispenseth in the lacke of members in any that will receiue Orders, or hold Benefices, as also in many. He absolues for murders in *Foro consuetudine*, and in regard of Clarke, Courts, with a retention of Benefices, and dispensation for the rest. He doth the dispensation, perurie, change of vovs, and dispenseth with the Regulars of any of their rules. Moreover, he giues indulgences to places and persons, and commissions in forme of law, as vpon the nullitie of some marriage, and such

the same day demand the signing of such things from the Pope as proceed from the bountie, as the graunts of Benefices, and other things, the which are also committed to the great Penitencier, and also matters of iustice touching the whole parts of the world; and in like manner those which concerne the temporall estate of the Church of Rome, and in all other places, so as they come either by request which is of the Church, or by the permission of Princes, or by consent of the Court of Rome. The Pope, for the more easie dispatch of suitors, ordaineth two Audiences for all these things, in the one of which they demand grace, and in the other those of iustice: so as they are diuersly called, that is to the Signature of grace, and the Signature of iustice. The Pope appoints ouer these certain Lawyers; and to the Signature of Grace, all the Cardinals which are below; and it is feldome that they depure any Prelats which are not Lawyers (they call Referendaries) to that of Grace or Iustice. These haue charge to the contents of all petitions, and if they be things vsuall to be graunted, they set the end of the petition, signifying thereby vnto the Pope, or vnto the Cardinal, that the thing which they demand may be graunted. But if they require any thing which may preiudice another, they do not graunt it, calling the third person: and if the matter be important or doubtful, the Referendaries impart it to the rest in the Audience, and the sutor doth not obtaine it vntill

XXXV.

XXXVI.

all they all agree in the Signature. Wherefore the Pope hath appointed a Cardinall A
 mer the two Signatures, who doth vially graunt small matters, and also those which
 are of weight, if they be accustomed to be granted. The Referendaries of the Signature
 of Grace, doe vially reiect those petitions which containe matter belonging vnto Justice,
 as if the Pope took it ill they should do that which belongs properly to his charge. The
 Signature hath one certaine day in the weeke, whenas the Referendaries assemble: by
 reason whereof they which plead are accustomed to go the day before with their Aduo-
 cats vnto the Referendaries, and sometimes plead their cause (though seldome) before
 them. On the day appointed, it is the Referendaries charge briefly to report the Petiti-
 oners requests, and the matter having beene debated among these Iudges, he that is Pre-
 sident giues sentence according to the pluralitie of voyces, and the Referendaries doe ne-
 ver propound a petition againe which hath beene reiected, or at the least they doe it ve-
 ry seldome. The Pope doth in a manner alwaies subscribe with these words, *Placet P.*
 whenas they treat of matters of Justice: but when there is a question of grace, he writes,
Placet ut petitur P. And this *P.* signifies the Popes name, as *Paule*; but if he hath another
 name, as *Iulio*, he writes *I.* and so of the rest. And if the Pope subscribes at any time, not
 at any ones suit, but of his owne motion, he doth not set downe, *Ut petitur*, but adds in
 the end, *Motu proprio*. But the Cardinall of the Signature of Grace, writes alwaies after
 one forme, *Concessum in presentia D. N. Papae*; then he sets to his name, and yet he doth
 not subscribe in the Popes presence, but it is lawfull for him to doe it by his generall
 Commission. As for the forme of writing in cases of Justice, the Cardinall (who hath the
 charge) subscribes whenas they write to the Iudges of the Court of Rome, *Placet D. N.*
Papae; and adds his name: and if the businesse be directed to the Iudges of Prouinces, he
 sets, *Concessum in presentia D. N. Papae*; then the Cardinall adds his name, and sometimes
 he writes, *Placet prout de iure, Placet arbitrio Iudicis, Concessum arbitrio, &c.* And you must
 understand, that writings of Justice which are sent to Iudges of Prouinces, come not vnto
 the Regents hands, but are presently referred vnto the Datarie, like vnto those of Grace,
 where he sets the day of the date; then he writes them into the Register, and then they
 deliuer them vnto the Petitioners, or to their Solicitors, in that forme that they must be
 dispatcht. For the expedition whereof, there are three meanes; when it is a matter of Ju-
 d
 Justice, by the Chancerie, and by the office of Contradiets, vnder Lead, or by the Secreta-
 rie in forme of a Brieft, *Sub Annulo piscatoris*: but if it be a matter of grace, he is dispatcht
 by the said Chancerie, or by the Chamber, and sometimes extraordinarily by the Se-
 cretarie.

XXXVII. The office of the Chancerie hath a Cardinall to ouersee it, who is called Vice-
 Chancellor. His dignitie (according to the opinion of them of the Popes Court) giues
 him the first ranke of all the said Court. He, by reason of his office, is President in the
 dispatch of all matters Ecclesiasticall which go throughout the world, and likewise ouer
 them that dispatch them, which are verie many, as Abreuiators of the Pare (whose charge
 is to dictate the letters of the suitors petition, and what they dictate is by them called E
 Minute) Clarke, vnder Abreuiators, Solicitors, they that haue the office of the leaden
 Seale, and Registers. All these haue a hand in the dispatch of letters. There are other
 officers which we must find out when there are any dispatches to be made touching the
 payment of rents, and these are the Clarke of the Chancerie, the Chamberlaines, and
 others.

XXXVIII. The Audience of the Apostolicke Chamber was first erected, the better to dispatch
 businesse, and to that end the Pope had choise of six Prelats of his household, whom they
 call Clarke of the Chamber. These were Councillors of the household to the Pope,
 who treated with them in priuat of all matters which did concerne him, as of the govern-
 ment of the Cite of Rome, and of all the temporall Estate, and the account of the Treas-
 ure. There the Pope did chuse the Magistrats, by reason whereof they at this day take
 the oath for their offices before the Chamberlaines. There they made the contracts for
 publicke matters which concerned the Pope, and where they are accustomed to dispatch
 letters of benefices in a manner like vnto the Chancerie, whenas Sutors chuse this for
 the

best way, or else in regard of the matter which is in question, or else for that the
 cannot be dispatcht by the Chancerie, but requires the Popes expresse com-
 ment. In this place they did condemne malefactors to Ecclesiasticall punish-
 ment temporall, according to the qualitie of the person, or of the crime, and they did
 many other things. But the affaires of Rome are so multiplied, as the Popes ha-
 this burthen by little and little, comes seldome into this Audience, except it be
 matter which doth import his reuenues, or doth concerne some bad expedition of
 the Pope doth sometimes dispatch the fore said matters by himselfe, without the
 of his Chamber, and in the execution he calls for the Secretaries of his
 Id.

The Chamberlaine is accustomed by the aduice of seuen Clarke, and sometimes of
 the priuat motion, to write in forme of law to the Iudges, as of all prophane mat-
 ter belong to Magistrats in the temporall Estate of the Church, and without it,
 payment of the tenthes, fruits, benefices, spoiles of priests that be dead, and other
 which concerne the Apostolicke Chamber: and he writes euery day as if he had
 commandment from the Popes owne mouth, and his writings are called letters of the
 ber, the expedition whereof are made after two sorts, for either they are made vp
 ed, or else they are open without the Chamberlaines seale.

Treasurer hath the custodie of all the money that enters into the Chamber, and
 he is to receiue it, keepe it, and spend it where need is. Sometime this money is
 the hands of some great merchant, who receiues it by commission from the
 and makes payments, & he is called the Gardian. The Auditor of the Cham-
 hath charge of Spirituall matters, and is followed by the Gouernour who doth
 pendors, and is the executioner of the secular arme, decides of truces, securi-
 the complaints of vassalls against their lords, although they be capitall, within
 of Rome. He hath authoritie ouer all the officers of the citie, and takes care
 of the citie and court of Rome. If thou wilt read the chapter of *Sixtus*
 of *Iulio* the second, thou shalt see at large the authoritie of this Gouernour.
 President of the Apostolicke Chamber receiues the account of all those that
 to deal with the money of the Chamber within the citie of Rome, or within
 diocess, and makes his account in the Audience of the Chamber.

for that they treat sometimes in the Audience of the Chamber, of matters be-
 of the Treasurer and priuat persons, it hath beene ordained that priuat men should
 Aduocat in this Audience, at the publicke charge, for the defence of poore mens
 against the Aduocats of the Treasure.

is another Aduocat which defends the Treasurer as well in the Audience, as
 before the other Iudges in the courts of Rome, where it is needfull to answere
 law, and he is of the Consistoriall Order.

The Proctor of the Fisc or Treasurer, defends all fiscal matters in the Audience, and
 any other Iudges in the court of Rome: and fiscal matters are those whereas they
 the publicke libertie, or of the publicke treasure. This office is very needefull and
 the authority in the court of Rome. This Proctor out of the Audience takes know-
 of the secret causes, sees them at his pleasure, and giues his aduice, although he
 of the Iudges: he is admitted in publicke Consistories, and may require that
 be a publicke instrument made by one of the Protonotaries for a perpetuall memo-
 rials done publickly.

Commissarie of the Apostolicke Chamber doth execute the affaires of the Cham-
 ber, when the Iudges are not to deale; he hath charge of exactions, ambassages, im-
 pious, and other things which belong vnto the Chamber.

The last of all those of the Apostolicke Chamber, is he which defends the rights and
 assigned to Cardinalls, or any thing else that concerns the said Cardinalls. The
 of the Iudges of the court of Rome being very great, and there being many in
 doth many times fall out, that by reason of the great employment of Iudges,
 sometimes of purpose, matters are protracted longer than the qualitie of causes, and
 the

the troublesome abiding in prison doth require: wherefore the Cardinalls doe every A
moneth visit them as foueraigne Judges. Yet they that haue place in Audience of the
Chamber do not assemble for these visits: but he that is Lieutenant to the Chamber-
lain, and in a manner alwaies one of the said Clarke, and with them all the officers of
the Chamber, except the Tresuror & the President. All these at a certaine day go and
sit for a time in some publicke place, in the prisons of the citie, where the prisoners are
called before them in order, and heard if they will: and they deliuer the prisoners they
heare, or moderate their punishment, and sometimes when they are altogether vnable to
pay they admit them to a simple cession of their goods, and so set them out of prison.

Nearer vnto the two last prisons, that is to say, of the court of Sauelle, and of the tower B
of None, there are inferiour Iudges, who take their names of these two places. The ap-
pellation from the Iudge of the tower of None goes vnto the Gouernours court, and that
of the court of Sauelle to the Auditor of the Chamber, who decides the causes for the
which they appeale: although the Gouernor meddles with the appellation of the court
of Sauelle, yet they belong vnto the Auditor. The curtezans and common women of
the citie pay a certaine tribute yearly vnto this Iudge, and this is so ancient, as the con-
trarie not appearing, they force them that refuse to pay it.

XXXIX. Besides the ordinarie court, there is another sort of Romane citizens, to whom the
Pope hath giuen a Pretor, whom they call Senator, he remains in the Capitoile, and
doth iustice to the citizens of Rome by ordinarie authoritie. He hath three Lieutenants C
or Substituts two whereof which preside at priuar iudgements, are called Collaterall:
these are different in dignitie, for the one is called the first, another the second, and the
third the Iudge of crimes: and if they appeale from any one of them, there is a priuar
Iudge in the Capitoile for all these appellations, if his sentence be conformable to the first,
there is no more appeale. There are also certain Seats, whereas all trades (which are mark
in little tables vnder a porch, where they read the trades) chuse their Consuls, which are
tradesmen, who doe right vnto their companions touching their art, and they that hold
themselves wronged go and propound their griefes vnto the Consuatuor of the citie,
who remains in the Capitoile. This iurisdiction was confirmed by Pope *Julius* the second,
Leo the tenth, and *Paul* the third. D

XL. There are afterwards a kind of persons, which are the priests to whom the Pope giues
a vicar of his. He, in Rome and in all his diocesse hath the same authoritie that the Pope,
whose Vicar he is, and Ordinarie, for that there are priests vnder his iurisdiction: he pre-
scribes to penitents the make of their penance, confers the sacraments of the Church,
and by the law of the diocesse makes an assemblie, or holds a congregation, and visits the
Churches and regular Monasteries, if they haue no priuiledge which doth free them: he
may also enquire, correct, punish, take away, and giue benefices. By vertue of an Indult or
Pardon granted by the Pope, his Vicars iurisdiction extends to all lay men and strangers,
who for any fraternitie, abroad, or seruice to Hospitalls or Monasteries, seeme to follow
the religion, and also ouer all the Iewes of the citie, widowes, pupils, & poore Christians, E
as if they were in the bosome of the Church. And by the same Indult his authoritie ex-
tends to causes whereas they treat not of the proprietie, but of rents and pensions, and
also of that which concerns sarnes, fields, vines, and rents: but in matters concerning
the proprietie, he may not iudge aboue sixtie duckats of gold of the Chamber, and in
these causes his authoritie extends fortie miles from Rome. He hath foure Notaries or
publicke Registers vnder him, and two Substituts, the one which takes knowledge of
priuar and ciuile matters, the other of publicke and criminall.

The Pope hath twelue Chaplaines, or Auditors of causes of the sacred pallace, to
whom he giues power to heare them a part that plead, and vpon their report the Pope
giues sentence.

At Rome euery man is in a short space accepted for a citizen, and may easily participate
of the first honors of this citie, where they may better than in any other citie, hope for a
recompence of their industrie and wit, and in the end aspire by his fortune and vertue to
the greatest dignities of the Church.

The

Popes haue beene accustomed to giue the Legations of Prouinces which are vn-
der power, and the gouernement of the chiefe townes, to their owne kinsmen as
legie men, as Secular, or to those that are their creatures. It is the manner which
in Italie; and at Auignon they haue a Legat or Vice Legat, who is a Gouernor,
in charge of Ecclesiasticall matters, and of those that concerne iustice: And more-
over is a Generall which is a Knight; he hath the charge of all the fouldiers
in garrison within the countie of Venisse, and of all that concerns armes.
The Pope affumeth power to conferre Benefices in the countries of other Princes, al-
though somewhat restrained, by reason of the graunts of certaine Popes to diuers
Princes. Yet such as receive not benefices from him, must haue his confir-
mation, and haue their Bulls from the Court of Rome: and moreover also, pay the

to fit in this place to giue an account as well of the institution and manner of
the Pope, as of the considerations of Cardinalls. Yet the creation of Popes
is neuer diuers. It was giuen to the Clergie of Rome, to whom the people of
Rome in the creation. But after three hundred fiftie and one yeares, the Empe-
rour imposed their authoritie, for that the Popes being chosen did for a time receiue
confirmation from them, first paying a certaine quantitie of siluer, and then with-
out payment. For a time they did also forbear to be crowned without the presence
of their Embassadors; and in the end, with the consent of Popes them-
selves, who thought by this meane to bridle the insolencie of the people of Rome) all
the manner of creating the Pope, was transported to the Emperours, who held it
that when the Popes would haue taken it from them, they could not without
scandall and schisme, which did for a long time trouble all Christendome: and in
the end, some Popes named their Successours, who were afterwards confirmed
by the Emperours. But in the end, the Popes authoritie being the stronger, the Emperours
being wholly excluded, the Cardinalls had the election, with some of the
Clergie, vntill *Alexander* the third at the Councell of Lateran held in the
year Lord God 1259, where there were two hundred and eightie Bishops, or
that he was lawfull Pope that should be chosen by two third parts of the Car-
dinalls were present; and this custome hath continued vnto this day, but that in the
year Redemptio 1417, at the Councell of Constance, *Martin* the fift was cho-
sen the schisme at that time: but *Gregorie* the tenth ordained first, at the Coun-
cill of the Conclau, which hath from time to time beene reformed, and reduced
to what it is at this day.

The Cardinalls assemblie to chuse a Pope after one of these three manners, either by
ballot, or by Adoration, or by Scrutin and Billets, by the which they gaue their
votes, as they fauoured. It sufficeth then to vnderstand, that all the authoritie to
chuse consists in the Cardinalls: and that they are the chiefe members of the
Church, as it were the head, whom they assist, being his Councellors and Coadi-
utors. Priuiledges haue beene giuen them by diuers Popes, and especially by *Paul*
the fourth, and some others haue graunted them the moytie of the reuenues of the ho-
use in regard thereof, at this present they enioy halfe the Annates of Benefices
dispatcht by the Consistorie. There were wont to be but fiftie and three in all,
but since the increase and decrease at the Popes pleasure, and *Pius* the fourth had at one time

the discourse vpon the Popes next successour, are accustomed to consider the
Popes, for that a time of peace requires one thing, and that of troubles ano-
ther. When all things are out of order, they must seeke to haue some one to stay
the moreouer, they must take another course when after a great seruitude they
desire libertie, and they must also obserue the wills of princes, euerie one of
whom desires to haue his friend Pope: but aboue all they consider the priuar affecti-
ons of the Cardinalls, for that it seems in the election of a Pope they loose the remem-
berance of the Church. We see notwithstanding that age imports much, as well in regard
of

IIII.

of them that aspire to the Poppedome, as for that many doe get by the change of Popes. A Then they looke into the bountie, for that men are not commonly so wicked, as they im- preece all naturall desire of good things. But the chiefe bountie they seeke in Cardinals, is that which profits others, as justice, affabilitie, courtesie, and an inclination to commu- nicat his greatnesse to others: and for this cause it seemes that they have no will to make him Pope that hath many great kinsmen and friends, who may be a cause to interrupt and divert him from this courtesie, and other parts which I have noted: and euerie Cardinal not onely seekes to make him Pope whom he loues, but him that is bound to loue him. But notwithstanding that they obserue all these things, yet it is impossible to make a signe and certain coniecture who shall be Pope, for that the affaires of Rome wa- yre continually; a discontentment, a new promotion of Cardinals, or the least accident which shall happen, puts all into confusion. Morcouer, it hath bene commonly obser- ued, that they change their humours whenas they come into the Conclauē; yea many times the Cardinals being sodainly transported, either with feare or some other passion, yield to that which they dreamt not of. Whenas they foresee the danger of any one that may be Pope, they doe easily helpe it, and agree together. But for that they cannot use the like diligence in all, whenas they are surprisid, and that they propound one who had not bene thought on, hauing no time to take any resolution, they run on like men without iudgement, as if euerie one feared to be the last. Notwithstanding it doth often happen that he which was least expected, comes to be Pope. Wherefore they may well C diuine, but they haue no certaine coniecture who shall be Pope.

¶ The Religion of the Auncient Romans.

XLII.

A Mong all the gods esteemed by the Romans, *Pan Lyceus* (named by many *Fannus*) and *Sylvanus*, holds the first ranke, and to him they dedicated the *Lupercales*, and that the *Luperques* did sacrifice. Some say that this Sacrifice came from *Euander* a fugi- tive king of *Arcadia*, who came vnto that place whereas since the fortresse of Rome was made.

The Shepheards who had this god for their head, did sacrifice vnto him naked, with their faces couered, and certaine girdles in their hands. Some refferre the beginning of this Sacrifice to an accident which happened to *Fannus* whenas he sought the loue of *Iole* wife to *Hercules*. But others say, That *Romulus* sacrificing to *Pan*, naked, by reason of the heat, was aduertised that certaine theues carried away his flocke, so as he followed them naked as he was, and tooke them: so as in memorie thereof he would haue the Priests which should performe this sacrifice, naked. The speciall deuotion which they had to this god, and to these priests, was, for that the women which could not be deli- uered, nor conceiue with child, had recourse to the *Luperques*; and hauing bene beaten with certaine little whips dried in goats blood, they were deliuered, or did presently conceiue. They did solemnise the feast vnto this god, on the eighteenth of Ianuarie, as E *Ouide* reports.

Then were the *Potitians*, and the *Pinarians*, families so called, who were ordained to sacrifice to *Hercules*. The *Potitians*, instructed by *Euander*, did for a long time gouerne this sacrifice, vntill that this charge being giuen to publicke slaues, the familie of the *Potitians* came to faile; the which happened by the means of *Appius Claudius* their enemy: and the Romans did beleue that for a punishment he fell blind.

The *Armaui* or *Armales* brethren, gaue counsell to the people of Rome, to the end their fields might bring forth corne. *Romulus* was the inuenter of this religion, and they were called *Armaui*, for that *Armaui* signifies a field. They were twelue in number, and they gaue them with the order of Priesthood a Crowne of the eares of corne, with cer- taine white bands. About the same time, the art and religion of the Augures came to Rome, out of *Tuscanie*, where the inhabitants were verie skilfull in the art of diuining after this manner. He that should diuine by means of the Augure, went vp into a sort of some open place, and did there sit vpon a stone towards the South, holding in his hand

hooked rod called *Lituē*. Then hauing beheld the citie and the fields round about vnto the gods, he diuided the regions from the East vnto the West, leauing the East vpon the South, and the left vpon the North, and obseruing (without any speaking) the farthest place he could see, holding his rod in the left hand, and lay- ing his hand vpon his head to whom he would preface any thing, saying, O father I haue performed my charge: and then he told what tokens he would haue *Iupi-* ter, and if they did succeed the Augure was good. In time this art was much este- mē, so as the number of the Augures increased as well as their authoritie, and there was a Colledge of Augures, who in the beginning were but three.

Numa king of the Romanes was the first that ordained the *Flamen Dial*, for he, the kings did execute the office of high priests. *Numa* considering that in these kings might rather be like to *Romulus* than himselfe, and be more affected to his religion, he ordained foure priests, whom he called *Flamines*, who should continually attend the seruice of the gods: and these priests were dedicated to many gods, to say, one to *Iupiter*, whom they called *Dial*, two to *Mars*, and one to *Quirinus*, *Romulus*. The other *Flamines* dedicated to any other gods than to *Iupiter*, carried the gods to whom they were vowed: And *Numa* would haue *Iupiter's* *Flamen* in an honorable roabe, and haue a seat of *Ytore*, the which in those daies they did sit vpon but to the greatest Magistrats. He alone had a little white hat, and he did ride, but not swear, nor carrie the fire of his sacrifice into any place that was not fa- uourable, nor did enter into his Temple, he must vngirt himselfe, and cast it away. If an offender whom they led to whipping fell dōvne vpon the ground before him, it had bene a sinne to whip him that day. He that was not of a free condition could not cut the haire of this priest. He might not touch a goat, nor yvie, nor any raw flesh. His beds feet must be defiled with dyt, and no man might lie vnder a flint stone. The parings of the *Dials* nailes, and the clippings of haire, were hidden in a flint stone. It was not lawfull for him to go into the aire without a flint stone. The high priests did ordaine the like when he was in any couered place. He might not mixe with leuaine, nor put off his shirt but in some couered place, to the end he should not be naked vnder heauen, as vnder the eye of *Iupiter*: and no man might touch him when he dined, but the king which did sacrifice. He neuer came into the Temple where there was a dead bodie. *Varro* saith, that the auncients had as many *Flamines* as the *Dial*, the *Martial*, the *Quirinal*, the *Vulcanien*, the *Falagre*; and as many Bishops, Archbishops, and Cardinals, they had their *Flamin*, their first *Flamen* that was aboue all the rest.

The *Vestal* virgins which kept their sacred fire, it is so well knowne as I will say no more, but if this fire went out they wer beaten with rods by the high-priests. There were put into this Temple but virgins, whose parents must be of a free condition, and took them from the age of six yerres to ten at the most. The ten first yerres they were in the forme of sacrifices, they spent as much time in sacrificing, and the ten last yerres they did instruct the young virgins which were newly taken; which thirtie yerres they might marry: but they that did marrie were vnfortunat. The people of Rome did honour them wonderfully. And besides the fire wherof I haue spoken, they had the *Palladium*, or Statue of *Minerua*, and other sacred things of the Romanes. When they were taken in Adulterie they were put to death after this manner: They were led, & carried on a coffin bound, with their faces couered, with black flintie clothes, and were borne vnto the Port *Salutaria*, where there was a place called the *Scelerat* or wicked field, in the which there was a little hole for the entrie, & two little windows; in the one of which the condemned lay, and in the other water, milke, and hony: being come vnto the hole, the high priest said certaine prayers, hauing his hands alwaies lift vp to heauen, then he thrust the *Vestal* into the tombe by the little hole, and in the meane time the people cast away their faces: then hauing taken away the ladder and couered the place with

a stone, as if it had beene a Sepulcher, the people cast earth vpon it, and continued all that day in mourning.

The Salines were dedicated by *Nama* to *Mars*, being twelue in number, then *Hosilius* added twelue more. They were called Salines for their leaping in their sacrifices. They did wear certain painted cassocks, & vpon their breasts a peece enrich with gold, silver, and precious stones.

In the beginning there were foure high priests taken from among the Senators: afterwards the people obtained that they should haue as many chosen of their order. These had a head whom they called the most high Priest, who knew with what and when they should sacrifice, and had the care how to gather money for the charge of the seruice of their gods. They say that the high Priest had a table by the which he knew the Eclipse of the Moone and Sunne.

The Feclial priest did preside as the publicke faith giuen vnto people: and they did hold, that a war which had not bene first denounced by the Feclial, was not iust. When they made a peace, the Feclial demanded of the General of the armie, if he commanded him to make a peace with the enemy, the which he hauing affirmed, he said, O such a one, I demand grace of thee, whereunto the General answered, that he should take it; which hauing taken, he demanded if he made him messenger to the people and Senat of Rome? the General answered, That he did, so as in doing it neither he nor the people of Rome might be deceived. Then they made a peace, with prayers to *Impiter*, that if the Romanes did infringe the conditions of the accord, he would strike them as he did a hog, and so much the more, for that he was much more mightie. But when he proclaimed war, he did after this manner: The Feclial carried a dart halfe burnt, and grasse, vnto their confines against whom he denounced war, where in the presence of three aged men, he said, That the enemies had failed in that which they had done against the people of Rome, and that for this cause he and the Romanes had denounced war against them: and hauing spoken this, he cast his dart into their land, to the end they might see that they made war iustly against them.

The two men of the sacraments had the charge to read the sacred bookes, and *Syllabus* verses, and to interpret them. They were also chiefe in the ceremonies which were made to *Capitol*: and if there were any monster borne, or any prodigie did happen, they sought to pacifie the gods with their sacrifices.

The seven men of the Epulons, were contained in a kind of priesthood, of the which there are few that haue written. *Plinius* before he made an oration, and fearing them that were there to heare him, said, The Consuls were in the middelt, and next, one of the seven men of the Epulons: and it is said that they accept the excuses of the daughter of the Augures, of the ten sacred men, of the Flamins, and the seven men of the Epulons. I should speake of their ornaments, vessels, sacrifices, and instruments, but I will forbear, for it would be tedious.

A CHRONOLOGIE,

And briefe description of the succession, life, and death of Popes, from the beginning, vnto *Paul* the fifth now reigning: together with their Decrees, Connells, and Schismes.

XLIIII.

Or what in discoursing of the government of the Estate of the Church, I haue al-
so spoken of religion, and of matters which concerne the Church: I will now for-
ward, and come vnto the Catalogue of Popes, vnto *Paul* the fifth, who holds the
holle See, and the foueraigne dignitie of the Church at this day: with a collection of
the Decrees during their liues, and times of general Councils: then will I set downe
the Cardinals which are at this day, the better to satisfie the curious Reader.

S. Peter

Yeare of
Christ.

S. Peter, first Pastor or Bishop of the Catholike Church, according to the opinion of the Papists.

SIMON PETER CEPHAS, borne at Bethsaida in Galile, an Apostle of *Ie-
sus Christ*, first Bishop of Christians (as the Papists suggest) governed the
Church of Hierusalem five yeares, that of Antioch seuen, and lastly (as they write)
that of Rome foure and twentie yeares, five moneths, and twelue daies.

LINUS a Tuscan, second Bishop or Pope of Rome, and Coadiutor to S. Peter,
hauing written the deeds of S. Peter, yea his combats with that detestable *Simon* the
Inchanter. He was beheaded by the commaund of *Saturninus* the Consul, who held
him for a Sorcerer, for that he had driuen a deuill out of the bodie of his daughter.
He was so renowned for his Holinesse, as he raised vp the dead in diuers places, go-
ing forth of the citie to preach the word of God. He held the See eleuen yeares,
three moneths, and twelue daies.

CLEMENT a Roman, ordained seuen Notaries (which at this day they call
Protonotaries) for the seuen Quarters or Regions of Rome, to the end they might
write the Historie of Martyrs: and hauing conuered many to the Christian faith
by his pietie and doctrine, he suffered Martyrdom vnder the Emperour *Traian*, ha-
ving bene Bishop nine yeares, foure moneths, and six and twentie daies.

CLETYS a Roman, was called to the Episcopall dignitie against his will: Ha-
ving created many Priests in the citie of Rome, and as a learned man and full of pie-
ty, augmented the estate of Gods Church, he was made a Martyr vnder the Empe-
rour *Domitian*, and was buried in the Vatican, hauing held the See six yeares, five
moneths, and two daies.

ANACLETUS a Grecian borne at Athens, ordained, That Prelats and Clarke
should cut their beards, and their haire: That they should assemble twice a yeare
in the affaires of the Church: That euerie Bishop should be receiued by three
others: That Clarke should be admitted to sacred orders publicly, not priuately;
and that all the faithfull should communicate after the consecration, else they should
be rejected from the companie of the faithfull, as Infidells. By this meanes the
Christian Religion increased wonderfully. In the Apostles time, they did com-
municate daily. He died, hauing bene Bishop twelue yeares, two moneths, and
ten daies.

The See was vacant seuen daies.

EVARISTUS ordained, there should be seuen Deacons chosen in euerie citie
to assist the Bishop in preaching: to the end they should not charge him that he
should preached ill, he distributed the Parishes or Cures to Priests. He commaunded
that all should be publicly solemnized in the Church, with the Priests blessing, other-
wise they should be held vnlawfull and incestuous: That a Bishop should not leave
the Church during his life, no more than a wife her husband. He died vnder the em-
perour *Traian*, hauing reigned thirteene yeares, and five moneths.

The See was voyd nineteene daies.

ALEXANDER a Roman, a man of so holie a life, as many Roman Senators
receiued the Christian Religion by reason of his great pietie. He suffered Mar-
tyrdom vnder *Adrian*; and being demanded why he did not answer, For that
(saide) in the time of prayer, a Christian man speaks with God. He died, ha-
ving held the place seuen yeares, five moneths, and nineteene daies.

The See was vacant fifteene daies.

SIXTUS a Roman, suffered Martyrdom nine yeares, ten moneths, and ten
daies after he had bene Bishop.

The See was voyd two daies.

TELESPHORUS a Grecian, instituted the Lent as some write. He suffered
Martyrdom, and was buried in the Vatican, hauing bene Bishop ten yeares, eight
moneths,

34.

57.

68.

77.

84.

96.

107.

116.

127.

10. months, and five and twentie daies.
The See was vacant seven daies.
HYGNEA Grecian borne at Athens, ordained, That at the least one Godfather or Godmother should present the infant at the Font: That materials dedicated for building of Temples should not be transferred to prophane vices: That no Metropolitan should condemn any Bishop of his Province, without the aduice of the other Bishops of the same Province. He died the fourth yeare.

The See was vacant three daies.

11. **PRIVS** of Aquileia, ordayned, That they should celebrat Easter on the Sunday, and some ceremonies for the ornament of Baptisme and the Communion: That the Romans should not take the Vaile before the age of five and twentie yeares: That Priests which did sweare should be depofed, and Laymen excommunicated. He did also impose penance vpon negligent Priests, or that did handle the holie Sacraments vncurrently. He consecrated the first Temple of Rome, the which was dedicated to *S. Prudentiane*, the Temples of Christians hauing beene in former times forbidden and obscure caues. He held the place eleuen yeares, five moneths, and seven and twentie daies.

The See was voyd thirteene daies.

12. **ANICETVS** Syrian born, renewed the decree of *Anacletus*, That Clerks should weare no beards: That no Bishop might be consecrated Metropolitan of the Province with a lesse number than three. He suffered Martyrdome hauing beene Bishop nine yeares, eight moneths, and foure and twentie daies.

The See was voyd seuentee daies.

13. **CONCORDIVS** Soter of Fundi, renewed & confirmed the ordinance of the Eucharist, and touching the Sacerdottall blessing in marriage, and the consent of parents, for the great abuses which were committed in those times. *Gratian* reports, that he ordayned, That no man should keepe an oath which he had made to doe ill. He died, hauing held the place seven yeares, eleuen moneths, and eightene daies.

The See was voyd one and twentie daies.

14. **ABVNDIVS** ELEVTHERYS a Grecian borne, sent into great Brittanie at the kings request, *Eugastus* and *Damianus*, men of pietie and religion: by whom the king and his people were baptized. He did ordaine that no man should abstaine from any kind of meat for superstitions sake: and that no man being absent, and not convicted, should be condemned for any crime. Hauing augmented the Catholick Religion by his good example, and left peace vnto the Church disperfed in a manner ouer all the earth, he died, hauing reigned fiftene yeares, and eightene daies.

The See was vacant five daies.

15. **VICTOR** an African, ordained, That if any one being readie to receiue the holie Communion, and perswaded to pardon his enemy, refused to be reconciled, he should be depriued of that holie myserie. He also confirmed the ordinance of *Pius* touching the celebration of Easter vpon the Sunday, contrarie to the customes of the Churches of Asia, whom he excommunicated: for the which he was reprehended by *Irenaeus*. He suffered Martyrdome, hauing beene Bishop twelue yeares, one moneth, and eight and twentie daies.

The See was voyd twelue daies.

16. **ABVNDIVS** ZEPHYRINVS a Roman, ordayned, That euery one hauing attained to the age of twelue or thirteene yeares, should at the least at Easter receiue the holie Communion: That the Chaldians, being in the beginning of wood, should be made of glasse; which Decree was afterwards abolished, and it was ordained that they should be of gold, silver, or tinn: That no Bishop might be Iudge ouer his Archbishop or Metropolitan, nor of his Primar or Patriarch. He died, hauing held the place twentie yeares, and fiftene daies.

The See was voyd six daies.

17. **DEMETRIVS** CALISTVS a Roman, built a Church and a Churchyard at Rome,

Yeare of
Christ.
138.

142.

154.

163.

171.

186.

198.

218.

Rome, where remaine the Reliques of many holie Martyrs. He instituted the foure Ember weekes: some attribute vnto him the decree of celibate of priests; but *Pollidore* in his fift booke, and fourth chapter writes, that they could not altogether take marriage from the priests of the West (for the Grecians, and they of the East do marry) vntill the time of *Gregorie* the seuenth, in the yeare 1074. He was made a Martyr hauing reigned five yeares, one moneth, and thirteene daies.

The See was void six daies.

18. **VERBAN** a Romane, vnder whom the Church of Rome began to haue lands and inheritances, which should be common, and distributed to feed Churchmen, the poore, and protonotaries which did write the acts of Martyrs. *Damasus* doth attribute vnto him the decree for the making of vessell of silver or tin: whereupon *boniface* Bishop of Mentz said, that in old time, priests of gold vsed chalices of wood: but now priests of wood vse chalices of silver. He drew many vnto the faith by his holy life, and suffered Martyrdome hauing been Bishop seven yeares, seven moneths, and five daies.

The See was vacant three and twentie daies.

19. **CALPURNIVS** PONTIANVS a Romane, hauing endured many torments, died in exile, in the Island of Sardinia, five yeares, five moneths, and two daies after his coming to the place. Some say, that in his time there were at Rome fiftene priests called Cardinals, the six to say, chiefe men, to burye the dead, and to baptise dying children, and other fiftene who had the chiefe charge of the health of foules: *Pollidore* and *Damasus* say, that Pope *Marcel* was the author of these Cardinals, in the yeare 1302.

The See was void one day.

20. **ANTHEROS** a Grecian, ordained that the deeds of Martyrs should be written, suffered any Clergie man to change his Church with another, so as it were done for the health of soules and publicke good, and not for their priuat profit: he decreed that it should not be lawfull for any one to be Pope, vnlesse he were first a Bishop. He suffered Martyrdome, hauing held the place five yeares, one moneth, and fiftene daies.

The place was void six daies.

21. **LEABIAN** a Romane, chosen miraculously, baptized *Philip* father and sonne, the first Christian Emperors, and accepted their treasures: he ordained againe touching the historie of Martyrs: he did forbid to take a wife in the fift degree of consanguinity, and would that euery Christian should communicat thrice a yeare, that is to say, at the Feasts of Easter, Whitunday, and the birth of our Sauior. He was made a Martyr, chiefly in hatred of the Treasures which he had receiued from the Emperors: hauing reigned thirteene yeares and eleuen moneths.

The See was void six daies.

22. **CORNELIVS** a Romane, was very learned, and did write many Epistles: there were two Antipopes: he made many ordinances, as may be seene in *Gratian*, and being accused of high treason, for that he had written to *S. Cyprian*, was whipt and put to death vnder the Emperour *Decius*, hauing held the place two yeares, two moneths, and three daies.

The See was void two moneths and five daies.

SCHISME I.

23. **NOVATIAN** a Romane, and an heretical priest, saying that such as had once fallen from the faith, should be no more receiued into the Church, notwithstanding their repentance: he was the first schismaticke, hypocrite, and couetous man which affected the place of Bishop. He kindled the fire of diuision & discord, making himselfe Antipope, with the helpe of *Novatus*, a priest of Carthage, as *S. Cyprian* doth witness writing to *Cornelius*, who condemned him for a heretick in two counsells held at Rome. *Nicestrianus* was an other Antipope in Africke.

Yeare of
Christ.

223.

231.

236.

239.

252.

Teare of
Christ.
253.

23. **SYLVESTER** a Romane, ordained that every Bishop should be accompanied by two deacons and three Archdeacons, to be witnesses of his good conversation: and that Bishops should be thirte years old: yet *Gratian* attributes this decree to *Zozimus*. He was made a Martyr having lived in the place one yere, three moneths, and thirteene daies.

The See was vacant one moneth, and five daies.

24. **LYCIVS STEPHEN** a Romane, was the first that brought sacerdotal habits into vie; *prætor* in former times contenting themselves to be attired with piete, religion, and holinesse, studying more to put off the old man, and vice, than to adorne themselves with new & rich ornaments. He was Martyred one yere, three moneths, and thirteene daies after he came to be Bishop.

The See was vacant one moneth and twelue daies.

25. **LETTICE** the second an Athenian, having taught the Gospell throughout all Spaine, was chosen Pope: he ordained that Churches should be built towards the East: he had a desire to confute the Sabellians, Cerinthians, and Nepotian hereticks. He suffered Martyrdome having held the chaire one yere, ten moneths, and three and twentie daies.

The See was vacant eleuen moneths and fiftene daies.

26. **DENIS** a Grecian, being placed in the See of Rome to be Pope, and being chosen, he first of all both at Rome & in other places, disfigured the Temples, Churchyards, Parishes, and Bishopricks, commanding every one to content himselfe with his limits, there to feed the flocke which should be committed vnto him. He suffered death ten yeres, five moneths, and five daies after his comming into the place.

The See was void five daies.

27. **FELIX** a Romane, ordained that they should euery day celebrat the memorie of Martyrs, and no where but in holie places; that once a yere they should obserue the dedication of Churches. He suffered Martyrdome having bene Bishop three yeres, and five moneths.

The See was vacant five daies.

28. **EVTICHEN** a Tuscane of Luna, having written certaine Epistles and Decrees, and buried three hundred fortie and two Martyrs with his owne hand, he himselfe was made a Martyr, having held the place eight yeres, six moneths, and foure and twentie daies.

The See was vacant eight daies.

29. **CAIUS** of Sallone in Dalmatia, of the familie of *Dioclesian*, suffered Martyrdome, having held the chaire twelue yeres, foure moneths, and six daies.

The See was void two moneths and eight daies.

30. **MARCELLIN** a Romane, being posselt with the feare of torments, honoured Idols, but afterwards he acknowledged his fault in open Synod, assembled at *Sienne*, and did penance: yea afterwards he came and reprehended the Emperor *Dioclesian*, and did willingly suffer Martyrdome, having reigned seuen yeres, nine moneths, and six and twentie daies.

The See was vacant twentie daies.

31. **MARCEL** a Romane, limited the quarters and titles diuided by *Enariste*, and reduced them to siue and twentie: he was made a Martyr, having bene Bishop five yeres, six moneths, and one and twentie daies.

The See was vacant twentie daies.

32. **EVEREST** a phisitian of Greece, made many ordinances: he was martyred, having held the place one yere, seuen moneths, and five and twentie daies.

The See was void seven daies.

33. **MILTIADES** an Affrican, he did forbid fasting vpon Sunday and Thursday: for that the Pagans did celebrat the solemnities of their Saturnian gods. He died, having held the place three yeres, and two moneths.

The See was vacant seuentene daies.

SILVESTER.

Teare of
Christ.
315

SILVESTER a Roman, he changed the Pagan names of dayes: But his greatest worke was the conuersion of the Roman Emperour *Constantin* (as some write) to the Catholike faith, who afterwards caused the tyrannous persecutions against the Christians to cease. He died, having bene Bishop twentie yeres, two moneths, foure daies.

The See was vacant fiftene daies.

THE FIRST GENRALL COVNCCELL.

The first generall Council was held at Nice, by the commandement of *Constantin* the Great, by three hundred and eightene Bishops from all parts of the world, to pacifie the Estate of the Church, troubled chiefly by the detestable heresie of *Arrius*, where he was condemned: and it was concluded, That the sonne of God was *Homousion*, that is to say, consubstantiall to the father, according to the Symbole of our Creede.

MARC a Roman, having ordained that the Symbole made at the Council of Nice, *Credo in unum Deum, &c.* should be sung by the Clergie and people after the preaching of the Gospell; he died within eight moneths, and twentie daies.

IVLIO a Roman, being returned from exile whither he had bene sent by *Constantianus* Arrian, sonne to *Constantin*: he died, having held the place fouretee yeres, five moneths, and sixteene daies.

The See was vacant five and twentie daies.

LIBERIUS a Roman, being banished for that he had resisted the Arrians, by the premisses of the Emperour *Constantinus* an Arrian (according to the opinion of some) he consented to adhere vnto them, to his great infamie: yet in the end reclaiming himselfe, he died a Catholike, having held the Chaire fiftene yeres, foure moneths, and seuentene daies.

The See was voyd six daies.

SCHISME II.

FELIX the second a Roman, was (according vnto some) the eight and thirtieth Pope, but others number him not, for that he did preicide in the absence of *Liberius*. *Onuphrius* holds him for the second Schismaticke: he was martyred by the Arrians, having held the place ten yeres, three moneths, and eleuen daies.

DAMASVS a Spaniard, he writ the liues of Popes by the council of *S. Jerome*: He caused to be said in the Latine Church after the end of the Psalmes, *Gloria Patri, &c.* composed by *Flavianus Antiochenus*; the Symbole of Constantinople, and the Confessor. The ordinance for the singing of Psalmes by turnes, comes from him and *S. Ambrose*. He died, having bene Bishop eightene yeres, two moneths, and ten daies.

The See was vacant seuentene daies.

SCHISME III.

VRIN a Roman, he was Competitor to *Damasus* after the death of *Liberius* and *Felix*: and then began the third Schisme, whenas the ambition of honours began to seize vpon the hearts of the Prelats of the Church.

THE SECOND GENRALL COVNCCELL.

A General Council was held at Constantinople, of one hundred and fiftie Bishops, vnder *Gracian* and *Theodosius*, emperours, for the heresie of *Macedonius* Bishop of Constantinople and of *Euroxe*, denying the Holie Ghost to be God, where they were condemned.

STRICTVS a Roman, he did forbid the Clergie to marrie, and (as some write) did ordain that no man which had had two wiues, might be received into the Priesthood. The Bourgonians for feare of *Flavia* made themselves Christians. He died, having

Number of Popes.		Year of Christ.
40.	having bene Bishop thirtie yeares, one moneth, and five and twentie dayes. <i>The See was vacant a moneth, and fifteene dayes.</i> ANASTATIUS a Roman, ordained, That when they should sing the Gospell, euertie man should stand vp, to the end they might heare it with more reuerence: That such as were defectiue or maymed of any limbe should not be admitted into the Clergie. He died foure yeares, and one and twentie dayes after his election. <i>The See was vacant ten dayes.</i>	398.
41.	INNOCENT of Albania or Scotland died, hauing raigned fifteene yeares, two moneths, and one and twentie dayes. <i>The See was vacant two and twentie dayes.</i>	402.
42.	ZOZIMVS a Grecian, a verie learned man & of a holie life: He did prohibit bondmen to be admitted into the order of Priesthood; muchlesse (saith Platina) bastards and wicked men. He died two yeares, foure moneths, and seuen dayes after his election. <i>The See was vacant nine dayes.</i>	416.
43.	BONIFACE a Roman, it is he which changed the eues of Saints to fastings. He was expelled Rome by reason of <i>Eulalius</i> , by the Emperour <i>Honorius</i> , sonne to <i>Theodosius</i> , who repealed him againe. He died, hauing held the place foure yeares, nine moneths, and eight and twentie dayes. <i>The See was vacant nine dayes.</i>	419.
SCHISME IIII.		
	EVLAIIVS a Roman, during he Schisme against <i>Boniface</i> was chosen by a part of the Clergie, and was put out of Rome with <i>Boniface</i> : He died within three moneths, and seuen dayes after he had bene chosen.	419.
44.	CELESTIN a Roman, ordained, That Priests should be expert in the Ecclesiasticall Cannons. He died, hauing held the Chaire eight yeares, five moneths, and three dayes. <i>The See was voyd a moneth, and eleuen dayes.</i>	423.
THE THIRD GENERALL SYNOD OR COUNCELL.		
	A Generall Councell was held at Ephesus, vnder <i>Theodosius</i> the second, of two hundred Bishops, against the Hereticke, <i>Pelages</i> , and <i>Nestorius</i> , Bishops of Constantinople, who denied the diuinitie of Iesus Christ.	430.
45.	SIXTVS the third a Roman, hauing distributed all his goods vnto the poore, he died, hauing raigned seuen yeares, and eleuen moneths. <i>The See was voyd one moneth, and eleuen dayes.</i>	432.
46.	LEO the Great, so called by reason of his great doctrine, he ordained or renewed the Rogations and Processions, which they call Letanies. His Letanies are the lesser, and <i>Gregorie</i> the Great instituted the greater, hauing made many Decrees. He did forbid the singing of <i>Alleluia</i> , and <i>Gloria in excelsis Deo</i> , in the time of Lent: he died, hauing bene Bishop twentie yeares, eleuen moneths, and two dayes. The See being voyd seuen dayes. Before this Pope, the See of Rome did number their yeares from the passion of Christ.	440.
THE FOURTH GENERALL SYNOD.		
	THE generall Councell of Calcedoine, vnder the Emperour <i>Marrian</i> , of two hundred twentie five Bishops, against the heresie of <i>Eutiches</i> a Priest of Constantinople, confounding the two natures of Iesus Christ.	452.
47.	HILARIVS of Sardinia, a learned man, he did forbid any man to chuse his successor to any Ecclesiasticall charge. He died six yeares, three moneths, and ten dayes after his election. <i>The See was voyd ten dayes.</i>	461.
48.	SIMPLICIVS of Tiuolo ordained (as some write) That no Clergie man should acknowledge	467.

Number of Popes.		Year of Christ.
	acknowledge any of the Laitie in the possession of a benefice. He died hauing held the chaire fifteene yeares, six moneths, and three and twentie dayes. <i>The See was vacant six daies.</i>	
49.	FELIX the third a Romane, ordained that Churches should be consecrated only by Bishops. He died hauing bene Bishop eight yeares, eleuen moneths, and seuen, and twentie dayes. <i>The See was void five daies.</i>	483.
50.	GELASIUS an African, ordained that the sacred orders should not be admitted but four times a yere, and on the Saturday: he composed Hymnes, Collects, answers, and made other ordinances, being learned. He died hauing held the place foure yeares, eight moneths, and nineteene daies. <i>The See was vacant five daies.</i>	492.
51.	ANASTASIUS the second, a Romane, he is reputed an hereticke infamous by some, and fauouring the Nestorians; yet as it is recorded by some, he excommunicated the Emperour <i>Anastasin</i> as an Eutichen. He died miserably, hauing emptied his bowells like vnto <i>Arrium</i> , two yeares, eleuen moneths, and foure and twentie daies after his election. <i>The See was void two daies.</i>	496.
52.	CELEVS SYMMACHVS of Sardinia, was Pope, notwithstanding the election of one called <i>Laurence</i> , and of another called <i>P. Alton</i> , so by them began the first Schisme: for <i>Theoderic</i> king of the Gothes, who then held Italie, hearing that the seditious Clergie of Rome would depose <i>Symmachus</i> , he sent this <i>Alton</i> to hold the See, and to chase away the other two: yet <i>Symmachus</i> being purged of the crimes which were objected against him, was restored, and died hauing held the place fifteene yeares, seuen moneths, and eight and twentie daies. <i>The See was vacant two daies.</i>	498.
SCHISME V.		
	LAURENCE a Romane, during the Schisme against <i>Symmachus</i> died the first yere.	513.
53.	CELEVS HORMISDA of Fresselona a citie in Campagnia, seeing many Monkes at Rome obstinat in the heresie of <i>Eutiches</i> , he caused them to be banished the citie. He did great almes deeds, condemned the heresie of the Manicheens which sprang vp againe, and caused their bookes to be burned. He died hauing held the place nine yeares, nine moneths, and seuenteen daies. <i>The See was void five daies.</i>	514.
54.	JOHN of Tuscane, being sent in Embassage by king <i>Theoderic</i> an Arrian, to the Emperour <i>Iustin</i> at Constantinople, to restore the Arrians to their liberty, and hauing obtained it, notwithstanding being suspected by <i>Theoderic</i> , he was imprisoned by him, where he died in great want, two yeares, nine moneths, and six daies after his election. <i>The See was void one moneth and seuen and twentie daies.</i>	523.
55.	FELIX the fourth, a Samien, built the Church at S. Cosmo at Rome, and repaired some others. He died hauing held the place foure yeares, two moneths, and eight and twentie daies. <i>The See was vacant three daies.</i>	526.
56.	BONIFACE the second a Romane, was allowed by all men after the death of <i>Dioscours</i> : and died two yeares, and two daies after his election. <i>The See was void three moneths and five daies.</i>	530.
SCHISME VI.		
	DIOSCOURS a Romane, being chosen by some, during the Schisme, against <i>Boniface</i> , died soone after.	
57.	JOHN the second, surnamed <i>Mercurie</i> , hauing receiued a confession of the Faith from	531.

Number
of Popes.

from the Emperor *Iustinian*, signed with his owne hand, with a goodly present, died hauing held the place two yeares, foure moneths, and six daies.

The See was void six daies.

58. *RUSTICVS* A *GAPITVS* a *Romane*, he caused *Iustinian* to leaue the heresie of *Eutiches*, with which he had beene seduced by *Anthemius* a Bishop of *Constantinople*: then he died hauing held the place a yere, and nineteene daies.

The See was void six moneths, and twentie and five daies.

59. *CELIVS* *SILVERIVS* of *Fresfelona* in *Campania*, refusing to restore *Anthemius* the hereticke to his Bishopricke of *Constantinople*, by the commaundement of the Emperesse, was falsely condemned to haue sought to deliuer *Rome* vnto the *Gothes*, and was banished into the *Island* of *Pontus*, where he died of pueritie, one yere, five moneths, and two daies after his election.

The See was vacant five daies.

SCHISME VII.

60. *VIGILIUS* a *Romane*, created during the Schisme against *Siluerius* an ambitious man, and who had beene the cause of the expulsion of *Siluerius*, obtained the Papall dignitie by force, and through the fauour of *Theodora* wife to the Emperor *Iustinian*: who afterwards caused him to be drawne out of *Rome*, with the consent of the *Romans* who hated him mortally, and carried to *Constantinople*, where he receiued many outrages & indignities, being led through the towne with a halter about his necke, and in the end banished, for that he would not restore *Anthemius* the hereticke to his Bishopricke of *Constantinople*, according to a bad promise he had made to *Theodora*, whereof he repented him. He died hauing held the place seuentene yeares, six moneths, and nine and twentie daies.

The See was void one moneth, and five daies.

THE FIFT GENERAL COVNCELL.

A Generall counsell was held at *Constantinople* the second time, of one hundred sixtie and five Bishops, against *Anthemius* Bishop of *Constantinople*, and *Theodore* an eloquent man, who said that the virgin *Mary* had brought forth a man only, and not man and God: where it was concluded that she was *Theotocos*, the mother of God.

61. *PELAGIVS* a *Romane*, ordained that hereticke and Schismatickes should be punished by the temporall sword; and that none should be admitted to Ecclesiasticall orders by ambition and gifts. He died hauing beene Bishop five yeares, ten moneths, and eight and twentie daies.

The See was void four moneths and five daies.

62. *JOHN* the third a *Romane*, hauing finished the reparations of certain Churches, and enlarged the Churchyards of Martyrs, died twelue yeares, eleuen moneths, and six and twentie daies after his election.

The See was void ten moneths and sixteene daies.

63. *BENEDICT* OF *BENNET* a *Romane*, affected the poore much, and seeing *Italy* ruined by the *Lombards* wars, who began to possesse the countrie, at the instigation of *Narfes*, who was incensed against the Emperesse *Sophia*, it being also afflicted by famine and pestilence, died hauing held the place foure yeares, one moneth, and nine and twentie daies.

The See was void four moneths.

64. *PELAGIVS* the second, a *Romane*, chosen without the consent of the Emperor, for that *Rome* was besieged by the *Lombards*, hauing made of his fathers house an hospitall for the poore, transported the Patriarchship of *Aquilea* to *Grada*, making it Metropolitan of the province of *Venise*, died of the plague, hauing held the place ten yeares, two moneths, and ten daies.

The See was vacant six moneths and five and twentie daies.

GREGORIE

Number
of Popes.

GREGORIE the Great, was chosen by the Clergie, and all the people, with the consent of the emperor *Maurice*: He inuented many ceremonies and prayers, the particularities whereof you may read in *Platina*. Some attribute to him the abstinence from flesh in Lent, but others hold it is much more ancient, & that he only added the foure dayes from Wednesday to Sunday to make vp the number of forty. He died, hauing held the Chaire thirteen yeares, six moneths, and ten dayes.

The See was vacant five moneths, and seuentene daies.

66. *SABINIAN* a *Tuscan*, whose beginning is vnknowne, and with reason: for he was wicked, and vnworthy of his Estate, a detractor of his predecessors vertues, saying, That he had wasted the goods of the Church, hauing beene liberall to the poore: he had a will to burne his bookes. Hauing ordained burning Lampes in the Church, and Bells, and that the houres should strike. He died one yere, five moneths, and foure dayes after his election.

The See was void eleuen moneths, and six and twentie dayes.

67. *BONIFACE* the third a *Roman*, hauing obtayned the Primacie ouer all the Churches, from the Emperor *Phocas*, ordained, in a Councell of seuentie two Bishops, thirtie Priests, and three Deacons, That the Bishop should be chosen by the Clergie, and the people: and that all they which should come vnto the dignitie by gifts and fauours, should be excommunicated. This was a holie ordinance, but much neglected to the ruine of many. He died within eight moneths, and three and twentie dayes after his coming to the Chaire.

The See was voyden moneths, and three dayes.

68. *BONIFACE* the fourth of *Valentin* in *Prouence*, obtayned of the emperor the Pantheon of all the fained gods, and did dedicate it to the honour of the Virgin *Mary*, and of all the Martyrs. Then was the Feast of All Saints instituted, the twelfth of May. Hauing made a Monasterie of his house, and giuen leaue to Monkes to preach, baptize, and confesse, he died, six yeares, eight moneths, and eleuen dayes after his election.

The See was vacant foure moneths, and three and twentie dayes.

69. *THEODAT* a *Roman*, a man of holie life, caused the Councell of *Auxerre* to be celebrated, in which the new yeares givings which were giuen the first day of the yere were forbidden, to the end they should not seeme to imitate the Pagans. He died, hauing held the place three yeares, ten moneths, and seuen and twentie dayes.

The See was voyden moneth, and six and twentie dayes.

70. *BONIFACE* the fift a *Neopolitan*, a verie mild man, ordained first of all the Popes, That Churches should be Sanctuaries for all fugitiues, except sacrilegious persons, and such as were excommunicated. He died, hauing been Bishop three yeares, ten moneths, and nine dayes.

The See was void thirteene dayes.

71. *HONORIVS* was liberall to the poore: He beautified *S. Peters* Church with gold, silver, and goodly Tables. Afterwards he died, hauing held the Chaire twelue yeares, eleuen moneths, and seuen dayes.

The See was voyden yeares, seuen moneths, and eightene dayes.

72. *SEVERIN* a *Roman*, was liberall to the poore: He had a care to repaire the Churches, and to increate the reuenews thereof. *Dagobert* of *France* had the like zeale at the same time, who caused the Church of *S. Denis* to be built, enriching it wonderfully, yea with the reliques and spoyles of other Churches. This Pope died within one yere, two moneths, and foure dayes.

The See was vacant one moneth, and two and twentie dayes.

73. *JOHN* the fourth of *Dalmatia*, redeemed many *Dalmatians* and *Illyrians*, detained captiues by the *Sarrazins*: then died within one yere, nine moneths, and eightene dayes.

The See was void one moneth, and foureteene dayes.

74. *THEODORIC* borne at *Hierusalem*, sonne to *Theodor* Bishop of *Hierusalem*,

WAS

Number
of Popes.

was liberal to the poore. The election was of force, being made by the Clergie and people, and confirmed by the Exarcke, as lieutenant to the Emperour. He died, having beene Bishop six yeares, five moneths, and eightene daies.

The See was vacant foure moneths, and one day.

75. MARTIN an Italian, assembled a Councell at Rome of one hundred and fiftie Bishops, against *Pyrrhus, Sergius, and Cyrus*, being absent, and *Paul* who was present, Patriarches of Constantinople, Heretickes, Monothelites, denying two wills in Iesus Christ. By the commandement of the Emperour *Constantin* the third, an heretick, he was banished vnto a citie of Pontus, where (having indured many miseries) he ended his dayes, having held the Chaire six yeares, one moneth, and eight and twentie dayes.

The See was voyd eight moneths, and eight and twentie dayes.

76. EVGENIUS a Roman, ordained, That the houses of Priests & Bishops should be built neere vnto Churches, with Prisons to punish the crimes of Clergie men. He died two yeares, nine moneths, and fouretee dayes after his election.

The See was voyd one yeare, and seenteene dayes.

77. VITALIANVS a Roman, ordained singing in the Church of Rome, to the which he did accord Organs, the which had not bene vsed in diuine seruice: and being wholly giuen to defend the Christian Religion against Heretickes, he died within three yeares, five moneths, and nine and twentie dayes.

The See was vacant two moneths, and fouretee dayes.

78. DEODAT a Roman Monke, cured a Leaper in kissing him, as some write: he was a religious man, affable, and liberrall to the poore, and strangers. He died, having held the Chaire foure yeares, two moneths, and fiftene dayes.

The See was voyd foure moneths and six dayes.

79. DONNIVS a Roman, caused the porch of S. Peters Church to be paved with marble: and by his integritie he subiected the Church of Rauenna to that of Rome, the which pretended to be head of it selfe. He died two yeares, five moneths, and ten dayes after his election.

The See was voyd two moneths, and eight and twentie dayes.

80. AGATHON a Sicilian Monke, was of so good a disposition, as neuer man that came vnto him went away sad or discontent, but joyfull and comforted. He died within two yeares, and seuen moneths.

The See was vacant seuen moneths.

THE SIXT GENERALL COVNCCELL.

A Generall Councell was held at Constantinople of two hundred eightie nine Bishops, against the Monothelites, who denied two wills and natures in Iesus Christ. The Patriarch of Constantinople forooke his heresie; but *Atachaire* of Antioch would not leave it, and was therefore deposed from his Bishopricke. Marriage to the Priests of Greece was allowed there, but not to the Westerne Church.

81. LEO the second, a Sicilian, a vrie learned man in the Greeke and Latine tongues, and a good Musitian, who reduced the singing into better musick. He loued the poore, exhorting all by words, and example, to pietie, iustice, humanitie, and other vertues; having ordained that they should giue the Pixe at the Masse. He died within ten moneths, and nineteene dayes.

The See was vacant one yeare, one moneth, and one and twentie dayes.

82. BENNET the second, a Roman, was of so holie a conuersation, as in fauour of him the Emperour *Constantine* the fourth allowed the election of Popes to be sufficient, being made by the Clergie, and people of Rome, without the authoritie and confirmation of the Emperour: the which was not long obserued. He died ten moneths, and seuen and twentie dayes after his election.

The See was vacant two moneths, and nine dayes.

83. IOHN the fifta Syrian, a learned and zealous man: he was consecrated like vnto his

Number
of Popes.

his predecessor, by the Bishops of Ostia, Portence, and Velitercia, the which he ordained should afterwards be obserued, as the custome is yet. He died within one yeare, and nine daies.

The See was void two moneths eightene daies.

SCHISME VII.

PETER an Archpriest of Rome, was chosen by the Clergie, and held the sea for certain daies. *Theodore* a priest of Rome being chosen by the Romane armie, held the chaire for certaine daies against *Peter*, and these two were the Authors of the seuenth Schisme, both which being expelled, *Conon* was created.

84. CONON a Romane, surnamed *Angel*, for his holie life, doctrine, and beaurtie, was chosen Pope, after a great contention against *Peter* and *Theodore*. He died within eleuen moneths.

The See was vacant two moneths and five and twentie daies.

SCHISME VIII.

THEODORE a priest of Rome, a rich man, who had corrupted the souldiers with money, held the See for certaine daies.

PASCAL an Archdeacon, being convicted of art magicke during the Schisme of *Theodore*, had also the chaire for certain daies, but in the end both being expelled, *Sergius* was created.

85. SERGIUS a Syrian, a man of a holie life: he died thirteene yeares, eight moneths, and thirteene daies after his creation.

The See was void one moneth and twentie daies.

86. IOHN the sixt, a Grecian, he was very carefull to repaire Churches and Altars, and to redeeme captiues with the treasure of the Church. He died having held the chaire three yeares, two moneths, and fourtee daies.

The See was vacant one moneth and eightene daies.

87. IOHN the seuenth a Grecian, an eloquent man, having caused many Churches to be repaired, and to be enrich with pictures and statues, died two yeares, seuen moneths, and seuteene daies after his election.

The See was not void at all.

88. SISINVS or ZOFIMVS a Syrian, a man of great sanctitie, died suddenly, being much tormented with the gout in his feet. He had a great desire not to omit that which did belong vnto a true Bishop. He liued in the place but twentie daies.

89. CONSTANTIN a Syrian, was beloued of all men, especially of the poore: this Pope being at Constantinople, the Emperour *Iustinian* the second kist his feet in signe of honour; and so that custome was brought in by this Emperour, the which continues vnto this day. He was the first of all the Popes which did oppoite himselfe boldly against the Emperour *Philip Bardanes*, who would haue taken away images. He died having held the chaire eight yeares, one moneth, and twentie daies.

The See was vacant one moneth and ten daies.

90. GREGORIE the second a Romane, sent *Boniface* a learned Monke into Germanie to preach the Gospell, where he conuerted many: he excommunicated the Emperour *Leo* surnamed *Iconomachus*, for that he attempted to take away images. So the Emperours proceeding was the cause of the encrease of the Romane See: for then Rome, and in a manner all Italie, retired themselves from the Emperours obedience. The Exarchat ceased, being held by the Lombards: and from that time the princes of France were called to succour the Popes, who were by them (as Protectors) defended and enriched. He died having held the place fourtee yeares, ten moneths, and two and twentie daies.

The See was void one moneth and five dayes.

91. GREGORIE the third, a Syrian, a learned man in the Greeke & Latine tongues, being besieged within Rome by the king of the Lombards, and hauing no support

- Number of Popes.** **from the Emperor, he retired himselfe into France to Charles Martel from whom he obtained what he desired. He died ten yeares, eight moneths, and foure and twentie daies after his creation.** **Yeares of Christ.**
92. **ZACHARIE** a Grecian, a man endued with many vertues: he pacified Italie being then much troubled, and approved the election of *Pepin* to beking of France, in the place of *Childerike*, who was forced to become a Monke, and freed the French from the oath of allegiance which they had made to him. He died ten yeares, three moneths, and fifteene daies after he came to the place.
93. **STEPHEN** the second, a Romane, whom many omit, for that he liued but foure daies.
94. **STEPHEN** the third called the second, a wise & vertuous man, and so generally beloued, that he was carried by some vpon their shoulders vnto S. Iohn de Latran; whereupon the Popes vse to be carried at this day. He came into France, and obtained succours from *Pepin* against the king of the Lombards, with great presents, that is to say, the seigneurie of Rauenna, of a great extent, the which in former times did belong vnto the Emperours Lieutenants: hauing annointed *Pepin* king of France, he died hauing bene Pope five yeares, and nine and twentie daies.
95. **PAVL** a Romane, brother to *Stephen*, a man very pitifull to the poore, sicke, and prisoners, whom he did visit alone in the night. He was created Pope, notwithstanding the election made by some of *Theophylactes*. *Paul* died, a great defender of widowes, orphans, and poore people, hauing held the place ten yeares, and one moneth.

The See was void one yeare, seven moneths, and seven daies.

SCHISME IX.

THEOPHYLACTES a Romane, an Archdeacon, was chosen by some during the Schisme against *Paul*, and held the See certaine moneths.

SCHISME X.

CONSTANTIN of Nepefea Layman, was created by the Laitie by force, and against the Canons: he held the See one yeare, one moneth, ten daies.

PHILIP a Romane Monke, during the Scisme was created by the Laitie against *Constantin*, and held it five daies, but both being expelled, they created *Stephen*.

96. **STEPHEN** the fourth called the third, a Syccilian Monke, was chosen Pope against the election of *Constantin* and *Philip* both Antipopes. *Stephen* hauing in a Council at Latran reuoked the ordinances of *Constantin* the Antipope, and disanulled the fourth Council at Constantinople, called by the Emperor *Constantin* the first (some say *Leo* the third his father) for that which concerned images; died three yeares, five moneths, and seven and twentie daies after his election.

The See was void nine daies.

97. **ADRIAN** a Romane, one of the most famous of all his predecessors in bountie, learning, & sanctitie of life, called *Charlemagne* king of France to succour him against *Didier* king of the Lombards, who lost his realme in a Councell of one hundred fiftie and three Bishops, which *Segebert* calls generall. He gaue to *Charlemagne* power to chuse the Pope, and other Prelats, and ordained that his Bulls should be sealed in lead. He died hauing bene Pope seven yeres, ten moneths, and seuentene daies.

The See was not void at all.

THE SEVENTH COUNCELL.

A Councell held at Nice of three hundred and fiftie Bishops, for the restitution of images, and a forme to honour them: but this was opposed by the Councell of Frankfort.

Leo

- Number of Popes.** **98.** **LEO** the third, a Roman, a learned man, louing the poore, giuen to preach, and affecting learned men, was beaten almost to death, and put in prison by two Roman Priests, from the which he escaped, and came into France to *Charlemagne* who restored him to his dignitie, hauing purged himselfe by oath. After that he had crowned *Charles* the emperour, he died, hauing been Pope twentie yeares, five moneths, and eightene daies.

The See was void twentie daies.

99. **STEPHEN** the fift, called the fourth, a Roman, a noble man, and learned: He came into France to excuse himselfe touching his election, without the consent of the emperour *Lewis* the Gentle, whom he crowned at Rheims; then returning to Rome, he died six moneths, and three and twentie daies after his election.

The See was void two daies.

100. **PASCAL** a Roman Monke, being chosen without the authoritie of the Emperour *Lewis* the Gentle, excused himselfe by letters and embassages: Then the emperour did quit this goodly Prerogative and right of election, refering onely that the new Pope should renew amitie by embassages, presently after his election. He died, hauing bene Pope seuen yeares, three moneths, and seuentene daies.

The See was void foure daies.

101. **EUGENIUS** the second, a Roman, liberrall to the poore, and learned, was chosen Pope, notwithstanding the election of one *Zinzus*. He died three yeares, six moneths, foure and twentie daies after his election.

The See was vacant two daies.

SCHISME XI.

102. **ZINZUS** a Roman, created during the Schisme against *Eugenius*, held the See certaine daies.

103. **VALENTIN** a Roman, an eloquent man, and of good life; he died within one moneth, and ten daies.

The See was vacant thre daies.

104. **GREGORIE** the fourth, a Roman, gaue Councell to king *Lewis* the Gentle, to hold the Feast of all Saints in France and Germanie, vpon the first day of Nouember. He liued Pope fixteene yeares.

The See was void fiftene daies.

105. **SERGIUS** the second, a Roman, a good man, called before Swines snout, changed his name, and was the first (according to the common opinion) which gaue occasion to his successors to chaunge their names at their election. He died the third yeare.

The See was not void.

106. **LEO** the fourth, a Roman and a Monke, was a verie good man: he resisted the Sarrazins comming with a great armie against the Neapolitans and Romans: and hauing first called vpon God, and then giuen leaue to go against the enemies, his men returned victors. He died eight yeares, three moneths, and six daies after his election.

The See was vacant six daies.

AN ADVERTISEMENT.

Some Historians, yea of great authoritie, set in this place Ioan the seuenth or eighth, a German or English woman vnder the habit of a man, being a woman, studied in such sort as she was advanced to be Pope, and ruled two yeares, and certaine moneths, at the end whereof (being with child) she was deliuered in a publicke Procession, and died. *Martinus Polonus*, *Platina*, *Galateranus*, *Philipp*, *Berg*, *Nauderus*, and others.

107. **BENEDET** the third, a Roman, was chosen against his will, weeping when he received this charge, and taking God to witnesse, That he was not capable: yet he was a verie good man, visited the sicke, fed the poore, comforted the comfortlesse,

Qq ij and

Number of Popes. and defended the widowes and orphans. He was depofed, and in the meane time *Anastafius* vnrped the See. Afterwards he was reftored, and died, hauing bene Pope two yeres, eight moneths, and fixteene daies.

Teare of
Chrifi.

SCHISME XII.

107. **ANASTASIUS** the third, a Roman, created during the Schisme againft *Benedict*, held the place for certaine daies, and was the Author of the twelfth Schisme.

NICHOLAS the Great, a Roman: he made many Decrees, and among others, That no man fhould affist at the Maffe of a Prieft bafe borne: That baptifme fhould not be reiterated, although it were adminiftried by a Pagan or Iew, as it were in the name of the Father, the Sonne, and the Holie Ghof. He died, hauing held the Chaire nine yeres, fix moneths, and twentie daies.

The See was vacant feuen daies.

108. **ADRIAN** the fecond, a Roman, was chofen Pope without the attending of the Emperours Embaffadours: He was a good man, and learned, liberrall to the poore, and humble to all men, yea wafhing the Bifhops feet. He died, foure yeres, eleuen moneths, and twelue daies after his election.

The See was voyd two daies.

THE EIGHT GENERALL COVNCCELL.

A Generall Councell was held the fourth time at Conftantinople, by 300 or 383 Bifhops, againft *Photinus* Bifhop of Conftantinople, who was reiected and excommunicated, and *Ignatius* (vniuilly depriued) was reftored.

109. **JOHN** the eight, a Roman (for we will leaue *Ioane*) a learned man, came into France, hauing elcaped out of prifon at Rome: He crowned three Emperours in foure yeres, *Charles* the Bald at Rome, *Lewis* the Stuttering, in a Councell held at Troys, and *Charles* the Groffe after his returne to Rome, the which neuer happened to any Pope. He died, hauing held the place ten yeres, and two daies.

The See was voyd three daies.

110. **MARTIN** the fecond came to be Pope by bad praictifes, and died within one yere, and one moneth.

The See was voyd two daies.

111. **ADRIAN** the third, a Roman, ordayned, after *Nicholas*, That no Emperour fhould deale any more with the election of the Pope, but that it fhould be free vnto the Clergie. He died after his election one yere, three moneths, and nineteene daies.

The See was voyd three daies.

112. **STEPHEN** the fixt, called the fixt, a Roman: he tooke delight in the holineffe of fome men, efpecially of one called *Bernardus* Bifhop of Poitiers. He held the place fix yeres, and nine daies.

The See was voyd five daies.

113. **FORMOSUS**, a Roman, was chofen Pope: he held the See feure yeres, fix moneths, and eighteene daies, and then was depriued, and afterwards was reftored by corruption.

The See was voyd five moneths, and two daies.

SCHISME XIII.

114. **SEVERUS** the third, a Roman, created during the Schisme againft *Formofus*, held the See for a certaine time, which Schisme was cruell and fcandalous, and lafted long.

BONIFACE the fixt, was put to death within 25 daies after his election: He did nothing worthe of more in fo fhort a time, no more than his fix fuccellors, for during their liues, the one did perfcute another vnworthily.

The See was voyd five daies.

STEPHEN

Number of Popes. **STEPHEN** the feuenth, called the fixt, a Romane, caufed the decrees of *Formosus* to be broken; he vnrburied his bodie, and cut off two of his fingers, and then interred him among the Laitie. In the end repenting him of his villanous acts, he became a Monke, hauing held the See one yere, two moneths, and nineteene daies.

The See was vacant three daies.

116. **ROMAINE** borne at Rome, did approue the acts of *Formofus*, difannulling thofe of *Stephen*: he was Pope foure moneths, and three and twentie daies.

The See was void one day.

117. **THEODORE** the fecond, a Romane, a fignitious man, who by the iuft judgement of God, died twentie daies after his election. *Platina* faith, that in thofe daies men came vnto Ecclefiafticall dignities by corruption, and not by vertue, as in former times.

The See was void one day.

118. **JOHN** the ninth, a Romane and a Monke, flying to Rauenna, difannulled the acts of *Stephen*, and ratified the decrees of *Formofus* in the prefence of the Emperour, and of king *Charles* the Simple. He died hauing held the place one yere, and fifteene daies.

The See was void one day.

119. **BENNET** the fourth, a Romane, he was not worthe of memorie, for the great troubles which were raifed by his predeceffors. He died hauing bin Pope one yere, fix moneths, and fifteene daies.

The See was vacant fix daies.

120. **LEO** the fixt, hauing held the See fortie daies, was imprifoned in a Monafterie, and then forced by his fuccellor to become a Monke. He died of griefe, fceeing himfelfe fo ill intreated by him whom he had bread vp and aduanced.

The See was not voyd at all.

SCHISME XIII.

121. **CHRISTOPHER**, a Romane, during the Schisme againft *Leo*, hauing fo wickedly made himfelfe Pope, as we haue faid, loft it within feuen moneths after. He was put in prifon, and died poorly.

The See was not void.

122. **SERGIVS** the third, a Romane, caufed his predeceffor to be put in prifon: he commaunded the bodie of *Formofus* the one hundred & thirteenth Pope, to whom he had bene a Competitor, to be taken out of the graue, and his head to be cut off as if he had bene aliue. He died hauing held the place feuen yeres, three moneths, and fixteene daies.

The See was void five daies.

123. **ANASTASIUS** the third, a Romane, hauing carried himfelfe honeftly, and done no act worthe of reprehention, died, hauing bene Pope two yeres, one moneth, and two and twentie daies.

The See was void two daies.

124. **LANDVS SAEVINVS** a man of fmal efteeme, died after two yeres, fix moneths, and two and twentie daies.

The See was vacant fix and twentie daies.

125. **JOHN** the tenth, a Romane, giuen more to armes than to pietie and religion, expelled the Sarrazins out of Calabria, with the helpe of *Albert* Marquis of Tufcane, and for that he did attribute vnto himfelfe all the glorie of this victorie, he was flain by the fouldiers; hauing bin Pope fifteene yeres, two moneths, and fifteene daies.

The See was void one day.

126. **LEO** the fixt, a Romane, hauing carried himfelfe honeftly, according to the corruption of that age, died within fix moneths, and fifteene daies after his election.

The See was void one day.

127. **STEPHEN** the eight, called the feuenth, a Romane, a modeft & religious man.

Q q iij

He

Number of Popes.		Years of Christ.
128.	He died having been Pope two yeares, one moneth, and fifteene daies. <i>The See was void two daies.</i> JOHN the eleuenth, a Romane, hauing done nothing worthe of memorie, died hauing held the place foure yeares, eleuen moneths, and fifteene daies. <i>The See was void one daie.</i>	930.
129.	LEO the feuenth, a Romane, did nothing worthe of memorie. The heretic of the Anthropomorphites (who said that God had a corporall forme) renewed at this time. <i>Otho</i> the first, was the first Emperour which gaue the oath of fidelitie to this Pope, whom he freed out of prison, where he had beene put by the Romanes: and <i>Leo</i> confirmed vnto him the power to chuse the Popes. He died after three yerres, six moneths, and ten daies. <i>The See was void one moneth.</i>	931.
130.	STEPHEN the ninth, called the eight, he came not out of his house by reason of the scars he had in his face, of wounds which he had receiued in a sedition. He died hauing beene pope three yeares, foure moneths, and fifteene daies. <i>The See was void ten daies.</i>	939.
131.	MARTIN the third, a Romane, a quiet man; he repaired Churches, and fed the poore. He died within three yerres, six moneths, and foureene daies after his election <i>The See was vacant three daies.</i>	942.
132.	AGAPETVS the third, a Romane, a man of a good life, and a louer of peace, he died hauing held the chaire nine yeares, seven moneths, and ten daies. <i>The See was void twelue daies.</i>	946.
133.	JOHN the twelfth, a Romane, he was one of the first that changed his name, he was wicked, licentious, and cruell; & comming to that dignitie by his fathers greatness he held it vnworthily eight yeares, foure moneths, and one day, hauing cut off a Cardinals nose, and anothers hand, for that he had written vnto the Emperour <i>Otho</i> the first, what a scandall the church did suffer by his detestable life. <i>The See was not void.</i>	956.
134.	LEO the eight, a Romane (after that <i>John</i> the twelfth had beene depofed for his wicked life, in a councell held at Rome, almost of all the Bishops of Italie) was substituted by <i>Otho</i> the Great, defender of the Church, and a very religious prince; and he held the See one yeare, six moneths, and seuentene daies. Presently after the depature of <i>Otho</i> , <i>John</i> the twelfth was called home againe by the seditious and inconstant Romanes, and <i>Leo</i> expelled, who retired himselfe to the Emperour to auoid a greater Schisme. <i>John</i> being thus restored, held the See three moneths, and eight and twentie daies, at the end whereof being taken in adulterie, he was slaine by the womans husband. LEO the eight was restored by <i>Otho</i> , and held the See eight moneths, and two and twentie daies: and <i>Bennet</i> the first was banished and degraded by <i>Otho</i> , after that he had besieged, and taken the towne. <i>Leo</i> seeking to prevent the malice of the Romanes, who proceeded in the election by corruption and practises, ordained in open Senat, That no man should be made Pope without the consent of the Emperour, And he restored the donation made vnto the Church by <i>Iustin</i> . <i>The See was void six months and one daie.</i>	963.
SCHISME XV.		
	BENNET the first a Romane, created during the Schisme against <i>Leo</i> , held the place certaine daies.	964.
135.	JOHN the thirteenth, a Romane, a Bishops sonne, held the seat six yeares, eleuen moneths, and five daies. The seditious Romanes being accustomed to reiect their Bishop, caused him to be put in prison by <i>Peter</i> their Prouost, and then banished, but nearing that <i>Otho</i> the first came against them with a great armie, they called him backe againe. This Prouost was deliuered ouer to the hangman, who stripped him, and set him vpon an asse with his face turned, and his hands bound vnder the taile and	665.

Number of Popes.		Years of Christ.
	and so was led through the citie, after which he was sent into exile, and his adherents punished. <i>The See was void thirteene daies.</i>	
136.	DONNVS the second, a Roman, he was so modest, as he indured all indignities of the Romans, and died within three moneths of his election. <i>The See was not void at all.</i>	972.
137.	BENNET the first, called the sixth, hauing held the See one yeare, & six moneths, was imprisoned by <i>Cinthius</i> a Roman citizen, where he was strangled: others say, he died of hunger, for which iniurie there was no iustice done. <i>Platina</i> wonders at the change of things, for that now the Soueraigne Bishops of Rome haue a greater power. <i>The See was void one yeare, and ten daies.</i>	972.
138.	BONIFACE the feuenth, enioyed his dignitie but one moneth, and twelue daies. <i>The See was void twentie daies.</i>	974.
139.	BENNET the sixth, called the seuenth, hauing endeauoured like a good man, and a louer of peace, to persuaade the Germans and Italians to make choyce of a good Emperour, the Common-weale being much afflicted, He held the See nine yerres, one moneth, and ten daies. <i>The See was void three daies.</i>	975.
SCHISME XVI.		
	THE sixteenth Schisme was betwixt <i>Boniface</i> the seuenth, <i>Bennet</i> the sixth, and <i>John</i> the foureteenth.	975.
140.	JOHN the foureteenth, a Roman, was put in prison, either for his wicked life, or by the kinsfolkes of <i>Boniface</i> the seuenth, his enemies, to whom he had beene competitor, where he died of hunger. <i>The See was not void at all.</i>	984.
	BONIFACE the feuenth, a Roman, entred the Chaire by vnlawfull meanes, and by the same meanes fell from it, hauing stolen the treasures of <i>S. Peter</i> , he fled to Constantinople, from whence he returned, hearing that <i>John</i> the foureteenth was chosen Pope, whom he put in prison, and (as some write) he caused his eyes to be put out: and he died of hunger. He gouerned the Church the second time, foure moneths, and six daies. <i>The See was vacant ten daies.</i>	985.
141.	JOHN the fifteenth, was hated of all men, for that he distributed the goods of the Church to his kinsfolks and friends (whereof at this day there is too much imitation.) He died of hunger being a prisoner, and then in great want by the will of God, hauing beene Pope nine yeares, six moneths, and ten daies. <i>The See was void one day.</i>	985.
142.	JOHN the sixteenth, a Roman, a wife and valiant Pope: he held the See foure moneths. <i>The See was void six daies.</i>	995.
143.	GREGORIE the first, a Saxon, cousin to the Emperour <i>Otho</i> the third, hauing beene forced to retire himselfe into Germanie, by the practises of <i>Crescentius</i> the Consul, who had caused <i>John</i> the feuenth to be chosen Antipope. The Consul was hanged by the people, and the Antipope was depriued both of dignitie and life, hauing first lost his eyes. This, with other causes recited by <i>Platina</i> , gaue way to the seuen Electors of the Empire, the which was confirmed by <i>Gregorie</i> , in a Councell held at Rome. He held the See two yeares, eight moneths, and three daies. <i>The See was void eight moneths, and ten daies.</i>	995.

SCHISME XVII.

JOHN the feucleenteenth, a Grecian, created during the Schisme, a wicked and detestable man (whom many put in the number of Popes) held the Chaire ten months before that *Gregorie* was restored. They put out the eyes, and cut off the nose and eares of *Crescentius*, and afterwards hanged him, being first murdered by the people, as *Platina* reports.

SYLVESTER the second, a Monke, borne in Aquitaine, leaving his Abbey for the desire he had to learning, went to Seuille in Spaine, held then by the Sarrazins, where he studied, so as he was Scholemaster to *Robert* the French king, and to the Emperour *Otho*: after which, he was Archbishop of Rheims, and then of Ra-uenna, and in the end Pope. Some write, that he came to this dignitie by magicke, which he had studied in Spaine. He was before called *Gilbert* or *Gerbert*: and died, foure yeres, six moneths, and twelue daies after his election.

The See was voyd five and twentie daies.

JOHN the feucleenteenth, a Roman, confirmed the Feast of All-Soules, by the counsell of *Odile* Abbot of Clugny, who had bene amazed at the noyse he had heard about Mount Etna, which grew by reason of the blustering and raging waues of the Sea, and the vomiting forth of fire in the Mountaine. *Berno* writes, That he was also given to the studie of Negromancie. He died within foure moneths, and siue and twentie daies.

The See was voyd nineteene daies.

JOHN the eighteenth, a Roman, was chosen Pope: he was wholly giuen to idleness, and did nothing worthie of note. He gouerned the See siue yeres, and eight moneths.

The See was voyd one moneth.

SERGIVS the fourth, a Roman, a discreet man, liberrall to the poore, and gratio-
147. - - - - -
148. - - - - -
149. - - - - -
150. - - - - -
151. - - - - -
152. - - - - -
153. - - - - -
154. - - - - -
155. - - - - -
156. - - - - -
157. - - - - -
158. - - - - -
159. - - - - -
160. - - - - -
161. - - - - -
162. - - - - -
163. - - - - -
164. - - - - -
165. - - - - -
166. - - - - -
167. - - - - -
168. - - - - -
169. - - - - -
170. - - - - -
171. - - - - -
172. - - - - -
173. - - - - -
174. - - - - -
175. - - - - -
176. - - - - -
177. - - - - -
178. - - - - -
179. - - - - -
180. - - - - -
181. - - - - -
182. - - - - -
183. - - - - -
184. - - - - -
185. - - - - -
186. - - - - -
187. - - - - -
188. - - - - -
189. - - - - -
190. - - - - -
191. - - - - -
192. - - - - -
193. - - - - -
194. - - - - -
195. - - - - -
196. - - - - -
197. - - - - -
198. - - - - -
199. - - - - -
200. - - - - -
201. - - - - -
202. - - - - -
203. - - - - -
204. - - - - -
205. - - - - -
206. - - - - -
207. - - - - -
208. - - - - -
209. - - - - -
210. - - - - -
211. - - - - -
212. - - - - -
213. - - - - -
214. - - - - -
215. - - - - -
216. - - - - -
217. - - - - -
218. - - - - -
219. - - - - -
220. - - - - -
221. - - - - -
222. - - - - -
223. - - - - -
224. - - - - -
225. - - - - -
226. - - - - -
227. - - - - -
228. - - - - -
229. - - - - -
230. - - - - -
231. - - - - -
232. - - - - -
233. - - - - -
234. - - - - -
235. - - - - -
236. - - - - -
237. - - - - -
238. - - - - -
239. - - - - -
240. - - - - -
241. - - - - -
242. - - - - -
243. - - - - -
244. - - - - -
245. - - - - -
246. - - - - -
247. - - - - -
248. - - - - -
249. - - - - -
250. - - - - -
251. - - - - -
252. - - - - -
253. - - - - -
254. - - - - -
255. - - - - -
256. - - - - -
257. - - - - -
258. - - - - -
259. - - - - -
260. - - - - -
261. - - - - -
262. - - - - -
263. - - - - -
264. - - - - -
265. - - - - -
266. - - - - -
267. - - - - -
268. - - - - -
269. - - - - -
270. - - - - -
271. - - - - -
272. - - - - -
273. - - - - -
274. - - - - -
275. - - - - -
276. - - - - -
277. - - - - -
278. - - - - -
279. - - - - -
280. - - - - -
281. - - - - -
282. - - - - -
283. - - - - -
284. - - - - -
285. - - - - -
286. - - - - -
287. - - - - -
288. - - - - -
289. - - - - -
290. - - - - -
291. - - - - -
292. - - - - -
293. - - - - -
294. - - - - -
295. - - - - -
296. - - - - -
297. - - - - -
298. - - - - -
299. - - - - -
300. - - - - -
301. - - - - -
302. - - - - -
303. - - - - -
304. - - - - -
305. - - - - -
306. - - - - -
307. - - - - -
308. - - - - -
309. - - - - -
310. - - - - -
311. - - - - -
312. - - - - -
313. - - - - -
314. - - - - -
315. - - - - -
316. - - - - -
317. - - - - -
318. - - - - -
319. - - - - -
320. - - - - -
321. - - - - -
322. - - - - -
323. - - - - -
324. - - - - -
325. - - - - -
326. - - - - -
327. - - - - -
328. - - - - -
329. - - - - -
330. - - - - -
331. - - - - -
332. - - - - -
333. - - - - -
334. - - - - -
335. - - - - -
336. - - - - -
337. - - - - -
338. - - - - -
339. - - - - -
340. - - - - -
341. - - - - -
342. - - - - -
343. - - - - -
344. - - - - -
345. - - - - -
346. - - - - -
347. - - - - -
348. - - - - -
349. - - - - -
350. - - - - -
351. - - - - -
352. - - - - -
353. - - - - -
354. - - - - -
355. - - - - -
356. - - - - -
357. - - - - -
358. - - - - -
359. - - - - -
360. - - - - -
361. - - - - -
362. - - - - -
363. - - - - -
364. - - - - -
365. - - - - -
366. - - - - -
367. - - - - -
368. - - - - -
369. - - - - -
370. - - - - -
371. - - - - -
372. - - - - -
373. - - - - -
374. - - - - -
375. - - - - -
376. - - - - -
377. - - - - -
378. - - - - -
379. - - - - -
380. - - - - -
381. - - - - -
382. - - - - -
383. - - - - -
384. - - - - -
385. - - - - -
386. - - - - -
387. - - - - -
388. - - - - -
389. - - - - -
390. - - - - -
391. - - - - -
392. - - - - -
393. - - - - -
394. - - - - -
395. - - - - -
396. - - - - -
397. - - - - -
398. - - - - -
399. - - - - -
400. - - - - -
401. - - - - -
402. - - - - -
403. - - - - -
404. - - - - -
405. - - - - -
406. - - - - -
407. - - - - -
408. - - - - -
409. - - - - -
410. - - - - -
411. - - - - -
412. - - - - -
413. - - - - -
414. - - - - -
415. - - - - -
416. - - - - -
417. - - - - -
418. - - - - -
419. - - - - -
420. - - - - -
421. - - - - -
422. - - - - -
423. - - - - -
424. - - - - -
425. - - - - -
426. - - - - -
427. - - - - -
428. - - - - -
429. - - - - -
430. - - - - -
431. - - - - -
432. - - - - -
433. - - - - -
434. - - - - -
435. - - - - -
436. - - - - -
437. - - - - -
438. - - - - -
439. - - - - -
440. - - - - -
441. - - - - -
442. - - - - -
443. - - - - -
444. - - - - -
445. - - - - -
446. - - - - -
447. - - - - -
448. - - - - -
449. - - - - -
450. - - - - -
451. - - - - -
452. - - - - -
453. - - - - -
454. - - - - -
455. - - - - -
456. - - - - -
457. - - - - -
458. - - - - -
459. - - - - -
460. - - - - -
461. - - - - -
462. - - - - -
463. - - - - -
464. - - - - -
465. - - - - -
466. - - - - -
467. - - - - -
468. - - - - -
469. - - - - -
470. - - - - -
471. - - - - -
472. - - - - -
473. - - - - -
474. - - - - -
475. - - - - -
476. - - - - -
477. - - - - -
478. - - - - -
479. - - - - -
480. - - - - -
481. - - - - -
482. - - - - -
483. - - - - -
484. - - - - -
485. - - - - -
486. - - - - -
487. - - - - -
488. - - - - -
489. - - - - -
490. - - - - -
491. - - - - -
492. - - - - -
493. - - - - -
494. - - - - -
495. - - - - -
496. - - - - -
497. - - - - -
498. - - - - -
499. - - - - -
500. - - - - -
501. - - - - -
502. - - - - -
503. - - - - -
504. - - - - -
505. - - - - -
506. - - - - -
507. - - - - -
508. - - - - -
509. - - - - -
510. - - - - -
511. - - - - -
512. - - - - -
513. - - - - -
514. - - - - -
515. - - - - -
516. - - - - -
517. - - - - -
518. - - - - -
519. - - - - -
520. - - - - -
521. - - - - -
522. - - - - -
523. - - - - -
524. - - - - -
525. - - - - -
526. - - - - -
527. - - - - -
528. - - - - -
529. - - - - -
530. - - - - -
531. - - - - -
532. - - - - -
533. - - - - -
534. - - - - -
535. - - - - -
536. - - - - -
537. - - - - -
538. - - - - -
539. - - - - -
540. - - - - -
541. - - - - -
542. - - - - -
543. - - - - -
544. - - - - -
545. - - - - -
546. - - - - -
547. - - - - -
548. - - - - -
549. - - - - -
550. - - - - -
551. - - - - -
552. - - - - -
553. - - - - -
554. - - - - -
555. - - - - -
556. - - - - -
557. - - - - -
558. - - - - -
559. - - - - -
560. - - - - -
561. - - - - -
562. - - - - -
563. - - - - -
564. - - - - -
565. - - - - -
566. - - - - -
567. - - - - -
568. - - - - -
569. - - - - -
570. - - - - -
571. - - - - -
572. - - - - -
573. - - - - -
574. - - - - -
575. - - - - -
576. - - - - -
577. - - - - -
578. - - - - -
579. - - - - -
580. - - - - -
581. - - - - -
582. - - - - -
583. - - - - -
584. - - - - -
585. - - - - -
586. - - - - -
587. - - - - -
588. - - - - -
589. - - - - -
590. - - - - -
591. - - - - -
592. - - - - -
593. - - - - -
594. - - - - -
595. - - - - -
596. - - - - -
597. - - - - -
598. - - - - -
599. - - - - -
600. - - - - -
601. - - - - -
602. - - - - -
603. - - - - -
604. - - - - -
605. - - - - -
606. - - - - -
607. - - - - -
608. - - - - -
609. - - - - -
610. - - - - -
611. - - - - -
612. - - - - -
613. - - - - -
614. - - - - -
615. - - - - -
616. - - - - -
617. - - - - -
618. - - - - -
619. - - - - -
620. - - - - -
621. - - - - -
622. - - - - -
623. - - - - -
624. - - - - -
625. - - - - -
626. - - - - -
627. - - - - -
628. - - - - -
629. - - - - -
630. - - - - -
631. - - - - -
632. - - - - -
633. - - - - -
634. - - - - -
635. - - - - -
636. - - - - -
637. - - - - -
638. - - - - -
639. - - - - -
640. - - - - -
641. - - - - -
642. - - - - -
643. - - - - -
644. - - - - -
645. - - - - -
646. - - - - -
647. - - - - -
648. - - - - -
649. - - - - -
650. - - - - -
651. - - - - -
652. - - - - -
653. - - - - -
654. - - - - -
655. - - - - -
656. - - - - -
657. - - - - -
658. - - - - -
659. - - - - -
660. - - - - -
661. - - - - -
662. - - - - -
663. - - - - -
664. - - - - -
665. - - - - -
666. - - - - -
667. - - - - -
668. - - - - -
669. - - - - -
670. - - - - -
671. - - - - -
672. - - - - -
673. - - - - -
674. - - - - -
675. - - - - -
676. - - - - -
677. - - - - -
678. - - - - -
679. - - - - -
680. - - - - -
681. - - - - -
682. - - - - -
683. - - - - -
684. - - - - -
685. - - - - -
686. - - - - -
687. - - - - -
688. - - - - -
689. - - - - -
690. - - - - -
691. - - - - -
692. - - - - -
693. - - - - -
694. - - - - -
695. - - - - -
696. - - - - -
697. - - - - -
698. - - - - -
699. - - - - -
700. - - - - -
701. - - - - -
702. - - - - -
703. - - - - -
704. - - - - -
705. - - - - -
706. - - - - -
707. - - - - -
708. - - - - -
709. - - - - -
710. - - - - -
711. - - - - -
712. - - - - -
713. - - - - -
714. - - - - -
715. - - - - -
716. - - - - -
717. - - - - -
718. - - - - -
719. - - - - -
720. - - - - -
721. - - - - -
722. - - - - -
723. - - - - -
724. - - - - -
725. - - - - -
726. - - - - -
727. - - - - -
728. - - - - -
729. - - - - -
730. - - - - -
731. - - - - -
732. - - - - -
733. - - - - -
734. - - - - -
735. - - - - -
736. - - - - -
737. - - - - -
738. - - - - -
739. - - - - -
740. - - - - -
741. - - - - -
742. - - - - -
743. - - - - -
744. - - - - -
745. - - - - -
746. - - - - -
747. - - - - -
748. - - - - -
749. - - - - -
750. - - - - -
751. - - - - -
752. - - - - -
753. - - - - -
754. - - - - -
755. - - - - -
756. - - - - -
757. - - - - -
758. - - - - -
759. - - - - -
760. - - - - -
761. - - - - -
762. - - - - -
763. - - - - -
764. - - - - -
765. - - - - -
766. - - - - -
767. - - - - -
768. - - - - -
769. - - - - -
770. - - - - -
771. - - - - -
772. - - - - -
773. - - - - -
774. - - - - -
775. - - - - -
776. - - - - -
777. - - - - -
778. - - - - -
779. - - - - -
780. - - - - -
781. - - - - -
782. - - - - -
783. - - - - -
784. - - - - -
785. - - - - -
786. - - - - -
787. - - - - -
788. - - - - -
789. - - - - -
790. - - - - -
791. - - - - -
792. - - - - -
793. - - - - -
794. - - - - -
795. - - - - -
796. - - - - -
797. - - - - -
798. - - - - -
799. - - - - -
800. - - - - -
801. - - - - -
802. - - - - -
803. - - - - -
804. - - - - -
805. - - - - -
806. - - - - -
807. - - - - -
808. - - - - -
809. - - - - -
810. - - - - -
811. - - - - -
812. - - - - -
813. - - - - -
814. - - - - -
815. - - - - -
816. - - - - -
817. - - - - -
818. - - - - -
819. - - - - -
820. - - - - -
821. - - - - -
822. - - - - -
823. - - - - -
824. - - - - -
825. - - - - -
826. - - - - -
827. - - - - -
828. - - - - -
829. - - - - -
830. - - - - -
831. - - - - -
832. - - - - -
833. - - - - -
834. - - - - -
835. - - - - -
836. - - - - -
837. - - - - -
838. - - - - -
839. - - - - -
840. - - - - -
841. - - - - -
842. - - - - -
843. - - - - -
844. - - - - -
845. - - - - -
846. - - - - -
847. - - - - -
848. - - - - -
849. - - - - -
850. - - - - -
851. - - - - -
852. - - - - -
853. - - - - -
854. - - - - -
855. - - - - -
856. - - - - -
857. - - - - -
858. - - - - -
859. - - - - -
860. - - - - -
861. - - - - -
862. - - - - -
863. - - - - -
864. - - - - -
865. - - - - -
866. - - - - -
867. - - - - -
868. - - - - -
869. - - - - -
870. - - - - -
871. - - - - -
872. - - - - -
873. - - - - -
874. - - - - -
875. - - - - -
876. - - - - -
877. - - - - -
878. - - - - -
879. - - - - -
880. - - - - -
881. - - - - -
882. - - - - -
883. - - - - -
884. - - - - -
885. - - - - -
886. - - - - -
887. - - - - -
888. - - - - -
889. - - - - -
890. - - - - -
891. - - - - -
892. - - - - -
893. - - - - -
894. - - - - -
895. - - - - -
896. - - - - -
897. - - - - -
898. - - - - -
899. - - - - -
900. - - - - -
901. - - - - -
902. - - - - -
903. - - - - -
904. - - - - -
905. - - - - -
906. - - - - -
907. - - - - -
908. - - - - -
909. - - - - -
910. - - - - -
911. - - - - -
912. - - - - -
913. - - - - -
914. - - - - -
915. - - - - -
916. - - - - -
917. - - - - -
918. - - - - -
919. - - - - -
920. - - - - -
921. - - - - -
922. - - - - -
923. - - - - -
924. - - - - -
925. - - - - -
926. - - - - -
927. - - - - -
928. - - - - -
929. - - - - -
930. - - - - -
931. - - - - -
932. - - - - -
933. - - - - -
934. - - - - -
935. - - - - -
936. - - - - -
937. - - - - -
938. - - - - -
939. - - - - -
940. - - - - -
941. - - - - -
942. - - - - -
943. - - - - -
944. - - - - -
945. - - - - -
946. - - - - -
947. - - - - -
948. - - - - -
949. - - - - -
950. - - - - -
951. - - - - -
952. - - - - -
953. - - - - -
954. - - - - -
955. - - - - -
956. - - - - -
957. - - - - -
958. - - - - -
959. - - - - -
960. - - - - -
961. - - - - -
962. - - - - -
963. - - - - -
964. - - - - -
965. - - - - -
966. - - - - -
967. - - - - -
968. - - - - -
969. - - - - -
970. - - - - -
971. - - - - -
972. - - - - -
973. - - - - -
974. - - - - -
975. - - - - -
976. - - - - -
977. - - - - -
978. - - - - -
979. - - - - -
980. - - - - -
981. - - - - -
982. - - - - -
983. - - - - -
984. - - - - -
985. - - - - -
986. - - - - -
987. - - - - -
988. - - - - -
989. - - - - -
990. - - - - -
991. - - - - -
992. - - - - -
993. - - - - -
994. - - - - -
995. - - - - -
996. - - - - -
997. - - - - -
998. - - - - -
999. - - - - -
1000. - - - - -
1001. - - - - -
1002. - - - - -
1003. - - - - -
1004. - - - - -
1005. - - - - -
1006. - - - - -
1007. - - - - -
1008. - - - - -
1009. - - - - -
1010. - - - - -
1011. - - - - -
1012. - - - - -
1013. - - - - -
1014. - - - - -
1015. - - - - -
1016. - - - - -
1017. - - - - -
1018. - - - - -
1019. - - - - -
1020. - - - - -
1021. - - - - -
1022. - - - - -
1023. - - - - -
1024. - - - - -
1025. - - - - -
1026. - - - - -
1027. - - - - -
1028. - - - - -
1029. - - - - -
1030. - - - - -
1031. - - - - -
1032. - - - - -
1033. - - - - -
1034. - - - - -
1035. - - - - -
1036. - - - - -
1037. - - - - -
1038. - - - - -
1039. - - - - -
1040. - - - - -
1041. - - - - -
1042. - - - - -
1043. - - - - -
1044. - - - - -
1045. - - - - -
1046. - - - - -
1047. - - - - -
1048. - - - - -
1049. - - - - -
1050. - - - - -
1051. - - - - -
1052. - - - - -
1053. - - - - -
1054. - - - - -
1055. - - - - -
1056. - - - - -
1057. - - - - -
1058. - - - - -
1059. - - - - -
1060. - - - - -
1061. - - - - -
1062. - - - - -
1063. - - - - -
1064. - - - - -
1065. - - - - -
1066. - - - - -
1067. - - - - -
1068. - - - - -
1069. - - - - -
1070. - - - - -
1071. - - - - -
1072. - - - - -
1073. - - - - -
1074. - - - - -
1075. - - - - -
1076. - - - - -
1077. - - - - -
1078. - - - - -
1079. - - - - -
1080. - - - - -
1081. - - - - -
1082. - - - - -
1083. - - - - -
1084. - - - - -
1085. - - - - -
1086. - - - - -
1087. - - - - -
1088. - - - - -
1089. - - - - -
1090. - - - - -
1091. - - - - -
1092. - - - - -
1093. - - - - -
1094. - - - - -<

Number of Popes. 159. **GREGORIE** the seventh, of Sienna, a Monke of Clugnie, before called *Hildebrand*, excommunicated *Henry* 4, for that he sought to meddle with the election, and conferring of Bishopricks: he caused *Rodolphus* duke of Sueuia to be made Emperor, who was vanquished by *Henrie*: he was thrice imprisoned, first by *Cynbure* sonne to the Prouost of Rome, and afterwards by the Emperor, from whence he escaped by the helpe of the Romanes, and of *Mathilda* countesse of Mantoua, and of *Guischara* the Norman, prince of Pouille, who led him to Salerno, where he died hauing bene Pope twelue yeres, one moneth, and three daies. The quarrell for inuestitures, betwixt the Popes and Emperours, was the cause of great mischiefs. *Mart. Pol.*

The See was void one yere.

SCHISME XX.

160. **CLEMENT** the third, was chosen in a Councell held at Bressia, by the perswasion of the Emperor *Henrie* the fourth, and *Gregorie* deposed, who held the See in Schisme one and twentie yeres against *Gregorie* and his successors.

161. **VICTOR** the third, a Monke of Beneuict, sought to execute the decrees of his predecessor, against the Emperor *Henrie* the fourth, and died within one yere, three moneths, and foure daies after his election.

The See was void five moneths and three and twentie daies.

161. **VRBAN** the second, a Fientin man, and a Monke, sought to reforme the manners of the Clergie, being a vertuous and learned man: and seeing that he was not safe in Italie, making no account of *Mathilda* countesse of Mantoua, who had drawn *Gregorie* the seventh out of prison, and left her lands vnto the Church, now called the patrimonie of S. Peter, he came into France, where he forced king *Philip* the first to take his wife againe, leaving her with whom he had liued in adulterie. He died hauing held the place eleven yeres, foure moneths, and eightene daies. Some write that he was a turbulent man, and therefore they called him *Turbanus*, and that he had bene a household seruant and discipule to Pope *Gregorie* the seventh, who was given to all diuillish arts. *Benno.*

The See was void fourteen daies.

162. **PASCALL** the second, a Tuscan Monke, was chosen against his will, being attired in a scarlet cloake, with a crowne vpon his head, and girt with a girdle, at the which did hang seven keyes, and as many scales, signifying a power to shut and open, and mounted vpon a white horse was led vnto the place of Latran. He came into France, to reforme the Clergie in a Councell held at Trois, where he forbad the Clergie to marrie, for the which he chased away many Prelats and Priests. Being returned to Rome, he reduced by armes many townes vnder his obedience: he confirmed the excommunication against *Henrie* the fourth, Emperor, and perswaded his sonne to take vpon him the gouernment of the Empire, by whom he was imprisoned; hauing kist the Popes feet, he was forced to yeeld vnto him the inuestiture of Bishopricks, and Abbaies that were vacant: which power he afterwards left, seeking to loose the Empire. In the end he died, hauing bene Pope eightene yeres, five moneths, and nine daies.

The See was vacant three daies.

1601. **ALBERT** of Atella, created during the Schisme, after the death of *Clement* the third, held the chaire against *Pascall* two yeres and foure moneths.

1602. **THEODORIC** a Romane, did also during this Schisme hold the See three moneths, and fifteene daies.

1602. **SILVESTER** the third, a Romane, during the Schisme (after *Theodorice*) did also hold the See against *Pascall* the second.

The See was void two daies.

163. **GELASIVS** the second, borne at Gaiette, was beaten and imprisoned (notwithstanding that he was a Monke, and of a good life) by one called *Cinthus* a Romane

Number of Popes. Roman of great power, but he was presently set at libertie by the people. Hauing excommunicated the Emperour *Henrie* the fifth, and *Gregorie* the eighth his Antipope, fearing the Emperours forces, he fled into France, where he died, a yere and hie and twentie dayes after his election.

The See was vacant two dayes.

SCHISME XXI.

164. **GREGORIE** the eighth, a Spaniard, otherwife called *Burdin*, was created during the Schisme against *Gelasius* the second, and held the See three yeres.

164. **CALIXTUS** the second, a Bourgondian, sonne or brother to the duke of Bourgondie, being created Pope in France, went to Rome, against the Antipope, who being taken, was set vpon an Ass with his face backward, holding the tayle in his hand for a bridle, and then was put in prison, where he died. *Calixtus* maintained the See against the other Pope, and the Emperor *Henrie* the fifth, who resigned his right of the inuestiture and collation of Benefices, the which had bene the cause of great combusions. He held the See five yeres, ten moneths, and thirteene dayes.

The See was void one day.

A GENERAL COUNCELL.

165. A General Council was held at Lateran in Rome, by nine hundred and seuen-teeene Bishops, against the Sarrazins and Turkes.

165. **HONORIUS** the second, of Bologna, a man of base condition, yet learned, aduanced more through the ambition of some, than by the consent of good men: he ruled five yeres, two moneths, and three dayes.

The See was void one day.

SCHISME XXII.

166. **CELESTIN** the second, a Roman, chosen by some Cardinalls, caused a Schisme against *Honorius* the second.

166. **INNOCENT** the second, attempted warre against *Roger* the Norman, who called himselfe king of Naples, by whom he was vanquished in battaile, and was put in prison, from whence escaping, he came into France, where he held two Councells, one at Rheims, and another at Clermont, and hauing obtayned succours from king *Lewis* the Grosse, and from the Emperour *Lothaire*, he returned into Italie, and held the See thirteene yeres, seven moneths, and eight dayes.

The See was void one moneth, and one day.

SCHISME. XXIII.

1630. **ANACLETUS** the second, a Roman, was chosen by the Romans during the imprisonment of *Innocent* the second, and was Antipope, who stole away the treasure and reliques to pay his souldiers, and hauing been the cause of this Schisme against *Innocent* the second, died of griefe in the eighth yere.

The See was vacant certaine daies.

1638. **VICTOR** the fourth, a Roman, was created after the death of *Anacletus*, during the schisme against *Innocent* the second; the which he held five yeres.

A GENERAL COUNCELL.

1639. A General Council was held at Lateran, by one thousand Fathers, for the right of the Clergie, and against the Antipopes.

1647. **CELESTIN** the second, a Tuscan, died within five moneths, and five dayes after his election, for griefe, by reason of the discord which was betwixt him and the people, who sought to aduance one of the *Patritij*. He had bene chosen without the consent of the people, who now are excluded from that prerogative by

Innocent

- Innocent** the second, and that power reduced to the Cardinals alone. *Onuphr.*
The See was voyd twelue dayes.
168. **LVCIVS** the second, a Roman, hauing bene hurt with stones by the people of Rome, seeking to take from them certaine officers by force, died within eleuen moneths, and foure dayes.
The See was voyd one day.
169. **EUGENIUS** the third, borne at Pisa, a Monke of a holie life, Disciple to *S. Bernard*: he was chased out of Rome for that he would not confirme certaine Consulls or rather Senators: he fled into France, where he perswaded king *Lewis* the Young, and *Richard* king of England, to make the third voyage to the Holie-land, and then returned to Rome, where he died, hauing bene Pope eight yeares, foure moneths, and twelue dayes.
The See was vacant one day.
170. **ANASTASIUS** the fourth, a Roman: he was liberall to the poore, and died within one yeare, foure moneths, and foureteeen dayes. At that time there was a generall famine ouer all Europe.
The See was voyd one day.
171. **ADRIAN**, the fourth, an English Monke, hauing conuerted the people of Norway to the faith, was made Pope: he excommunicated *Frederic* the first, for that he had resisted him, seeking to ioyne Lombardie to the See of Rome. He died within foureyeares, eight moneths, and eight and twentie dayes.
The See was voyd three dayes.
172. **ALEXANDER** the third, of Sienna, a verie learned man: He expelled three Antipopes, and had great warres against the Emperour *Frederic* the first, whom he excommunicated; who seeking to be absolved, and being vpon his knees before him, *Alexander* trod him vnder his feet, and commanded them to sing, *Super Aspidem, & Basiliscum, &c.* to whom the Emperour answered, *Non tibi, sed Petro*; and the Pope replied, *Et mihi, & Petro, Volat.* This Pope held the Chaire one and twentie yeares, eleuen moneths, and three and twentie dayes.
The See was voyd one day.
- SCHISME. XXIIII.**
- VICTOR** the fourth, created during the Schisme against *Alexander* the third, was Antipope foureyeares, and seuen moneths.
- PASCAL** the third, of Crefme, was, during the Schisme, created Antipope, and held it six yeares.
- CALIXTUS** the third, of Hongarie, was chosen Antipope during the schisme, and held the Chaire seuen yeares, and five moneths.
- A GENERALL COVNCCELL.**
- A Generall Councell was held at Lateran (as *Genebrard* writes) of three hundred Bishops, as well of the East as West, for the reformation of manners: wherein, the doctrine of the Vaudois was condemned. It was also decreed, That in the Popes election, two third parts, concurring in their Suffrages, should suffice to auoyd all future schisme.
173. **LVCIVS** the third, knowing that the Christians of the Holie-land were afflicted for their sinnes, perswaded the emperour *Frederic*, king *Philip Augustus*, and the king of England, to make the fourth voyage to the Holie-land. He died, five yeares, two moneths, and eight and twentie dayes after his election.
The See was not voyd at all.
174. **VRBAN** the third, a Millanois, being aduertised of the taking of Hierusalem, by *Saladin*, Souldan of Egypt, hauing ben held by nine Christian kings for the space of 88 yeares, died for grieue, hauing held the Chaire 1 yeare, 10 moneths, 25 dayes.
The See was voyd one day.

GREGORIE

- GREGORIE** the eight, of Beneuent, hauing bene verie carefull to hasten away the souldiers, for the recouerie of the holie Land, died within one moneth, and seuen and twentie daies.
The See was voyd ten daies.
176. **CLEMENT** the third, a Romane, a learned man, and of a holie life, sollicited all Christian princes to aduance their enterprife for the recouerie of the holie Land, and died within three yeares, two moneths, and fixteeen daies after his election.
The See was voyd three daies.
177. **CELESTIN** the third, a Romane, did secretly curse the realme of France, for that *Philip Augustus* had put away his first wife, the which he tooke againe, leauing the second. He dispensed with a Nunne, sister to the king of Sicilie, to marie with the Emperour *Henry* the fourth, and died, hauing been Pope six yeares, nine moneths, and eleuen daies.
The See was not voyd at all.
178. **INNOCENT** the third, reputed a learned man, as it appears by his decretall Epistles, held the See eightteeen yeares, six moneths, and nine daies.
- A GENERALL COVNCCELL AT LATRAN.**
- A Generall Councell was held at *S. Iohn de Latran*, of one thousand two hundred eightie and five Prelats, and Embassadors to Emperors and Kings, against the errors of the Abbot *Ischim*, and others. *Plat. Tom. of Councells.*
179. **HONORIUS** the third, a Romane, hauing crowned the Emperour *Frederic* the second, excommunicated him for that he had rebelled against the See of Rome: he confirmed the orders of begging Friars, and tooke from the Carmelites the particoloured habit of white and yellow: he ordained that the host should be carried to sicke persons with reuerence. He died, hauing bene Pope ten yeares, and eight moneths.
The See was vacant one daie.
180. **GREGORIE** the ninth, borne at Anagnia, kinsman to *Innocent* the third, caused the decretalls to be gathered together by *Raymond Barch* his chaplaine: he forbade the reading of the ciuile law at Paris: he excommunicated the Emperour *Frederic* the second, delaying his voiage to the holie Land, the which he afterward accomplished and tooke Ierusalem. He died hauing reigned foureteeen yeares, and five moneths.
The See was voyd one moneth and one day.
181. **CELESTIN** the fourth, borne at Anagnia, a good and learned man. He died seuenteeen daies after his election.
The See was voyd one yeare eight moneths and fiftene daies, by reason that the Cardinals were detained prisoners by the Emperour Frederic the second.
182. **INNOCENT** the fourth, a Geneois, hauing deposed the Emperour *Frederic* the second of the Empire, for that he had rebelled against the holie See: he ordained that the Cardinals should ride on horsebacke, and wear red hats, to signify that they were readie to shed their blood for the defence of the Church. Thus the Cardinal was the supreme order and dignitie among the Clergie: and this increase of honour was the decay of the Church. He died hauing written vpon the Decretals and Authentiques, and a booke of the imperiall and pontificall iurisdiction against *Pope Viues*, who attributed all to the Emperour. He held the place eleuen yeares, five moneths, and fourteene daies.
The See was vacant thirteeen daies.
- A GENERALL COVNCCELL.**
- A Generall Councell was held at Lion in France, against *Frederic* the Emperour, whereas many feasts were instituted, and *S. Lewis* king of France declared the head of the fixt expedition to the holie Land.

R r

ALEXANDER

Number of Popes.		Year of Christ.
183.	ALEXANDER the fourth, borne at Agnania, a learned man, and liberrall to the poore: he retired the Hermits of <i>S. Augustin</i> out of woods, and brought them into townes, commaunded them to preach and confesse: he condemned the booke of <i>William</i> of <i>S. Amour</i> , a doctor of Paris, who had written against the begging Friars: and died six yeares, five moneths, and five daies after his election.	1254.
184.	VRBAN the fourth, borne at Trois in Champagne, a shoemakers sonne, Patriarch of Ierusalem, was chosen Pope, the Cardinalls not agreeing to chuse one of their Colledge. Having instituted the feast of the holie sacrament, he crowned <i>Charles</i> duke of Anjou brother to <i>S. Lewis</i> , king of Sicile, and died having bene Pope three yeares, two moneths, and foure daies.	1261.
185.	CLEMENT the fourth, a French man, a learned man of great pietie and holinesse, and very discreet in the distribution of the goods of the Church, having no respect to aduance his owne children, or nephewes (for he had bene married) from one of which he tooke two benefices, he having three: he laboured to reconcile Christian princes, and died having held the place three yeres, nine moneths, and five and twentie daies.	1265.
	<i>The See was void two yeares six moneths and nine daies.</i>	
186.	GREGORY the tenth, borne at Placentia in Lombardie, being an Archdeacon in the holie Land, was chosen Pope. The Cardinalls having bene diuided two yeares and more, gaue occasion to one of them being in the Conclau to say scoffingly, Let vs vncouer the house, for the Holie Ghost cannot descend and passe through so many couerings. Having made goodlie ordinances touching the election in a generall Councell held at Lions, among others that the Cardinalls should not depart the conclau before the election were finished: he died, having bene Pope foure yeares, foure moneths, and ten daies.	1271.
	<i>The See was void ten daies.</i>	
A GENERALL COFNCELL AT LYON.		
	A Second generall Councell was held at Lyon, whereas the Greeke Church made an vnion with the Latin, which was the fourth time: but this accord continued not long, no more than the rest, <i>Nicoph. Greg.</i> who said that <i>Michaell Palaeologus</i> Emperor of Greece came thither in person.	1274.
187.	INNOCENT the first, a Bourgondian, Princiell of the Iacobins in France, Doctor in diuinitie, Archbishop of Lion, Cardinall of Ostia, and great Penitentiare to the Pope: he reuoked the decree of his predecessour touching the election, before he went out of the Conclau, and died five moneths, and two daies.	1275.
	<i>The See was vacant nine daies.</i>	
188.	ADRIAN the first, a Geneuois, reuoked also the order of <i>Gregorie</i> the tenth, touching the election before he went out of the Conclau, and died after one moneth, and seven daies.	1276.
	<i>The See was void five and twentie daies.</i>	
189.	JOHN the twentieth, called the one and twentieth, borne in Portugal, making profession of physicke, but not fit for such a dignitie, of a Cardinall and Bishop of Tufculum he was created Pope, which place he held eight moneths, and eight daies.	1276.
	<i>The See was vacant six moneths and foure daies.</i>	
190.	NICHOLAS the third, of the house of <i>Visins</i> in Rome, a man of vnderstanding and of a great spirit: he tooke from <i>Charles</i> king of Sicile the office of Senator: he perswaded <i>Peter</i> king of Arragon to pretend an interest to the realm of Sicile, which was the cause of the Sicilian Euenlong, so bloudie for the French: he expelled <i>Notaries</i> & <i>Petefoggers</i> out of Rome, saying that they liued of the bloud of the poore: he brought <i>Flammia</i> with the town of <i>Bolonia</i> , and the Exarcat of <i>Rauenna</i> (which had bene long subiect to the Emperor) vnder the power of the Romish See: and seeking to make a nephew of his, king of Lombardie, and another of Tuscane: he	1277.

died

Number of Popes.		Year of Christ.
191.	died having bene Pope two yeares, eight moneths, and nine and twentie daies. <i>The See was void six moneths.</i> MARTIN the second, called the fourth, of Tours: he restored <i>Charles</i> to the office of Senator, excommunicated the Emperor of Greece, and the king of Arragon, depriving him of his realme, and giuing it to <i>Charles</i> brother to <i>Philip</i> the Faire. In the end he died after foure yeares, one moneth, and seven daies. Some write that he was of so holie a life that sicke men receiued health comming to his Sepulcher.	1281.
	<i>The See was vacant foure daies.</i>	
192.	HONORIUS the fourth, a Roman, a man of good life: He confirmed the excommunication made by his predecessour against <i>Peter</i> of Arragon, and died within two yeares, and two daies.	1285.
	<i>The See was void ten moneths, and eightene daies.</i>	
193.	NICHOLAS the fourth, of Lombardie, of the order of the Friers Mynors, a learned man, and discreet in the distribution of Benefices, and the goods of the Church: He died, having held the place foure yeares one moneth, and foure teene daies.	1288.
	<i>The See was vacant two yeares, three moneths, and two daies.</i>	
194.	CELESTIN the first, an Hermit, and Author of the order of the Celestins, after much briberie and corruption among the Cardinalls, was, by the fauour of <i>Charles</i> the second, king of Naples, chosen Pope. Afterwards, by his simplicitie, suffering himselfe to be circumcised by his succellour, having cunningly told him in the night, That he should leaue his dignitie of Pope, for that he had decreed, that Cardinalls should ride vpon Asses, in imitation of our Sauour (a most holie ordinance, and prodigiouly ouerthrowne, as <i>Genebrard</i> saith.) He left the Papacie, and retiring himselfe to the deserts, was taken by <i>Boniface</i> his succellour, and put in prison, where he died for want, five moneths, and seven daies after his election.	1294.
	<i>The See was void ten daies.</i>	
195.	BONIFACE the eight, a cunning, subtil, ingratefull, cruell, and arrogant man, of whom it is said, That he entred the dignitie of Pope like a Fox, deceiuing the good man <i>Celestin</i> , speaking vnto him through a Reed as if it had bene an Angell, and by a hole made in his chamber: he reigned as a Lyon, saying, That he had power to giue and take away kingdomes; and to shew his pretended authoritie, he excommunicated the French king, and gaue his realme to the Emperour <i>Albert</i> : he died like a dogge, having vnworthily held that dignitie eight yeares, nine moneths, and eightene daies. He ordayned the yeare of Iubile once in a hundred yeares: and was the first which gaue Indulgences. In this miserable time, the Emperour of the Turkes tooke his beginning in Ottoman.	1294.
	<i>The See was vacant ten daies.</i>	
196.	BENNET the ninth, called the tenth, a Iacobin of a poore familie, his father being a Shepheard, but being afterwards made Cardinall of Ostia, he was chosen Pope. Some write, that he was a holie man, and peaceable: others say, that he was of a subtil spirit. Having absolved king <i>Philip</i> the Faire from the excommunication of his predecessour, and two Cardinalls of the house of the Colours, he died (as some thought) poysoned by an Abbesse, who presented him with figges. He held the place eight moneths, and six daies.	1303.
	<i>The place was vacant ten moneths, and seven and twentie daies.</i>	
197.	CLEMENT the first, of Bourdeaux, and Archbishop of that place, chosen in his absence, and confirmed at Lyons by the Cardinalls, transported the Roman See to Auignon, to auoyd the seditions of Italie. They caused him to publish the constitutions called by his name, <i>Clementines</i> . He obtayned Auignon (whereas the Popes See remained 72 yeares) and the countie of Nice, of <i>Lewis</i> king of Naples, in recompence of the tribute due to the Church of Rome. He excommunicated the Venetians vsurping the citie of Ferrara, being of the Patrimoine of the Church. In the end he died, having bene Pope 8 yeares, 10 moneths, 16 daies.	1305.
	<i>The See was void one yeare, three moneths, and seuen teene daies.</i>	

A GENERALL COUNCELL HELD AT VIENNA.

Year
Christ.
1311.

A Generall Councell was celebrated at Vienna in Dauphine, of three hundred Bishops; whereas the Fraticels, Beguins, who would chuse a third order of *S. Francis*, of the which one *Dulcinus* was the chiefe, were condemned for Heretickes, as the Templers were in like manner. There it was also decreed, That the Hebrew, Chalde, Arabique, and Greeke Tongues should be publicly taught in the Universities.

198. **J**OHNN the one and twentieth, called the two and twentieth, of Cahors, a learned man, was chosen after long contention among the Cardinals. He excommunicated the emperor *Lewis* the fourth, by reason whereof he gaue him an Antipope. This Pope fell into some errors, which he retracted, being admonished by the Divines of Paris. He was Pope 18 yeares, 3 moneths, 28 dayes.

The See was vacant sixteene daies.

SCHISME. XXV.

NICHOIAS the fift, a Franciscan Frier, was Antipope, against *John* the one and twentieth, by the persuation of *Lewis* the fourth, emperor. He died a prisoner in Auignon, having craued pardon of *John*, whose Image he had caused to be burnt as an Hereticke, having bene Pope 3 yeares, 3 moneths, 14 dayes.

199. **B**ENNET the tenth, called the eleuenth, a Monke of Tolouse, of the order of *Cisteraux*, a learned man, and severe, distributing the goods of the Church equally, without respect of kindred, saying, That the Pope had no kinsmen. He hated the emperor *Lewis*, no lesse than his predecessor *John*. He reformed the order of *Cisteraux*, and *Benedictines*, building them a Colledge at Paris. He died, having held the See seven yeares, four moneths, and six dayes.

The See was void eleven dayes.

200. **C**LEMENT the sixt, a Monke, of Lymosin: He was Archbishop of Rhone, and made Cardinall by *Bennet*: he was held a learned man, and liberal to all, yet he was an enemy to the Emperor *Lewis*, and ratified the excommunication of *Bennet* and *John* the two and twentieth: he bridged the Iubile to fiftie yeares. He fought to reconcile *Philip* of Valois (the French king) and *Edward* king of England. He died, having bene Pope ten yeares, and seven moneths. *I. du Tillet* saith, That in those times Benefices were sold, and all was subiect to money.

CLEMENT the sixt did celebrat the second Iubile, in the yeare 1350.

The See was void eleven dayes.

201. **I**NNOCENT the sixt, a Lymosin, he was first an Advocat of the civile Law, then Bishop of Clermont, and afterwards, Cardinall of Ostia. He gaue Benefices to capable men, and contrayned all Prelats, and beneficed men, to retire unto their charges, and to reside there. He cut off the superfluous expences of his house, causing the Cardinals to doe the like, saying, That the Clergie should be a president to all others to imitate. He died, having held the place nine yeares, eight moneths, and six and twentie dayes.

The See was vacant one moneth, and fiftene dayes.

202. **V**REAN the fift, a Monke of Limoges, Abbot of *S. Victor* neere Marseille, and as some write sonne to an English physician, called *William*: he was a great doctor of the Cannon Law, and being absent in a certain Embassage was chosen Pope. He was very earnest to resist the Turk, against whom he caused a croisado to be preached: he went to Rome to pacifie some troubles in Italie, and in his returne died at Marseille, having bene Pope eight yeares, two moneths, and three and twentie daies.

The See was void ten dayes.

203. **G**REGORIE the eleuenth, a Lymosin, sonne to the Earle of Beaufort, a man of a peaceable spirit: seeing so great dissensions in Italie, and some townes revolted from his obedience, he returned to Rome, and transported his See thither againe,

without

Number
of Popes.

without the priuie of the French; the which he did by the aduice of his scholmaster *Baldus*. He was Pope seven yeares, two moneths, and seven and twentie daies.

The See was vacant twelue daies.

204. **V**REAN the sixt, a Neapolitan, Archbishop of Bari, and no Cardinall, was created Pope at the persute of the Romanes, he being absent: he was a cunning, seditious, and reuengfull man, not seeking the peace of Christendome, as his dutie required, but striving to reuenge the injuries which his Cardinals, and *Joane* queene of Sicile had done him, which was the cause of the sixt and twentieth Schisme: and having caused five Cardinals to be drowned, he died, having held the See eleven yeares, six moneths, and five daies.

VREAN the sixt, did celebrate the third Iubile:

The See was void nineteene daies.

SCHISME XXVI.

CLEMENT the seventh, was chosen Pope by the Cardinals: he held his See at Auignon, and was acknowledged for lawfull Pope by the French, Spaniards, and English. This was the cruellest and most scandalous Schisme of all, and continued about fiftie yeares. He held the place fiftene yeares, eleven moneths, and eigheteene daies against *Vrean* and his successors.

The See was void fiftie daies.

205. **B**ONIFACE the ninth, a Neapolitan, indowed with great vertues for his age, being but thirtie yeares old, but pleasing to his kinsfolkes: he abused indulgences, and sold them good cheape. They attribute to him the invention of Annates, that is to say, that he would haue the first yeares revenues of all benefices. He had for Antipope *Peter de Luna* a Spaniard, called *Bennet* the thirteenth, he held the See fourteene yeares, and eleven moneths.

BONIFACE did celebrat the fourth Iubile, in the yeare 1390.

The See was void fiftene daies.

BENNET the thirteenth, a Spaniard, called before *Peter de Luna*, after *Clement* the seventh. He held the See at Auignon during the Schisme against *Boniface* the ninth, and his successors, he was a learned man, and died in the thirtieth yeare.

206. **I**NNOCENT the seventh, borne at Sulmo, having put many Romanes to death, who intreated him to free the Church from Schismes and warre, was forced to flee, then having made an accord with them, he returned, and died within two yeares, and five and twentie daies.

The See was vacant three and twentie daies.

207. **G**REGORIE the twelfth, a Venetian, Patriarch of Constantinople, and Cardinall, was chosen Pope, having promised at his election to giue each his Papall sticke if *Bennet* sitting at Auignon should do the like, but they refusing, they were both depoyed by the Council held at Pisa, and would not obey. He was Pope eight yeares, seven moneths, and five daies.

A COUNCELL HELD AT PISA.

A Councell was held at Pisa of many Prelats, whereas *Gregorie* the twelfth, and *Bennet* the thirteenth were depoyed, and *Alexander* the fift chosen in their places, but they would not obey the Councell; so as there were three Popes for one.

208. **A**LEXANDER the fift, borne in the Island of Crete, a Monke, Archbishop of Milan, and Cardinall was chosen Pope by the Councell, he was held to be learned, but as *Platina* saith, he was bold, cruell, and more martial than his qualitie required: he depriued *Ladislaus* king of Naples, of his realme, for that he held Ostia and other places belonging to the Church of Rome, and gaue it to *Lewis* duke of Anjou brother to *Charles* the fift: his prodigalitie was so great, as he was wont to say that he

Rt ij

had

had beene a rich Bishop, a poore Cardinall, and a begging Pope. He died within ten moneths, and eight daies.

The See was void thirteene daies.

JOHN the two and twentieth, called the three and twentieth, a Neopolitan, came vnto the Popedom by force and not by a free and Canonical election: a very pollicric man in affaires, but so deprauid both in life and doctrine, as he was cited to the Councell of Constance, imprisoned, and depofed, hauing dishonoured the See five yeares, and fifteene daies.

The See was vacant two yeares, five moneths, and ten daies.

A GENERALL COVNCCELL AT CONSTANCE.

A Generall Councell was held at Constance, by the care of the Emperour Sigismund, where he assisted with foure Patriarches, nine and twentie Cardinalls, seuen and fortie Archbishops, six hundred and five Bishops, and sixtie and foure Abbots and Doctors; in the which three Popes were depoled: John the three and twentieth, remaining at Bologna, Gregorie the twelfth at Rome, and Bennet the thirteenth in Spaine; and Martin called the fift, was chosen in their place by a generall consent, and so the six and twentieth schisme ended. There it was decreed that the Councell was about the Pope. To this Councell came John Hus, and Jerome of Prague, vnder the Emperours safe conduct, where constantly maintaining their doctrine grounded vpon the word of God, they were condemned, and afterwards burnt.

MARTIN the third, called the fift, a Romane Cardinall, of the house of Collonies, was chosen by three and thirtie Cardinalls at the Councell of Constance: he confirmed the decree of the Councell, that the Pope should be subiect, & that there should be a Councell called every ten yeares. He died hauing beene Pope thirteene yeres, thirce moneths, and ten daies.

The See was void eleuen daies.

CLEMENT the eight, a Spaniard, during the schisme after Bennet the thirteenth, was chosen by certaine Spanishe Cardinalls, or Anticardinalls, and held the See as Antipope foure yeares.

EUGENIUS the fourth, a Venetian, of the order of the Celestins, he was a Cardinall and Priest of the title of St. Clement: in the beginning he was of a good life, but bad councell made him to peruert all: prouoking the Romanes to armes, so as he was forced to flee in a Monkes weed, being chased away with stones. He held the See fifteene yeres, eleuen moneths, and one and twentie daies.

The See was vacant eleuen daies.

A GENERALL COVNCCELL AT BASILL

A Generall Councell was held at Basill for reformation of the Church, and against the doctrine of John Hus and the Annates, the substance whereof is contained in a pragmatike sanction, published in a Councell which the French Church held at Bourges: there Eugenius the fourth was depoled, and Amadeus an hermite, before duke of Sauoy, was chosen and called Felix the fourth: he was supported by the Emperour. This was the 27 schisme, so as part of Christendome followed one Pope, part of it another, and some obeyed neither the one nor the other.

A GENERALL COVNCCELL AT FLORENCE.

A General Councell was held at Florence (the Grecians call it the eight Synode) whereas the Emperour of the East assisted with many Prelats, Greeks and Latins, where all agreed in vnitie of faith for the last time, yea the Armenians & Indians.

SCHISME

SCHISME XXVII.

FELIX, being chosen by the Councell of Basill, held the See nine yeares, and five moneths.

NICHOLAS the fift, a Geneuois of meane parentage, Cardinall of Bologna: He was learned, and a louer of learned men, and so modest as he held himselfe unworthie of so great a dignitie. He spent much to make Libraries: to whom Amadeus of Sauoy, or Felix the fourth, did quit the See to suppress the Schisme, remayning a Cardinall, and Apostolicke Legat, in his countries of Sauoy. He was Pope eight yeares, and nineteene daies.

The See was void foureteene daies.

NICHOLAS the fift, celebrated the fift Iubile, in the yeare of our Lord 1450. CALIXTUS the third, a Spaniard, of the house of Borgia. Soone after his being Pope, he proclaimed warre against the Turke, as he had vowed before he came vnto it, the which was held admirable. Hauing instituted the Feast of the Transfiguration, he died, three yeares, and foure moneths after his election.

The See was vacant twelue daies.

PIUS the second, of Sienna, called before Aeneas Syluius, a verie learned man, hauing been Secretarie to the Emperour Frederic the third, tent in embassage to many Princes, and Secretarie to the Councell of Basill, was in the end chosen Pope. He was opposit to Lewis the eleuenth, for that by the aduice of his Court of Parliament, he would not obey him, and abolish the Pragmatike Sanction, concluded at the Councell of Basill, the which he himselfe approued by two learned booke written before he was Pope. It may be he grew ambitious, and changed his manners with his name. He held the See five yeares, eleuen moneths, and seuen and twentie daies.

The See was void sixteene daies.

There was a Councell of the French Church held at Orleans, by reason of the Pragmaticke Sanction, which Pope Pius the second would haue abolished as hereticall: Against the which, the Court of Parliament at Paris, and the Vniuersities, opposed. This assemblie was also against the Annates, by the which the Court of Rome draws infinit summes of money out of Fraunce. Duer. l. 5. c. 11. sets downe at large the other Popes which did oppose this Pragmaticke Sanction.

PAUL the second, a Venetian, nephew to Eugenius the fourth, and Cardinall of St. Mark, a man of a goodly representation, but an enemie to learning: He was proud, increasing his maiestic by armes, & auarice, conferring Ecclesiasticall liuings to his owne profit, at what time all things were told at Rome. He exceeded all his predecessours in pompe and shew, enriching his Myter with Diamonds, Saphyrs, Emeraulds, Pearles, and other stones of great price, and would be seene after that manner, augmenting also the pompe of Cardinalls with a scarlet gowne, and a hood. He reduced the Iubile to five and twentie yeares. He disanulled the Abbreviations instituted by his predecessour, and died, hauing held the See six yeares, ten moneths, and six and twentie daies.

The See was void foure daies.

SIXTUS the fourth, a Geneuois, Generall of the Franciscans, and Cardinall of St. Sixtus, succeeded Paule: he was held learned. To take away all occasions of jealousy and enuie betwixt the foure orders of begging Friars, he made them all equal in priuiledges. He had many good parts, but he loued his kindred too much, as many haue done, abusing greatly the goods of the Church. He was Pope thirteene yeares, and foure daies. SIXTUS the fourth, celebrated the fift Iubile, in the yeare of our Lord God 1475.

The See was void sixteene daies.

INNOCENT the eight, a Geneuois of a meane familie, a Priest, and Cardinall of St. Sicilia: he was taxed of auarice. He augmented the number of Secretaries, and

Number
of Popes.

and Promoters, like vnto *Pius* the second, and *Sixtus* the fourth. He was the first of all the Popes which aduanced his bastards to honours and wealth after an vnaccustomed manner. He held the See seuen yeares, ten moneths, and seuen and twentie daies.

The See was voyd one moneth, and sixteene daies.

218.

ALEXANDER the first, a Spaniard, called before *Roderic Borgia*, a man indowed with fix great vices which cannot be spoken without horrour. He practised to be Pope by all Deuillish arts, and was chosen by the corruption of many Cardinalls, whom he oppressed afterward. He fought by all meanes to heape vp treasure, to satisfie his lustfull desires, especially to aduance his foure bastards, the one of which was *Cesar Valentin Borgia*, whom he made a Cardinall, & was afterwards duke of Valentinois in Dauphine, for whom he troubled all Italie by the rest. He made Rome a receptracle of theecs. Finally, there was nothing (how holie soeuer) but he sold, as you may read in the Authors of his time; and *Thannasarius* hath left these verses written in Latin.

*Alexanders sells all, the holie Keyes he sold,
Both Myters, Alters, and the Crosse of gold:
He bought it all; who can him then denie,
That to retaile which he so deare did buy?*

Hee caused the tongue and hands of *Antonius Mancinellus* to be cut off for that he had written an eloquent Oration against his villanous and lewd life. He died of poyson which he had prepared for others, hauing held the See elcuen yeares, and eight moneths.

ALEXANDER the first, did celebrat the seuenth Iubile, in the yeare 1500.

The See was voyd one moneth, and three daies.

219.

PIVS the third, of Sienna, nephew to Pope *Pius* the second, was chosen by the Cardinalls after great strife and contention. He was a great enemy to the French, for that he had taken a great part of the kingdome of Naples. He had a will to reforme the Church, to celebrat a Councell, and to raise a great armie against the Turke, but he died within fix and twentie daies after his election.

The See was vacant foure and twentie daies.

220.

IVLIO the second, a Geneuois, nephew to *Sixtus* the fourth, and Cardinall of S. Peter at Vincula, was chosen Pope. He was a man of a quicke spirit, and subtilie, and more fit for armes than learning. He recouered Bologna, and many towns from the Venetians, namely, Imola, Seruia, Rauenna, and others, with the helpe of the French. Afterwards, he solicited the Emperour *Maximilian*, and *Henric* king of England, to make warre against them, to expell them out of Italie, hauing defeated his armie, with the Spaniards and Venetians, in battaile at Rauenna. He excommunicated the French, and gaue the realme to the first Conqueror, as he had done the realme of Nauarre, which was vniually invaded by the king of Castille, and taken from *John* of Albret. He held the See nine yeares, fixe moneths, and one and twentie daies.

The See was vacant eight and twentie daies.

A SYNOD HELD AT TOVRS.

A Nationall Councell of the French Church was held at Tours, by all the Bishops, and most of the Doctors of France, against Pope *Iulio* the second: and another at Pisa, Milan, and Lyon, by the authoritie of *Maximilian* the emperor, and of king *Lewis* the twelfth, against the same Pope, defending his right by others.

A GENERALL COUNCELL AT LATERN.

A Generall Councell begun at Lateran by the commandement of *Iulio*, and afterwards hindered by him, but it was continued by *Leo* the tenth, and ended in the

Yeare of
Christ.

1491.

1503.

1503.

1512.

Yeare of
Christ.
1513.

the yeare 1517, for the reformation of the Church, and war against the Pope.

LEO the tenth, a Florentine, of the house of *Medicis*, was made Pope at the age of twentie yeares: he was learned, eloquent, and liberrall, louing learned and vertuous men; yet he loued his pleasures too much, and his owne good nature was often abused by such as were enemies to rest & quiet: he depriued the duke of Vrbain of his dukedome, and gaue it to *Lawrence de Medicis* his nephew, father to *Katherine de Medicis* the French queene: hauing published remission of sinnes to all such as gaue money to make war against the Turkes; he abrogated the pragmatike sanction, not without some tumult and murmur of the whole Clergie of France. He died with hoie, hearing that the French were expelled out of Milan, hauing beene Pope eight yeares, eight moneths, and twentie daies.

The See was void two moneths and seuen daies.

ADRIAN the first, borne at Vtrecht in Holland, of meane parentage, a Doctor of Diuinitie, and scholemaster to the Emperour *Charles* the fit: he was a learned man, and liued discretely without any great expence or pompe, neither did he confer benefices rashly: yet was he not pleasing vnto the Romanes, notwithstanding his many good parts. He held the See one yere, eight moneths, and nine daies.

The See was vacant two moneths and foure daies.

CLEMENT the seuenth, a Florentine of the house of *Medicis*, cousin german to *Leo* the 10: some say that he was his sonne or his base brother. He was a man of a great spirit, cunning, subtilie, and politicke. He held the partie of *Francis* the French king, against the Emperour *Charles* the fit, and treated the marriage of *Katherine* his niece, with *Henry* then duke of Orleans: he besieged Florence the towne of his birth for some indignities which the Florentines had done to them of his house, and for a yere he tooke it by composition (wherein he is not condemned to haue been rigorous against his cuntrye) making *Alexander* his nephew the first duke, who attempting to force chaste ladies, receiued his reward, and was slaine by his own kinsmen. He held the See ten yeares, ten moneths, and seuen daies.

CLEMENT the seuenth, celebrated the eight Iubile, in the yere 1582.

The See was void seuentene daies.

PAVL the third, a Romane, of the house of *Farnese*: some write that he was endowed with many vertues, a louer of peace, seeking alwaies to reconcile the French king and the Emperour: but he oppressed his subiects with tributes, and loued his kindred more than was fit, making his base sonne *Peter Lewis* duke of Parma and Plasencia, the which was the cause of his death, being miserably slaine by the nobilitie and the people, whome he would force to liue in Plasencia and leaue the fields. Some write that this *Paul* was a Magitian, a murderer, and an incestuous person. He was Pope fixe yeares, and eight and twentie daies.

The See was void two moneths and nine and twentie daies.

THE COUNCELL OF TRENT.

The Councell held at Trent, began in the yeare 1542, then transferred to Bologna 1546, continued at Trent 1551, for the space of eight moneths, and ended in the same place, 1563, 1564, as it was pretended, against heresies, abuses, and the corruption of manners of all Christians, but in trueth, to oppress the Gospell, and the professors thereof:

IVLIO the third called before *John Maria de Monte*, hauing beene President in the Councell of Trent and Bologna, was chosen Pope: he changed his manners with his name, for after he was Pope he gaue himselfe to war, gormandise, and voluptuousnesse, yea scoffing at his owne dignitie. He held the See fixe yeares, one moneth, and sixteene daies.

IVLIO the third, celebrated the ninth Iubile, in the yeare 1550.

The See was void seuentene daies.

MARCELL

- Number of Popes.**
 226. MARCELL the second, a Tuscan, Cardinal of the holie Crosse, a man of base condition, yet in his youth held to be learned, and was modest in his life and conversation before he came to that dignitie. He died one & twentie daies after his election: some say of poison, others of the yellow jaundies.
The See was void two and twentie daies.
227. PAUL the fourth, a Neapolitan, of the noble familie of the *Caracci*, an austere man, and in shew very zealous to reforme the abuses of the Clergie, detesting auerice, reiecting the resignation of Benefices in any mans fauour, and dispensations: finally being in shew borne to restore the Church; but some write that he vied great exactions and tyrannies; and was the cause of great wars; so as after his death the people of Rome vied his image with great indignitie, cutting off the head, and right hand, and casting it into Tyber, as they would haue done his bodie if it had not bin guarded, and they defaced the armes of his house. He was Pope foure yeares, two moneths, and seuen and twentie daies.
The See was void foure moneths and seuen daies.
228. PIUS the fourth, a Milanais, a great enemy to them that vied symonie, or that had many benefices, and to such as kept them for other men, whome he excommunicated and declared lubic & to restitution, as well they that held them, as those for whom they were kept, the which his successor confirmed. He held the See five yeares, eleuen moneths, and fiftene daies.
The See was void nine and twentie daies.
229. PIUS the fift, a Iacobin Monke of Alexandria in Lombardie, was first a Cardinal, and afterwards chosen Pope. He was a great persecutor of them that were opposite to the Romish Church. He was miraculously chosen, the Cardinals hauing no thought of his election. He perswaded a league of many Christian princes against the Turke, of whom they woon a great bataille at Lepanto, in the year 1571, in the which there were deliuered 2000 Christian slaves, and 25000 Turkes slaine, there were many prisoners, and 180 Gallies taken, sunke, or burnt. Being much tormented with the stone in the bladder, they write that he cried out, Lord increase my paine, but giue me patience. He died hauing bene Pope six yeares, three moneths, and sixtene daies.
The See was void eleven daies.
230. GREGORIE the thirteenth, a gentleman of Bologna, and a Doctor of the Common Law: he was violent against them that truly professed the Gospell, and was a fauourer of many treacherous practises against the queene of England: he reformed the Kalender, which had bene often attempted by his predecessors. In the end he died hauing bene Pope twelve yeares, and seuen and twentie daies.
GREGORIE the thirteenth, did celebrat the tenth Iubile, in the year 1575.
The See was vacant thirtee daies.
231. SIXTUS the fift, called before *Felix Perret*, Cardinal of Montalto, a Tuscan, whose father was a Swineherd. He held the See five yeares, foure moneths, and three daies.
The See was void eightene daies.
232. URBAN the seuenth, a Roman, held the See but thirtee daies.
The See was void two moneths and nine daies.
233. GREGORIE the fourteenth, a Milanais, of the familie of the *Sfondrati*, before Bishop of Cremona. He was Pope but ten moneths, and ten daies.
The See was void thirtee daies.
234. INNOCENT the ninth, a Bolonais, before Cardinal of the foure crownes: He held the See two moneths, and one day; and was poysoned (as they say) for that he fauoured the Spaniards designe too much against the French.
The See was void one moneth.
235. CLEMENT the eight, a Florentin, called before *Hippolitus Adolbrandini*, Cardinal of S. Pancratio, great Penitentiary. Falling sicke of a Catarrh, he died the third

of
 1555.

1555.

1560.

1566.

1572.

1575.

1585.

1590.

1590.

1591.

1592.

- Number of Popes.**
 of March, in the year 1601, hauing bene Pope thirtee yeares, one moneth, and foure daies.
 CLEMENT the eight, celebrated the eleuenth Iubile, in the year 1600.
The See was vacant eight and twentie daies.
236. LEO the eleuenth, a Florentin, sonne to *Ottauio*, of the noble familie of the *Medici*, was chosen with a wonderful applause of the whole Colledge of Cardinals, and the people of Rome made as great demonstration of joy for this election; but it continued not long, for he died within seuen dayes of a feauer, to the great griefe of all men.
The See was void twentie daies.
237. PAUL the fift, a Roman, of the Familie of the *Bourgesi* of Sienna, but borne at Rome of a Roman woman, his father comming thither to dwell. He now holds the See.

1600.

1605.

1605.

Hauing set downe the number of the Soueraigne Bishops, it seemes verie fit in like manner to specifye the order, names, and tytles of Cardinals which are liuing at this day, seeing they haue the chiefe charge in the See of Rome. Wherein the Reader shall be aduertised, That all Cardinals are diuided into three orders, that is to say, of Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, not that the Cardinals Priests be no Bishops, or that the Deacons be not Priests; and Bishops, but for that their first institution was such, some to carrie the tytles of Bishops, others of Priests, and some of Deacons: So as the Cardinals of *Sordis*, and of *Reichsmont*, whereof the one is Archbishop of *Bourdeaux*, and the other of *Clermont*, and yet they haue but the tytle of Priests: As also, the Cardinals of *S. Flore*, and *Perriti*, are Priests, and yet they are called but Deacons. For which reason they are here set downe, according to their ranks and tytles, and not according to the time of their creation. And to the end that the change of one language into another should breed no difficultie to know them by their names and tytles, they are left as they are commonly called.

CARDINALL BISHOPS.

- 1 FRANCIS of the tytle of Bishop of Ostia, Deane of the holie Colledge, Cardinal of Ioyeuse, Protector of Fraunce, and Archbishop of Rouen, a Frenchman, created by Pope Gregorie the thirteenth, the ninth of December, in the year 1583.
- 2 Anthoine Maria, of the tytle of Bishop of Porto, Cardinall Gallo, Bishop of Dofme of la Marque, created the seuenteenth of September 1586, by Sixtus the fift.
- 3 Anthoine of the tytle of Bishop of Sabina, Cardinall Saulius, a Geneuois, created the eighteenth of December 1587, by Sixtus the fift.
- 4 Euangelist Palot of the tytle of Bishop of Tusculum, Cardinall Coseuin, Archpriest of S. Peter of Cardarola of la Marque, created the eighteenth of December 1587, by Sixtus the fift.
- 5 Friar Gregory Petrochin of the order of

the Hermits of S. Augustin of the tytle of Bishop of Prenette, Cardinall of Montelparo of la Marque, created the twentieth of December 1589, by Sixtus the fift.

6 Paule Sfondrati of the tytle of Bishop of Albe, Cardinall of S. Cecile, President of the Signatures of Grace, a Milanais, created the eighteenth of December 1590, by Gregorie the fourteenth.

CARDINALS PRIESTS.

- 7 Peter, of the tytle of the most holie Trinitie, Montepinci, Cardinall of Gondij, Prior of the Cardinals Priests, a Florentin, created the eighteenth of December 1587, by Sixtus the fift.
- 8 Bennet, of the tytle of S. Lawrence in Lucina, Cardinall Iustiman, a Geneuois, created the seuenteenth of December 1586, by Sixtus the fift.
- 9 Francis Maria des Marques of Mont S. Marie,

1687. *Admiral*, of the title of Mount S. Maria in Transevere, Cardinal of Monte, created the fourteenth of December 1588, by *Sixtus* the first.
1690. 10 *Frederic*, of the title of S. Marie of the Angels in Thermis, Cardinal *Borromeo*, Archbishop of Milan, created 18 of December 1487, by *Sixtus* the first.
- 11 *Ottavio*, of the title of S. Praxede, Cardinal *Aquaviva*, Archbishop of Naples, a Neapolitan, created the first of March 1591, by *Gregorie* 13.
- 12 *Flaminio*, of the title of S. Marie of Peace, Cardinal *Plato*, a Milanois, created the first of March 1591, by *Gregorie* the fourteenth.
- 13 *Peter*, of the title of S. John and S. Paul, Cardinal *Aldobrandin*, Chamberlain to the holie Church of Rome, Archbishop of Ravenna, President of the Briefes signed, & Protector of Sauoy, created the twelfth of Septemb. 1593, by *Clement* the eight.
- 14 *Ottavio*, of the title of S. Sabina, Cardinal *Bandin*, a Florentin, created 15 of June 1596, by *Clement* the eight.
- 15 *Frier Anne* of Sears, of the title of S. Susanna, of the order of S. Bennet, Cardinal of Giury, a Frenchman, created by *Clement* 8, the first of June 1596.
- 16 *Lawrence*, of the title of S. Lawrence. In Pane & Perna, Cardinal *Blanchet*, a Bullonois, created the first of June 1596, by *Clement* the eight.
- 17 *Bartholomew*, of the title of S. Peter in Vincula, Cardinal *Cosio*, Archbishop of Compe, created the first of June 1596, by *Clement* the eight.
- 18 *Francis* of the title of S. Marie de Populo, Cardinal *Mantuan Vincent* of Frioul, created the first of June 1596, by *Clement* the eight.
- 19 *Yompee*, of the title of S. Balbina, Cardinal *Arigon*, a Roman, created the first of June 1596, by *Clement* the eight.
- 20 *Boniface*, of the title of S. Prisca, Cardinal *Bevilacqua*, Bishop of Coruana Ferrarois, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* the eight.
- 21 *Bernard*, of the title of S. Anastatius, Cardinal *Rois* of Sandoual, Archbishop of Tolledo, a Spaniard, created 33 of March 1599, by *Clement* 8.
- 22 *Dominic*, of the title of S. Peter in Monteaureo, Cardinal *Tulcan* de Reggio, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* the eight.
- 23 *Francis*, of the title of S. Silvester, Cardinal *Dietrichstein*, Bishop of Vlm, Prince of the sacred Empire, and Protector of the realms and estates of his imperial maiestie, a German, created in the yere 1599, by *Clement* the eight.
- 24 *Robert*, of the title of S. Maria in Via, Cardinal *Bellarmin* Politian, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* the eight.
- 25 *Francis*, of the title of S. Marcel, Cardinal *Sourdis*, Archbishop of Bourdeaux, a Frenchman, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* the eight.
- 26 *Dominic*, of the title of the twelve Apostles, Cardinal *Gymniasius* de Castro, a Boullonois, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 27 *Philip*, of the title of Sancta Maria super Minervam, Cardinal *Spinelli*, Bishop of Auerzo, a Neapolitan, created 9 of June 1604, by *Clement* 8.
- 28 *Anthony*, of the title of S. Croix, in Ierusalem, Cardinal *Zapata*, a Spaniard, created 9 of June 1604, by *Clement* 8.
- 29 *Charles* of the title of S. Thomas in Parione, Cardinal *Madriati*, Bishop of Trente, a German, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 30 *Charles*, of the title of S. Clement, Cardinal of Contes, Bishop of Ancena, a Roman, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 31 *James Dany*, of the title of S. Agnes in Agone, Cardinal of Peron, a Frenchman, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 32 *John Dauphin*, of the title of S. Mark, Bishop of Vicenze, and called Cardinal of Vicenze, a Venetian, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* 8.
- 33 *James* of the title of S. Stephen in Monte Celio, Cardinal *Spynelus*, Bishop of Ciuita Vecchia de la Marque, created 9 of June 1604, by *Clement* 8.
- 34 *Erminius* of the title of S. Maria Transpontina, Cardinal *de Valentibus* de Trivio, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 35 *Ferdinand Taberna*, of the title of S. Eusebius, Cardinal of S. Eusebius, a Milanois,

- 36 *Millanois*, created the ninth of June 1604, by *Clement* the eight.
- 37 *Sigis*, of the title of S. Crisogono, Cardinal *Borghese* Archpriest of the Church Lateran, Legat of Auignon, a Roman, created the eighteenth of July 1605, by *Clement* the first.
- 38 *Gregorio*, Cardinal *Spinosa* Legat of Ferrara, Archbishop of Genoua, created the eleventh of September 1606, by *Paul* 5.
- 39 *Boniface* of the title of S. Onuphrie, Cardinal *Barbario*, Bishop of Spoleum, Legat in Bologna, a Florentine, created the eleventh of September 1606, by *Paul* the first.
- 40 *John Garzins* of the four holie crowns, Cardinal *Millin*, Vicar to the Pope, a Romane, created the eleventh of September 1606, by *Paul* the first.
- 41 *Boniface* of the title of S. Pudenciana, Cardinal *Caetan*, Legat of Romagna, Bishop of Cassin, a Romane, created the eleventh of September 1606, by *Paul* the first.
- 42 *Marcell* of the title of S. Quirice & Tullia, Cardinal *Lantes*, Bishop of Todi, a Romane, created the eleventh of September 1606, by *Paul* the first.
- 43 *Francis Ergas* Cardinal, Archbishop of Strigonia, Chancellor, and Lieutenant of the realm of Hongarie, created the tenth of December 1607, by *Paul* the first.
- 44 *Francis* of the title of S. Calixtus, Cardinal of Rochfoucaur, Bishop of Clermont, a Frenchman, created the tenth of December 1607, by *Paul* the first.
- 45 *Michael Ange Tanti*, of the title of S. Bartholomew in Insula, Cardinal *Nazareno*, Archpriest of S. Maria Maior of Armini, created the four and twentieth of November 1608, by *Paul* the first.
- 46 *John Baptista*, of the title of S. Sixtus, Cardinal *Lenius*, Bishop of Ferrara, a Romane, created the four and twentieth of November 1608, by *Paul* the first.
- 47 *Decius*, Archbishop of Damas, & Nuncio for the Apostolic See in Spaine, Cardinal *Carrese*, created the seven and twentieth of August 1611, by *Paul* 5.
- 48 *Dominicke* of the title of S. Martin in Montibus, Archbishop of Nazaret, Cardinal *Riuatola* a Geneuois, created the seven and twentieth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 49 *Metellus Bigus* of the title of S. Alexis, Bishop and Cardinal of Suane, a Siennois, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 50 *John* Bishop of Beziers, Councillor to the most Christian king, and chiefe Almoner to the queene Regent, Cardinal *Bonfi* a Florentine, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 51 *Philip* Bishop of Aquin, Vice-Legat at Auignon, Cardinal *Filonard* a Romane, created 17 of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 52 *Peter Paul* of the title of S. Nerres and S. Achilica, Auditor General of the Apostolicke Chamber, Cardinal *Crescence* a Romane, created 17 of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 53 *James* of the title of S. George, Treasurer General of the Apostolicke See, Cardinal *Serra* a Geneuois, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 54 *Frier Augustin*, General of the order of the preaching Friars, of the title of S. Maria de Ara Celi, Cardinal *Galamin* of Brisequelle, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 55 *Horatio* of the title of S. Sauour in Lauoro, Auditor of the Rota, Cardinal *Lancelot* a Romane, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 56 *Gaspard Chanoin* of the Church of Toledo, Cardinal *Borfa* a Spaniard, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.
- 57 *Frier Felix Centin*, Procto-General of the Frier Minors Conuentuals, of the title of S. Jerome of Saluonia, Cardinal *Afenlan*, created the seutenth of August 1611, by *Paul* the first.

CARDINALS DEACONS.

- 58 *Francis* of S. Flora, of the title of S. Maria in Via Lata, Cardinal *Sforza*, the first Deacon, a Romane, created the 12 of December 1583, by *Gregorie* the thirteenth.
- 59 *Alexander Peretti*, of the title of S. Lawrence,

rence in Damasco, Cardinall *Montalto* Vice Chancellour of the Church of Rome, Protector of the realme of Polonia, a Romane; created the thirteenth of March 1585, by *Sixtus* the fift.

60. *Ondert* of S. *Eustace*, Cardinall *Farnese*, Legat of the Patrimoine, Protector of the realms of Arragon, England, and Sweden, a Romane, created the sixt of March 1591, by *Gregorie* the fourteenth.

61. *Andrew* of S. *Ange* in foro plicium, Cardinall *Pepretti* of Montalto, created the 4 of Iune 1596, by *Clement* the eight.

62. *Alexander* of S. *Marie* the New, Cardinall of Est, a Ferrarois, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* 8.

63. *John Baptista* of S. *Marie* in Cosmedina, Cardinall of Tia Florentine, created the third of March 1599, by *Clement* 8.

64. *John* of S. *Adrian*, Cardinall of Auria,

a Geneuois, created the ninth of Iune A 1604, by *Clement* the eight.

65. *Charles Emanuel* of S. *Nicholas* in *Carere Giuliano*, Cardinall *Pie* a Ferrarois, created the ninth of Iune 1604, by *Clement* the eight.

66. *Maurice Emanuel* Cardinall of Sauoy, sonne to the most excellent Duke of Sauoy, created the tenth of December 1607, by *Paul* the fift. B

67. *Ferdinand* of the title of S. *Marie* in *Dominica*, Cardinall *Gonsague*, Prior of Barlette; sonne to the most excellent Duke of Mantoua, created the 10 of December 1607, by *Paul* the fift.

68. *Lewis* of the title of S. *Agathe*, Cardinall *Caponi* a Florentine, created the four and twentieth of Nouember 1608, by *Paul* the fift. C

So as there are in all sixtie and eight Cardinals, of the which there are six Bishops, one and fiftie priests, and cleuen Deacons.

By *Gregorie* 13.

Bishops 1.

Deacons 1.

By *Sixtus* 5.

Bishops 4.

Priests 4.

Deacons 1.

By *Gregorie* 14.

Bishops 11

Priests

Deacons 2.

1.

By *Clement* 8.

Priests

Deacons 23.

5.

By *Paul* 5.

Priests

Deacons 22.

3.

After which denumeration, it is not thought superfluous nor impertinent, to make a repetition of them, according to their ranks, and the office whereunto they are appointed, by which means the reader shal be fully satisfied, of all that depends of this colledge.

The seven Cardinals which are Bishops.

The Bishop Cardinall of Ostia doth consecrate and install the Pope, and therefore doth march next after his holinesse. E

The Bishop Cardinall *Porticese*.

The Bishop Cardinall of Albe.

The Bishop of Pilaestre or Cardinall *Prenestin*.

The Bishop Cardinall *Tusculan*.

The Bishop Cardinall of Sabin.

The Bishop Cardinall of S. Rufina.

These assist the Pope on Sundais, and Festivall daies in the Church of S. Iohn de Lateran, whereas he doth celebrate diuine seruice. F

The Cardinals which are Priests.

These serue at S. *Peter*.
The Cardinals of the title of S. *Marie* beyond Tyber.

A The Cardinall of the title of S. *Chryfogon*.

The Cardinall of S. *Cecile*.

The Cardinall of S. *Anastafius*.

The Cardinall of S. *Laurence* in Damas.

The Cardinall of S. *Maurice*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Martin* des Monts.

These serue in the Church of S. *Paul*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Sabina*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Priscus*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Balbinus*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Nere*, and *Achille*.

The Cardinall of S. *Sixtus*.

The Cardinall of S. *Marcell*.

The Cardinall of S. *Sisanna*.

These Priests Cardinals which follow, serue in the Church of S. *Marie* the Great.

The Cardinall of the title of the twelue Apostles.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Ensebinus*.

The Cardinall of the title of S. *Potentiana*.

The Cardinall of S. *Peter*, and S. *Marcelin*.

The Cardinall of S. *Clement*.

The Cardinall of S. *Vital*.

These Priests Cardinals which follow, are in the Basilique S. *Laurence*.

The Cardinall of S. *Praxeda*.

The Cardinall of S. *Peter* at Vincula.

The Cardinall of S. *Laurence* in Lucina.

The Cardinall of S. *Sancta Croix* in Hierusalem.

The Cardinall of S. *Stephen* on Mont Celio.

The Cardinall of S. *John*, and S. *Paule*.

The Cardinall of the foure holie Crownes.

There are after these, sixteene Cardinals Deacons, that is to say:

The Cardinall of S. *Marie* in *Dominica* Archdeacon.

The Cardinall of S. *Luce* of the Seven seats.

The Cardinall of S. *Marie* the New.

The Cardinall of S. *Cosmo*, and S. *Damian*.

The Cardinall of S. *Adrian*.

The Cardinall of S. *Gregorie*.

The Cardinall of S. *Marie* in the Greeke Schole.

The Cardinall of S. *Sancta Maria* in Porticu.

The Cardinall of S. *Nicholas* in the Tusculan Prison.

The Cardinall of S. *Ange*.

The Cardinall of S. *Eustace*.

The Cardinall of S. *Marie* the Egyptian.

The Cardinall of S. *Marie* in the Broad way.

The Cardinall of S. *Agathe*.

The Cardinall of S. *Luce* among the Images.

The Cardinall of S. *Quirice*.

The Cardinals which are Bishops sit neere vnto the Pope when he doth celebrat Festival dayes: The Cardinals Priests assist him when he saith Masse: and the Deacons march him, and serue him at the Altar.



THE ESTATE OF FLORENCE.

The Contents.

I The situation of the State of Florence, composed of three bodies of a Commonwealth reduced into one. 2. A description of the cities of that State, and first of the citie of Florence, the great circuit, and pleasant situation thereof; her palaces and stately buildings: of Pratoline, of Poggio, and other houses of pleasure. 3. Of the citie of Pisa, the antiquitie thereof, and other things worthe observation. 4. Of Pistoia, a citie in times past troubled with the factions of the Donats and Cerchis, called the Blacke and White. 5. Of the State of Syena, and the Townes therunto belonging. 6. The State of Florence commended for the Trebian wines, the Melons of the countrie of Pisa, and pasture grounds of Pistoia: the Mines of Alabaster, Azure, Vitrioll, and other Myneralls: Fountaines of Salt waters, whereof they make Salt. 7. The subtiltie, craftie wit, and great frugality of the Florentines; great lovers of libertie. The inhabitants of Syena, liberal, magnificent, and courteous; they of Prato sacrilegious; and they of Pistoia, given to bloodshed and murder. 8. The fertilitie of the countrie of Syena, and riches of the Florentines in the traffick of Silkes and Woolls, Serges, and Cloth of gold. 9. The Clergie of the State of Florence, possessing five hundred thousand crownes of yearly rent. 10. The renewals of the great Duke, what summer they amount unto. 11. The strength of the great Dukes Estate, consisting in the situation of the Mountaines upon the Frontiers, and the Fortresses of Syena, Florence, and Pisa. 12. What number of horsemen he enteraineth. 13. His forces by sea. 14. The order of the knights of S. Stephano, instituted by duke Cosmo. 15. Of the Alliances and Intelligences of the Great Duke with neighbouring princes. 16. Of the administration of iustice, and election of the magistrates of this State. 17. Of the Archbishops and Bishops that be in Tuscanie. 18. The Genealogie of the Dukes of Florence.

I.



I He Dukes of Florence, having vnitied the Estates of three Common-wealths in one, namely of Florence, Pisa, and Syena, possesse at this day the Province of Tuscanie, that is to say, the greatest, the noblest, and the goodliest part. I will not trouble my selfe to relate all the ciuile wars, and frequent changes of the gouernement, both because that discourse would be long and tedious, and also a thing superfluous to set that downe here, which is contained in Histories. But tying my selfe only to the State of things present, I say, That like as nature hath endowd this prouince with all the priuiledges which fauourably she vouchsafeth vnto others, so would she haue it no whit inferior in situation to any; placing it as in the middle, or to speake better, in the nauil of Italie, compassing it about on three sides, with vnic high mountaines, and on the fourth (which is towards the sea, and champion countie of Rome) where nature is wanting, art hath supplied; for all the State of Syena is full of Fortresses, as we shall shew in his place.

: The

This prince hath in his State sixteene cities, that is to say, eight in the State of Florence, which are Florence, Pisa, Pistoia, Volterra, Arezzo, Bourgo of S. Sepulchro, Corneto, and Montepulciano. In the State of Siena are eight, which are Siena, Montapasserio, Soana, Pienza, Massa, Chiusi, and Colle.

The citie of Florence is six miles in circuit, and containeth more than ninetie thousand inhabitants. It standeth in a plaine enuironed with with mountaines, and seated vpon the river Arno, which passeth through the middle of the citie, which is ioyned together by foure faire bridges of stone: it is also paved with square stone, the streets are large, and alwaies cleane, and it hath very faire places, and in them diuers statues. In a word, it is one of the most delectable cities that a man can see, so as the Italians name it Florence the Faire. Moreover, the great dukes palace is one of the most stately and goodliest buildings of Europe: it occupieth the place of more than fiftie houses, which were wont to stand there, and in the bodie of the same, is the hall for representing of comedies: it is capable to lodge a great number of strangers, as Princes, Ambassadors, and others, for whom it is appointed; so as the palace (which did belong to the Pitti) is not inferior to any in Italie, and furpasseth many palaces of the kings of Europe, both for the greatnesse of the building, for architecture, and for ornament; for the beautie of the gardines, fountaines, statues, and other things. This building was in times past vnadvisedly vndertaken by a gentleman named Luke of the house of Pitti, who erected all the forepart of the same, but hauing impouercished himselfe, was constrained to sell it to duke Cosmo: he was afterwards put to death for matricide. There are diuers other stately palaces, as that of the Medici, the Strozzi, and others. Among other singularities of this citie, the Cathedral Church is much commended for the excellencie of workmanship, the steeple whereof is both for stiffe and very rare, and without this Church it is paved all with marble. There is also a library in S. Laurence Church, built and replenished with excellent bookes by Cosmo, in the which are many rare manuscripts. To be short, Charles Archduke of Austria said as he passed through Florence, that it was a citie which should not be seene on festiual daies. Besides this palace, the great duke hath another out of the citie called Pratoline, where (besides other singularities) are such rare water woikes, as it is not inferior to that of Tiouoli, and truly, it is a place of great State. He hath also other houses of pleasure, whereof one is called Pogge, ten miles off, and the other Castro, or Castello, both of great beautie, both for seat and building, and the ornaments of fountaines, and other things; so as goodlier places cannot be desired.

Volterra standeth on the top of a hill: the walls whereof are made of squared stone, and are six foot of length, and ioyned together very neatly without mortar: it hath five faire gates, and at euery gate a very faire fountaine: the walls sufficiently manifest the antiquitie thereof, in like manner doe the sepulchers, the Epitaphes in Herculeane letters, and the most ancient statues of marble, and many other things.

Pisa is placed by the ancients among the maritime towns of Tuscanie, and so anciently there be very few authors among the most ancient which haue not made mention thereof in their histories. It is seated betwene the two riuers of Arno and Lelaro, which now is named Serchie, and these riuers in the time of Strabo were ioined together, and extended themselves so large, and with so great violence, that it was impossible to discern any thing from one bank to the other. But at this present Serchia passeth into Luca, and is very far from Arno. This citie is very great, diuided by the riuier, and crossed together with two bridges, others write but one: the walls thereof are very high, and of marble in some places, but most bricke. There is a Church which hath gates of stone, and close by it a steeple built with exquisite and artificial cunning: for without it is so high in such sort, that it seemeth as if it would fall downe instantly, and within it is wrought, euen, and leuell. The font for baptism is one of the rarest peeces that may be seene, but the Churchyard much more admirable, being enclosed with walls, and porticoes, and taketh vp a very great ground, the earth whereof consumeth the dead bodies in foure and twentie houres. These foure things are builded without and within of ex-

Sf iij

quiss

II.

III.

quiriti slopes, and are in one and the same street, not all together, nor yet far distant one from another. In time past it was of so great power, as it contended against the Venetians and Genoways. It waxed great by the spoiles done by the Sarrazins to them of Genoa, in the year 933: for many withdrew themselves thither, as into a place of safetie. At length it was ruined by an overthrow of their armie giuen by the Genoways neere the Island of Giglio, for since, it hath remained so weak, that it was no more able to resist any, but was constrained to yeeld her necke vnder the yoke of the Florentines, from whom hauing revolted at the coming of *Charles* the eight the French king, and being againe sitene yeares after subdued, the citie remained in a manner desert: for the citizens thereof impatient of the gouernment of the Florentines, passed into Sardinia, Sicilie, and other places to inhabit.

But the great duke *Cosmo* did his best endeavour to repeople it, erecting an vniuersitie, and building a goodly palace for the abode of the knights of S. Stephano, giuing many priuiledges to the inhabitants; notwithstanding it is at this day so ill built and inhabited, as some hold there are not about foureteen thousand persons, and yet it is not much lesse in circuit than Florence.

III. Pistoia is seated at the foot of the Appennine; but it is ruined with dissensions, wherein it did also ingage Florence, and almost all Tuscanie. For two young men of good families being grown to words, and so to blows, & the one of them hauing bin very lightly hurt, the father of the other (for to appeale the quarrell that might arise thereof) sent C his sonne to aske the young man forgiveness that was hurt: but a cleane contrarie effect ensued; for the father of him that was hurt, hauing caused this young man to be taken by his seruants, made his hand be cut off ouer a horse-manger, and sending him backe said vnto him, go and tell thy father, that wounds are not cured with words, but with the sword. For this cause a cruell war was kindled betwene these two families, whereof the one was called White, and the other Blacke: they drew into their two factions the rest of the citie, which was often seene goared with the blood of her citizens.

The Florentines, in stead of putting to death the heads of these two factions, brought them (as it were) into banishment) within their citie, where the *Donats* hauing taken vpon them the protection of the Blacke, and the *Cerchi* of the White; Florence was wholly diuided into white & Blacke, which disquieted the same a very long time. Arezzo hauing by her long dissensions almost ruined herselfe, was sold by *Lewis* the first, of Anjou, for fortie thousand florins of gold to the Florentines, in like manner as Cortona was sold vnto them within a while after by king *Ladislaus*. There are besides, other good places in the State of Florence, as Prato, Presche, S. Miniato, Empoli, S. Geminian, Fiquene, Pietra-santa, Barga, and vpon the sea coast Livorno, and further off Plombin, three miles thence.

V. The State of Florence boundeth vpon Siena, an auncient citie, which hauing bene a Colonie of the Romanes, subiected vnto it in the end a great part of the countrie. There happened a mortall warre betwene this citie and Florence, after that the *Guelphes* and *Ghibelins*, two satall factions, grew vp in Italie. This is a faire citie, and strong of situation; but which hath lost, together with her libertie, many of her people and much of her splendour: it is five miles in compasse, and containeth about twentie thousand soules, and is distant from Florence but three and thirtie miles. The townes of the State of Siena are Pienza, Montalcino, Quins, Sanna, Massa, Pienza, & Grosset, with six and twentie other places walled about, but slenderly peopled.

¶ The Qualitie.

VI. Florence is seated in a plaine, girded about with mountaines, and distinguished with little hills, and there is not any countrie tilled with more diligence, curiositie, and care. F In a small plot of ground they gather wine, oile, come, pulse, and fruits, in abundance, and the villages stand as thicke there, as may be possible. There are very excellent wines, among which, that which they call Trebian is the best, and may be preferred in sweetnes before Maluense.

The

A the countrie of Pifa is verie fit for come, and so fertile, that it is able to nourish all Tuscanie. Notwithstanding since the losse of their libertie, the husbandmen haue bene constrained to manure the fields, as the inhabitants haue sayled in the citie. The wines of this countrie are not much esteemed. As for other fruits, it bringeth them forth indifferently good, but the melons there are most excellent. The sea is neere it, and therefore the place fit for traffike of Merchandise. The ayre there is vnwholesome and daungeous, especially to strangers. It is thought the corruption of the ayre grows for that the countrie is not inhabited.

The countrie about Pistoia is mountainous, but there are exceeding good pasture lands. Volterra hath a soyle richer in mynes than in fruits: for there is found veynes of blaster, of Azure, Vitrioll, and other myneralls; and there be fontaines of salt water, whereof they make verie good salt, and in great abundance: as also, at Grossetta in the Arno, which bring great profit to the Dukes coffers.

The river of Chiene runneth through the territorie of Arezzo: It is full of mudd, and is hurtfull to them that dwell neere it. True it is, that they labour daily to drie vp the marshes, and to stop the course of the waters. At the foot of the Apennin, you may see the countrie of Mugelle, crossed ouer by the river of Syena, which is pleasant, and a great store of fruits: and betwene Arno and the countrie of Arezzo, you haue Val de Arno, which is rich in come, wine, and cattel. But Val d'Arno aboundeth greatly in Chianti in wines, and Mugelle in fruits.

The fields about Syena, are employed to pasture, and feed many Beeces, Buffes, and Swines. They yeeld also good store of wheat, wine, and oyle, and abound in all sorts of fruits. But to speake in generall of come, Tuscanie doth not yeeld sufficient to feed the inhabitants, but their wants are often supplied from Sicilie, and other countries.

¶ Their Manners.

The humours of the Tuscans appeare best in the Florentines; for they haue subtilie of wit, are verie frugal, exceeding cunning, & circumspect, diligent, industrious, fit for all sort of arts, both of warre and peace. They know how to lay hold of the best opportunities; to stand vpon their aduantage, and not to let any thing be lost, or slip from them. They haue defended their libertie to the vttermost; but by the too great subtilie of their wit, they haue liued in perpetuall discords, which haue in the end ruined them: for as the saying of *Thucydides* is most true, That such men as be somewhat blunt of wit, doe become a Common-wealth, than they that be of too subtilie a spirit. They are content in trade of merchandise, and haue not their like in raising of buildings. They were their apparel modest and graue, and surpasse all the Tuscans in ciuilitie, and faire countenance.

The inhabitants of Syena differ verie much from the humour of the Florentines: for the Florentines are niggardly, and retired; and they of Syena liberall, and curious to strangers: the first are verie carefull to prouide for the time to come, and are verie hard to be got any thing; the other tractable, and liuing as it were from hand to mouth: those are extremely carefull of their affaires, and can dissemble; these are simple, and by their countenance shew their hearts: they againe, mind nothing but their merchandile and gain; and these are content with their renewens, and with the fruits which their Farnes doe yeeld them.

Moreover, the Italians attribute certaine qualities to the inhabitants of the Cities of the State, which I will not let passe in silence. They terme the Florentines slow, gorged, and sumptuous, especially when they haue strangers, as none is more prodigal than the Florentine. They call them also craftie in the trade of Merchandise. The citizens of Syena are called slow in counsell and determinations, and fortunat in warre (but they haue now iustly lost that name, since they were so vnfortunat as to loose their libertie; for the Italians may with good reason take from them this title and Epithit) bountieless towards their guests, and their enemies, and resolute in pursuing the reuenge of wrongs.

VII.

wrong done vnto them. They of Prato commit sacrilege in time of warre. The men of Pistoia loue to shed bloud, weare pignards in the warres, and are excellent in warding of their enemies blowes. They of Arezzo entertaine their guests simply, and alacost with their ordinarie faire; and these of Pisa are inconstant in their counsell and resolutions. They say that the women of Syena are faire, they of Florence delicate, of Pistoia gentle, and of Arezzo niggardly and covetous.

¶ The Riches.

VIII. **T**Hough the State of Florence want wheat, being otherwise verie fruitfull in wine, flax, and other necessaries; yet that of Syena, by reason of the fertilitye of the countie, which is nothing inferior to that of Apulia, not onely supplieth the necessitie of Florence, but also doth sometimes relieue Genoa, Luca, and other neighbouring places, through the fruitfulness of the countie, and industrie of the inhabitants; for this Province imparteth many things vnto strangers, hauing little need of any thing from others. For this cause the riches of priuat persons is worthie of consideration, which proceedeth both from their industrie, and from their renewes. As the riches of the renewes and rents are commonly great in a fat and fertile countie, where they receiue great profit with little labour; and where the countie is lesse fertile, we see arts and merchandise flourish: and hence it cometh, that in the State of Syena, the inhabitants are rich in rents, and few merchants: and in that of Florence, the inhabitants are much richer by meanes of their industrie. This citie is full of artificers of all sorts, which make with great diligence, and verie workmanly, great store of Sarges of all sorts, Silkes, and Cloth of gold, and siluer nothing inferior to them of Flaunders. It aboundeth principally with those that exercise the art of Silke and Wooll, which are set on worke by the gentlemen and rich men of the citie to their profit, and the commoditie of all the people, and these workes are distributed not onely to this State, but to all Italie, and to a part of the rest of Europe, and some of them are transported as farre as the Indies, and they that carrie Serges thither, gaine fiftie in the hundred: some yeares there are made at Florence two millions of Serges, which is a verie admirable thing. These riches of the citizens of Florence haue bene knowne greater in the time of their libertie, in many warres, and publike expences, and in the great number of sumptuous places builded with royall cost by priuat persons within the citie, but much more without, as may be seene in the plaine, and on the sides of the mountaines which are round about.

IX. The Clergie is rich by reason of many Bishopricks, Abbeyes, Prouostships, most rich Hospitals, and a great number of Monasteries, and all this amounteth (as is thought) to the summe of five hundred thousand crownes of yearly rent. This riches of priuat persons augmenteth the Princes treasure, because the riches of priuat persons is nothing else but the treasure of the Soueraigne, diuided into many purses, especially when he hath power to vse the same, as this Prince easily doth by meanes of the charges and impositions imposed in this citie. Contracts of marriage pay eight in the hundred; contracts of bargaine and sale of lands and houses pay likewise the same summe; hire of houses pay the tenth part; They that haue any suits in law and plead, pay a certaine imposition, which they call Sportola, before they begin their suit; There is a custome also of six pence in euery two duckats vpon all cattell that is bought and sold, and as often as they are bought and sold, Whenas they weigh any fish, it payes a Quartin in the pound, the which doth amount to three pence in the stone of our money. To conclude, there is not any thing carried out of Florence, or made within it, but hath an imposition. Moreover, the prince in his necessitie makes vse of the money of priuat men with verie great ease, after this manner. When he had need of a hundred or two hundred thousand crowns, he made a list of all such as had readie money, the which were well knowne vnto the prince, as they are at this day. Among these they made a diuision, assigning to euery one the portion which he should disburse, more or lesse, according to the quantitie of his meanes: the which did neuer exceed five thousand duckats. This sealesment being made,

A made, they giue notice to euery one to pay his part by a certaine time, and no man doth pisse that day, as well for feare of punishment, as for that he would not loose the princes fauor. Euery one hauing deliuered in what was laid vpon him, they assigned as much credit vpon the tax of the whole State, as there was money lent, so as within the time of credit and twentie moneths (for this tax was leuiued within that time) they were satisfied the money: and after this manner, the prince did sodenly make vse of priuat mens money in his necessitie, the which was no great preiudice vnto them. But the great duke in this day doth not vse these courses, but liues vpon his impositions, which are exceeding great, there being neither salt, fish, flax, bread, nor anything sold within his Estate but payes a custome, yea men, women, lodging chambers, and Innes are subiect vnto a tol, the which make his reuenues to be very great.

The dukes reuenues are esteemed by some to be a million and a halfe of duckats, saying that he drawes out of the citie of Florence alone fix hundred thousand duckats yere, from Siena one hundred & fiftie thousand duckats, and from the customes of Liouorne hundred and thirtie thousand duckats, of the tolle of mill-stones throughout his Estate, except Siena, one hundred and sixtie thousand duckats: of salt, mines of flax, and siluer, in a manner the like summe. Moreover he gets much by exchange, hauing continually great store of money vpon the banke. He doth also reape great profit by galleons for the transportation of merchandise, and by his galleies, which are commanded by Monsieur de Beauregard a French gentleman, who hath made great prizes of prizes when he hath bene at sea. Some are of opinion that the dukes yearly reuenues doth not amount to aboue 1100 thousand duckats, setting downe in particular how it is made, and what euery chiefe towne doth yield. Some hold that the deceased great duke had about ten millions of gold in his predecessors coffers, and to the value of two millions of Jewells: and it is credible that he hath much augmented this summe.

¶ The Forces.

X. I may say that the Estate of this prince is of yron, for that besides the naturall strength of the Mountaines, which doth enuiron it of three parts, in forme like to a wall, it hath a good number of forts which are in the East of Siena, seated on that side among these they do number five cities well fortified; the which are, Siena, the which is exceeding strong both by nature and art, hauing a good fort standing vpon the North-West part of the towne; Montalcino in like manner is very strong both by situation and industrie; but Quinsi, Grossetto, and Soane haue many defects which may be observed. Besides the townes, there are also in this Estate diuers Forts of good consideration, as Radicofani, Montfalcon, Lucignan, Monterison, and others which haue defects both in forme and quantitie, being very little, and by consequence of small retreat, and little receiue few men for defence. In the Estate of Florence all the townes from Montepulciano vpward are well fortified, and especially Florence, whose walls although they be not all new, after the moderne fashion, yet hath it two good Forts, the one is called S. Miniato seated vpon a hill which commandes the towne, the other is the new Castell in a plaine, made in the time of libertie. These Forts (built especially to keepe the people in awe) may serue at need for some defence against strangers: but to offend they haue defects in their forme, and they are also but little. The great duke entertaines fortie soldiers for the guard of S. Miniato, and one hundred in the Castell, in Pisa he hath fiftie, in Siena five and twentie, and in Liouorno two hundred and twentie. In this Estate of Florence and Pisa there are other Forts, as Empoli, Prato, Castrocario in Romagna, and so forth, all which like vnto the rest haue defects both in their forme and situation. As for Liouorno, it is built of late yeres, & better fortified after the Moderne manner. Touching the men of war which the great duke doth raise in his Estate, he hath great numbers of foot inrolled and mustered, which some hold amount to thirtie and six thousand, or more; but others who haue exactly examined the proportion of the whole, by a verie do think that there can be aboue fiftene or sixtene thousand of these trayned bands.

Their

These men are apt to armes and discipline, being proper to this Prouince, the which hath in old time, and doth yet breed very good fouldiers: the prince doth cause them to be practised and trained with great care, there being many good captaines employed to that end: besides, euery man doth practise to shoote in his peece, as well for his owne priuat pleasure, as in regard of the prize which the prince propounds. These trained fouldiers are not only drawne out of the cuntry, but also out of townes; only Florence is fixed, it may be for that the prince doth not hold it fit and conuenient to arme these people, who haue not yet forgotten their former libertie, and therefore they are not suffered to haue any armes in their houses, nor to weare any weapons, vnlesse he be a knight, a fouldier, an officer, or hath special leaue. No man is freed from this inrollement but priests and schollers, and there are great punishments inflicted vpon them that carrie armes in the citie, or in the dukes Estate, vnlesse they be such as I haue formerly named. These fouldiers (besides many other priuiledges and exemptions which are granted vnto them) cannot be imprisoned for debt: and these priuiledges being inuolably obserued, is the cause that many good old fouldiers comming from the wars of Flanders, France, and the East, doe voluntarily cause themselves to be inrolled in those bands; so as, both for number and qualitie, we may say that it is the goodliest troupe of Italie.

Euery fouldier is tied to pay for his armes, which are giuen him for his vse, and must keepe them cleane and in good order for all necessities without any charge to the prince. The great duke may vpon euery occasion draw all this companie of fouldiers to Florence within six or eight daies warning at the most, both for that Florence is almost in the midst of Tuscanie, as the center, and equally neighbouring all the parts thereof, as also for the good order he sets therein, disposing euery thing with great facilitie.

Furthermore, he hath caused a good number of Pioners to be inrolled, whom he vseth also in time of peace, making them to labour in fortifications, and causing them to turne the course of riuers, and to make the lands better.

XII. As for horsemen, this prince entertaineth ordinarily one hundred men at armes, to whom he giueth in time of peace seven crownes the moneth, and in time of warre the ordinarie of the banke. Besides these, he maintaineth foure hundred light-horsemen at three crownes the moneth in time of peace, and in time of war, as the ordinaries of the banke: all these horsemen are of his owne subiects, and besides their pay, they haue many reall & personall immunities, so as there are of them some reasonable companies. And in case there goes forth of Algier any strong fleet of pirats, he trusts not wholly to the garrisons of the towers (which the duke hath for that effect in diuers places, answering one another by signalls) but the towers secure the horsemen, and the horsemen the towers: besides the companies abovesaid, he maintaineth a good troupe of horses. These are the ordinarie forces, but as for the extraordinary, he may haue a farre greater number, for that the State is populous, and replenished with great numbers of people, as I haue said, and hath as many strangers as he can entertaine in his pay, obseruing the custome of other princes.

XIII. As touching the sea forces, duke Cosmo had in times past very great care of them, knowing how necessarie and important they were, and that a prince cannot be called Great, except he be powerfull at sea. Being therefore moued with these reasons, and solicited by his owne thoughts, which alwaies aspired vnto greatnesse, he procured and obtained by the authoritie of Charles the first, the resignation of the Isle of Elbe, from the Lord of Plombin, who was Lord and Maister thereof, both for that he could not defend it from pirats that had ruined it, and for that it might by meanes of the slender defence thereof, fall into the power of the Turkes, and so by reason of the situation it would be much preiudiciall and hurtfull to all Italy: yet he left all the reuenues to the Lord of Plombin, and vnder his gouernment all the villages and open places. This Island hath a haven called Porto Ferrario, capable to receiue any great fleet that shall comethither; and as a place commodious, we may see arriue there all sorts of vessels, going to the Westerne parts, or comming, and which passing after to Liurne, vnlaide their merchandise to the great benefit of this prince: so that if this Island were in the hands of

Another had good store of gallies, with courage and will to assayle, he might easily, in cutting the coasts about Barbarie, and vnder Prouence, Genoa, and Tuscanie, make himselfe in such sort maister of those seas, as not any one should passe but such as he would permit. The great Duke hath in this Island a little place named Cosmopoli, of Duke Cosmo. There is for defence vpon the mouth of the haven two castles seated vpon the foot of two mountaines, which are esteemed to be exceeding strong, and in a manner invincible, by reason both of art and situation. He hath within the same many commodious store-houses, and all sort of munitions. The great Duke hath his Arcenall at Pisa, because that it is more aboundeth in wood, hempe, and other matters for to make and furnish many gallies by meanes whereof, the inhabitants of that place in times past did so much enlarge the same and State. Now they worke verie little in this Arcenall, and do rather repaire the new gallies. Besides this, there is another in the Isle of Elbe, where he keepeth all his gallies, and the men that worke there, are for the most part brought vp to it, or bawled, or allured by wages. He hath twelue armed gallies, five galliasses, and two gallies of oare: the one is great and able to containe many men, the other is little and well manured. And since the time that he sent them so farre to sea, vnder the conduct of the Duke of Beauregard, he encreaseeth this number as much as he can, and maintaineth that are already made, in good plight. The galliasses which go with oares, he furnishesth with slaues and condemned persons, and will not employ freemen, least it should be preiudiciall to his State: and of these men, the prince sent eight hundred into Africa, to the Emperours armie, to the enterprise of Pignon de Velez, and the greatest part of them, as it commonly fareth with fresh-water fouldiers, with which he is able to furnish a good number of gallies, whensoever he pleaseth to vse them. For men of common vnderstanding, he vseth the seruice of Frenchmen, Sicilians, Corsicans, and Greekes, and among many subiects of the Common-wealth of Venice. He keepeth for the gallies the best sort of skiffes, or a few more than the Seigneurie of Venice, but fewer canons. He causeth his biscuit to be made at Liurno, where he hath ovens for to bake fortie thousand bushels. He keepeth also in that place good store of cordage and ankors, and all manner of things fit to accomodate and furnish ships withal, to the end they may more freely depart to this port.

Duke Cosmo, desirous to maintaine the sea discipline, and to giue more reputation to his gallies, instituted an order of Knights, called the Knight of S. Stephano, and obtained of Pope Pius the fourth and sith many priuiledges, and among others, That they should haue two hundred crownes pension of the goods of the Church, with libertie to marry, but they are tied to serue in his armies at sea, and also they are not capable of any command, vntill they haue serued three yeares together in the gallies. And to giue the more reputation to this order, this Duke instituted himselfe great Maister of the same. For the instruments of warre, the great Duke is sufficiently stored, for he hath about an hundred and fiftie field-pieces in the citie of Florence, and his other places are as well furnished, principally in the Isle of Elbe. He hath in the same fortresse of Florence good quantity of powder, bullets, and victuals, as wheat, miller, powdered flesh, vinegar, cheefe, and the like. The great Duke hath for the guard of his person an hundred men, and in his stables about one hundred and fiftie horses of his owne breeding, among which are many Neapolitan Courfers, but more Gennets, and to be briefe, horses of all sorts.

He endeauoureth greatly to maintaine himselfe in the Popes friendship, for that his State can no way be more easily annoyed and endangered, than on that side next the Pope, for the mountaines which compass Tuscanie on all the sides, sauing that which lieth vpon the See of Rome (as we haue said) make the entrance and passages difficult for armies, and principally for artillerie, and if the enemy were entred into it, yet could he not liue there without the ayd of the State of the Church, because that all the rest of the cuntry, excepting that, is no lesse barren than difficult: by reason whereof, if the enemy came with few forces, he would not be able to offend the great Duke, and if he came with a great armie, he could not maintaine himselfe there, for that in Tuscanie they strictly obserue this order, to bring in time of peace (that it may be the lesse difficult

XIII.

XV.

These men are apt to armes and discipline, being proper to this Prouince, the which hath in old time, and doth yet breed very good souldiers: the prince doth cause them to be practised and trained with great care, therbeing many good captaines employed to that end: besides, euery man doth practise to shoote in his peece, as well for his owne private pleasure, as in regard of the prize which the prince propounds. These trained souldiers are not only drawne out of the countrey, but also out of townes: only Florence is freed, it may be for that the prince doth not hold it fit and conuenient to arme these people, who haue not yet forgotten their former libertie, and therefore they are not suffered to haue any armes in their houses, nor to weare any weapons, vnlesse he be a knight, a souldier, an officer, or hath speciall leaue. No man is freed from this inrollement but iustices and schollers, and there are great punishments inflicted vpon them that carrie armes in the citie, or in the dukes Estate, vnlesse they be such as I haue formerly named. These souldiers (besides many other priuiledges and exemptions which are granted vnto them) cannot be imprisoned for debt: and these priuiledges being inuolubly obserued, is the cause that many good old souldiers comming from the wars of Flanders, France, and the East, doe voluntarily cause themselves to be inrolled in those bands: so as, both for number and qualitie, we may say that it is the goodliest troupe of Italie.

Euery souldier is tied to pay for his armes, which are giuen him for his vse, and must keepe them cleane and in good order for all necessities without any charge to the prince. The great duke may vpon euery occasion draw all this companie of souldiers to Florence within six or eight daies warning at the most, both for that Florence is almost in the midst of Tuscanie, as the center, and equally neighbouring all the parts thereof, as also for the good order he sets therein, disposing euery thing with great facilitie.

Furthermore, he hath caused a good number of Pioners to be inrolled, whom he vseth also in time of peace, making them to labour in fortifications, and causing them to turne the course of riuers, and to make the lands better.

XII. As for horsemen, this prince entertaineth ordinarily one hundred men at armes, to whom he giueth in time of peace seven crownes the moneth, and in time of warre the ordinarie of the banke. Besides these, he maintaineth foure hundred light-horsemen at three crownes the moneth in time of peace, and in time of war, as the ordinaries of the banke: all these horsemen are of his owne subiects, and besides their pay, they haue many real and personall immunities, so as there are of them some reasonable companies. And in case there goes forth of Algier any strong fleet of pirats, he trusts not wholly to the garrisons of the towers (which the duke hath for that effect in diuers places, answering one another by signalls) but the towers secure the horsemen, and the horsemen the towers: besides the companies abovesaid, he maintaineth a good troupe of horses. These are the ordinarie forces, but as for the extraordinarie, he may haue a farre greater number, for that the State is populous, and replenished with great numbers of people, as I haue said, and hath as many strangers as he can entertaine in his pay, obseruing the custome of other princes.

XIII. As touching the sea forces, duke Cosmo had in times past very great care of them, knowing how necessitie and important they were, and that a prince cannot be called Great, except he be powerfull at sea. Being therefore moued with these reasons, and solicited by his owne thoughts, which alwaies aspired vnto greatnesse, he procured and obtained by the authoritie of Charles the fifth, the resignation of the Isle of Elbe, from the Lord of Plombin, who was Lord and Maister thereof, both for that he could not defende it from pirats that had ruined it, and for that it might by meanes of the slender defence thereof, fall into the power of the Turkes, and so by reason of the situation it would be much preiudiciall and hurtfull to all Italy: yet he left all the reuenues to the Lord of Plombin, and vnder his government all the villages and open places. This Island hath a haue called Porto Ferrario, capable to receiue any great fleet that shall comethither: and as a place commodious, we may see arriue there all sorts of vessels, going to the Westerne parts, or comming, and which passing after to Liouorne, vnade their merchandise to the great benefit of this prince: so that if this Island were in the hands of

Another that had good store of gallies, with courage and will to assayle, he might easily, in following the coasts about Barbarie, and vnder Prouence, Genoa, and Tuscanie, make himselfe in such sort maister of those seas, as not any one should passe but such as he would permit. The great Duke hath in this Island a little place named Cosmopolis, of Duke Cosmo. There is for defence vpon the mouth of the haue two castles seated vpon the tops of two mountaines, which are esteemed to be exceeding strong, and in a manner impregnable, by reason both of art and situation. He hath within the same many canons, and all sort of munitions. The great Duke hath his Arcenall at Pisa, because that countrey aboundeth in wood, hempe, and other matters for to make and furnish many gallies, by meanes whereof, the inhabitants of that place in times past did so much enlarge their same and State. Now, they worke verie little in this Arcenall, and do rather repaire, than make new gallies. Besides this, there is another in the Isle of Elbe, where he keepeth his gallies, and the men that worke there, are for the most part brought vp to it, or banished, or allured by wages. He hath twelue armed gallies, five galliasses, and two gallions: one of them is great and able to containe many men, the other is little and well looke. And since the time that he sent them so farre to sea, vnder the conduct of the Knight of Beauregard, he encreaseeth this number as much as he can, and maintaineth ships that are already made, in good plight. The galliasses which go with oares, he furnisheth with slaues and condemned persons, and will not employ freemen, least it should be preiudiciall to his State: and of these men, the prince sent eight hundred into Africa, with the Emperours armie, to the enterprise of Pignon de Velez, and the greatest part of them died, as it commonly fareth with fresh-water souldiers, with which he is able to furnish a good number of gallies, whensoever he please to vse them. For men of command he vseth the seruice of Frenchmen, Sicilians, Corsicans, and Greekes, and among these many subiects of the Common-wealth of Venice. He keepeth for the gallies the like quantitie of skiffes, or a few more than the Seigneurie of Venice, but fewer canons. He causeth his biscuit to be made at Liouorn, where he hath ouens for to bake forrie thousand a day. He keepeth also in that place good store of cordage and ankors, and all manner of things fit to accomodate and furnish ships withal, to the end they may more freely come to this port.

Duke Cosmo, desirous to maintain the sea discipline, and to giue more reputation to his affaires, instituted an order of Knights, called the Knight of S. Stephano, and obtained of Pope Pius the fourth and fift many priuiledges, and among others, That they might haue two hundred crownes pension of the goods of the Church, with libertie to marie, but they are tied to serue in his armies at sea, and also they are not capable of any command, vntill they haue serued three yeares together in the gallies. And to giue the greater reputation to this order, this Duke instituted himselfe great Maister of the same. As for instruments of warre, the great Duke is sufficiently stored, for he hath about an hundred and fiftie field-pieces in the castle of Florence, and his other places are as well furnished, principally in the Isle of Elbe. He hath in the same fortresse of Florence good munition of powder, bullets, and viduals, as wheat, millet, powdered flesh, vinegar, cheefe, and the like. The great Duke hath for the guard of his person an hundred men, and in his stables about one hundred and fiftie horses of his owne breeding, among which are many Neapolitan Coursers, but more Genets, and to be brieue, horses of all sorts.

He endeauoureth greatly to maintain himselfe in the Popes friendship, for that his State can no way be more easily annoyed and endangered, than on that side next the Pope, for the mountaines which compass Tuscanie on all the sides, sauing that which bordereth vpon the See of Rome (as we haue said) make the entrance and passages difficult for armies, and principally for artillerie, and if the enemy were entred into it, yet could he not liue there without the ayd of the State of the Church, because that all the rest of the countrey, excepting that, is no lesse barren than difficult: by reason whereof, if the enemy came with few forces, he would not be able to offend the great Duke, and if he came with a great armie, he could not maintaine himselfe there, for that in Tuscanie they strictly obserue this order, to bring in time of peace (that it may be the lesse difficult

XIII.

XV.

cult to them in time of warre) the greatest quantitie of victualls they possibly can, into the cities and strong places, leauing the Champian countrie almost empty and vnturnished, to the which they giue so much as sufficeth for their daily sustentation. But on the Popes side, besides that by reason of the plaine, and largenesse of the confines of the Churches territories, the enemy might haue much easier access, he might also haue a farre greater commoditie of victualls that would come to him through this State, as well from the same, as from out of Lombardie, by the way of Bononia: and the experience hereof is most manifest, seeing that the citie of Florence hath neuer bene in great danger, but by the way of the Churches territories, and particularly by meanes of two Popes of the house of Medici, namely first of Leo, and after of Clement, who wholly subdued Florence vnto that Familie. On the contrarie, the great Duke receiueth great good by this friendship, both for the reputation of his State and affaires, which he augmenteth by this vnion, and because of the helpes and commodities he hath thereby, doing good to many of his seruants with the riches of the Church. Being then moued with these considerations, and warned by those former euents, he will euer labour to haue such a Pope to be chosen as is some way obliged vnto him, and for this cause he striueth ordinarily to win the friendship of many Cardinalls in diuers sorts, and especially them that are in some estimation. But this amitie is no lesse profitable to the Romish See, by reason of the fatetie and reputation it receiueth from the vnion of a Prince to neere a neighbour, and so powerfull, and for that the two States are almost but one and the same: so that their interests being common, and reciprocally, we must beleue that this vnion ought carefully to be preferred.

As for the king of Spaine, the great Duke hauing now married his sister in law, it must be thought he hath with him verie good correspondence, and it is also held that he supporteth the Spaniards, and hath knit a strict league with his brother in law. Yet it is not (after the opinion of many men of judgement) wholly to breake off with France, because the Queene is too neere allied vnto him, and hath alwayes giuen him great testimonies of her loue and friendship. But it might so be, that the soliciting of his wife, or rather of some others, ill affected towards the French, might withdraw him from the amitie which his father bare to the French King and Queene. Moreouer, he seeth that the French are farre from his State, and that the king of Spaine is neere vnto him, by meanes of Milan, and the realme of Naples; so that this alliance and commoditie might draw him wholly to embrace that partie. Which the French king did euer verie little respect, for that he is a prince that cannot hurt them in any sort.

As touching the Genowayes, they had no good intelligence with the late Duke, by reason of the Spaniards: but since that this Duke hath made an alliance with the king of Spaine, we need not doubt but that this Common-wealth is wholly at his deuotion, and yeldeth him all the testimonies of loue it can. Notwithstanding that the pretence of Corsica, as belonging to the State of Pisa, might hinder this amitie.

As for the Duke of Sauoy, though outwardly there are seene nothing but offices of amitie and respect to passe betweene them, yet forasmuch as the one enuieth the riches, force, and good hap of the other; and the other, the noblenesse, reputation, and riches of the first, it is sufficiently knowne that whereas great ielousie reigneth, there cannot be any desire of the greatnesse, and advancement of the competitor.

This prince is in good amitie with the duke of Mantouia, by reason of parentage, and it is assuredly beleued, that they runne one course for their preferuation: yet it is not knowne, whether the alliance lately made in Sauoy, will in time withdraw the amitie of the duke of Mantouia, for some considerations, which is better to concale than expresse. As for the duke of Vrbino, by reason that he holdeth him inferiour to him in greatnesse and strength, there falls out often times grudgings, such as the limits of iurisdiccions do commonly breed.

Lastly, the citizens of Luca are in the midst of the great dukes State, enclosed on all sides within the same, hauing scarcitie of victualls and all things necessarie: and because they cannot haue them but from the great duke, or by meanes of the passage of such things

A things through his Estate, this prince may bring them in subiection without striking blow: yet he doth it not, no more than his predecessors haue done, and perhaps will not do it, both because this common-wealth being vnder the protection of the Emperour and Imperiall chamber, he cannot do it without greatly offending him, and also because of the profit he receiueth, perhaps greater by their libertie, than if that common-wealth were wholly subiect vnto him, because he may vse it at his pleasure whensoever he needeth, and shall be ayded with their meanes, by way of borrowing and otherwise, and also with their men, according to their power. Contrariwise if he would make himselfe maister thereof, he might be assured that these men, accustomed to libertie (which they extremely loue) and full of vaine glorie, and richer in readie money and moueables, than in possessions, forsaking their countie would leaue the citie destitute of inhabitants; and by that meanes the great duke should lose the commoditie which now he receiueth by it.

¶ The Government.

Now must I discourse of the administration of justice, of the distribution of magistrats, and of all the formes and manner of vertuous and well ordered liuing in this citie. As touching the first part of gouernement, which is of manning of affaires of this citie, though it consist all in the princes will, yet this duke taketh counsell of some that are neere about him, and principally of Don John de Medici, for that he is young, and hath no great experience in affaires. There are no counsellors of state; so as we cannot say that the counsell hath censured any thing, but that it is the princes pleasure: and so the resolutions which are made, are more secrete and more assured.

As touching the second part, which consisteth in iudgements, it is performed by the same magistrats that decided matters in time of libertie, as well for ciuile as criminall causes: for ciuile processes of suits are determined by a certaine number of Doctors of the Law, like as at Rome and Bononia; and the criminall causes as aforesaid: the place of Consulmer being giuen to one, who changing his name is called Lieutenant. There we see ordinarie counsellors, the magistrat of eight, and all other magistrats of townes, and Podestaries (except the gouernors of the principal citie, which are sent thither by the prince, as in like manner the captaines of Forts) as they were wont to be in time of the common-wealth: and they are first drawne out of three boxes, distinguishing all into three ranks, according to the conditions of men, and putting all the names of the nobilitie into a box by themselves, whence they are after drawne.

Out of the first box they draw the magistrats of greatest importance, out of the second, the middle sort, and the inferiour out of the third: and when they haue drawne five gentlemen for each magistrat, he which hath most voices in the counsell is chosen. These boxes are renewed every fift yeare, and he that would passe from a lesser magistracie to a greater, must do it at those times. These elections are authorized by the prince, which referreth to himselfe power to confirme them all.

True it is, that he seldom troubles himselfe with matters pertaining to the magistrats, but he hath a secretarie of the criminall, who takes knowledge of all the most important crimes in question, and makes report thereof vnto the prince, who giues direction before they giue sentence: the which he doth to the end that magistrats knowing that their acts are knowne, and often examined by the prince, may haue the more care to administer justice duly, for feare of infamie and punishment: and he doth it also for to haue an absolute soueraintie in all things. He maintaineth this kind of gouernment, for that seeing he must vse persons which administer justice, he will with this little shadow of libertie satisfie in part the desire of the citizens, for that they haue in some sort the commoditie to content their ambition, by meanes of the profit they reape by honours and publicke charges.

This is also obserued at Siena, and for the same respect; for there is to be seene the ancient magistrats and counsell, with the authoritie of the palace and seigneurie, and in

A sword the reliques and shadowes of the common-weale that was in former times, and the great duke entertaineth there a generall gouernour, which immediatly representeth the prince with foueraigne authoritie, who hath an eye to all things, and nothing is done without his priuite, no not without the princes knowledge, in matters of importance. We see then by this representation the whole gouernment of these cities, as famous now for their noblenesse, as they were in times past happy by their libertie. Now for as much as the glorious splendor which princes haue accustomed to liue in, is that which most representeth their maiestie, the great duke maintaineth a court, or house worthe of obleruation, which surpasseth (to say truly) the bounds of a duke, and yet reacheth not to the magnificence of a king: He hath a good number of gentlemen, diuided into two orders, the one attendeth his person, the other the household, with a great number of officers and seruants. Moreouer he hath in his seruice about three score gentlemen and noblemens sonnes, whom he causeth to be brought vp with great care, and to be instructed in all manner of exercises: yet as some write there are few tables kept in this princes court.

¶ Their Religion.

XVII. **A**ll the inhabitants of this Stare are Romish Catholickes, but they of Siena are more deuout, and more affected to religion. Moreouer there is in Tuscanie three Archbishopspricks, namely of Florence, of Siena, and of Pisa: that of Pisa hath vnder it the Bishopspricks of Massana, and Ciuita, besides the other Bishopspricks which are in Corsica: the Archbishopspricke of Siena hath vnder it the Bishopspricks of Soana, Quins, and Grosset: vnder the Archbishop of Florence are the Bishops of Nepe, Castello, Montefalcon, Viterbe, Volterra, Fiesola, Zarzane, Sutri, Ortane, Comer, Arezzo, Pienza, Pistoia, Bine, Cortona, Castro, Perugia, Luca, and Luna.

A GENEALOGIE OF THE DUKES OF FLORENCE.

XVIII. **C**osmo de Medicis was the first that laid the foundations of the glorie of that great familie, and was named by publicke decree, the Father of his countrie. He gouerned the Florentines very fortunatly, and was the refuge of the gallantest men of that age, both for learning and armes. He died in the year 1464, after he had liued seuentie and five years, two moneths, and twentie daies. Fortune was so fauourable vnto him, as he was esteemed the happiest and richest prince of his age.

Peter de Medicis imitator of his father, behaued himselfe in the gouernment of the common-weale more like a priuat citisen, than a Prince. He died in the year 1472.

Laurence de Medicis, surnamed the Great prince of Florence, gouerned the common-weale with his brother *Julian*, called Prince of the youth, or younger fort; which *Julian* behaued himselfe in the gouernment as his father and grandfather had done. He died in the year 1492, and his brother *Laurence* was slayne by the Paccians, in the year of Christ 1478.

Peter de Medicis, prince of Florence, degenerating from his father, was expelled from the gouernment, and died in the year 1503. *Julian de Medicis*, surnamed the Magnificent, his brother, was also deposed, and died in the year 1516.

Cosmo de Medicis, sonne to *Peter*, was slayne for making leue to married women.

Laurence de Medicis, brother to *Cosmo*, hauing bene driuen away with his father, was made Duke of Vrbino by Pope *Leo* the tenth, his vnckle by the fathers side, and died in the year 1519.

From *Laurence de Medicis* issued *Katherine de Medicis*, wife to *Henrie* the second the French king, which died in the year of our Lord God 1589. Thus went this branch, which ended in the bastard *Alexander de Medicis*, who was slayne in adulterie, after he had receiued of *Charles* the first (his father in law) the tytle of Prince, together with the seigneurie.

But

A But to cometo him that now reigneth great Duke, we must take him from another line.

Cosmo de Medicis, surnamed Father of the countrie, had a brother named *Laurence*, a citizen of Florence, whose sonne was *Peter*, who liued as a priuat man without any dignitie.

Peter had two sonnes, *Laurence de Medicis*, and *Iohn*, who were banished by *Peter* sonne of *Cosmo* duke of Florence.

Laurence had a base sonne by a Concubine, called *Iulio de Medicis*, who was Pope, by the name of *Clement* the seuenth.

B *Iohn*, brother to this *Laurence*, had issue *Iohn de Medicis*, named at his baptisme *Lewis*, a valiant and excellent Captaine, who died in the year of our Lord God 1526.

Cosmo de Medicis his sonne, at the age of eightene yeares, substitute to his cousin *Alexander* in the principallitie of Florence, wisely gouerned the Common-wealth. This same, of duke of Florence, was the first that was made Great duke of Tuscany, by Pope *Pius* the fifth, in the year of our Redemption 1569; and these words were written in his Crowne by the Popes commandement, PIVS V. PONT. MAX. OB EXIMIAM DILECTIONEM, ET CATHOLICÆ RELIGIONIS ZELVM, PRÆCIPVVMQVE, IVSTITIÆ STVDIVM DONAVIT. He died in the yere 1574. His children were

C *Francis de Medicis*, second great duke of Tuscany, who died in the year 1587. He married first *Iane* of Austria, daughter to *Charles* the first, and afterwards *Blanch* a Venetian, who liued not aboue five houres after her husband. This Prince had (among other children) the most illustrious Princeesse *Marie de Medicis*, who at this day is Queene of France.

Ferdinand the brother of *Francis*, hauing given ouer his Cardinalls Hat, was the third great duke of Tuscany. He married *Christina* daughter to *Charles* duke of Lorraine. He died not long since, leauing for successeur his sonne

Cosmo de Medicis, who hath married *Marie* of Austria.

T t ij

THE





THE ESTATE OF THE DVKE OF VRBIN.

The Contents.

I He confines and compasse of the Duke of Vrbins Estate, and the townes which he doth possesse. 2. The territorie fertile in corne, wine, oyle, figges, &c. but the C
ayre vnnwholesome, especially about Pezaure and Fossombrone. 3. The Riches
consisting in the wines of Pezaure, and drie figges: and what be the reuenues of
this Prince. 4. His forces of men and forts. 5. A Catalogue of the Dukes of Vrbins, which haue
commanded vnto this day.

I. **T**he territorie of this duke, lyes part in Vmbria, and part in the Mar-
quisat: he hath seuen Townes, and about three hundred Castles.
The townes are Vrbins, Eugubie, Cagli, and Fossombrone; and these
belong to the duchie of Vrbins: then S. Leon (which is the chiefe
towne of the countie of Montefeltre) Senegallia, and Pezaure. The D
length of this estate is about threescore miles, and the bredth about
fue and thirtie. It confines, yea it is intermixt with the State of the
Church (whereof the said duke is a Feudatarie) and with the duke of Florence countie.
He payes yerely for a rent and acknowledgment for the whole Estate which he enioyes,
the summe of 2240 crownes.

Vrbins is one of the most auncient townes of Italie, of the which *Plinie* and *Tacitus*
make mention. In the time of *Conradin*, the last duke of Suabe, it was subdued by the
Earles of Montefeltre, whose successours increasing in power, in processe of time had also
Eugubie. This townie is faire, and well built, and the duke makes his ordinarie aboad
there. Pisaure hath also as faire houses as any townie in Italie; and Fossombrone, called E
by the Auncients *Forum Sempronij*, is also verie well peopled.

¶ The Qualitie.

II. **T**he territorie about the cite of Vrbins is exceeding good, and generally fertile, yel-
ding as good fruits as can be desired. The countie about Pisaure hath a bad ayre,
but the soyle is exceeding good, and yelds abundance of fruit, especially of figges,
and excellent wines, and Fossombrone also, although the ayre be verie vnnwholesome,
yet the soyle abounds with wheat, and all sorts of graine; and moreover, in wine, oyle,
and diuers fruits, which are verie pleasing in tast: and to speake in a word, this Estate is F
fertile, and hath plentie of all things necessarie for the life of man.

¶ The

¶ The riches.

A Good part of this Estate lies vpon the shoare of the Adriaticke sea, and is very com-
modious, and of great profit, by reason of many things which may be brought
thither from all parts. They carrie their wines of Pisaure to Venice, for the which the in-
habitants receiue much money, and also for their dried figges, which they sell to the Ve-
nerians, Bolonians, and to other places.

The reuenues of this prince, in possessions, rents, & customes, is about 100000 crowns
B yerely, yet if he would charge his people, he might draw a greater summe from them:
but imitating the example of his predecessors, his chiefe care is to preferue the loue of
his people, and therefore is content to leaue them in these termes, and to liue with lesse
money; whereby he is maister of his subiects hearts, who would willingly employ their
lines and goods for his seruice, the which they haue made manifest at their last princes
marriage, every towne striving to shew his particular affection to the prince and prin-
cesse, to honour their entrie into Pisaure, and to other places. This duke reapes no greater
profit of any thing, than of corne, throughout the townes that are subiect to him;
for that there not only comes corne into the town of Senegallia out of the dukes Estate,
but also out of the territorie of the Church, the which is brought secretly thither out
C of the Popes Estate, in great abundance, without his priuie.

¶ The Forces.

This duke is much to be esteemed, first for that he may draw out of his Estate about
onethousand and two hundred good souldiers, which haue bene trained vp in war,
and who would readilie follow their prince, if any good occasion were offered: second-
ly, for that although he doth not enioy any great reuenues, yet he is the maister of his
subiects hearts, who would employ all for his seruice. As for places of strength, the town
of Vrbins is of good defence: but Pisaure (whereas the duke doth commonly remaine
D in Winter) is a strong townie, and hath a very good castell. This townie standeth vpon the
Adriaticke shoare, and is about two miles in compasse, and is fortified after the moderne
fashion; which fortification was begun by duke *Francis Maria*, and was continued and
made perfect by his sonne *Guy Vbalde* that now liues, who entertaines a good garison of
souldiers, with store of artillerie, munition, and other things necessarie for the defence
of a townie. He hath in his palace a hall full of goodly armes, neere vnto the which in
another chamber, he hath armes for six hundred men, to the which they may go by a se-
cret passage to the dukes owne chamber. Moreover there are some other good places
for the bigesse, in this princes Estate

¶ The Dukes of Vrbins.

Federic of Montefeltre, for his excellent vertues, was in his youth adopted for sonne
by *Guy Antonio Vbaldimi*, seignour of Vrbins, who hauing liued many yeares without
children, made his account that *Federicke* should be the heire of his Estate; by rea-
son whereof, *Federicke* being like to succeed him in his seigneurie, had great meanes,
vsing himselfe courteously, and making shew of those goodlie parts which were in him,
to win the loue and affections of all the people. *Guy Balde Antonio* had in his declining
age one sonne, who was called *Odo Antonio*, so as *Federic* remained excluded from
this seigneurie, and yet the peoples affection was nothing diminished, his vertues hauing
purchased their loues. *Odo Antonio*, alter his fathers death, ruling very vnfolendly, and di-
cenciously, was slaine by certaine conspirators, being very young, and left no heires be-
hind him. Some write that seeking to satisfie his lust with a gentlewoman of a noble
house, he was slaine by the people, and dragged ignominiously through the streets.

Federic Vbaldimi, after the death of *Odo Antonio*, was called to the gouernment, by a
T t iij
generall

generall consent of all the people; and he had not onely this Estate in fee from the Pope, but also he was created the first duke of Vrbino. There is much written of the vertues and excellent parts of duke *Frederic*, among other things, that he was wise, eloquent, a calu-
 A
 nuer of learned men, fortunat in warre, respected in peace, honoured of the princes of Ita-
 lie, and beloued decerely of his owne people. He did beautifie Vrbino with good build-
 ings, and especially with that sumptuous palace, whereas he built a stately library, re-
 plenished with so great a number of rare bookes, couered and garnished with gold, sil-
 uer, and silke, as it was an admirable thing to behold, before that *Cesar Borgia* made
 himselfe maister of Vrbino; which bookes were dispersed here and there, in the time of
 the said *Cesar Borgia*, and so that worthie worke was ruined. He purchased Fossombrone
 B
 for thirteene thousand florins of gold, of *Galuzzo Malatesta*, and died generall for the
 Venetians, against *Hercules* of Este, duke of Ferrara. After his death he left for heire

Guy Balde his sonne, who notwithstanding that he married, being in his younger yeeres
 much giuen to war, continued full of the gout, and without hope to haue any chil-
 dren. This prince, not able to attend any other thing, by reason of his indispositi-
 on, had a
 desseigne to haue a goodly court, and full of vertuous men, and rare in all professions, so
 as vining courtresie to all men of merit, as well as *Elizabeth* of Gonzague, his wife, yea
 one struing to exceed another in the entertainment of vertuous men, he drew together
 so great a number of such worthie persons, as the like hath not bene scene in the court
 of any prince, yea he gaue the forme and modell of a well ordered court, to other prin-
 ces. He tried the frownes of fortune, for notwithstanding that he was generall to Pope
 C
Alexander the sixth, against the *Visini*, whose armie was defeated, and he taken prisoner;
 yet afterwards being betrayed by *Cesar Borgia*, sonne to Pope *Alexander*, he was in dan-
 ger to be taken prisoner by him. Returning afterwards into his Estate, and hearing that
Paulo Visini the duke of Grauna, *Vittellozzi*, and *Leonotti* of Fermo, had bene surpris-
 ed at Senegallia by the said *Cesar*, he was forced to flee: but after the death of Pope
Alexander he returned, and was very ioyfully receiued of his people. After which he li-
 ued quietly, and in the end past to a better life, being much lamented by his subiects,
 hauing first adopted

Francis Maria de la Rouera, who was sisters sonne to *Guy Balde*, his father was capitaine
 D
 of Rome, and lord of Senegallia: he was nephew to Pope *Sixtus*, and base brother to
 Pope *Iulio*. This *Francis* gaue himselfe to the exercise of armes, wherein he grew to ex-
 cellent, as he deserved to be called the light and beautie of Italie. He had many hono-
 rable charges in the war: he was capitaine generall for the common-weale of Venice, and
 a little before his death, he was also made generall by land, of the league which was be-
 twixt Pope *Paul* the third, the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, and the seigneurie of Venice. Be-
 sides the duchie of Vrbino, the countie of Montefeltre, and the towne of Senegallia, which
 was enioied by his father, he had also from the Pope, in recompence of much money which
 was due vnto him from the Church, and for many good seruices done vnto the holie
 See, the towne of Pesaro or Pisare, which was wont to be held by the *Sforces*. During
 E
 the life of Pope *Iulio* the second, *Francis Maria* liued peaceably in his Estate, not char-
 ging his people, but caring only to purchase their loues, the which princes should esteem
 much more than any treasure. But *Leo* hauing succeeded Pope *Iulio*, he had great crosses
 and troubles, for that the Pope in a short time de priued him of his Estate, and gaue it
 to *Laurence de Medicis* who was father to *Katherine de Medicis* the French queene. But
 hauing with the losse of his Estate, lost neither the greatnesse of his courage, his valour,
 F
 militarie judgement, nor the loue of his people, he dared with foure thousand Spaniards
 (who followed him willingly in regard of his valour, being poore of money, and wan-
 ting all other things) to encounter so great a power as that of the Pope, for the re-
 couerie of his Estate; and hauing made a great slaughter of his enemies, he recovered all
 his countie in a short time, except the towne of Pisare: but finding himselfe in extreme
 necessitie of all things, and fearing some treason in his armie, he returned victorious to
 Vrbino, where he was ioyfully receiued by his subiects, whom he gouerned mild, and
 peaceably the rest of his daies, dying in the year 1538, and was lamented of them as if
 he

A he had bene their father, brother, or sonne. He had by *Leonora Gonzaga*, his wife, two
 sonnes, *Guy Balde* who succeeded him, and the Cardinall: and three daughters, whereof
 the one was wife to the duke of one of the greatest Princes of the realme of
 Naples; the second was married to the Lord *Alphonso* of Este; and the third was wife to
 the Marquis of Massa.

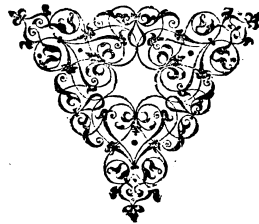
Guy Balde, sonne to *Francis*, was the fourth Duke of Vrbino, for notwithstanding that
Laurence de Medicis did call himselfe for a time duke of Vrbino, yet being not of this line,
 he is not numbered among the dukes.

Guy had two wiues, the first was *Julia Farena*, duchesse of Camerin, which duchie he
 enjoyed during the life of his father *Francis Maria*, for notwithstanding that Pope *Paul*
 the third pretended that it was fallen in lapse to the Church, by the death of the Duke,
 without heires male, yet he had some feare to make warre against so valiant a Prince,
 who prepared to defend himselfe resolutely: but *Francis Maria* being dead, and leaving
 this duke but young, the Pope did soone make himselfe maister thereof, and gaue it in
 facto *Peter Lewis* his sonne, but soone after he exchanged this Estate with Parma and
 Piacenza, with the consent of all the Cardinalls.

This duke tooke to his second wife *Victoria Farnese*, a faire, wife, and vertuous Prin-
 cesse, and much beloued of the duke her husband. He had six children, whereof two
 daughters were base, who were honourably married, one lawfull daughter by the du-
 C
 chesse of Camerin, who was first married to *Frederic Borromee*, nephew to Pope *Pius* the
 fourth, and afterwards to the duke of Grauna, a Prince much esteemed in the realme of
 Naples, of the Familie of the *Visini*. By his last wife *Victoria*, he had two daughters,
 (whereof the eldest was married to the prince of Bisignan, who was one of the greatest of
 the realme of Naples, of the house of the *Sanseuerins*, who hath aboute one hundred
 thousand crownes a yeare rent;) and one sonne, which is,

Francis Maria, called by his grandfathers name, a Prince of an excellent spirit, and
 giuento all exercises of the bodie.

THE





THE ESATE OF THE DVKE OF MANTOVA.

The Contents.

I **W**hat the Duke of Mantoua doth possesse at this day. 2. Antiquite of the citie of Mantoua, and how it was built before Troy. 3. Enioyed by diuers Lords, and in the end reduced vnder the command of the Gonzagues. 4. Situation of the Towne of Mantoua: the stately buildings, and the Palace of Marmiro. 5. Of the Marquisat of Monterrat, sometimes held by the Paleologues: when, and by whom Mantoua was made a Duchie. 6. The countrie of Monterrat varie fruitful: A fountaine of hot and physcall water at Aque. 7. Mantouans, lovers of the Hebrew tongue more than any other nation. 8. The richnesse of the duke of Mantoua, and what he draws yearly from his Estate. 9. His Forts, and Cavalierie. 10. Of the Senat of Mantoua: and of the gouernement of Monterrat. 11. A list of the Dukes of Mantoua.

I. **T**he duke of Mantoua holds no small Estate in Italie, and may be ranked next to the great duke of Tuscanie. He doth possesse all that was in old time belonging to the duke of Tuscanie: and moreover, he holds that of the Marquisat of Monterrat, which is greater than the sayd Estate of Mantoua.

II. As for the citie of Montoua, which is in Lombardie, beyond the riuer of Po, it is verie ancient, being built six hundred and teuentie years before the citie of Rome, and fixtie years before the Troian warre. This citie was in old time the head of twelue Colonies of the Hettrurians, but according vnto other Authours which are of good authoritie, *Manta* the Prophetesse, daughter to *Tyresia* the Theban, was the foundresse thereof. Some write, that *Oene* sonne to *Tiberino* king of the Tuscans, and of the said *Manta*, finding Tuscanie to be ouercharged with people, past the Appeniu Hills, and the riuer of Po, with a great armie, to seek new dwellings, where he built diuers townes, amongst which was Mantoua, the which he called by his mothers name, and settled the gouernement, like vnto that of Tuscanie, making it the regall citie of all those places, for that it was rich and noble of ancient families, as comming from the Thebans and the king of the Tuscans. Afterwards, it was subducd, and held by the Gaules, who came downe into Italie by the perswasion of *Aranic* king of Chiuisi, to be reuenged of *Lucomone*, who had rauished his wife: who entering into this countrie expelled the Tuscans, and forced them with their Capitaine *Retius* to retire into the mountaines, which they called *Retia*, by their Captaines name, and is now the Grifons countrie.

III. The Gaules held these countries of Mantoua and Tuscanie, giuing the names of Cispadana, and Transpadana; and by some, the inhabitants of these places were called Cenomanes. Afterwards the Gaules were expelled from these places by the Romanes, whome they obeyed during the maiestie and greatnesse of the Empire of Rome: the which falling, they were subdued by the Gothes, and then by the Lombards: who being chased

A chased out of Italie by the Emperor *Charles* the Great, it was againe brought vnder the subiection of the Emperours: but their power and authoritie declining, by meanes of the deuisions and quarrells betwixt the successors of *Charles* the Great, the townes of Italie sought to emancipate themselves, and liue at libertie, and Mantoua did the like, vntill that the Emperour *Otho* the second, did inuelt *Theodobald* or *Tedald* Earle of Canosse, giuing him this towne, and the iurisdiction, for the good seruices which he had done him. *Boniface* his sonne succeeded him, who dying without issue male, *Beatrice* his wife tooke vpon her the gouernment, and after her, that noble countesse *Matilda*, who was dispossessed of her Estate by the Emperor *Henry* the 3, who returning into Germany, left Mantoua at libertie. But it could not continue so, for being straightly besieged by the said countesse, they were forced to yeeld, in the year 1114, after foure and twentie yeares libertie. But this lady dying the yeare after, the race of *Tedald* failed, and Mantoua recovered her libertie againe, yet vnder the protection of the sacred Empire.

About the yeare 1200 *Sordello* or *Sorder*, Vicont of Goite, made himselfe maister of Mantoua, a wife and valiant man, who finding that his cousin *Ezzelin* of Padoua, a most cruel tyrant, aspired to the seigneurie of that citie, resisted him valiantly with armes. After his death, they did chuse two out of the bodie of the nobilitie, which were as Tribunes of the people, and these were *Pinamonte* of the *Bonacossi*, and *Otonello* of the *Zenobaldi*, a good and a wise man, whom *Pinamonte* caused to be slaine to make himselfe tyrant of the citie, the which he did, and so continued eightene yeares with great fauour of the people; who aspiring to greater matters died in the yeare 1289.

Bardelono Bonacossi succeeded him, a man deprived of all vertue, insolent, without judgement, ignorant, arrogant, base minded &c. but he continued but one yeare in his tyrannie, being expelled and banished with his brother *Thomas* by the people, and by *Battigella Bonacossi*, a man of a great courage; so as *Bardelono* died at Padoua in banishment. The State remained afterwards in the hands of *Battigella*, a hardie, a valiant, and valiant man, who gouerned it with great loue of all men, but dying about the yeare 1308, his brother *Passarino* a man of a great courage, succeeded him: who not content with the seigneurie of Mantoua, subdued many Castells, with the citie of Modena, which did belong to *Francischino Pico de la Mirandola*, but he was afterwards slaine in the midst of the marketplace, by *Lewis* of Gonzaga, or by the souldiers which were led by his sonnes *Guido* and *Feltrino*: who taking *Francis* the sonne of *Passarino* with his children, and *Butrino* his brother, he sent them to *Nicholo Pico* the sonne of *Francis*, who slew them cruelly to reuenge his fathers death, whom *Passarino* had slaine. Thus the tyrannic of the *Bonacossi* ended in Mantoua, and *Lewis* of Gonzaga, the sonne of *Guy*, tooke vpon him the gouernement of the common-weale with great applause of the people. It was an ancient and noble familie in Mantoua, and some write that they had their beginning from a Germane, at such time as the Lombards did raigne in Italie: in which familie the gouernment of Mantoua hath continued to this day.

E The citie of Mantoua is seated neere to the Lake Benac, from the which doth flow the riuer of Mincia, which doth run vnto Mantoua, and there making a Lake doth enuiron the citie, and doth fortifie the situation, then passing on it falls into the riuer of Po. The towne is great, faire, pleasing, and full of stately palaces, inhabited by many persons of qualitie, among the which there is one beautified with diuers pictures by *Andrew Mantegna* that excellent painter, where are to be seene seuen great tables, in the which is drawne the order of *Cesars* triumph, made with such great art and judgement, as it may well betermed the maisterpece of most excellent painters. There are many other rare things worthe of admiration to be seene in that citie, the which for breuities sake I omit. Five miles or thereabouts from Mantoua, going vpon the high way (the which is planted of either side with trees) stands Marmiro, which is a royall pallace, built with very great charge, and able to lodge any prince whatsoever, who cannot but admire the state-hess of this building. There are to be seene at this Palace, many goodly fountaines made with great art, lakes full of all sorts of fish, gardenes which are exceeding pleasant; and finally, all sorts of fruits. There are some other places in this Estate, but take away

III:

Mant.

I III.

Mantoua, the rest are of small moment.

As for the Marquisat of Monterrat, it hath the riuer of Tanaro on the left hand, and the riuer of Po on the right. This countrie is a continued mountaine very pleasant and fruitfull, yeelding all that is necessarie for the life of man, and it is very well inhabited, beginning about a daies journey from the Alps, and is diuided from a plaine, which lies betwixt the Alps and the said hills. It is one of the seuen Marquisats, erected by the Emperor *Otho* the 2, who gaue one to either of the sonnes of *Acran* of Saxonie, in whose familie this Marquisat continued, till that the issue male failing, it was transported to *Andronic Paleologue* Emperor of Constantinople, hauing married *Toland* daughter to *Boniface* Marquis of Monterrat, who sent *Theodericus* his eldest sonne thither, and he gouerned that Estate wisely and courteously: and so the Marquisat continued in the familie of the *Paleologues*, vntill the death of *George* in the year 1534: after which there being many pretendants for the said Marquisat, the Emperor *Charles* the first hearing the realons and allegations of all parts, in the end adiudged it to *Frederic* of Gonzaga, who had married the sister of *Boniface* of Monterrat, and made him the first duke of Mantoua. The duke of Mantoua hath in this countrie three good townes, that is to say, *Casal S. Vas*, built by *Sixtus* the fourth, in the year 1474, the which is well built, and peopled with many auncient families, and among others, of the Earles of *S. George* and *Brandrate*: it suffered great losse in the year 1530, being sacked by the fouldiers of the Emperor *Charles*, for that the citizens refused the gouernment of *Fredericke Gonzaga*: There is also *Alba*, which *Plinie* calls *Pompeia*, the which is greater than *Cassal*: and *Aigue* the which is a good towne. There is also the townes of *Villa Noua*, *Balzole*, *Trine*, *Pallais*, *Biance*, *Libourne*, which belong vnto the duke of Mantoua: and neere vnto *Po*, is *Ponte di Stura*, so called of the riuer *Stura*. There is a strong Castell, whether *Lodouic Sforza* duke of Milan was carried, being betrayed by the *Suisses*, and sold vnto the French neere vnto *Neouara*. Being in this Castell with one seruant, at night, fighting, he said, O inconstant fortune, where am I? yesterday I commaunded about twentie thousand men, and now I haue scarce one seruant, and am a prisoner. And to be short, they hold that the duke doth possesse about sixtie and five townes, besides an infinit number of villages.

¶ The Qualitie.

V.

The countrie about Mantoua is reasonably good, and yeelds all sorts of fruits, being well manured. It is a pleasant thing to see the way, going from Mantoua to *Marmiro*. As for the Marquisat of Monterrat, the countrie is vneuen, but very fruitfull, yeelding all things necessarie: it lies neere vnto the Alps, diuided onely by a plaine, as I haue formerly said. The soile is so good, as there is nothing vnmanured. There are fountaines, and hot springs, and some say, that the grasse growes in the midst of the boiling waters. The territorie about *Cassal* is diuided into plaine, and little hills, which yeeld great store of wheat, wines, and other fruits of the Earth. The aire of the townes of *Alba* is vnwholesome, yet the soile is good and fertile, being watered by the riuer of *Tanaro*. The towne of *Aigue* is famous by reason of her fountaines of physcally water.

¶ The Manners.

VI.

The Italians hold them of Mantoua to be more enclined to the Hebrew tongue than any other, as they say, the *Calabrians* are vnto the *Greeke*. They hold also that they of Mantoua are bafe in the entertainment of their friends, and childlike in their apparel, shewing no manly grauitie, and that they exact all they can from strangers. As for the women, they say, they are bold and froward. They of Monterrat participat of the humor of the *Piedmontois*, so as hauing described them in the duke of *Sauoies* Estate, it were superfluous now to make a repetition.

¶ The

¶ The Riches.

The duke of Mantouas countrie is able to entertaine the owners, but not to draw any store of money from other Prouinces; so as the inhabitants may well liue of the which the land doth yeeld them, but not to make any great trafficke, or to grow rich in their commodities which they sell. They hold that the duke of Mantoua hath yearly reuenues, about fife hundred thousand crownes, and might haue more, if he did not treat his subiects with as much mildnesse as can be desired.

¶ The Forces.

The citie of Mantoua is exceeding strong, as well by reason of the scituation, as for the fortifications which haue beene made: besides the which it hath this in particular, there is no passage vnto it, but by bridges, which makes the accesse more difficult for them that should attempt against it. As for *Cassal*, the walls are exceeding strong, as haue beene made by the auncient Marquises of Monterrat, who made their aboad there, and built a verie strong castle. But in the year of *Christ* 1590, *Vincent Gonzaga*, duke of Mantoua and Monterrat, built another Fort, held impregnable, the which they commonly called *Citadelle*. Besides this, the duke hath a good Fort at *S. Sauioir*, and of the best places that can be seene at *Pont Sture*. There are many other places, but to name them would be too tedious. They hold, that the *Cauallerie* of Mantoua are the best in *Italie*, at the least, the *Italians* themselves giue them this honour.

¶ The Gouernement.

The duke of Mantoua hath in his chiefe citie a Senat, who doth iudge of all matters that belongs to iustice, definitively: and in Monterrat there is a Gouernor, who resides in the towne of *Cassal*, which is a seat of iustice for all the Marquisat of Monterrat.

The Lords, Marquises, and Dukes of Mantoua.

Lodouic Gonzaga, tooke vpon him the gouernement of Mantoua, about the year 1528. He was a vertuous, bountifull, and valiant man, and did many worthie things. He had three wives successiue, by the first he had *Guydo*, *Philippino*, and *Feltrino*, and by the second *Aluise*, *Albert*, and *Frederic*, and as many by the third, who was of the houle of *Medici*, and those were *Azzo*, *James*, and *Iohn*. He died in the yere 1560, on the fifteenth of March, being ninetie yeares old.

His sonne succeeded him in the State: He was a quiet, modest, and religious man, and died in the year 1569. He had three sonnes, *Vgulin*, *Francis*, and *Lodouic*. The two younger killed the elder, during their fathers life time, for that he gouerned the State. Afterwards *Francis* died without children before the father, and then succeeded

Lodouic, or *Lewis* the second, who hauing gouerned the State twelue yeares, he died in the year 1582, leaving one sonne called

Francis, being but thirtene yeares old. He did manage armes with great iudgement and commendation, and maintained his Estate against the force of *Iohn Galeazzo* *Vilcont*, duke of Milan. They write, that he was wise, of great authoritie, learned in Historie, a lover of learned men, and vertuous, an admirer of the praises of the Ancients, sweet conversation, pleasant, liberrall, and honourable in entertainment. He died one and thirtie yeares old, on the eight of March, in the year 1607.

His sonne *Francis* the second, being but twelue yeares old succeeded him, who on the twentieth day of September, in the year 1633, was by the Emperor *Sigismund* created Marquis of Mantoua, vpon a Tribunall in the Market-place of *S. Peter* in Mantoua. Afterwards

VIII.

IX.

X.

XI.

Afterwards he gaue him for his armes an Eagle sables in a field Argent, with a crosse A Gules. He married that vertuous, religious, and wise ladie *Paula Malatesta*, whom the writers of those times haue much commended for her great vertues. Being foure and fiftie yeares old, after many worthie workes, he died, on the three and twentieth of September, in the yeare 1444, diuiding his Estate betwixt foure sonnes.

Lodouic his sonne succeeded in the Estate of Mantoua, being two and thirtie yeares old: he had great contention with a younger brother called *Charles*, and vanquished him. And hauing liued fiftie yeares with great loue and commendation, he died in the yeare 1478. He was verie courteous, affable, and bountifull, and (for a martiall man) eloquent, and religious. He made many worthie workes within the citie, and beganne the Church of *S. Sebastian*, and in like manner the sumptuous Temple of *S. Andrew*. He receiued the Emperour *Frederic* the third, and the king of Denmarke with great state. He left fise sonnes, giuing to the foure youngest portions.

Frederic his eldest sonne succeeded him, and was the third Marquis of Mantoua: he was a wife and discret man, both in warre and peace. His subiects loued him much, for that he was liberrall, and would lend them money without any profit, if he found them fit for trafficke; for aboue all things he hated idleness. To vertuous men he was mild, bountifull, and courteous, and honourable to strangers. He died in the yeare 1484, leaving three sonnes by *Marguerite*, daughter to the duke of Bauaria, that is, *Francis*, *Sigismund* (who was Cardinall) and *Iohn*.

Francis came vnto this State, being but eighteen yeares old: he was of a reuerend, amiable, and graue aspect: he was much giuen to armes, and martiall discipline, which purchased him great reputation with Princes, not onely in Italie, but also with the emperour *Maximilian*, with *Leuis* the twelfth the French king, and with the Seigneurie of Venice. He had three sonnes, and as many daughters, by *Isabella*, daughter to *Hercules* of Este, duke of Ferrara: and he died in the yeare 1519, to whom succeeded his sonne

Frederic, being eighteen yeares and ten moneths old: he was nothing vnlike his father in profession of armes: so as he was made Generall of the Churches armie, by Pope *Leo* the tenth, being yet verie young; and in like manner for the Florentins, wherein he shewed great valour and judgement. He receiued the Emperour *Charles* the fift with D great state, who had receiued the imperiall crowne at Bologna, by whom he was made duke of Mantoua, in the yeare 1530: the yeare after, he tooke to wife *Marguerit*, daughter to *William Paleologue*, Marquis of Montferrat, and had the said Marquiat in dowrie, the which the duke of Sauoy pretends to belong vnto him, and hath of late sought to recover it by armes. He died in the yeare 1540, leaving three sonnes and one daughter, and the duchesse with child of the fourth sonne. He was about fortie yeares old.

Francis his eldest sonne, being about six yeares old, came to succeed his father, and to be duke. The Estate of Mantoua was gouerned by the authoritie of Cardinall *Hercules* of Este, his vnckle, a man of great judgement and learning. Soone after his marriage with *Katherine*, daughter to the Emperour *Ferdinand*, he fell into the riuier of Minel, and being drawne forth, a feauer seized vpon him, whereof he died soone after, in the yeare 1550.

William succeeded his brother *Francis* in the Estates of Mantoua, and Montferrat, which was made a duchie by the Emperour *Maximilian* the second, in the yeare 1573; and the said *William* died in the yeare 1587.

Vincens succeeded his father *William* in the Estates of Mantoua, and Montferrat.

THE

THE ESTATE OF THE DVKE OF MODENA.

The Contents.

Rasons why the Pope pretends the duchie of Ferrara to belong vnto the holie See.
1. Ferrara yielded vnto the Pope by Don Cesar of Este: and what the treatie and accord was betwixt his Holinesse and the said Don Cesar, before he left the towne. 2. Modena, a towne sometimes commaunded by the Romanes, then by the Gothes, Huns, and Lombards: when, and how it was reedified. 3. Commaunded by the Gothes, Huns, and Lombards: when, and how it was reedified. 4. Commaunded by the Gothes, Huns, and Lombards: when, and how it was reedified. 5. Of Reggium, and the diuers Lords of it, before it came into the possession of Cesar of Este. 6. The soile of Modena and Reggium, situated in a good aire, abounding with wheat, beanes, and wine. 7. Citizens of Modena and Reggium, subtiler witted, and loving

Alphonso, duke of Ferrara, dying without any issue male lawfully begotten, left onely one base sonne, that was legitimated, called Don Cesar of Este, who presently tooke possession of Ferrara, & all his fathers Estates: but the Pope pretending the citie of Ferrara to be a fee of the Church, and that it was fallen vnto him for want of issue male lawfully begotten of the said duke, leuied an armie to dispossesse him: but Don Cesar tending to plead his title and right, the Pope debated it in such sort, as he thrust Don Cesar of Este out of Ferrara, for many reasons, by the which he pretended that the duchie of Ferrara did belong vnto the holie

See. But he said, that the confession, and declaration of the people of Ferrara (who did acknowledge and aduow him for their true Lord) should serue for a sufficient prooffe: secondly, that he had the acknowledgements of all the dukes of the house of Este: and thirdly, an infinite number of bulls and inuestitures graunted from Popes, beginning at Pope *Innocent* the third. Moreouer, he did alleadge, that the Popes had often recovered Ferrara, by way of right, and by armes, out of the hands of diuers that would haue seized thereon. Besides this, that many Emperors had declared, that the citie of Ferrara did belong vnto the holie See; as the Emperour *Charles*, soane to *Charles* the Great, which was in the time of Pope *Pascale* the first, who confirmed the donation which *Papin* had made, and named Ferrara of the holie See: then *Otho* the first, in the donation which he made to Pope *John* the second, confirmed the said donation, the which was also confirmed at the Council of Lion, with all the priuiledges.

As for the people, he said, that in the time of *Gregorie* the ninth, they made (at the ringing of a bell) in an open assemblie, a procurator or deputie called Bonin, to performe the obedience vnto the Pope, and the Pope graunted him certaine reuenues: that in the time of Pope *Vibin* the fourth, *Ilonorius* the fourth, and of *Boniface* the eighth, the said people did acknowledge the holie See, paying a certaine rent vnto it: that in the time of Pope *Clement* the fift, which was in the yeare 1301, the fift yeare of his raigne, the said people did acknowledge the holie See, and the Pope sent thither a Lieutenant and Gouernour, he made lawes, appointed the manner of gouernment, and created many officers, and the people performed an infinite number of acts, in acknowledgment of the holie See.

And for that in the time of *Gregorie* the ninth, they of the house of Este began to gouerne for the Pope, therefore he said, that the said Lords of Este, not onely had alwaies gouerned for the holie See, but also had acknowledged it for foueraigne Lord of this towne; and that the first, which was *Azon* of Este, had beene established gouernor there by Pope *Gregorie* the eleventh: that afterwards in the time of *Gregorie* the eleventh, in the year of grace 1372, the first year which he gaue the inuelture to the said Lords of Este, holding Cardinall *Peter* at Ferrara for Legat, he sent him an inuelture, in the persons of *Nicholas* and *Albert*, children to the said *Azon*, during their liues, paying a rent of foure thousand ducats; commanding the said Legat, not to giue the said inuelture, if they did not formerly promise with oath to yeeld vp the said towne, after the time of the inuelture expired, without retaining any thing whereby it should be bettered, or any other expences, and with this prouiso, That they should first of all acknowledge and declare that the said towne did belong vnto the holie See, as they did in the year 1372, on the fifteenth of May.

That the said Lords of Este had alwaies obtained a new inuelture, for the prolongation of their first grant, since *Boniface* the ninth who confirmed the said inuelture vnto them; and to be short, that *Alexander* the sixth hauing made an alliance with the said Lords of Este, in the year 1501, confirming all the inueltures, beginning first *Sixtus* the fourth, he granted them a new inuelture vnto the third generation, reducing the rent to one thousand crownes, for that they had beene at great charges in bettering and beautifying the towne: that *Leo* the tenth, in the beginning of his Popedom, restored the duke vnto his Estate, which he held before the deprivation of *Julio*, and that afterwards the said *Leo*, by reason of Modena, and Reggium, deprived and excommunicated the said duke, who was absolved and restored by *Adrian* the sixth, vpon certaine conditions, which haue beene alwaies obserued, That the duke should not make any salt at Comacina, but onely the holie See: that *Clement* the seventh, for that the duke had entered into Reggium, during the vacancie of the holie See, did excommunicate him, calling Christian princes to his aide, for the recouerie of Ferrara, but for that the duke made many goodly offers vnto the Pope, it tooke no effect, and his peace was made.

Paul the third inuested the said duke, as well for himselfe, as for the descendants of *Alphonso*, granting him the duchie of Ferrara, with the appurtenances, and the customes which his predecessors did iustly exact, and he did also inuest him in all the rights which the holie See pretended in all other places held by the duke, that is to say, in Modena and Reggium, and they agreed, that in case of deuolution, the line being extinct, they should cite the dukes successors by contradiction, if there were no procurator at Rome, the which had then happened. And for that they did affirme that the inuelture of *Paul* the third was for the direct line of *Alphonso*, grandfather to the deceased duke, to whom they said *Don Caesar*, was sonne: whereunto the Pope answered, that the said inuelture was for the direct masculine line, that was legitimat, and that the said *Don Caesar* being base, could not be comprehended.

And to shew that he was base borne, they did publish a genealogie of the house of Este, made & printed by *Jerome Folet*, and dedicated to the deceased duke *Alphonso*, where he did shew that the father of *Don Caesar* who was called *Alphonso*, was not borne of *Laura Estuica*, and of the duke *Alphonso*, setting downe the wife which he had, and not placing this for his wife, and that it did not appeare that he was legitimat by any subsequent marriage, the which if he should proue, yet the words of *Paul* the third, were not to be vnderstood, but onely of lawfull children, and not of those that were made legitimat.

As for that which they might pretend, that there had beene a duke base borne, and that therefore the nature of the fee past indifferently: the Pope answered, that for so many yeares, there was neuer found but one President, and that one act was not sufficient to inferre a custome. Moreover he said, that the said act did not proue a custome, but the contrarie, for that this bastard which was admitted to the said duchie, was therein expressly made able by the Pope; so as it did appeare, that without this making able, such persons

were of themselves incapable; besides, there was the Bull of Pope *Pius* the fifth, which made bastards vnable to hold any tee of the Church.

He said also, that they were not to haue any regard to the pretensions, of meliorations, which (he said) had beene done in the said duchie, and did amount to millions, for that besides the Bull of Pope *Pius* the fifth, where it was said, that it should not be retained for any reparations and expences: they should hold for many that they were no debts, first, for that it was a speciall conuention and renunciation by the said dukes, in the time of *Gregorie* the eleventh, for that they promised vnto the fee, the masculine line being extinct, and might not demand any thing against reparations and charges, by taxes vpon their vassalls, and vpon the benefices of the duchie, and by consequence, they could not pretend any thing of that side, seeing these reparations had beene done with the money granted by the holie See, and did flow from her vassalls: and moreover, there being an agreement by the which it was that they might not build without the permission of the holie See, they could not pretend any thing in that regard.

As for that which *D. Caesar* did vrge, that the nomination of the duchie did belong to the people, by the which he pretended to be named; the Pope answered, That the duke had no right, according vnto a declaration which they had made in the time of the fifth; and that it ceased, in case there were any, by reason of so many inueltures made by Popes. That if there were any inuelture made by *Gregorie* the ninth, which he said, that he did inuest him duke for that he was pleasing vnto the people, yet was not any nomination of the people, but the people said, That they made him duke, he was comprehended in the inuelture of *John* the two and twentieth.

And, the Pope by his reasons, and with an armie which he had raised, forced *D. Caesar* to depart out of Ferrara, and to remaine duke of Modena and Reggium; and the terms of the accord made betwixt his Holinesse and him, were as followeth:

D. Caesar should carrie away all that he had, by the month of Ianuarie. He should renounce and quit the title of duke of Ferrara, and of earle of Rouigo. *D. Caesar* being gone out of Ferrara, and the iurisdiction thereof, should no more come into Ferrara, nor within the limits.

That the artillerie should be diuided betwixt the Pope and *D. Caesar*, and that the Pope should haue the first.

Within the space of three yeares, *D. Caesar* should sell all that he had in Ferrara, or the territories thereof, else it should be all held for confiscat.

As for all the dignities, which he, or any of his, should obtain hereafter, they should be made by the holie See.

Modena, which was in old time called Mutina, was a verie ancient towne, standing vpon the *Emilia*: Some hold, that it was built by the ancient Tulsans, among many others, in the Apennin Hills to seeke new dwellings: but the Gauls coming into Italy, made maisters thereof, and of many other places in that countrie. After some time, they were expelled, and it was made a Colonie of the Romans, and new inhabitants came thither. This towne suffered great miseries, being in the Romans hands, especially when *Marc Antonie* besieged *Decimus Brutus*: After which, it was somewhat repayed, and fortified as before, to the end it should not serue for a retreat for mutinous and traitorous men. Being afterwards quite ruined by the Gothes, and Lombards, it was reedified by another new build, in a place somewhat distant from the old towne, after this manner: The Great, hauing subdued the Lombards, and secured Italie from the inuasions of the Barbarians, and made his sonne *Pepin* king of Italie, the Italians seeing themselves assured of their goods, and that they enjoyed their libertie by the means of the king, they which were iussured from the ancient citizens of Modena, being retired into the countie of safetie, met all together in the Church of S. Gimignano, standing vpon *Via Clu-* where they tooke counsell, whither they should restore their ruined countrie, or to build a greater towne in some other place. After long debate, euery man speaking his mind, in the end it seemed so difficult vnto them all, as they were ready to depart with-

any conclusion: Then stept vp *Anthellano* of Magnoni, a wise man and of a great spirit, who loued his countie much, saying, That if they loued their countie, as they made shew, they would not grieue to spend what they had, yea their owne liues for it; and therefore he thought it fit, that in any case they should begin to build it, for that it would not proue so difficult a matter as they thought, if they would follow his aduice, which was that euery gentlemen and rich citizen should take the charge to build a citie gate, at his owne cost and of his friends: and to the end it might be the more speedily built, he thought it fit, that presently there should be a Pallisado made about the place in the which they should build their new citie, and that the countienmen should digge a ditch, and of the earth which should be cast out of it, they should make a rampier along the pallisadoe, whereby the place might be secured vntill the walls were built. *Anthellano* was heard willingly, and his counsell accepted by all the citizens, with great applause, and so they began the building of their new citie. The first gate called *Salicetti*, was built by the noble familie of the *Boschetti*, with their friends, drawing the Pallisadoe vnto S. Peters gate, the which was built by the *Freddi* and their friends: the port of Saragoffe by the familie of the *Guzzoni*, and their adherents: and that of Rodecoca by the *Gorsani*: the *Sassoli*, with their friends, built the gate which is called *Bazzouaria*: the *Sauniani*, with their adherents, built the gate of the New citie: and that of *Canacette*, was built by the *Manfredi*, *Pedechi*, and *Pandelli*: The gate called *Albretti* was built by the *Pies* and *Papazzoni*: and they of the familie of *Redes*, with their friends, built the port of S. John. After this manner, they began their new citie, a little distant from the old towne, about the which, by little and little (with a happie successe) they made a wal, so as the citizens might dwell securely: and as the people increased, so did their buildings, but this happened long after the reigne of *Charles the Great*, if we shall belceue *Polateran*, who saith, that it was in the year of Grace 1100. This citie grew to be in great reputation among the people of Italie, and they maintained themselves in libertie a good time, vnder the protection of the empire, yet in the end it became subiect vnto *Opizze*, sonne to *Regnald* of Este, Marquis of Ferrara, to whom it was deliuered by *Guy* of Guidone, Bishop of Modena, Legat to Pope *Benedict* the eleuenth, the Pope consenting thereto in regard of a tribute of ten thousand crownes, which the new Lord should pay vnto the holie See: and this was concluded in the yeare of our Lord God 1304. But the emperour *Henrie* the seuenth allowing of nothing that the Popes did, and vsurping the rights and lands of the Church which were belonging to the Patrimonie thereof, made *Francis Pic* of Mirandola his lieutenant at Modena, referring notwithstanding the soueraigntie to himselfe. This *Pic* was expelled by the *Guelphes*, and *Passerin*, *Batrton*, and *Bonacolsi*, lords of Mantroua, seized thereon, and held it quietly vntill the yeare of Grace 1327, whenas their owne insupportable tyrannie, rather than any conspiracie of the citizens, expelled them. In the yeare of our Redemption 1331, *Manfredi* of Pic was made Vicar or Gouernour of Modena, with his cousin *Guido*, by *John* king of Bohemia, who was no foener out of Italie, but they deliuered ouer Modena to the right lord *Obizze*, second Marquis of Ferrara, referring *Carpi*, and S. Felice, with some other Articles. In the yeare of Christ 1339, *Obizze* was inuested by the Legat of Pope *Benedict* the twelfth, and made Vicar, or Vicegerent perpetuall of this towne: the which the house of Ferrara did enioy vntill the yeare 1510, whenas Pope *Iulio* the second tooke it from him, and gaue it to the emperour *Maximilian* the first, who ingaged it to Pope *Leo* the tenth for fortie thousand crownes. But afterwards Pope *Clement* the seuenth, being besieged by the armie of the emperour *Charles* the fifth, *Alphonso* of Este, the third duke of Ferrara, embracing this occasion, recovered his owne, and entred into the possession of Modena, the which Pope *Iulio* had taken from him, and so it hath continued vnto this day vnder the house of Este. It was well fortified by *Hercules* duke of Ferrara. It is verie well peopled, and there are many noble families, amongst which is the noble house of the *Rangoni*.

V. Reggium, which some hold was a Colonie of *Epidaur*. It was called *Reggium Lepidi*, to distinguish it from *Reggium Iulij* in Calabria. Some write, that it was ruined whenas the *Gothes* being incited against *Silicon*, spoiled Italie, and that in the year 1314, the children

children of those which remained of this ruine, compassed this towne about with a wall. Sometime they gouerned themselves in libertie, according to the customes of the other cities of Italie, and sometimes they were gouerned by others. Their popular gouernment, the Earles of Canosse did first of all vsurpe this Estate, in the year 1286, where were expelled the third yeare after their vsurpation, by some of the chiefe of the towne, with the helpe of the *Bolonians*, and so they returned to their first Estate; but being to maintaine themselves, they gaue the towne (in the year 1292) to *Obizze*, the first of that name, Marquis of Ferrara: but in the year 1326, the citizens gaue the towne vnto the Church of Rome, to the which they yielded obedience two yeares, during the which, the Pope had two gouernors slaine by the people, for that they carried themselves indifferently. In the year 1331, it was vnder the gouernment of *John* king of Bohemia, but two yeres after, the said king being gone, the *Fogliani* entred the citie, and saw all they could find of the familie of the *Manfredi*, and made themselves maisters of it: but fearing they should not be able to maintaine their tyrannie, they sold the towne to *Maffin de la Scala* Lord of Verona; yet before he could enter and take possession of *Gonzaga* came, and made himselfe Maister thereof, who built a citadell neere the port of S. Nazare. In the year 1359 *Feltrin Gonzaga* tooke vpon him the government against the liking of his brother the Lord of Mantroua, who being incensed against him, cancelled him out of the familie of the *Gonzagas*, and depriued him of all the honours and priuiledges due vnto the house of *Gonzaga*: and he notable against his brothers forces, sold it for sixtie thousand ducats to *Barnabe Visconte* Lord of Milan, in the year 1370, and so it remained vnder the gouernment of the Visconte, vntill the death of *John Gallianze* the first duke of Milan, which was in the year 1402, whenas many tyrants made themselves Lords of diuers cities of Italie, where amongst the which he held vnto the year 1409, whenas he was slaine by *Sforze Catignole*, by the command of *Nicholas* the second, of the house of Este, and Marquis of Ferrara, who tooke vpon him the government, left it for an inheritance to the house of the *Estes*, to whom it remained subiect, vntill the year 1512, whenas Pope *Iulio* the second tooke it from him, and made it subiect vnto the Church vntill the year 1523, whenas Pope *Adrian* the sixth dying, *Alphonso* duke of Ferrara went with forces, and became Lord of Reggium, the which the citizens being out of hope of succours yielded vnto him, and from that time, the successours of *Alphonso* haue enioyed it quietly. These two townes were both vnto *Don Caesar* of Este, who enioyes them at this present with the title of duke.

¶ The Qualitie.

VI. The territorie about Modena abounds with come, beanes, and other things necessary for the life of man, and about all it beares excellent wine. And as for Reggium it is exceeding fertile, and yeelds great store of wheat, barley, beanes, and all other kind of come, and white wines which are nothing inferior to any in Italie. The aire about Modena is good, and wholesome, and little subiect to diseases,

¶ The Manners.

VII. The citizens of Modena haue alwaies shewed themselves very desirous of libertie, and haue often exposed their liues to maintaine it, and they of Reggium haue done the same. There haue come many excellent personages out of Modena both for armes and for peace. The Italians say, that they of Modena are subtile, quicke in their counsell, and to pacifie when they are wronged, and long in the entertainment of their enemies. They say also that their women are of a milde disposition, and nothing froward. The citizens of Reggium, they are affable, subtile, of good wits, & fit for anything where they shall be employed: and finally they haue loued libertie as much as any people in Italie, and haue preferred it as well as they could, as hath appeared by the toile they haue sought to make it subiect.

These two townes, and their territories, are reasonably rich, but we cannot speake much of the reuenues of the new prince. As for the Forts, these two townes are strong, but Reggiom more than Modena, by reason of a good citadell which it hath; and this new duke entertaines a garrison in either towne. As for the government, it is yet to new, as there can be nothing certainly spoken thereof, so as it is better to passe it ouer with silence vntill some better occasion.



THE COMMON-WEALE OF LVCCA.

The Contents.

I The beginning of the name of the towne of Lucca. 2. The situation, circuit, and confines. 3. A crosse of gold of great value in the Church of S. Croix, engaged by the Pisans to them of Lucca. 4. The towne of Lucca gouerned by the Gothes, by the Emperours of Constantinople, and by many other Lords. 5. The soile very fruitful, and in a good gre. 6. Inhabitants of Lucca quick witted, courteous by nature, louing libertie, and their language sweete and pure. 7. Their riches consisting in siluer and trafficke in silke. 8. The common-weale of Lucca weake, and of small resistance. 9. Of the Councell of Lucca, consisting of three sorts of persons: of the Gonsalnier, the chiefe of the common weale, and of his election by the Assorters. Of the Commander of the seigneurie, and of his authoritie. 10. Of the three Secretaries, and of their power and iurisdiction. 11. Of the councell of the Colloque, consisting of 18. citizens. 12. Of 6 men appointed to oversee the treasure. 13. Of the Rota, consisting of three Doctors strangers. 14. Of the court of merchants composed of nine men, and the office called the Abundance. 15. Of the commissaries appointed our men of war. 16. Of the councells of the Descoles, and what their charge is. 17. Of the office of lodging, composed of eight persons, who haue the care of strangers. 18. Of the guard of the palace.

II.



Lucca is a very good citie, situated in Tuscany, so called of Lucumon king of the Tuscans. Strabo writes, that the citie of Lucca is neere vnto the mountaines of Luna, and at this day the countie is called Lunagiana. But to speake of our times, I say that Lucca hath about three miles in circuit: it stands in a plaine not far from certaine little hills, vpon the river of Seruie: it is enuironed with good walls, which some say were built by Desiderius king of the Lombards. They haue goodly buildings, and the citizens are noble, wise, and discreet: who with their wit haue long maintained themselves in libertie, notwithstanding that they haue bene often troubled by their neighbours. Towards the North, it confines with Casignana, a good valley, and full of warlike people, and apt to armes. Of all the other three parts, it is enuironed by the great duke of Tuscany.

III.

The chiefe Church is called S. Croix, in which Church there is a crosse of gold, which the Pisans did ingage to them of Lucca, vpon condition to redeeme it, which they haue not yet done. Some hold that it is worth fiftene thousand crownes.

IIII.

This citie hath had diuers maisters; it was held by the Gothes, and taken from them by Norsetes, lieutenant to the Emperour Iustinian, and so continued vnder the Empe-

1015

A source of Constantinople: whose power declining, Boniface became master thereof, who had married Beatrix, daughter to the emperour Henrie, of whom came Matilda, who was afterwards wife to Godfrey, after whose death she remained heire of a great Estate, and chieffly of this city. In the time of Pope Honorius the fourth, the citizens recovered their libertie of the Emperour Rodolphus for one thousand two hundred florins. After some time Guccione of Fagiola became master of the citie, who was afterwards expelled by the people, with Xeri his grandchild: and after him Castruccio Castracani (who had bene imprisoned by him) tooke vpon him the gouernement: and so in an instant he was expelled, and the other which was a prisoner, was made Lord. This man was much beloued for his worth by Galleazze Visconti, and by Azon his sonne, lord of Milan. He was anemie to the Florentins whilest he liued: and hauing defeated their armie, he besieged Florence in such sort, as if sicknesse and death had not prevented him, without doubt he had subdued it: He had also seized vpon Pisa and Pistoia. He left two sonnes, who were expelled out of Lucca by Lewis of Bawaria. Soone after, Lucca was sold by a German knight, which Lewis had left there to Gerrard Spinola a Geneuois, and afterwards recommended to Peter Roffo, by John king of Bohemia, and consigned by Roffo to Mastin de la Roche lord of Verona: who sold it to the Florentins, which held it nine moneths. In the same time, the Pisans pretending to haue a greater right than the Florentins, by the mediation made vnto them, by the emperour Henrie, besieged it, but in the end they came to an accord. Afterwards, the emperour Charles the fourth, passing into Italie, and coming to Lucca, at his departure he left a French Cardinall for his Vicar, or Vicegerent, who after his departure sold the Luccois their libertie for five and twentie thousand florins of gold. Hauing thus obtained their libertie, they presently ruined the Castle of Castruccio.

The Luccois preferred the libertie which they had gotten, vntill the yere 1400, when Philip Guinigi, one of their citizens, made himselfe Lord thereof, and did gouerne it thirtie yeres with great felicitie. Hauing gathered together a great treasure of gold, siluer, and precious stones, and hauing many goodly sonnes, and finding himselfe in great glory, and in the height of fortune, and being in great reputation with all the princes of Italie, seeming not onely to himselfe, but to all others, to be happie in this life, and thinking his Estate to be glorious, firme, & stable, behold fortune presently turnes her wheele, and makes him a miserable spectacle and a memorable example to all men: For he was taken with his five sonnes, by the people (for that he fauoured the Florentins, their enemies) and sent to Philip Visconti duke of Milan, who put them into a darke and obscure prison, where they ended their dayes miserably, in the yere of Christ 1430, and so in an instant he lost the honour, riches, seigneurie, and glorie which he had gotten in so many yeres, with his sonnes and life. The Guinigi being expelled, the citie fell againe into confusion: but in the end, they recovered and sealed their libertie, he which they enjoyed with great peace and quietnesse vnto this day. This citie hath brought forth many worthy and famous men, and it was the first of all the townes of Tuscany, which received the Christian faith.

¶ The Qualitie.

The territorie of Lucca is of small extent, but the soyle is good, and yeelds much vnto the owners. The ayre is good and wholesome, and not much subiect to diseases.

V.

¶ The Manners.

The men are naturally courteous, modest, and very bountiful, they proceed with great succedee in their affaires, they are subtil witted, and prosper well in all arts wherein they employ themselves. They loue their libertie exceedingly, wherefore some hold, they would employ all their Estate to preserve it. All the citizens are in a manner merchants. The Italians say, that the Luccois in matter of learning and knowledge

VI.

These two townes, and their territories, are reasonably rich, but we cannot speake much of the revenues of the new prince. As for the Forts, these two townes are strong, but Reggium more than Modena, by reason of a good citadell which it hath; and this new duke entertaines a garrison in either towne. As for the government, it is yet so new, as there can be nothing certainly spoken thereof, so as it is better to passe it ouer with silence vntill some better occasion.



THE COMMON-WEALE OF LVCCA.

The Contents.

1. The beginning of the name of the towne of Lucca. 2. The situation, circuit, and confines. 3. A crosse of gold of great value in the Church of S. Croix, engaged by the Pisans to them of Lucca. 4. The towne of Lucca governed by the Gothes, by the Emperours of Constantimpe, and by many other Lords. 5. The soile very fruitfull, and in good gre. 6. Inhabitants of Lucca quicke witted, courteous by nature, louing libertie, and their language sweete and pure. 7. Their riches consisting in silver and traffike in silke. 8. The common-weale of Lucca weake, and of small resistance. 9. Of the Councell of Lucca, consisting of three sorts of persons: of the Gonsalanier, the chiefe of the common weale, and of his election by the Assorters. Of the Commander of the seigneurie, and of his authoritie. 10. Of the three Secretaries, and of their power and iurisdiction. 11. Of the councell of the Colloque, consisting of 18. citizens. 12. Of 6 men appointed to oversee the treasure. 13. Of the Rota, consisting of three Doctors strangers. 14. Of the court of merchants composed of nine men, and the office called the Abundance. 15. Of the commissaries appointed ouer men of war. 16. Of the councells of the Descoles, and what their charge is. 17. Of the office of lodging, composed of eight persons, who haue the care of strangers. 18. Of the guard of the palace.

Lucca is a very good citie, situated in Tuscanie, so called of Lucumon king of the Tuscans. Strabo writes, that the citie of Lucca is nere vnto the mountaines of Luna, and at this day the countie is called Lunagiana. But to speake of our times, I say that Lucca hath about three miles in circuit: it stands in a plaine not far from certaine little hills, vpon the riuer of Seruie: it is enuironed with good wailes, which some say were built by Desiderius king of the Lombards. They haue goodly buildings, and the citifens are noble, wise, and discret: who with their wit haue long maintained themselves in libertie, notwithstanding that they haue bene often troubled by their neighbours. Towards the North, it confines with Carragnana, a good valley, and full of warlike people, and apt to armes. Of all the other three parts, it is enuironed by the great duke of Tuscanie.

The chiefe Church is called S. Croix, in which Church there is a crosse of gold, which the Pisans did ingage to them of Lucca, vpon condition to redeeme it, which they haue not yet done. Some hold that it is worth fifteene thousand crownes.

This citie hath had diuers maisters; it was held by the Gothes, and taken from them by Nerfetes, lieutenant to the Emperour Iustinian, and so continued vnder the Emperours

Arounds of Constantinople: whose power declining, Boniface became maister thereof, who had married Beatrice, daughter to the emperour Henric, of whom came Matilda, who was afterwards wife to Godfrey, after whose death she remained heire of a great Estate, and chieffly of this city. In the time of Pope Honorius the fourth, the citifens recovered their libertie of the Emperour Rodolphus for one thousand two hundred florins. After some time, Agnacione of Fagiola became maister of the citie, who was afterwards expelled by the people, with Neri his grandchild: and after him Castruccio Castracani (who had bene prisoner by him) tooke vpon him the gouernement: and so in an instant he was expelled, and the other which was a prisoner, was made Lord. This man was much beloued for his worth by Galcazze Viscont, and by Azon his sonne, lord of Milan. He was anemie to the Florentins whilest he liued: and hauing defeated their armie, he besieged Florence in such sort, as if sicknesse and death had not prevented him, without doubt he had subdued it: He had also seized vpon Pisa and Pitoyta. He left two sonnes, who were expelled out of Lucca by Lewis of Bauraria. Soone after, Lucca was sold by a German person, which Lewis had left thre to Gerrard Spinola a Geneuois, and afterwards recommended to Peter Rosso, by Iohn king of Bohemia, and consigned by Rosso to Mastin de la lord of Verona: who sold it to the Florentins, which held it nine moneths. In the same time, the Pisans pretending to haue a greater right than the Florentins, by the mediation made vnto them, by the emperour Henric, besieged it, but in the end they came an accord. Afterwards, the emperour Charles the fourth, passing into Italie, and coming to Lucca, at his departure he left a French Cardinall for his Vicar, or Vicegerent, who after his departure sold the Luccois their libertie for five and twentie thousand florins of gold. Hauing thus obtained their libertie, they presently ruined the Castle of Castruccio.

The Luccois preferred the libertie which they had gotten, vntill the yere 1400, when Guisif, one of their citifens, made himselfe Lord thereof, and did gouerne it thirtie yeres with great felicitie. Hauing gathered together a great treasure of gold, silver, precious stones, and hauing many goodly honnes, and finding himselfe in great glory, and in the heigh of fortune, and being in great reputation with all the princes of Italie, seeming not onely to himselfe, but to all others, to be happie in this life, and thinking his Estate to be glorious, firme, & stable, behold fortune presently turnes her wheele, and makes him a miserable spectacle and a memorable example to all men: For he was taken with his five sonnes, by the people (for that he fauoured the Florentins, their enemies) and sent to Philip Viscont duke of Milan, who put them into a darke and obscure place, where they ended their dayes miserably, in the yere of Christ 1430, and so in an instant he lost the honour, riches, seigneurie, and glorie which he had gotten in so many yeres, with his sonnes and life. The Guisif being expelled, the citie fell againe into combustions: but in the end, they recovered and settled their libertie, he which they enjoyed with great peace and quietnesse vnto this day. This citie hath brought forth many worthy and famous men, and it was the first of all the townes of Tuscanie, which receiued the Christian faith.

¶ The Qualitie.

The territorie of Lucca is of small extent, but the soyle is good, and yeelds much vnto the owners. The ayre is good and wholesome, and not much subiect to diseases.

¶ The Manners.

The men are naturally courteous, modest, and very bountiful, they proceed with great freedom in their affaires, they are subtle witted, and prosper well in all arts wherein they employ themselves. They loue their libertie exceedingly, wherefore some hold, they would employ all their Estate to preferue it. All the citifens are in a manner apt to merchandise. The Italians say, that the Luccois in matter of learning and knowledge

ledge, doe wonderfully affect the studie of diuinitie; that they are kind in the reception A of their guests, and faithfull vnto them; that they are mild in wrongs receiued, and apt to pardon; and that in their trafficke they haue their word and faith in great recommendation: and moreover, that their women are most commonly chaste. The Luccois language is held in Tuscany to be pleasant and pure, for that it hath not those harsh accents, which are in a manner common to all the townes of this province.

¶ The Riches.

- VII. **T**here are rich families, for that the men of this towne vse great trafficke, and haue B correspondence throughout all the Estates of Christendome, and elswhere, but their chiefe trafficke is in silke, for the which they haue great reputation among all Christians, and in the time of *Castruccio Castracani*, who made himselfe Lord of the towne, many families did abandon it, for that they would not obey a tyrant: They that retired themselves carried with them the art of silke, with much other wealth, into diuers parts of Italie, and and they also carried to Florence the art of making of cloth of gold, wherein they excell. This Common weale is not rich, hauing but a small iurisdiction, but there are many private men exceeding rich, and all their wealth consists in readie money.

¶ The Forces.

- VIII. **T**he citie of Lucca is strong by situation, inuironed with good walls, and well furnished with artillerie and munition, containing foure and twentie thousand persons within the circuit thereof; but notwithstanding all this, or that the Gories, who were within it, had indured a six moneths siege, which was layed before it by *Nurses* General to the Emperour *Iustinian*, yet it is thought that it were not able to make any great resistance against the great duke of Tuscany, if he would vnderake to make himselfe maister thereof, vnlesse they were assisted by some other. But they hold, that he draws more profit and commoditie, leauing it thus free, than if it were subiect vnto him.

¶ The Government.

- IX. **T**he ground and foundation of this Common-wealth, as of all others, is the councill, for thereon doth depend, and from it doth proceed all other magistrats which are members of this bodie. This Councill doth mannage all the affaires of State and to be short, it is the maister of this Common-weale. It is composed of three sorts of persons; for there are some of the Councill which are ordinarie, and they remaine a yeare in their charges, some others are limited at pleasure, and are not ordinarie, and some others are subrogated in the place of such as die, and they continue a iust yeare in their charges. Finally, the number of this Councill is of one hundred and sixtie citizens, and most commonly they are one hundred and twentie.

The citie of Lucca is diuided into three parts, which they call *Tierciers*; the one is of S. Sauour, the other of S. Paulin, and the other of S. Martin. The Councill doth chuse the Seigneurie out of the said three parts, or *Tierciers*, that is to say, they create three men for euery third part or *Tiercie*: or, which in all make nine: besides the which, they chuse a Gonfalonier, who is the chiefe of the Common-wealth, and hee is chosen one yeare out of the *Tierciers* of S. Sauour, the second out of that of S. Paulin, and the third out of S. Martin, and so they change successiually according to the said order. These ten are chosen euery third yeare, and all, except the Gonfalonier, are called *Auuncients*. The election is made after this manner: they create three men, called *Affortitori*, one out of euery third: These men haue charge to number the suffrages and voyces of such as are chosen, and after that the Councill hath chosen a certaine number of men, they chuse the Gonfalonier, and doe alwaies name such a one, as they hold most capable. When the said election is made, the *affortitori* remaine in a place apart, and reckon their suffrages vntil they come vnto a certain number, which is one hundred and eightie: and

and moreover they do not publish them that are subrogated, nor the Suffrages in council, but it is only knowne to the *Affortitori*. And to the end there may be no deceit in them, they haue for assistants two principall religious men, one of the order of S. Dominick, and another of S. Francis: these *Affortitori* haue authoritie to assigne what time the *assort* shall serue, as to appoint one for one moneth, and another for another moneth: these being done by them, who are the chiefe men of Lucca, they keepe it secret, and an oath not to reueale any thing.

When the *Affortitori* be chosen, they create the seigneurie, whose charge is to heare matters of iustice, and to take notice of petitions, and pardons which are demanded, by which are of this bodie remain continually in the palace, and may not depart, vpon paine of death: the State defraies them. Out of the whole bodie of the abouenamed they chuse one, who hath the title of Commaunder, and the other nine haue it by alternatiue: this charge continues three daies onely, during the which he hath power and authoritie to commaund all the rest, yea the Gonfalonier himselfe. It is true all petitions directed vnto the seigneurie, are presented vnto the Commaunder, and by if he please, present them vnto the seigniors; yet he cannot dispatch any affaires without the authoritie of the seigneurie. If the commaunder propounds his request vnto the seigneurie, and that it be allowed by two thirds, the Gonfalonier deliuiers it after vnto the councill. The authoritie of the seigneurie extends to strangers, but not to citizens: and it propounds euery thing, but cannot conclude any thing.

The office of Secretaries, which are three in number, are very important. These haue authoritie in matters which concerne offences done vnto the maiestie of the commonweale, and in this regard they are absolute, and about the Gonfalonier. But before they do any thing, they must make their reasons knowne vnto the great councill: and when it happeneth that the case so requiring, they put in execution and giue their sentence vnto the councill, after the thing is done, either for that they could not soderly do the whole councill, or for that the matter required a speedy execution.

The Councill of the Colloque is composed of eightene citizens, the which are choosen by the councill. These men in case the seigniors be doubtfull in any matter, and especially resolue, they assemble, and consult of that which is to be propounded vnto the councill, and hauing made their discourses among themselves, they conclude with the seigneurie, if it shall be propounded vnto the councill or not.

The six men haue charge of the expences, and publicke reuenues, and dispose of all matters which concerne the treasure, and they are as it were gouernors of the reuenues. They haue a Chamberlaine, who doth put their resolutions in execution, and all these are chosen by the great councill.

The Rota, which is ordinarie in many townes of Italie, consists of three doctours strangers, which must come fiftie miles from Lucca; they change them alternatiue, and at the end of euery six moneths, one of them is made *Podestate*, the second is Iudge for criminal causes, and the third for ciuile; and he that is *Podestate* hath first bene Iudge criminal, and the *Podestate* when he leaues his place, enters into that of Iudge criminal, and euery one of them, is *Podestate*, Iudge criminal, and Iudge ciuile, in his turne. If the *Podestate* hath by chance a citizen in his hands, he doth onely frame his proceffe, and giue his opinion touching that which the offendour hath deferred, and then they of force go vnto the councill, which doth allow, or disallow, or doth moderate the sentence of the *Podestate*, who in this case enters into the councill. As for the *Podestate* may execute his sentence absolutely without any formalitie. And these three do also treat of all ciuile causes.

The court of merchants is composed of nine men, wherof they chuse three out of euery *Tiercie* or third. They haue for Iudge, a doctour that is a stranger, who is their *Affessor*, or Assistant: they iudge of all matters which concerne merchandise and trafficke, and haue great authoritie in those causes.

They haue also another office which they call of the Abundance, it consists of nine men, which are chosen like vnto the rest, three out of euery third. These men haue charge to

X.

XI.

XII.

XIII.

XIIII.

to see that the citie may be well furnished with corne, and they heare all matters which A
concerne that businesse.

They that haue the office of munition, haue charge to see that there be prouision of
corne, for three whole yeares. They do often visit the magazins and storehouses where
they keepe their munition, and they refresh it, and renew it, as it is spent.

XV.

And for that within the iurisdiction of Lucca, they haue appointed certaine compa-
nies of men, fit to carry armes in any necessitie of war, there are six commissioners which
haue authoritie ouer the said troups; and all matters which shall happen touching that
regard, passe through their hands, and they giue sentence.

XVI.

There are also three Presidents which haue charge of the health of the said citie. They B
haue a care that the victualls be good and sweet, that the streets be made cleane, and the
filth carried away, and that the inhabitants vse all care and diligence to preserve the
towne from the plague, and from all other such like accidents which may come vnto it;
and for that in a manner in all townes, there are many persons who liuing idly and wick-
edly secke their liuing by all lewd and vicious meanes, and do most commonly practise
all things contrarie to the good rules of a politicke and ciuile life: for this cause the Luc-
cois haue a counsell which they call of Discoles, that is to say, of men of a lewd life, ya-
gabonds of bad example and wicked in their action. This counsell assembles one day in
the holic weeke, where it is law full for all them that enter into the said counsell to put in-
to a box (which is prepared for that effect) little tickets, wherein they write that disor- C
dered and lewd fellow which they know, or else they write not any thing in these tickets;
and if it chance one name be found in many of them, he is then brought in question for a
Discole, to the great counsell, where if two third parts giue their suffrages against him,
he is banished: and the sentence is, that he shall remaine three yeare fiftie miles off from
the townie and iurisdiction: if he do not obey during the said three yeares, but returns
contrarie to his banishment, he loseth his life. As soone as they haue giuen their voices
against this vagabond, before that the council breakes vp, they proclaime him for a Dis-
cole by the found of a trumpet, at the foure corners of the market place: and he that
is thus banished, must of force be gone the same night. The three yeares being expired,
and this banished man being returned into the citie, if he do not amend, his banishment D
is renewed with the like order. And in truth this hath some resemblance vnto the Ostrac-
isme which the Athenians vied; but there is this difference, that at Athens they did ban-
nish for ten yeares, them onely whose greatnesse and power was suspected vnto the people.

XVII.

There is also the office of Lodging, consisting of eight persons, whose charge is to ob-
serue the behauiour of strangers that come into the townie, and to take knowledge of
their businesse, and the hosts are bound to giue in writing, vnto these officers, the names
of such as come vnto Lucca and lodge in their houses, if they be not of the citie. If by
chance any man doth lie, telling one thing for another, they giue him the strappado to
draw out the truth: and if he knowes any one within the townie, and names him to these
officers, they enquire carefully of him whom they suspect, and if they find him an honest E
man they let him go.

XVIII.

The seigneurie doth make choise of one hundred souldiers which be strangers borne
at the least fiftie miles from Lucca, for the guard of the palace. Out of this hundred they
draw captaines, and cornorrells. They are charged vpon paine of death, not to come
neere the walls when it is night, neither alone nor accompanied, but to remaine at their
guard. As for the walls they are guarded by the artificers and townesmen, who haue wife
and children, and these haue three crownes a moneth pay. There are townesmen set to
guard the gates, and euery port hath two citizens for commissaries, wherof the one re-
maines from the opening of the gate in the morning vntill noone and then departs, and
the other succeeds him, who stayes till the gate be shut.

THE

THE COMMON-WEALE OF GENOVA.

The Contents.

Description and diuision of Liguria, and of the countrie of Genoua, with the chiefe
townes thereof. 2. Situation of the citie of Genoua, and the circuit; with their
power at Sea. 3. The change of many Lords, gouerned by Earles, then by Dukes.
4. Of the townie of Saoua. 5. Of the Island of Corsica, the biggnesse, circuit, and
the parts, with the townes and castles. 6. Liguria and the countrie of Genoua, hillie,
of Precipices, abounding in Oliue Lemon and Orange Trees. 7. The Island of Corsica
lying in Henie, Wax, Rosen, Oyle, Figges, Box, Alum, Chrystal, and Corral. 8. Of the
Petra Pola, whose waters are hot, sulphurie, and physcall. 9. Of the wild Hens of the
Mallinaria. 10. Ligurians in old time great pyrats, and the brutish behaviour of them
at Sea. 11. The Genouois and Ligurians at this day quick witted and subtle, proud, fastious, and
difficke. 12. The inhabitants of Corsica savage, and full of reuenge. 13. The reuenues
of Genoua, and wherein it consists. 14. What places of strength belong to the Seig-
neurie of Genoua, and the galleies which they entertaine at Sea. 15. The forme of their gouerne-
ment of the Council of foure hundred, and of the Pettie Council of one hundred gentlemen.
16. Of the election of the Duke, the chiefe of the State, his ornaments and authoritie. 17. Of the
Gouernours, and of their office. 18. Of the Podesta for strangers, and his iurisdiction.
19. Of the soueraine Sindies, and their power. 20. Of the Rota, whereas they treat of ciuile
causes. 21. Of the authoritie and office of Consuls. 22. Of the beginning of the office of S.
George, and the great priuiledges. 23. Of the Protectors of the office of S. George: and the man-
ner of choosing them. 24. Of the office of sware and sortie, and the cause of their creation. 25. Of
the bishopricke of Genoua, and the Bishops that are his Suffragans.



Liguria lyes betwixt the riuers of Var and Magra, and hath vpon the
West part for bounds the Alpes, which diuide Prouence from Ita-
lie; vpon the East Tuscanie; vpon the South the Ligustick Sea,
which extends about one hundred and sixtie miles; and vpon the
North the Appennin Hills, and a great part of Lombardie of this
side the riuier of Po. It is properly called Liguria, beyond Po, dis-
tinguishing it from Liguria, on this side Po, which is Monterrat. At
Genoua, they call it the riuier or coast of Genoua, of the name of the first townie of Ligu-
ria, the riuier, coast, or countrie of Genoua it is diuided into East and West, hauing in the
East part of Genoua for the chiefe and Metropolitan citie. The East part, is that which
is from Port de Luna vnto Genoua, and the Westerne part, is that which doth ex-
tend from Genoua vnto Monaco. The places of most importance of this countrie,
which are to be regarded, besides Nizze, and Villefranche (which belongs to the
Duke of Sauiy, and Monaco to the king of Spaine, the which he bought of late yeares
of the lord which enioyed it, as some say, for one hundred thousand crownes) there is
the good townie, Arbengue, Cure, Final, a famous marquisar, so called of the
name of the ayre, Nola with a reasonable good port, and Saoua: and neere vnto Sa-
oua the Appennin Hills begin to rise, and extending themselves along the Sea vnto
the

I.

the towne of Bobbia begins to bend towards the North, and diuiding Italie through A the middle, it goes to the towne of Ascoli in Pouillia. There it diuides it selfe into two branches, the one ends with the mountaine of S. Ange, in old time called *Carigane*, and the other makes two branches, neere vnto Venole, whereof the one runs into the land of Bari, and the other into the countrie of Calabria. But returning vnto the Sea coast we find Genoua, the chiefe towne of Liguria, the which commands ouer most part of this countrie, as also of the Island of Gallinaria, which is neere vnto it, with the Island of Corsica.

II. Genoua is a verie ancient towne, built (as some say) by *Giano Genio Prisco* king of Italia, and from him tooke the name: others write by *Ianus* the sonne of *Saturne*, and by others, the which I leaue vnertaine. It was subiect to the Romans, and was ruined by *Mago* the sonne of *Haniball* the Carthaginian, and repaired againe by *Lucretius Scruus*, by commandement of the Senat. It was in good esteeme two hundred and ninetie years before the coming of Christ, as doth appeare by a Table of Brasse, which was found of late in the valley of Pozzenere, and is set in S. Laurence Church, where it is written in ancient letters, That vnder the Consulship of *Lucius Cecilius*, and of *Quintus Manutius*, the Senat of Rome sent Iudges to decide the suit, which was depending betwixt the Vidures and the Geneuiois, by reason of the neighbour valleys: and for that the execution of the sentence, and the freeing of prisoners which were detained, should be made at Genoua; it may be conceiued that in those dayes it was in some estimation.

This noble citie of Genoua, stands vpon the shore of the Ligusticke Sea, hauing a spacious and goodly port, which being opposit to Africke looks towards the South, as the towne doth also, hauing on the backe of it the North. Part of it stands vpon the declining of a hill, and part in a plaine, and betwixt two valleys, being six miles in circuit. There are a great number of inhabitants and stately Palaces, especially along the Sea shore, so as there can be nothing more pleasant and beautifull to behold: and this is the reason why they call it Genoua the proud. Round about this citie there are goodly gardens and pleasant villages. In some places there are palaces and houses better built and set forth than in Genoua it selfe, as at Albano, Bisagni, Misagno, Marafi, Maltade, Balchena, Castelletto, Carbonaro, Minuta, Montegalio, with an infinit number of others.

This towne hath bene alwaies in reputation, and held for one of the keyes of Italie, by reason of the situation. It hath in former times bene very powerfull at sea, so as her citifens haue won famous victories, and haue extended the bounds of their dominions vnto the riuer of Don or Tanais: for they conquered the towne of Theodosia, which they now call Caffa, in the Taurique Cherlonese; and moreover they made subiect to their power, the Islands of Cipres, Lesbos, and Chio, with the towne of Pera in Thrace. They were in the beginning subiect to the Romanes (as I haue said) vntill the yeare of grace 600, or as some write 660, whenas *Rotares* king of the Lombards tooke it, and spoiled it: afterwards, it was recovered by *Charlemaigne*, who had taken *Desiderius* king of the Lombards at Paulia, and then they were subiect to *Pepin* sonne to *Charlemaigne*, E who was made king of Italie, and to his descendants, by whom they were gouerned for the space of one hundred yeares, appointing gouernors, whom they called Earles. And whenas the Sarrazins entred into the Island of Corsica and tooke possession thereof, *Ademar* Gouernor, or Earle of Genoua, armed forth a fleet of galleis and other warlike vessels, and went to succour them of this Island; who meeting with the Sarrazins fleet at Sea, incountred it valiantly, and defeated it, though he himselfe was slaine. Yet notwithstanding the Geneuiois seized vpon the Island, and carried away thirteene of the enemies ships to Genoua: since which time Corsica hath bene alwaies subiect to this Estate. Matters succeeded well vntill the yeare 935, which was a very vnfortunate yeare for this citie, for that (*Berengarius* the third vsurping the name of the Romane Empire, F and *Stephen* the seventh, being Pope of Rome) the Sarrazins being confederat with the Carthaginians, and coming into Italie, they tooke and sacked Genoua, where hauing slaine many cruelly, in the end they carried away all the young children they could find, and past into Africke, leauing the citie wholly abandoned and without inhabitants. But

Andrew Dandolo who was then duke of Venice writes) within a short time, all the said citifens were brought backe againe: since which time it hath encreased much, as well as in goodly buildings, and in power at Sea, where they commanded for many yeares, keeping prias from theeuers at their pleasure. After *Charlemaigne* and his sonne, they endured much by the tyrannie of their own citifens, and were sometimes forced to receiue strangers to be their Lords, and by their ciuile difcensions they lost all command which they had at sea. This citie hath bene diuersly gouerned, first by four hundred and thre created by the people, for one yeare, and then by six: and in the yeare 130 they made three Consulls, and fourteene men for ciuile affaires. In the yeare 1142, the people made choise of ten Consulls to gouerne the common weale for a yeare. After that they created a Pretor, who with the Consulls should haue a care of the citie, the way was in the time of *Frederic Barbarossa*, who commanded them to make this choise, the other cities of Italie. In the yeare 1257, there was a captaine of the people choise made a companion to the Pretor, the which continued fix yeares; after which came all the authoritie vnto the Pretor. Thus they continued with diuers changes, the yeare 1318, whenas the people gaue themselves to Pope *John* the two and twenty, and to *Robert* king of Naples, by whom they were gouerned vnto the yeare 1335, in which time (the hatred and factions growne betwixt the citifens) the families of *Malatesta*, and *Doria*, were expelled the citie: and to their ciuile difcords increasing, they thought it fit to create a new magistrat, who might be perpetual, to see by this if they might pacifie the combutions of the citie, and preserue it: whereupon they made choise of *Simon Bocca Negra*, and named him duke, in the yeare 1339, which ment continued with many mutinies and alterations of the subiects, vntill that the sons of the Guelphes and Ghibellins began, so as the Guelphes were forced to send from *Charles* the seventh the French king, who sent a French gouernor vnto Genoua, behauing himselfe insolently thirteene yeares, and going to Milan, thinking at his returne to Genoua, he was shut out of the gates and lost his gouernment the yeare 1403. After which the citifens did chuse *John Maria Visconti* duke of Milan, for Pretor, who sent *Theodor Paleologo* marquis of Montferrat, to be his Lieutenant, who gouerned the citie foure yeares: but *John Maria* being slaine, the citifens created a duke: within six yeares after they called *Philip Maria* *Angelo* duke of Milan, to be Pretor, vnder whose protection they liued fifteene yeares, with great tranquillitie in the end the citifens disdaining that he had so honourably receiued *Alphonso* Aragon and Naples, with the noblemen and barons their prisoners, and after that they at libertie without their priuitie, they gathered together, & created eight of the libertie: who within awhile after being dissuised, they made a duke, the yeare 1436. In the yeare 1450, *Peter* of Campo Fregoso being duke, and his gouernment displeasing to the citifens, they forced him to flie, by the fauour of *Charles* the eighth, vnder whose protection the citie remained, vntill the yeare 1461, whenas the French expelled the French, made choise of a new duke: but the French king sent an armie to Genoua, which forced them to returne vnder his obedience: afterwards they tooke armes against the French, seeking to take Castelletto, the French had fortified for king *Charles*, but finding themselves too weak; they sent from *Francis Sforce* duke of Milan, who sent them good succours, by which they expelled the French. Whereupon the Geneuiois to shew themselves thankfull to *Sforce*, sent twentie Embassadors to Milan, to present him the scepter, standards, and sale of the citie, and choise him for their Lord in the yeare 1463, the French and his succours enioied fourteene yeares. Then the citifens taking armes *John Galeazzo*, they recovered Castelletto, and expelled the garrison, creating a duke in the yeare 1483, the citifens sent an Embassage to Milan to the said duke *Sforce*, and did present vnto him the standard of S. *George*, the keyes of the citie, and swearing obedience & fealtie vnto him: after which the duke created *John Galeazzo* gouernour of Genoua; and so the Geneuiois remained subiect to the duke *Galeazzo*, and to *Lodonic Sforce* cleuen yeares, vntill the coming of *Lewis* the twelfth,

twelfth, the French king, who expelled *Lodouicke Sforce* out of the duchie of Milan, in the year 1499: and then the Geneuiois gaue themselves to the French king, whom they obeyed eight yeares. In the year 1507, the people taking armes, and expelling the nobilitie, created a duke, called *Paulo de Noui*, a diert of cloth, an auncient, and an honest man, who although he refused much to accept of this office, yet they forced him to vndergoe it, and so they rebelled from the French king; to whom all the nobilitie went to craue ayd, that they might returne into their countrie.

The French king came to Genoua with a great armie, and forced the people to obedience, restoring the gentlemen, and cutting off the head of *Paulo* their duke: and to the end he might keepe Genoua vnder obedience, he caused a fort to be built vpon the port, calling it *La Briglia*, saying, that he would so bridle that vntamed horle, as hereafter he should not kicke against his rider; yet within few yeares after, it was ruined by the citifens. In the year 1512, the French being expelled Italie, by the meanes of Pope *Iulio* the second, and the Venetians; the Geneuiois recouering their libertie, created *Lion Fregosa* duke of Genoua, yet afterwards *Lewis* the French king sending an armie into Italie, it returned vnder his obedience, but continued not long, the French being defeated at Nouara. In the year 1513, *Ottauio Fregosa* was made duke of Genoua, with the consent of the people. At the coming of *Francis* the French king in the year 1515, he gaue ouer his office, and made an accord with king *Francis*, and remained gouernour of the cite, in the kings name, and so continued seuen yeares, vntill the year 1522, when as the French being expelled Italie, *Prospero Colonna*, Generall of the league made betwixt Pope *Leo* the tenth, the Emperour *Charles* the fift, and the Florentines, came and tooke Genoua with the gouernor *Ottauio Fregosa*, giuing the towne in sacke vnto the souldiers for three daies. After all this, in the year 1527, *Francis* the French king being in league with Pope *Clement* the seuenth, the Venetians, Florentines, and others, to expel the Emperors forces out of Italie, the king sending *Monseur de Lantrec* with fortie thousand men by land, and *Andrew Doria* with a fleet by sea, they besieged Genoua, & forced it to submit it selfe vnder the French kings obedience, who presently sent *Theodor Trivulze* to be gouernor. The next yeare the citifens sent an honorable Embassage to the king, intreating him that he would be pleased, that the cite might enioy her auncient libertie, the which being granted, they made choyce of eight citifens, with a duke to gouerne the cite, since which time they haue enioyed their libertie. And thus I haue briefly related vnto you, the feuerall and tumultuous gouernements of this cite.

IIII. Sauone is also an auncient towne in Liguria, the which (according vnto some) was in old time called *Sabatia* or *Sabate*. It is one thousand fise hundred paces in circuit, and hath stately buildings. It hath bene vnder the power of diuers lords, as the Geneuiois, Viscounts, and the *Sforces* dukes of Milan, and also of the French, and of themselves; but now they obey the Geneuiois. There are come three Popes out of this towne, that is, *Gregorie* the seuenth, *Iulio* the second, and *Sixtus* the fourth.

V. Passing the river which they call of the East, behind it lies *Capo de Monte*, *Porto Fino*, and *Ripalle* with his gulfes, and beyond it *Chiuri*, *Sestri*, and *Leuanto*, which are reasonable good places. Next there is a little gulf, which is nothing but a port, with the places of *Portouenere* and *Spezie*, and beyond it *Lerice*. They doe also hold *Hersfane*, which is a strong place fronting vpon the Florentins: and of this place depends the cite of *Vingimille* and *Piene*, with many villages, castles, and Boreighs. Corfica is the least of three Islands which ioine vpon Italie, whereof the two others are *Sicile* and *Sardinia*. The Greekes doe call it *Cymos*, or *Cyrne*, of a sonne of *Hercules*, and some haue held it was that which *Onide* calleth *Tetraphie*. It hath for bounds vpon the West and North the *Ligusticke* Sea, vpon the East the *Tyrrhene* and *Ionian* Seas, and vpon the South the straight of Sea, which is betwixt it and *Sardinia*: For it hath vpon the North the Cape of *Corfe*, and looks towards *Portouenere*, from the which it is sixtie miles, and not one hundred and twentie, as some haue written, it is from *Sardinia* sixtie fliades (as *Strabo* writes) which make seuen miles and a halfe: others say, a Germane league, which may be gone in an houre. *Leander* sets ten Italian miles, and others nineteene, the which

A which cannot be. But *Mercator*, who hath made a more exact computation than any other, sets but six miles. *Strabo* makes this Island to be one hundred and sixtie miles long, but without doubt, it is but 120. *Plinie* hath made it sixtie miles broad; and *Strabo* seuentie, the which is true. The circuit (according vnto *Plinie*) is three hundred twentie miles, and according vnto some, three hundred and fise, and to others three hundred and ninetie, but the truth is, it is iust three hundred twentie and fise miles. It is in the selfe climat, and doth hold the twelfth and thirteenth parallels, and the longest day in Sommer is scarce fiftene houres.

This Island was first held by the *Tyrtheniens* or *Tuscians*, then by the *Carthagenians*, from whom it was taken by the Romans, who enioyed it vntill they were expelled by the *Sarazins*; and they were dispossessed by the Geneuiois, and these by the *Pisians*, and in the end they were vnder the Popes obedience: but last of all, they returned vnder the subiection of the Geneuiois, whom they now obey.

This Island is diuided at this day into foure parts, that is to say, the exterior part, and the inward part, the countrie that is on this side the mountains, and that which lies beyond the mountains. That part which looks to the Sun rising, is called the interior part, and that which is opposit, the exterior. That part which is neerest vnto Italie, is called the side the mountains; and that which looks towards *Sardinia* beyond the mountains, yet the inhabitants call one another on this side, or beyond the mountains, according to their dwellings.

C. *Plinie* faith, That there were three and thirtie towne in this Island, the which hath also bin noted by *Martian Capella*. But *Strabo* writes, That they were no townes, but castles, and doth number onely foure townes in his time, amongst the which there were two colonies, the one called *Mariana*, of *Marius*; and the other *Aueria*, sent by *Scylla*. But at this day there is in a manner but one towne, called *La Bastie*, neere vnto the Sea, the which is but a small one: vpon the farthest part of *Corfica*, which looks towards *Sardinia*, there is a castle called *Boniface*, sometimes named the port of *Siracula*, where there is a good haue. Some yeares since, the Geneuiois sent a colonie of their owne nation to inhabit there, who built a little towne neere vnto *Boniface*, vpon a port of the sea, which they call *Portouecchio*, that is to say, the old Port, about halfe a dayes journey from *Boniface*. As for *Aleria* it is three German leagues or thereabouts from *Bastie*: but it is ruined at this day, and is inhabited onely by shepherds. The bishopricke hath been transported to *Bastie*: as for *Ajazz*, notwithstanding that the *Corficans* doe make some esteeme of it, yet it is no great matter. This Island hauing been held for a time by the French, was restored againe to the Geneuiois by the peace made in the year 1559, betwixt the French king of Spaine.

¶ The Qualitie.

VI. The country of Liguria is for the most part rough and hillie, whereas there is nothing in a manner to be seene, but rocks and precipices, which leaue verie strait and narrow passages neere vnto the sea, and as *Strabo* faith, it was in old time verie barren, and had nothing worth the relating, but that within (where there is nothing in a manner but hills, forests, and precipices) there were verie huge trees, as there are at this day, which they employed to make shipping, with the which they did robe and spoyle to the strait of *Gibraltar*. But now the land is better manured, yielding great store of verie good wine, for in the countrie which is neere vnto the towne of *Tabia*, they make wine, which yields nothing to the malmsee of *Candie*, the which they call wine of *Apian*; there is also in Liguria great store of oyle, so as some yeares it yields 20000 barrels. Neere vnto the towne of *S. Remie* there is great store of Citrone trees, Oranges, Palmes, Lemons, & other fruit trees. All that is neere *Andoria* is full of vines. Finally, the whole countrie of Liguria is verie pleasant, by reason of the Citrons, Oliues, Oranges, & other trees, which they haue planted. But all the grace and beautie of the riuier of Genoua is gathered together, and compact in a little place neere vnto the towne, which they call *Nerui*: for this place hath the best and the most temperat ayre that can be desired, such varietie of flowers, as it is impossible

impossible to see any thing that is more delightfull, and such diuerſitie of fruits, as it ſeemes an earthly paradise, ſo as this place knows no other ſeaſon but the Spring and the Autumne, which doe neuer abandon it. The onely want of this countrey, is come and ſheſh, yet that little which they haue is exceeding good.

VII. As for Corſica, it is at this day full of Forreſts, euen in the heart of the countrey, ſo as it is not very fit for tillage, and beares little wheat, or any other graine, but in ſome places whereas the countrey is bare, and ſated with certaine riuers and waters: yet the ſoyle doth yeeld verie good fruits, with excellent and delicate wines. This Iſland abounds in honie, wax, roſſen, and in like manner oyle and figges. There growes great ſtore of box, as *Plinie* and *Diodorus* write, and there are alſo many venomous trees, from which if the bees ſucke any thing, they make their honie verie bitter. It breeds ſtrong horſes, and tul of courage, and verie great hounds, as alſo a kind of Ramme, which *Plinie* calls *Mufiro*, and the inhabitants *Muffolt*, the which hath haire like a goat, in ſtead of wooll. They doe alſo find *Alume*, and mynes of yron in the countie of *Niobe*. There are Salt-pits in like manner, which they commonly call *Reya*, neere vnto the port of *S. Florent*. And neere vnto *Niobe*, there are deepe valleys, the which are continually covered with ſnow, vnder the which they ſay, there is much Chriſtall. They find *Corrall* in the Sea betwixt *Corſica* and *Sardinia*, neere vnto *S. Boniface*.

VIII. There are alſo hot ſulphurie waters, which they commonly call the bathes of *Pietra Pola*, the which are good for ſcabbes, and for ſinews that be ſhruncke, and in other places there are many waters both hot and cold, medicinable for diuers diſeaſes. The three chiefe riuers are *Galum*, *Liamon*, and *Tauignan*, whoſe currents fall directly into the Sea.

IX. In the Iſland of *Gallinaria*, there are many hens, the which are not much vnlike ours, yet they are of a certaine ſauage kind, for that they neuer lay their egges, nor hatch their chickens in houſes, but onely in woods.

¶ The Manners of the Ancients.

X. The inhabitants of *Liguria*, were in old time held to be great Pirats at Sea, by which D means they went and ſought for all things which they needed: and moreover, they were wont to exchange the timber of their great trees, for oyle, wine, and other neceſſaries, for moſt part of the time they liued of milke and ſheepes fleſh, and of a drinke made with water and barley. Some Authors haue held, that this nation was diſcended from certaine Grecians; at the leaſt, it is the opinion of *Strabo*: but *Thucydides* thinks, that they are come from the Sicilians. *Flores* makes mention of the *Ligurians*, who hid themſelues in holes and caues of the mountaines, as the *Oſſubes*, *Deciat* and *Burial*, ſay the like. This countrey hath in old time bred many great Captaines.

As for the Corſicans, *Strabo* ſaith, That whenas the Roman Captaines made any roads into this Iſland, bringing great numbers of ſlaues to Rome, they did admire theſe Barbarians, who were altogether ſavage, and were more like beaſts than men: for either they did ſeek and hunt after death by all poſſible means, or elſe they tyred their maſters with their impatience and little wit, who were grieued to haue ſo employed their money, although they coſt verie little.

¶ The Manners at this day.

A T this day, the Geneuois and *Ligurians* haue ſhaken off all their brutiſhneſſe, where- unto they were giuen, and are growne verie induſtrious, quicke witted, and ſubtile, the which they ſhew in their affaires, and in the great trafficke which they vſe, whereas F they manage their buſineſſe ſo well, as the greateſt part of them are rich. They oppole themſelues willingly to great dangers, for gaine, and make greater ſhips than any other that go to ſea. They haue good knowledge to manage the affaires of their Commonweal exceeding well, and yet they are haucie and verie factious, ſtil deſiring innouations: ſo as one

A one coming to tell king *Francis*, that the Geneuois would giue themſelues vnto him, he answered ſuddenly, that he would none of them, and that he gaue them vnto all the diuils, their reſolutions were ſo inconstant. They are for the moſt part tall, & of pleaſing aspect. They liue in their priuat houſes miſerably, but when there is queſtion of any change of ſhew, they are ſumptuous, or rather exceſſiue. They haue many good ſouldiers, and good captaines among them, as we may obſerue in the houſe of *Doria*, & in the marquis *Spinoſa*, one of the moſt confident, vigilant, and moſt aduifed commanders of our time. They are alſo valiant at Sea, and vnderland trafficke exceeding well.

As for the Corſicans, they are nothing ſo ciuile nor neate as the Italians; they are XI. B wonderful cruel, and retaine that ſtill which *Cæſar* wrote of them in that regard: but they are good ſouldiers, and very courageous; and whenas this nation ſhould haue no other great captaine but the Marſhall of *Ornano* (as in effect it is all the honour of this nation) yet ſhal it be for euer glorious in this conſideration. Finally, they are ſo full of reuenge, as the Italians haue a common prouerbe which ſaith, That they muſt neuer truſt a Corſicane, neither aloue nor dead, for that as ſoone as any one is ſlaine, preſently all his kinſmen meet to kill him, if it be poſſible, that ſlew him: and notwithstanding that they make ſome accord, yet there is no great truſt in it, for that he may be ſurpriſed when he dreames leaſt of it; ſo as the beſt courſe is to looke well to himſelfe, and not to make any ſtrike league of amitie with reconciled enemies. When the Corſicans come into a C ſtrange countrey, they are carefull to helpe one another, and they ſay that they are of good houſes, and of qualitie, & yet for the moſt part when they come out of their Iſland they are rude, and very ill apparelled, norwithſtanding they ſeek to furniſh themſelues as well as may be, before they ſhew themſelues. Some are much bettered, conſuerſing with other nations, as in effect, I haue ſeene ſome very ciuile; but the number of them is very ſmall. There are few of them that affect learning, or that haue bene bred vnto it, yet they admire it in others. But before I make an end of this part, I thinke it fit to ſet downe what they commonly ſay in Italie of the Geneuois: they ſay, that they are ignorant in matters of counſell, and that they intreat their gueſts modeſtly, but they take no great delight to entertaine them: that they liue of letices: that they are very near in D their apparel: and as touching the trade of merchandize, they ſay, that they are wonderful patient, and that they haue alwaies been pirats, baſe, miſerable, enuious, and greedy: and as for the women of *Genoua*, they hold them to be very laſciuious.

¶ The Riches.

They carry great ſtore of citrons, oranges, lymons, and oyle, from the riuer or countie of *Genoua* into all the parts of Italie and other prouinces, which yeeld great profit to the Geneuois. The Corſicans carrie wine to Rome, where it is much eſteemed, for the which they receiue great ſummes of money. Finally, the Geneuois are wholly E giuen to exchange, and to a certaine kind of gaine, the which is profitable to priuat men, but nothing beneficiall to the common weale: for the ordinarie reuenue of the rowne, is not aboute thirtie thouſand crownes, the which they raiſe vpon euery fire, as a kind of rent. As for the reuenue of the common weale, it conſiſts in cuſtomes, impoſts, and other rights, and it is employed in the expences of the pallace, for that the other townes of the ſeigneurie pay the wages of their officers and guards. And this reuenue, which may amount to foure hundred thouſand crownes, is ingaged and aſſigned to the Mount of *S. George*, which doth gouerne it diſcreetly, and diuides vnto thoſe that haue an intereſt in the Mount, and it makes a ſtocke for the neceſſities of the common weale. They F draw ſo great wealth from Spaine, as there is not any citie in Italie whereas priuat men are ſo rich. Many haue had for payment, or for aſſurance of the credit which they haue giuen, important Eſtates, both in Spaine and the realme of Naples. We may eaſily gueſſe at the wealth of the Geneuois, by the diſburſments of the money which the marquis *Spinoſa* hath made, wherewith he hath paid the armie in the Low Countries: for it is well known, that his mother hath gone often vnto the exchange, demanding to whom her

her sonne was indebted, to the end she might pay it, notwithstanding that the summes were very great, as may be easily coniectured. The king of Spaine is so indebted to the Geneuoi, as they say, that in the year 1600 they did reckon vpon the place, that this king ought them eightene millions. We may then easily guesse whereunto this summe is now come, if they haue continued their accompts according to the course of the place.

As for the common-weale, it cannot be said what they do draw cleerely from those countries which they hold; and many thinke that it is not rich, & that if there happen any extraordinarie affaires, priuat men desirous to maintaine it, would supply her wants, for that they haue little, or no publicke treasure at Genoua, hauing no treasure full of gold and siluer, as that of Venice. That which makes them lesse carefull thereof, is the assurance which they haue of the king of Spaines protection, who is in effect their maister, and drawes from them good summes in his necessitie, the which he will repay when the humour takes him, for other wise they shall neuer get it.

¶ The Forces.

XIII. The seigneurie of Genoua cannot be said to be very strong in Italie, in regard of places: for as for their chiefe towne, it hath good walls, and store of ordnance, but yet not able to make any long resistance. But it holds it selfe to be strong, as I haue said, being vnder the protection of the king of Spaine. As for Corsica, they make account of Bastie as of a strong place, and also of Ajazze, and of the Castell of S. Boniface. This seigneurie doth commonly entertaine certaine companies of Corsicans within Genoua, for the guard of the citie, and in Corsica, Geneuoi, who are put into garrison in the best places. And besides that, there are certaine companies of light horse, who run along the coast to hinder the surprises and spoiles of the Turkes, who notwithstanding do often carrie away many people to Alger, or to some other places in Africke: so as we must make no great account of the Geneuoi forces but at sea, where they are yet sufficiently strong, hauing their support, the which might faile them, if he himselfe were engaged in any great action. They do commonly entertaine foure galleis for the guard of the river of Genoua: moreouer by their auncient ordinances, they should alwaies haue five and twentie galleis in the arcmall, readie to be armed vpon any occasion. There are within the seigneurie ten thousand valiant men readie to arme at any need, and vpon the two riuers many expert mariners.

¶ The Government.

XIIII. The State of Genoua hauing beene much tormented by their factions and partialities, and alwaies in armes, the families expelling one another, and sometimes the noblemen being maisters, and sometimes the people, one partie fauoring the *Admiral*, and another the *Fregeses*: in the end they recovered the libertie which they now enioy: for Genoua being vnder the subiection of the French, and *Andrew Doria* quitting the seruice of king *Francis*, whose Admirall he was, freed himselfe and his countrie from seruitude in the year 1528, wherein he shewed a noble resolution: for that hauing meanes to leize vpon this Estate, and being intreated, and as it were forced by his friends, who had power to commaund him, he did chuse rather to leaue it at libertie, with as much glorie to future ages, as any one could merit that had bene so rare a president. For the which the Geneuoi did worthily erect a statue vnto him for a perpetuall glorie and memorie of this fact.

The citie with this new reformation tooke the forme of gouernment, which they now hold. They made a description of all the rich families, as well noble as popular, which had six houses open in the citie of Genoua, & the account being made, they found eight and twentie of this sort. All the rest which were of any note, but had not six houses open, were ioined to the number of eight and twenty families: so as the government remained

A in the hands of the eight and twentie families, with the title of Gentlemen, excluding the rest of the people, yet giuing libertie that they might yearely adde ten vnto this bodie, which might be made gentlemen, either for their wealth or vertue. The chiefe families are these: the *Centurioni*, *Lomellini*, *Spinoli*, *Doria*, *Pallavicini*, *Cibi*, *Iustiniani*, *Ternari*, *Sauli*, *Angeli*, *Marini*, *Catanei*, *Seluaggi*, *Negri*, *Grilli*, *Promontori*, *Imperiali*, *Negroni*, *Fodamar*, *Pinali*, *Calui*, *Frenchi*, *Itaboni*, *Freschi*, &c.

Of the whole bodie of these families they made a Councell of foure hundred persons yearly, who with the duke and the gouernours haue the rule of the Common-weale. This Councell chuseth the duke and the eight gouernours, and these gouernours haue charge of the State during two yeares. This Councell treats of affaires of importance, and that which concerns the good of the Seigneurie, and the duke with the gouernours are particularly called the Seigneurie: but if they be to treat of any matters which be not of so great importance, & yet of some consideration, the Seigneurie weth a Pettie Councell, which consists of one hundred gentlemen chosen by the Seigneurie, and these are taken out of the bodie of foure hundred.

The duke is the head of the Common weale, and hath the titles and honours due vnto him. It is an auncient dignitie in this citie, and he that is created continues in this Estate two yeares, and dwells in the publicke palace, during the time of his principalltie, and hath for his guard five hundred Germans, representing herein the forme of an abso-
C lute Prince. When he is chosen duke, he is attired two dayes together with his Ducall ornaments, after which he carries all the time of his magistracie another habit, but yet of cymon veluet or fatten, and sometimes of purple: his authoritie is verie great, for that he alone may propound any thing to the Councell or Senat, the which no other Senator may doe: by reason whereof, whoeuer will propound a law, or any other thing, to the Common-weale, he must of force informe the duke, and passe through his hands.

The manner of chusing the duke is thus: The third of Ianuarie the Senat assembles with the Pettie Councell, without the presence of the precedent duke, for that hauing ended the time of two yeares, he returns the first of Ianuarie vnto his house, and there remains as a priuat person, and Procurator of the Common-weale for his life. The Pettie Councell with the Senat chuse eight and twentie gentlemen, one out of euerie familie, who are called vnto the Palace as soone as they are chosen, and then are shut vp into a place apart: These with the Senators (who by reason of their age, or for the contumacie of the familie, are incapable to be dukes) chuse eightene men amongst them, one of a familie, who make election with the other eight and twentie, the which being called and shut vp with the said Senators, giue their suffrages, who shall be propounded vnto the Great Councell for duke. But you must obserue, that they cannot propound vnto the Great Councell about foure persons, and it is necessarie that in the election of these, two third parts of the eight and twentie must agree amongst themselves, with the partie of the Senators: And this action being ended, before they depart they chuse other eight and
E twenty, one out of euerie familie, who returne and giue their voyces with other touching the foresaid foure, and they may take the two third parts for their election, and put one or more in the place of them that are not allowed, so as they be of the Senat. This being done, the Councell assembles, and they propound the foure men that are chosen by the electors, and he that hath most balots or suffrages remains duke.

There are eight gouernors which sit vpon the same forme with the duke, as his Councillors. Their office continues two yeare, and they with the duke haue the name of the Seigneurie. They gouerne the Common-weale, and yet alone they cannot resolue of any thing which concerns the publicke interest, or is of great importance, but they must of force assemble the great Councell. These gouernours are chosen two at a time euerie
F six months. Their election is made after this manner: They assemble the Pettie Councell with the Senat and duke; these make choyce of eight and twentie, one of a familie, who being chosen with the Senat and duke, do sometimes propound twelue, sometimes fourtene vnto the great Councell, who by the pluralitie of their voyces make choyce of one of them at a time. The next day they obserue the like order, to make choyce of the second,

XV.

XVI.

cond, that is to say, the Pettie Councell chuse other eight and twentie, and these eight A and twentie performe the rest, as hath been said.

Euerie one of the said eight gouernours, after the time that his office is expired remains protector of S. George for two years : so as in the Colledge of procurators, you shall alwayes see the eight which haue gouerned the Common-weale, and all these enter into the Senat with the duke and the eight gouernours, deliberating of matters of importance; and these gouernours haue the charge of all the Estate, and two of them remaine in the Palace with the duke, and the other six in their houses, and they are changed alternatiuely, two euerie three moneths. Of the Procurators there are some for life, and these haue bene dukes; and some are onely for two years, that is to say, they B that haue bene gouernours : These haue the charge of the publicke affaires, touching the reuenues, and such like matters : and they are men of great esteeme and good reputation.

XVII. All the said magistrats attend onely the gouernement of the Common-weale : as for matters of iustice and judgement, speaking first of crimes, they haue commonly a potestate, who is a straunger and a Doctor, to whom they giue good entertainment. This Potestate remains in a palace neere vnto the duke, he takes knowledge and giues judgement vpon all crimes : but he cannot execute his sentence, if it doth inflict death, without the content of the Senat. There are moreover two other strange Doctors, whereof the one is called Iudge of the malices or crimes, and the other Fiscall : and with the ayde of C these two Iudges, the Potestat draws the proceffe of offenders, and doth such like things. Besides, the Potestat hath his lieutenant, who hath care of ciuile causes which concerne onely the execution.

There is an office of seuen men, called Extraordinarie, who represent in a manner the Princes person, for that it is employed in the conduct of the Common-weale. Their charge is, to prolong and cut off suits, and to giue tutors to Pupils ; and if it happen that the kinemen be at suit among themselves, or that a poore man pleads against a rich, they doe commonly appoint what magistrats they thinke good to heare them that plead. Their office continues six moneths, and is of great dignitie.

XVIII. There is also a magistrat of fise men, called Soueraigne Syndics, whose authoritie is D to sensure both the duke and gouernours, when their charge is expired. They doe the like with the other magistrats of the Common-weale, and they haue authoritie to punish the duke and gouernours if they find they haue erred, whose time of gouernement being expired, there is a proclamation made by order from the Syndics, that if any man will say any thing against the duke, or the gouernours, he shall come before them; and for this cause, the duke and gouernours remaine eight dayes subiect to the Syndication, which being past, they either punish them if they find they haue offended, or else they giue them an attestation of their innocencie, with the which afterwards they make them Procurators, the which they cannot be without this Patent or certificat. Moreover, they call be fore them many magistrats of the Common-weale : and finally, the greattise of E these offices is such, as the Common-weale made choyce of prince Andrew Doria, for one of their first Syndics : and they haue their place with the Senat, and in the palace neere vnto the duke.

XIX. And for that we haue formerly spoken of criminall matters, we will now say something of ciuile. You must therefore vnderstand, that the Common-weale doth giue wages vnto fise Doctors straungers euerie two yeare, and this bodie of fise is called the Rota. These Doctors take knowledge of ciuile causes, and remaine in the dukes Palace, and all matters are pleaded before them, according to the ordinarie course of the imperiall lawes, and the iudiciall order, ordayned by the citie, which liues after the auncient manner.

XX. As for the matters which concerne arts, there are Censors, who prouide that all sellers, and all such as liue vpon their trades, shall haue iust weights and measures, according F vnto the lawes : and they also prouide for their heads, who are called Consulls, and chosen among the tradesmen. These Consulls haue authoritie in matters which concerne their

A their arts and trades; and among other consulls, they of the trade of filke, haue great power ouer their men; so as they haue authoritie to giue the Strappado, to banish, and to send vnto the gallies, and to appoint other punishments for such as shall offend.

There are fortie capitaines in the citie of Genoua, chosen from among the gentlemen, who are changed euerie yeare. Euerie one of these hath one hundred men vnder his charge, which in all make foure thousand, and these the common-weale doth employ vpon any occasion; for they guard the citie when there is any doubt, and when the seigneurie goes abroad, these fortie capitaines attend on them, being all attired in velvet, which is the ornament of the seigneurie. Moreover all the men of the citie and suburbs, which are fit to carry armes, are inrolled, from the age of twentie yeares, vnto sixtie, and ranked vnder capitaines, being bound to be readie with their armes, when occasion requires. The common-weale hath continually a general who hath the ouersight of armes, to employ them vpon all occurrents, and in time of war.

The office and magistrat of S. George (noble amongt all others in this citie) was instituted in the yere 1407: it hath for a long time preferred this common-weale, which having no naturall riches, for that the qualitie of the countrie will not beare it, hath notwithstanding had men of subtille wits, and great judgements, to find a forme and means to haue money for the enterprises and necessitis of this common-weale. Wherefore in times past, they that gouerned the publicke affaires, tooke money from priuat persons, sometimes willingly, and sometimes by constraint. It is true that in respect of the money which priuat men disbursed, the publicke men gaue them for profit, seuen, eight, nine, and ten in the hundred, according to the diuersitie of times, to the end that such men should receiue no losse for this seruice which they did vnto the common-weale. And to incite them to lend more willingly, they gaue them assurance for their money vpon the publicke reuenues, selling (as for example) to some the rights and iurisdicitions of the customes of graine, to some others the impost of wine and such like, and this contrabewixt the publicke & the priuat, was called among them Compera or Purchase, as if priuat men had bought (for Compara signifies to buy) the rights of the common-weale, and it was ordained that whosoever should lend one hundred pounds, should be D said to haue a place in the Compera, and he that should lend two hundred, two, and so the rest; so as these purchases did multiplie greatly, and there were some which were called purchases of the Chapter, some others of S. Paul, and others of the Sunne, and euerie one of these was gouerned particularly by diuers citifens, who had the charge to pay the money due vnto lenders iustly, and to keepe the accompts betwixt them and the common-weale. But by reason of the great number of purchases made euen by foraine nations, and the multitude of gouernours, there followed much confusion; so as the seigneurie resolved that all purchases should be reduced to one, called the purchase of S. George, and that it should be gouerned yearly by citifens, who should provide and giue order that reason should be done vnto lenders, and hence grew the beginning of the office of S. George.

And for that they knew that the said office gouerned the foresaid matters with wisdom & iustice, & that the common-weale was full of affaires, the number of places increased greatly, so as the common-weale alienating her rents, the charge of this office grew dayly greater, making diuers places & communalities subiect to their gouernment. By reason whereof this office obtained many priuiledges, first of the seigneurie, then of many Popes, Emperors, & Lords which haue commanded the citie of Genoua: so as the office of S. George, although that it depends of the publicke, and of the seigneurie of Genoua, and of them which gouerne the palace, yet is it not subiect vnto the seigneurie; but all they that are admitted to the seigneurie, or to the gouernment of the towne, swear E to preferre the priuiledges of the magistrat of S. George, and to maintain it. And for that naturall things haue weak beginnings, the which in time grow perfect; this magistrat is better ordered and gouerned now, than it was in the beginning. It doth not pay a certaine summe vnto lenders, in regard of the profit and interest, but more or lesse, according to the proportion of his reuenues, and the occasions which he hath to lay out, and

XXI.

and disburse for the preferuation of things which concern his charge, & as the customes A and other reuenues assigned vnto lenders, do profitt.

Moreover, it hath gotten a great command, with many goodly reuenues, the which it had not in the beginning. Since which they have made new lawes and orders; so as it is much more powerfull, touching the expedition of causes, the punishment of offenders, and the manner of gouerning the people which are subiect vnto it. And he that shal duely consider all things, shall see that by reason of this magistrat the bodie of the citie contains in a manner two communalities, the one great, and the other lesse: the great is gouerned by the palace, and comprehends the whole citie: the lesse is gouerned by the Mount of S. George onely, touching the foresaid matters, and contains all the lenders. The great is subiect to changes and alterations, and hath bene many times violently gouerned: but the lesse hath alwaies bene free, firme and vnder her citifens.

XXII.

There are eight gouernors which they call protectors ouer this office, or Mount of S. George: they continue a yere in their charge, and there are 4. of them chosen euery six months out of the whole number of lenders, be they of the countrie, or strangers, yet vnto a certaine summe, and they are made after this manner: They draw eightie men out of the number of the creditors by lots, who being assembled, as soone as they have bin drawne, they put the said eightie againe into a box, of the which they draw foure and thirtie by lots, the which being shut vp together, may not depart before they haue chosen the eight protectors, and he that is chosen must haue sixtene ballots or voices before C he passe.

XXIII.

In the yere 1444 they created another office of eight men, which they call the office of fortie and foure by reason of the yere in which it was created. The cause of the creation of these eight men was, for that the office was so increased in the space of eight and thirtie yeres; as the eight protectors could not end and determine the businesse which fell out in one yere, by reason whereof they had a remainder of profits and reuenues in diuers sorts, wherefore, to the end they might settle some order for these remainders, which are in effect the substance and riches of the office, the creditors thought it necessarie to create certaine men who should haue the charge of the said matters, having a care that all might be for the profit of the magistrat of S. George, and giuing order that D all might be managed secretly, to take away all occasion from tyrannous Lords of doing ill: and after this sort they made the eight citifens, of the which they change two yerely, and their charge is to gather together, and to gouerne that which remains yerely of the reuenues which the eight protectors haue managed.

This Magistrat, or Mount of S. George is Lord of the Island of Corsica, whither they send yearly a Gouernor, a Lieutenant, a Iudge, and other officers. The like they doe in Herefana, which is a place strong of Castells and Forts fronting vpon the Florentines, and at Vingimille a very ancient citie, and to many villages, castells, and boroughs, and also to Tierze and Pienne, whither also they send capitaines, presidents, and officers. This Mount of S. George is very rich in treasure, armes, and counsell, and hath neuer failed to E releue the common-weale in her necessitie.

This hath bene the estate and gouernment of this citie euer since that prince Andrew Doria freed it from the subiection of the French in the yere 1528, as hath bene said. But since they haue bene in danger to fall into a new seruitude, at the least into great combustions: for in the yere 1547 (some write 49) John Augustin Earle of Elisco, a young man, bold, and eloquent, sought to make himselfe perpetuall duke of Genoua, and it subiect to the French. Vpon the first of Ianuarie the said yere, he had seized vpon a port, and had defeated & spoiled the sea armie of prince Doria, and slaine John Doria his nephew: and thus being in his conceit a victor, seeking to leape from one galley to another being armed, and in the night, he fel into the sea and was drowned, and so his ambitious desseigne went to smooke, and the citie remained in peace vnder the protection of the Emperor Charles the first.

In the yere 1574 there fell out a new tumult and combustion in the common-weale; for being molested with their accustomed ciuile discensions, the citie was that yere di- uidid

A naid into two factions of old and new; the old being the chiefe cause of this trouble, who, not content to haue the greater part of the gouernment, hated the new, and disdained (notwithstanding that the new, both for antiquitie of nobilitie, and for their merits, were euery way equall) that they should be alied vnto them. The which did much discontent Matthew Senaregue, a citien of great authoritie, and at that time Chancellor, and chiefe Secretarie of the State, and chiefe of the faction of the new; who by his singular wisdom did often lay before them, both in their publicke and priuat Councils, how vnfit and vnconueniely it was to lue in one citie diuided into factions and partialities, shewing by good and lively reasons, how much better it were for euery one in particular, and more profitable for the Common-weale in general, to lue and conuerse together equally, and to be of one will. But Senaregue being not able to persuaide the faction of the old to this conformitie, nor to diuert them from their obstinacie: they estranged themselves the more from the companie of the new, and were so incensed against him, as he was many times in daunger of his life: and their hatred was the greater, for that he had in a manner the whole gouernment of the State. But Senaregue opposing himselfe with great iudgement against all their pemicious designes, moued chiefly with a general disdaine, he employed himselfe in such sort, as the partie of the new, hauing taken the charge of the gouernment, expelled in a manner all the old and forced them to retire out of the countrie, seeking to take armes against the new. This combustion might C well haue ruined the Common-weale, if Senaregue foreseeing the great daunger, and preferring the publicke good before all priuat affection, how just soeuer, had not by his authoritie suppressed the power of his faction: drawing the emperor, the king of Spain, but especially Pope Gregorie, to deale in those affaires, so as his Holinesse doing what he could possibly to pacifie the discensions of the citie. In the end, the furie of armes ceased. Senaregue hauing therein shewed an admirable integritie and iudgement: who by a general consent being sent embassadour to Rome, preferred the greatnesse and reputation of his pacie, pacifying wisely the two factions, which were mightie, and able not onely to haue ruined their owne countrie, but to haue filled all Italie with combustions, war, and confusions, whereof his Holinesse did giue a most honourable testimonie, writing the D actions of Senaregue to the duke and Procurators of the Common-weale of Genoua.

¶ The Religion, and maters of the Church.

The Genouois, and Corsicans, are all Romish Catholickes. Genoua is an Archbi- XXIII. shoppricke, which hath vnder it the Bishopricks of Luna, now called Sarazana, of Bobia, Aprum or Brunac, of Metene or Maran, of Accia or Amprun, of Noli, and Albenque, and in Corsica the Bishopricke of Nebia.

In Corsica there are the Bishopricks of Mariana, Nebia, Ajasse, Aleria, and Ciuita, whereof some are vnder the Archbishopricke of Piza.

THE



THE COMMONWEALE OF VENICE.

The Contents.

1. **D**escription of the citie of Venice. 2. The number of the Castels, Townes, and Estates subiect to the Seignourie of Venice. 3. Brescia. 4. Verona. 5. Bergamo, Vicence, Crema, &c. 6. Friuli and her Townes, among others, Aquileia built by the Romans. 7. Istria, and the chiefe townes of this Peninsula. 8. Corcyra, now called Corfou: The situation of these Islands, and the confines: The length and breadth: and when it was made subiect to the Venetians. 9. Cephalonia, the circuit, townes, and ports. 10. Zante, the situation and circuit. 11. The Island of Crete, the length, breadth, circuit, and situation: the ports, rivers, and mountaines: containing in old time a hundred townes, for the which it was called by the Auncients, Hecatompolis. 12. Bountie of the ayre of the Marquisat of Treuise, and the chieftownes: Verona abounding in oyle, wine, fruit, and fine wooll. Olives of Bergamo. Excellent wines of Friuli. Physicall herbes of Istria. 13. Corfou, abounding in homie, wax, oyle, salt-pits, oranges, hymons: and the fountaines of Cardachie. 14. Candie, abounding in malmsy, milke, honie, cyres: infested with Phalanges, which are venomous Spiders. 15. Description of a boat in Candie called Bogue-stain, like vnto the Stagge in swiftnesse: and how it is taken. 16. Fishers the first inhabitants of Venice and Rinalto. 17. Venetians of a graue disposition, and louers of libertie. 18. They of Crete in old time held the best Archers of the world. Inuents of the Pyrricke dance, continued among the Peasants vnto this day. Their laws practised throughout all Greece. 19. Of the graue humor of the Venetians of this age, their great iudgement in affaires, their industrie in arts, magnificent, politicke, and greedie: The Venetians, souldous and faithfull: The Padouans inconsistent: The Vicentians reuengefull: and the Candians shyers. 20. Of the reuenues of the Commonweale of Venice, and what it may amount vnto yet. 21. Extravagantie meanes of excaditions, to entertaine armies, and to releene the State. 22. Of certaine meanes to get money for the Seignourie. 23. Of the Forts which are in all the Venetians Estate. 24. Of the Cernides, which are souldiers appointed for the defence of their Forts. 25. What their horse and foot be. 26. Of their sea forces, and gallies at sea: Of the admirable arsenal of Venice, and of the great number of gallies, canon, and workmen which labour there continually. 27. Governement of this Seignourie, and first of the duke and his power. 28. Of the Council of ten, and the Senat which they call the Pregadi, and whereon they treat. 29. The Commonweale of Venice paralleled with the Roman State. 30. The defects and imperfections of this Seignourie. 31. Religion of the Greekes: Shiftnettes tollersted in the Island of Corfou and Candie. 32. A catalogue of the dukes of Venice, their lines and most remarkable actions.



He Commonweale of Venice, for the greatnesse, nobilitie, riches, goodly palaces, situation, and other good parts, is admirable among all the townes of Europe; the situation thereof being so commodious for all things, as it may be held rather a diuine than a humane worke. And although that many Commonweales have exceeded it in greatnesse of empire, in multitudes of people, and in State, yet it is never any towne so strangely situated, nor so securely.

T.

- A. The citie of Venice is built in the most inward part of the gulfes of the Adriaticke sea, in the middle of the lakes of salt water, hauing the said Adriaticke sea vpon the East, which runs in length five hundred and fiftie miles. Betwixt the sea & the said lakes there is a channele or cauley, which they call Lido, made by nature, to defend the Islands which lie in the lake against the furie of the sea: this cauley is five and thirtie miles long, and like a bow, being open in five places, some say seuen, as well for the passage of ships, as to keepe the lakes full of water. The entrie is not free but for small barkes, of burthen are forced to lie at anchor vntill they may be brought in by skillfull pilots who know the passages, which change daily. In the middle of these lakes (made as well by many rivers which are neere, as by the sea water which enters continually by the ports) was that noble citie of Venice built, where there were sixtie little Islands one vnto another, diuided by the water. The first beginning thereof was in the time of the Romans, who comming into Italie with a great armie, spoiled all the townes of the firme land, so as the auncient Venetians, Padouans, and others, fearing the furie of those barbarous Huns, retired themselues with their wiues and families into those Islands, where the Padouans began to build them dwellings at Riuoalto; and this was the first foundation of the citie of Venice, which first beginning some while was about the four hundred and fiftieth year of our saluation: since which time it hath bene augmented and come to that greatnesse which we see at this day: neither hath it for the space of one hundred and two hundred yeres endured any violence or force of war; the which hath happened to any other towne or citie, notwithstanding that the wealth and riches thereof might inuite barbarous nations to seeke the spoile of it.
- C. The Venetians do hold in Lombardie and in the Marquisat, besides Venice, six townes which are great, rich, and very populous, besides many goodly places and castles. The countie of Bergamo, Crema, Brescia, Verona, Vicence, & Padoua: the other places are Ruffo, Castelfranc in the marquisat, and others which I omit to auoid tediousnesse. Toward the North, they are masters in a manner of all Friuli and Istria, which is the last part of Italie of that side. They do command almost all the shoare and Island of Dalmacia and Sclauonia, where there are some good townes, as Zara and Cataro.
- D. They do also enioy in the mouth of the Adriaticke sea, the Island of Corfou, and the Islands of Cefalonia, Zante, Cerigo, and Lucetigo: and in the Archipelago the Island of Zarra; and beyond these Islands that of Candie: and these are all the Estates which are subiect to the seignourie of Venice.
- E. Brescia is the second towne of Lombardie, it is very auncient, and built as some write by the Cenomannie, who descending into Gaule expelled the auncient Tulsans. It hath had many Lords, and about the yeare 1421 it was made subiect to Philip Maria Viscont duke of Milan, vnto whom they yielded vpon certaine conditions: but the citizens being oppressed by him, they gaue themselues to the seignourie of Venice, vnder whom they haue continued vnto this day. It is very populous, and the iurisdiction is great, good, and fertile, yielding all kinds of corne, wine, and all fruits: they haue also mines of yron and copper which yields them great profit. There are in this iurisdiction many good places and valleys of importance. Among the places subiect to this Estate, they giue the prize to Afola and Salo vpon the lake of Garde; among the valleys to Valmonica, which is fiftie miles long and full of Inhabitants: it contains also the lakes of Ise and Idre.
- F. Verona is a great towne and very pleasing, beautified with goodly buildings, and inhabited by ciuile people. Amongst which buildings is the auncient and stately Cathedral Church of S. Anaslatus, and that great Amphitheatre built by L. V. Flaminus. The territorie is fruitful, and yields corne, wine, oyle, and other fruits with abundance of fine wooll. There is no great difference betwixt Verona and Padoua touching the circuit of their walls, but Verona hath twice as many people as Padoua, and for this cause the Venetians are very carefull to entertaine the vniuersitie of Padoua for the profectiue of all arts, to the end it may be the better inhabited.
- G. Bergamo, Vicence, Crema, and Treuise differ little touching the number of inhabitants, and are equal to Modena which hath a particular Duke: but Vicence hath a great

I.

II.

III.

IIII.

V.

Y

territorie, that of Cremona is but small, and Bergamo is of a reasonable great extent.

VI. Friuli lies betwixt the river of Liuençe, Istria, the Alpes, and the Gulfe of Venice: it begins with the Alpes, which decreasing by little and little ends in goodly plains. In this countrie is the river of Liuençe, the which for that it is too neere the sea, falling from the Alpes hath no time to stay her violent course. Vpon this river are the Castles of Contean, Sacile, and Lamsditt. Vpon the river of Lemon which passeth also through the countrie are the townes of Concorde, and Port Gruare. Vpon that of Tagliamento, are the places of Latifare, and Spilimbergue; and not far off S. Daniell and Oloppe. Vpon the river of Narison is the towne of Cuidal d' Austria which is good and rich: then vpon the river of Lilonce the townes of Gradisca, and Goritia, places subiect to the princes of Austria: next it is the mouth of Timauē, and beyond it Trieste, a towne which giues the name vnto the next gulfe. The chiefe of Friuli is Aquileia, a great towne, as the remainders do yet witness: it was built in that place by the Romanes to keepe the passage of the Alpes (which are not soleepe there as in other places) against the Barbarians, enemies to the quiet of Italie: It was rased by *Attila*, so as this let being taken away, the Herules, Huns, and Lombards past at their ease, and of late daies the Turkes. At this day Aquileia seemes rather a village than any thing else: yet it retaines still the Patriarchs Church, famous for the memorie of *S. Marke*, and for the power of the ancient Patriarchs which haue remained there. This seat was transported to Grada by reason of the frequent incursions of the Barbarians vnder Pope *Pelagius*. But the Venetians hauing many yeares after obtained a bishop, the dignitie of Patriarch was in the end transported from the Church of Grada to Venice vnder Pope *Nicholas*, and Aquileia enioyed the title: but for that the aire of the towne is vnwholesome, the gouernment of Friuli and of all that belongs vnto it was reduced to Vdena, a towne which hath fise miles in circuit, and contains about sixteen thousand soules.

VII. Istria begins at the river of Risan or Formion, and extends vnto S. Vit, or as some others write vnto Arsa, which is about two hundred miles. The best townes of this Peninsula are situated vpon little Islands, as Rauigno and Iustinopoli: the rest are Pican, Vmague, Citanoua, Patenze, and Pola which in the time of *Strabo* was the bounds of Italie. The Venetians who desire to people it, giue vnto them that will go and inhabit there, certaine quantitie of land, with diuers exemptions and freedomes. In the midst of the countrie there are not any places of importance.

VIII. Corcyra (a famous Island by the records of the ancients) is that which at this day they call Corfou, lying in the Ionick sea or gulfe of Venice, looking towards Calabria in Italie, and being neere to Epirus or Albania towards the North, it being not about an Italian mile from the land on that side which lies neere to thown of Burtinte: whereas this Island hath sixtie Italian miles from the towne of Otranto which is opposit vnto it. This Island hath bene subiect to all them that haue commanded at sea, vntill the yere of our Lord 1382, whenas they of Corfou seeing themselves exposed to the iniuries of all the world, gaue themselves vnto the Venetians, who haue defended them many times against the furie of the Turkes, and haue so fortified that Island, as it seemes impossible to be taken. It is much more long than broad, and it is made like vnto a halfe Moone or semi-circle, hauing two points, whereof the one which looks towards the East is called the Cape of Leuchim, neere vnto the which, and in the same situation in the gulfe, is another point called Cape Blanke; the other looks towards the North and is called S. Catherines, at the which is the port of Cassope; and the third which is in the midst of the Island, is the point of S. Sydere, whereas the towne of Corfou stands; not far from the which is S. Nicholas point, hauing right against it the Island of S. Vite, and that of Candilionissi. The length of the Island is from the point of Leuchim to the port of Cassope, being foure and fiftie Italian miles: the breadth is to be taken from the Castle of S. Ange, which is about foure and twentie miles: it hath in circuit about eightie miles, yet some in former times haue giuen it three hundred. It is diuided into four quarters, which the Venetians call bayliwicks or gouernments, whereof the first which lies towards the East is called Leuchim, that of the West Laguire, the third is the bayliwick of the midst

A midst, and the fourth carries the name or title of Loros. The towne of Corfou is the chiefe of this Island, and of others adiacent which are subiect to the Venetians command. There is also in the Island of Corfou another towne, which they now call Pagiopoli, or Palopoli. The port of the towne of Corfou is verie great, and able to receiue many ships. There are also the ports of Cassope, S. Sydere, Tymon, Gun, Spile, and Euripe; but those of Sydere and Tymon are dangerous to come into. In this Island in old time liued *Alemon* king of the Phœciacs, and *Nausica* his daughter, who enioyed those goodly gardens whereof *Homer* speaks.

Cephalonia hath a hundred Italian miles in circuit, and it lyes not farre from the continent of Albania, towards Acamano; vpon the East lies the Island of Ithacus, now called Val de Compare; vpon the South that of Zante; vpon the West Sicile; and towards the North the countrie of Epyrus. This Island had in former times foure townes, of which there are no markes remaining. At this day there is the port of Guiscard, and in it the towne of Petilia, or Polaqui. There is also the townes of Sydre and Vardan, and the port of Sydre looks towards the South.

Zante, sometimes called Zacynthus, lies right against the gulfe of Corinthe, now called Lepante, hauing some sixtie miles in circuit.

The Island of Creta or of Candie, hath in length from East to West about 60 French leagues, and not about 16 leagues in bredth: It is about 120 leagues in circuit, going about by sea. Vpon the West it hath the Adriaticke sea; to the North that which carries the name of the Cretif sea; to the South the Lybick; and to the East the Carpathien, as *Ptolomey* describes it. It was famous in old time, for that it had a hundred townes, and therefore the Greeke poet called it Hecatompolis. The situation is more Easterly than that of the countrie of Morea, lying betwixt the countries of Attica, and that of Cyrene in Affricke, being but two dayes journey by sea from either prouince. At this day, according to *Belonus*, there are but three townes of note in this Island, that is, Candie, in old time Manum, the chiefe of this Island, whereof it takes the name; then Canea, sometimes Cidon and Rhetymno. It hath a port which is not verie commodious, but that of Canea and Candie are verie safe. In this Island are the rivers of Melipotame, Scafin, Cladile, Epi-
D cidome, Gisso, & Diuotto, towards the North; Populiar towards the West; and Lymens to the South. The mountaines of note are Ida, called by the inhabitants Philoriti; Luci, which *Plinie* calls Cadussi, & at this day Madure; and Dictē, which they call Sethie. This Island seemes to be made to command all Greece for that it lies not farre from Peloponnesus, and may command all the sea towards Greece. It was sold to the Venetians by the Marquis of Montferrat in the yere 1194.

¶ The Qualitie.

E The Marquis of Treviso hath a good ayre, and temperat, the fields are pleasing, and theyeld good store of wheat and other graine, and of all sorts of fruit, but it abounds chiefly in wine. They find some metalls, and they haue good store of cattell. The chiefe rivers of this countrie are Piaie, Brente, Bagaglio, Tefin, Adde, Oglio, and Adige. The valley of Valdemonica is full of mynes of yron. As for Verona, the aire is verie wholesome, the soyle is in many places barren, and there is neuer any abundance of wheat: but it yields great store of oyle, and excellent wine, and fruits of all sorts: and there is also abundance of fine wooll. Neere vnto it is the lake of Benac, full of all kinds of fish. There is a very high mountain about the towne, famous for the hearbes which grow there. Neere vnto the towne of Bergamo, the countrie is rough and stonie, and barren towards the North, by reason of the mountaines, but in other places there wants not any thing that is necessary for the nourishment of man, yet there grows no wine by reason of the coldnesse. But in the neighbour valleys, subiect to this towne, they haue great store of oliues, and in some places reasonable good wine, but no great store. About Crema there is good store of corne, wine, and fruits, excellent waters, and abundance of fish. The territorie of Treviso is pleasing, fat, and fertile. As for Friuli, it yields excellent wine, and plentie

but no store of wheat, or any other thing: it is subiect to the great change of ayre, and winds. Istria is hillie, but not rough, and abounds in wine, oyle, wheat, and other things. Among other mountaines, there is one which they call the Grear, with a goodly mountaine vpon the top of it, whereas they find the best physicall simples that can be desired, for which cause, the physicians of forraine countries go to gather them, or to observe them. Pole hath a bad ayre, like vnto the greatest part of Istria: towards the sea they make great store of salt, and they haue abundance of fish in the sea, by reason of the many Islands and gulies.

XIII. The Island of Corfou is hillie, and the countrie stonie towards the South: but there are also more riuers and brookes than in other places, as Penize, Melongi, Euripe, and Potami: towards the North it is plaine, there is onely one mountaine which runnes into the sea, vpon the top whereof is Castle Nouo. There is a fountaine neere to Pelopoli, called Cardachie, which hath so plentifull a spring, as it doth not onely furnishe them of Corfou (whose water is grosse and vnwhole some, and therefore they fetch it in barke) but the gallies and great ships come also to water there. Neere vnto the same place are the goodliest saltpres of all the countrie, from whence they of the countrie draw salt to pay their impost to the Seignurie of Venice. But vpon the strait of the gulfe of this Promontorie of Paghopoli, neere vnto a place called Negrotalassi, is a little gulfe, in the which is as it were a great keepe of the best fish in the Mediterranean sea: and moreover, during winter there is abundance of wild-foule. It beares great store of Orange and Lymon trees, with such like. Corfou abounds also in honie and wax. The wine that growes there is good and plentifull, but aboute all they commend the oyle of Corfou, by reason of the singular bountie: Finally this Island doth yeeld sufficient of come and fruit. They haue neither Wolves nor Beares to offend their flockes; but they haue store of other beasts good to eat, which the inhabitants vie to hunt.

In the Island of Cephalonia, there is neither riuer, brooke, nor fountaine of fresh water, so as when their tame cattell would drinke, they gape both euening and morning to receiue the dew. Some write, and among others *Herodotus*, that in the Island of Zante there were fountaines which with the water did vomit forth pitch in great abundance. There is scarce any thing else that is worthie the noting.

XIII. The Island of Candie although it be hillie, yet it hath many valleys that are fruitful, and yeeld much, for that they are watered with many fountaines, brookes, and riuers. Moreover, there is abundance of excellent wine which they of the countrie call Malassie. They haue store of milke and honie, and sufficient of flesh: so as the Ancients did willingly call it the Happie Island. There growes the goodliest Cypres trees that can be seene, and all other kinds of timber fit for the building of ships, the which yeelds great profit to the Seignurie of Venice. There is not any hurtfull or venomous beasts, except Phalanges, which are like vnto Spiders, but in Candie they are not dangerous.

XV. It abounds also in wild goats, fallow Deere, and Yards or Chamois, but there are few wilde Boares vnlesse it be about Canea. There are also Boucks-estaine, called by the Latins Ibox; they haue long hornes like vnto a wild goat, and are not much bigger, yet they haue as much flesh as a Stagge, the haire is fallow and short, but they canne a great blacke beard. Sometimes they take them when they are verie little, to breed them vp among their troupes of goats, and to haue of the race, as well for the beautie, as for the tast of the flesh. His hornes are verie great, in respect of the bodie; but he is so nimble as he out-runnes any Stagge, neither can the dogges follow him by the sent, for that he will wind the huntmen aboute a hundred paces off, so as when they would take him they tie tame goats vpon the passages of the mountaine, where the Bouc-estaine feedeth them, he goes vnto them, and staying there, the huntmen haue opportunitie to strike him: but if the wound be not mortall, although the dart be poysoned and remaine in his bodie, yet he cures himselfe eating the hearbe which the Simplicists call Didamum, the which is good against poyson, as *Dioscorides* saith, for that the onely sent of it kills Serpents and other venomous beasts.

¶ The

¶ The Manners of the Ancients.

XVI. The first that liued about Venice (according to the opinion of some) were fisheermen, who liued only of such fish as they could take. Afterwards they began to build some houses, especially at Rualto; and this towne began to flourish by the ruine of the townes of Aquilea, Concordie, Alcina, Padoua, Mont Oppiterge, Heraclea, Aquilin, Grada, Capodora, and Laureora, at the coming of Attila in the yeare 456, or as others write 450, and the inhabitants haue retained the diuers humours and manners of all these places. Finally, the citizens of Venice haue been alwaies graue and desirous by all meanes to preserve their libertie.

XVII. As for the other places of the marquisat of Treuifo and Friuli they haue embraced them that haue beene maisters, but especially the factions which haue raigned throughout Italie.

XVIII. The Island of Candie did flourish in former times, when as her king did hold all Greece in awe. The Cretois were held the best archers in the world: they inuented the Pyrricke dance in the time of their king *Cydon*. They were all armed whenas they daunced; and it hath been so continued in this Island, as the Pefants daunce on holie daies in the hotte time of Sommer, not caring for any shadow, and with their armes, that is to say, a bow, a sheaf of arrows, & a sword, as if without it they could haue no good grace in dauncing. The most famous nations among the Grecians haue taken their laws from the Candians, as *Plato* doth witness, especially the Lacedemonians tooke their practise from them. They had one which did enioine that all their children should be bred vp in publicke, to the end that the poore hauing the like breeding to the rich, they should haue no cause to enuie them; and it was also ordained by the lawes, that to inure their children not to feare any thing, but to beare all things with patience, they should be accustomed to ammes; and to make them contemne heat, cold, hunger, and thirst, they should carrie a bow and arrows in dauncing, and their apparrell should be fit for warre. All the Candians were forced to marrie being of age, and then they were dismissed from the company of young men. They did not presently conduct their wiues home to their houses, but they attended vntill they were able to manage the affaires of a household, and kinsfolks married indifferently one with another. There was a law, that if the brother did marry his sister he should make her a dowrie of halfe his patrimonie. To rauish a maid was more esteemed than if he had obtained his desire with her free consent. In the end the Candians leauing their ancient discipline became pirats, hauing bene alwaies powerfull at sea, and had carried themselves so valiantly, as they had vanquished them of Attica, and led armies fortunatly into Sicilie.

¶ The Manners at this day.

XIX. The Venetians shew a great grauitie in their actions, but they are very seuer where they commaund, yea sometimes with excesse: they speake little being at the table, and they are no good horsemen, for that they liue in a citie where this exercise is little practised, for that the chiefeest voiaiges & combats of the Venetian gentlemen are by sea. Their spirits are not (most commonly) so active as the rest of the Italians: but they haue great iudgements, and preuaile whenas they giue themselves to any science: within this citie there are many excellent and rare men in all arts and sciences. They suffer Iewes and Gretians to liue there in their religion without any molestation. To conclude, they say that the Venetians are stately, craftie, and greedie; the Veronois studious, and faithfull; they of Padoua fierie, and they of Vicence desirous of reuenge. Moreover they say that the Venetians bring siluer to the war, they of Treuifo swords, that the Bressians are fit to make trenches, the Venetians to furnish an armie to sea, they of Padoua to manage horses, and they of Bergamo to lay ambushes. They say also touching the women, that they of Crema are deceitfull, they of Vicence constant, they of Venice insolent, and

Y y iij

carrie

carrie themselves like princesses, they of Verona gracious, they of Brescia diligent, they of Treviso ielous, and they of Bergamo subtil, and that there are many men which speake ill. Padoua hath good fouldiers, Vicence many Earles, and Brescia inhabitants which are not charitable to the poore. They of Friuli are fierie, sodaine, alwaies watchfull, and wonderfull industrious, hauing an actiue spirit, and very subtil. The inhabitants of Istria are neither long liued, nor of great courage.

The inhabitants of Candie are by nature apt and ready to doe euill: the auncients gaue them the title of lyars: they are subtil and couetous, and do hardly endure labour, nether do they learn any art or science perfectly. It is true that at this day, as *Belonus* saith, they do practise from their youth (according to their auncient custome) to shoote, wherein they excel euen the Turkes themselves; and they are actiue and valiant at sea as much as they haue beene in former times.

¶ The Riches.

XX.

The seigneurie of Venice doth draw yearly in time of peace from the Estates which are subiect vnto it, two millions of gold, after the manner that followeth. They receive from the townes of Italie eight hundred thousand crownes, of which Bergamo and Brescia pay aboute three hundred thousand. They draw out of Venice seven hundred thousand crownes, of diuers imposts and customes, for that of wine alone is rented at a hundred and thirtie thousand crownes yearly. They raise money also of diuers tenths and taxes imposed vpon the gentlemen and citisens. And the other five hundred thousand riseth of the salt which is made vpon those places which are along the sea, and of the customes, imposts, and ayds which the sea townes pay vnto the seigneurie. And some say that they did draw five hundred thousand crownes from the realme of Cypres, which some hold they leuie of their subiects by another meanes.

These be the revenues of this commonweale, which is subiect to the accidents of other Estates of Christendome, that is to say, they consume in a manner all this money in their ordinarie charges, for the entertaining of fouldiers, armies at sea, in the fortification of townes and castles, and in the fees of magistrates and officers of the citie: by reason whereof some thinke they haue nothing remaining, and if they had it should go towards the payment of their old debts which they haue run into: so as they conclude that their ordinarie revenues are all spent, or the greatest part, in their ordinarie charges during the time of peace. But we doe not therefore thinke that this commonweale is not powerfull, for that princes and communalities which haue most meanes to make money extraordinarily, haue greatest power: but this Estate hath sufficient meanes, and it may leuie more with lesse feare and danger, than other Christian princes can do of their subiects. For whereas any war falls vpon this seigneurie, or that they are forced to arme extraordinarily, although they haue no war, as when the Turke leuies some great armie, they haue recourse vnto extraordinarie meanes which are many and diuers, and yet they may be reduced vnto three.

XXI.

The first, is to raise the tenths which are already imposed vpon gentlemen and bourgeois, who haue lands and reuenues, and this is done by augmenting the number, that is, whereas they payd before but once a yeare, to make them to pay twice or thrice, according to the wil of the Senat: & in like manner whereas they double the taxes, which the seigneurie causeth merchants to pay according to the value of their merchandise, which is almost the tenth part of their gaine, and these things are also paid by the gentlemen and richest citisens. We may also include herein another tax which the people pay when as they arme extraordinarily: for that in all their armies they are bound to entertaine a certain number of men.

When as then they haue recourse vnto this first meanes, they doe it easily, for that all pay it willingly, and doe freely assist their countrie. But if this suffice not, they flee vnto the second, which is that gentlemen serue for a certaine time in their offices without any fee: and moreover they ordaine the chiefe honours which are accustomed to be giuen

A new to gentlemen best deservng, shall be sold, but not in perpetuities, nor to him that will give most, for rather than to giue it to an vnworthie person they will bestow it vpon him that offers least, for that he is of greater valour and more merit: by the like meanes in the warre which the Christian princes made against the Venetians in the league of Cambray, they did raise aboute five hundred thousand crownes.

Another meanes to make money is also practised by this Commonweale, the which they call Deposit or pledge of the Councill, whereas for money they declare young men that are vnder age, capable to come into the Councill, and to obtaine offices.

The third meanes to draw money, is whenas the Commonweale vpon some great necessity is forced to borrow of priuat men, the which if they may not haue willingly, they will force them vnto it, selling the citisens goods and lands, if necessity requires: the which being put in practise, breeds no tumult as among other people, nor any generall murmur. As for example, if the Senat had resolved that the third part of all citisens goods should be sold, of which sale there should be a summe made, and the Commonweale should acknowledge her selfe debtor to these priuat men, to whom (according to the decree of the Senat) she did bind herselfe to repay the money after the warre was ended, and so much by the yeare, that is to say, two for the hundred, and so they pay it in thirtie yeares; and after this manner the Commonweale doth pay her old debts, the which is called profit of the old Mount; or else she payes fine for the hundred yearly, and this is called the new Mount, and the Mount of Subsidie. And these interests are paid by the Commonweale for debts which are not so old as the first, or else she payes more, & binds her selfe to pay the principall in a short time, and this is called the newest Mount, when it hath bene paid: and all debts which are payed in fine and twentie or thirtie yeares, whereas they haue no warre (the which they auoid all they can) are easily satisfied.

They haue also bene accustomed to take money vpon exchange, and to giue eight in the hundred to them that would lend, and this was onely for eightene yeares. Moreover they haue made many Lotteries of lands belonging to the publicke, where they haue drawne by blankes publickly in the presence of the chiefe Senators.

These are the meanes which the Seigneurie hath vsed to leuie money in their former times, and whereof they may yet make vse at their pleasures. They may also increase their customes of merchandise as the Senat shall decree.

To conclude, the State of Venice hath meanes to leuie money without any discontent of the gentlemen, citisens, or people: for in their great necessities, the prince, & many gentlemen, and bourgeois, haue freely giuen great store of treasure to the Commonweale, and some haue giuen their wiues Jewells, considering that the Commonweale being afflicted had more need of helpe than their wiues had of ornaments. And not only priuat men of Venice haue giuen money to the Commonweale, but also the townes which are subiect vnto her, haue releued her with great summes of money, besides the taxes wherewith they are charged. The reason is, for that they loue the mild government of this Commonweale, and also their iustice which is inuolubly obserued, as well to poore as rich. And therefore they haue rightly said in Venice, That it imports not whether the publicke haue any great store of treasure, so as priuat men be rich, as they are: for that (as we haue said) the Commonweale may easily make vse of their goods.

We must therefore conclude, that it is no easing thing to know what treasure the citie of Venice hath in her coffers. Let vs now see what the forces of this Commonweale are, seeing we haue discoursed at large of her wealth.

¶ The Forces:

This Seigneurie hath for her chiefe end, not to be wronged, and to carrie her selfe as she may haue no subiect of feare: For this cause she hath and doth make many forts for the safety of this Estate. And as for these forts (speaking in generally) there is no prince that hath any more important and perfect, for that they haue great and good rampiers, with deepe and spacious ditches: and there are some Towers exceeding strong, as Treviso,

uifo, Lignago, and Crema; some others are so great in circuit, as they cannot be besieged but by a royall armie, as Padoua, and Verona: others haue their citadells and forts which commaund them in such sort, as they may easily be releued; as we see at Bressia, Bergamo, and Verona, which hath two castles, the one vpon the other. The castles of the Marquisat reduced into forts are Orcinuos, Asola in the territorie of Bressia, Peluicera, and Lignago, but aboue all, we must admire Noua Palma, of a round forme, with nine Bastians, whose streets answer directly vnto a place which is in the midst of the towne, which they hold impregnable. They haue also in Lombardie the Polesine of Raguigue, where there are many places which are made defensible. In Friuli there is not any strong castle but that of Marran, seated amongst pooles and marshes nere vnto the sea, but exceeding strong, for that it is in a manner diuided from the firme land except of one side, which may be easily defended by few men. There is also the castle of Osoppe vpon a verie high mountaine, which hinders the passage of any armie into Italie, and by any other they cannot bring the canon. As for the towne Vdena, it is not verie strong for that the ground is not fit to be fortified. In Istria, they haue no good place, but the cape of Istria. Vpon the shore and Islands of Dalmatia and Sclauonia, there are some towne with forts, as Zara, and Catarro: but the towne of Dalmatia haue not any need of fortification, for that they cannot march into the countrie with any armie by land, but to make incurfions of small importance, and the reason is, for that the mountaines are rough, and the passages verie narrow.

In the Island of Corfou there is an excellent fort, which is as it were the key or port to enter into the gulfes, so as with small forces they may hinder the entrie of the greatt armie.

In the Island of Candie, the towne whereof this Island takes the name, and Canace, are exceeding strong, both by art and situation: but Rethymo and Scitia cannot beare much strong but in regard of their situation: and in the one of Candie, there is a good arenall of gallies.

XXIII. For the defence of these towne and forts, this Seigneurie doth make vse of their owne subiects: and in Lombardie they traine vp about fise and twentie thousand men, which they call Cernides, for that of all the iurisdicions and countries which are subiect to this State, those are chosen which are held most fit to beare armes; and these are all footmen, of whom they make diuers priuat musters: but for the most part these are peasants which are not verie fit to fight in an open field, nor to keepe their rankes. And therefore the Seigneurie whenas they will raise a compleat armie to go to field, they doe entertaine them that dwell in those towne which are subiect vnto them, and also strangers who are no lesse valiant than the rest. The Italian footmen are courageous, astiue, and fit for skirmishes, or to giue an assault: yet their order is not so strong and good as the Germans, by reason whereof this Seigneurie hath in former times had, as well of their owne subiects as of strangers, about fiftene or twentie thousand men. And for the foresaid reasons they doe giue pay vnto certaine Cantons of the Suisses and Grisons, so as their footmen of their armies of all forts may amount to fise and thirtie thousand men, more or lesse, according to the necessitie of their affaires: the rest of the footmen are employed for the guard of towne, and the seruice of their gallies. The footmen haue three crownes for their entertainment euerie fise and fortie dayes: when they are employed, and in great necessities, they rise to fise crownes a moneth.

XXV. As for their horsemen, the Seigneurie doth entertaine as well for their guard, as reputation, six hundred men at armes well chosen; euerie one of which was accustomed to haue three horse, but at this day they keepe but two, which must be faire and beautiful: euerie one of these hath for his yearly entertainment one hundred and twentie ducats, and they are for the most part gentlemen of the towne of Lombardie, which are subiect to this State: and although they haue no race of horses, yet may this number be augmented to a thousand or fiftene hundred.

This State in like maner was accustomed to entertaine in Lombardie, about one thousand light horse, but they haue left off to make this superfluous expence, for that they

A might alwaies easily furnish themselves with good numbers, or they might employ the Stradiots of Dalmatia and other places, who are fit to cut off the enemies vnto alls, and to charge an armie in the reare. These men are very expert and ready, and if they be broken they will easily ioine againe together, and recouer their rankes. They may draw out of Dalmatia and other Islands about three thousand of these souldiers, and nere as many light horse out of the towne of Italie. In their armies at firme land this seigneurie doth for the most part vse a stranger for their Generall, & therefore they haue many times entertained absolute Lords, as Marquises and Dukes, whom they pay and recompence bountifullly for their paines: for they cannot endure to haue any of their seigneurie to be a chiefe commander. And if they know that any gentleman of Venice affects the war, and followes the court of other princes, they call him presently home to his house, desiring rather in their wars at land to haue a stranger for their Generall than one of their owne State, and to employ an armie of strangers, rather than their owne subiects: but yet they are accustomed to send with their Generall (as it were companions) two gentlemen of their commonweale, men famous for their merits, with the title of Prouditori or generall Pourueiers without whose consent the Generall may not fight nor undertake any action of importance. And although it may seeme to breed many inconueniences to see a Pourueier commaund a Generall, a citizen stranger, and one that undertakes nothing in war, him that hath bene bred vp in it; yet by this meanes they auoid other dangers which are of no lesse importance, wherinto the commonweale hath fallen whenas they haue employed their owne subiects and forces.

To treat of their warlike preparation for the sea, as of the thing which is of greatest importance, I will speak first of the beginning, to the end it may be the better understood: I say therefore that it is no other thing but that admirable Arcenall of Venice, the which is not only very great, but also the fairest and the best furnished with all warlike necessities that is this day in the world. It stands in a corner of the citie, & so nere vnto the sea, as it doth not seeme to be diuided but to be a part of it; the which makes it to seeme greater in the opinion of such as doe behold it. It is enuironed with good walls, but without any rampires, for that it cannot be battered; and we may say, that it stands in an Island, for that it is compassed about with a channell, the which we may otherwise call the fort of Venice.

There are many times two hundred gallies in this Arcenall, besides others at sea, the which haue bene accustomed to be tottie in number: and there are also twentie great gallies, the which in regard of the lesser may be called men at armes, for that they are neither so light nor so fit to row as the rest: but they worke a greater effect in a sea fight having a good wind, and they are able to charge one hundred small gallies: they make their armies inuincible, being of greater seruice than ships of war, for that besides their sailes, they may vse their oares. There is in this Arcenall so many meanes to arme an infinite number of men, as it is an admirable thing to see, and there is such abundance of Ordnance, not only sufficient for so many gallies, with offensive and defensive armes for the souldiers and mariners, but also there is such store of all other things, as this Arcenall might furnish priuat ships, forts, and armies at land whenas necessitie requires.

As for timber to make new gallies there is great abundance, not so much for the quantitie and greatnesse of the woods which the seigneurie hath nere vnto the sea, as for the care they haue throughout all this Estate to preferre their oakes, the which are easily transported to Venice by sea, and by the riuers which fall into the sea nere vnto this citie.

But to speake in a word what may be conceiued of the Arcenall, I say that in the whole world the like is not to be found, nor better furnished with good workemen, which are to the number of three hundred, who labour continually and with such diligence as it is admirable, so as there hath bene seene in lesse than ten daies thirtie gallies fully armed and made readie to fight, and we may coniecture that in a short time they are able to arme them all. They employ much money in this Arcenall, in the which they make none but great and small gallies, with some brigantins, for that priuat men haue great ships,

the commonweale makes not any, but may use them when they haue need. They want A no men to row in their galleis, for that all their sea townes, and those of the firme Land with the citie of Venice do furnish what they want, and as for souldiers, they employ those men which they call Cernides. The Captaines and Commanders of galleis are for the most part gentlemen of Venice, whose number is very great; so as euery galley besides the Commander hath two Venetian gentlemen to exercise them in the discipline of the sea. They haue no want of any thing but biscuit, especially when it is deere: yet they make good prouision, hauing many great storehouses, in the which they keepe abundance of wheat, and other come, and also of biscuit.

For the guard and safetie of the gulfes of Venice, and the Islands of the Ionian sea, they B entertaine continually an armie of fife and thirtie or fortie galleis with a Prouiditor or Pourueior, and a Captaine of the gulfes; and this doth cost the State yearly fife thousand ducats, accounting the biscuit. These galleis not onely secure the sea from pirates, but are also a meane to breed vp many gentlemen in their armies at sea, although they haue no war of any great importance: and moreouer this doth purchase great reputation vnto the seigneurie.

Whensoever the Turke armes, they do in like manner increase the number of their galleis, and then they make a Generall of their armie, whose name is so much esteemed by the Turkes, as they dare not come neere the gulfes, much lesse the citie of Venice. But notwithstanding that this guard be strong, yet is it not able to secure all vessels which C faile through this gulfes, for that the lesser which keepe neere vnto the coast of Dalmatia are spoiled by a certaine kind of pirates called Vlcioques, who retire to Segne and Fleuue, places belonging to the house of Austria: and these men come with certain armed boats and molest the smaller ships in such sort as the seigneurie is forced to entertaine a captain at sea with fife galliots, who hath no other charge but to root out this race; and although the expence be great, yet the profit is not small to punish a number of theues.

It is no difficult thing to conceiue what number of ships and galleis the seigneurie may set forth, for that wanting neither timber, armes, men nor money, they may arme what they please: and although for a long time there hath not bene scene at sea about one hundred galleis, and few ships, yet be that will looke into former times, shall find that two or three hundred yeares since, the seigneurie had not so great forces; and yet they did arme two hundred ships or galleis for the conquest of the holie Land, and as many for that of Constantinople, whereas the Venetians went thither with the French.

Wherefore if necessitie did presse the Venetians, we must thinke that at this day when-as they abound more in wealth, and are more mightie in subiects, hauing also an Arcenal better furnished than euer; they are not only able to set forth the like number of vessels, but also to exceed it; and if they do it not, the reason is for that they would not hazard so many in one action: and although they be inferior to the Turkes in number, yet are they not in power, and it is most certaine that if they were set vpon by the Turkes galleis, they would not feare to fight with them, and for this cause the Turkes durst neuer E charge them.

¶ The Government.

XXVII. **L**et vs come now to discourse of the order by the which this goodly seigneurie hath bene so long time gouerned, and how it hath continued longer than any other which hath come to our knowledge; and after what manner it hath preserved it selfe, amidst such wars and combustions, so as it seemes her subiects, in respect of others, enjoy a golden age, living in tranquillitie and peace, and encreasing daily in prosperitie and wealth: the which I hold doth proceed chiefly from the will of God, who hath a particular care of this commonweale, and moreouer we cannot deny but it grows by a well ordered government instituted by wise men, who in former ages might haue bin held for morall Philosophers. Although this commonweale be gouerned by gentlemen, and not by the people, yet can we not say that it is a government of many, nor of few; and

A although it hath a prince or duke, that it is the gouernement of one alone: but it is composed of all the three kinds of gouernements, out of which they haue made one that is perfect.

This Commonweale hath one head, who represents the Maiestie of the empire in his robes, his grauity, and reputation, and he is called Duke or Captaine; by whom it seemes all hereafter led, to see his attire, and the outward carriage of an absolute prince: of whose election we will speake hereafter, and of his power.

For the government and preferuation of this flourishing Estate, they haue made a great Council, which doth consist of an assemblie of all the gentlemen of Venice, so as euery one which hath past the age of fife and twentie yeares, may enter into this Council, and give his voyce, but he must first proue his age by the oath of his father or mother (if they be alive) or else by his nearest kinsmen; and he must also proue by the testimonie of two witnesses that he is borne a gentleman. They haue also a law by the which those gentlemen that haue past the age of twentie yeares may be admitted to come into the Council, being allowed by the suffrages of the prince and Senat. The number of gentlemen that may lawfully enter into this Council, is about two thousand fife hundred. But for that many are continually employed abroad for the seruice of the State, and some being absent about other affaires, there doe neuer assemble about one thousand six hundred, and these meet once euery weeke, that is to say, on the Sunday morning, and vpon euery C feast day in the morning, whereas they chuse the magistrats, and distribute the gouernements of the Commonweale with a wonderful order. I will forbear to set downe the manner of their sitting in Council, and of the election of magistrats by lots, fearing to be tedious, and it may be not pleasing; I will onely make mention of the Councils and chiefe officers of this State.

One of the chiefe members of the Commonweale is the Council of the Pregadi, for that in it they treat and determine of all matters of greatest importance. They are so called (according to the opinion of some) for that they were in old time assembled by the publicke officers, and as it were intreated by them to come and giue their aduice touching the affaires of the Commonweale. The Council of the Pregadi consists of one D hundred and twentie, besides the which, there are others which may enter into this Council, and giue their voyces, as the Duke, the Six Councillors, the Council of Ten, the Auogadori, and all the Procurators of S. Marke, with diuers other officers, who hauing past the time of their charge, may enter presently into the Council of the Pregadi, and enjoy the same priuiledges. There are other inferior magistrats which may enter into this Council, yet they haue no voyces, but this honour is done them to vnderstand the affaires of the Commonweale, to make them to be the more esteemed.

They haue bene accustomed during the necessities of the Commonweale, to graunt a priuiledge to enter into the Council of the Pregadi, to such as had assisted the Commonweale with a certaine summe of money, the law prefixing a certaine time how long E they should enjoy this honour, but they could not giue their voyces. This Council cannot determine nor conclude of any businesse, vnlesse there be foure Councillors present, and that there be fixtie in the whole number which giue their suffrages.

Next to the Council of the Pregadi, is the Colledge, which is the third member of the Commonweale, and of great reputation. This Colledge doth chiefly consist of three magistrats, which are the great Sages or wilemen, the Sages of the firme land, and the Sages of the sea, and it contains sixteen gentlemen; the great Sages are fix in number, and either of the other two fife. Moreouer, it is composed of the Seigneurie, that is to say of the Prince, of the six Councillors, and three heads or Presidents of the fortie F Sages of the sea haue charge of those matters which belong vnto the sea, both for peace, warre, and other affaires. The Sages of the firme land treat of matters of the land belonging to warre, or peace; and their chiefe charge is, to see what numbers of souldiers are entertained by the Commonweale. The grand Sages haue a care both of the one and the other, and their chiefe charge is of warre and peace, with other matters of the like consequence. The Colledge assembles euery morning two houres after Sun rising.

And

And you must vnderstand, that whensoever we say the Colledge, it is meant by the assemble of the foresaid three magistrats, with the Duke, Councillors, and the three presidents of the fortie; whereas they read all letters received since their last assemble, give audience to Embassadours, if any demand it, and dispatch all matters belonging to the three Magistrats.

The Duke, The supreme magistrat of the citie is called Duke: his authoritie in the beginning was great, but it hath bin since moderated. And to the end euerie thing may be plainly vnderstood, whereas the Duke is dead, the six Councillors, with the three Presidents of the fortie, enter the palace, whereas the eldest Councillor carries himselfe as Vice Duke: and for this cause he doth mannage certaine businesse which belongs vnto the Dukes office. All dispatches sent by this Seigneurie, are written in the name of the Gouverneur: who neuer go out of the palace, vntill that a new Duke be created. The palace gates are shut, and a little guard set at the wicket, more for an auncient custome than for any necessarie occasion, for that the citie is no more troubled for the death of the prince, than it would be for any priuat gentleman. It is true, that the magistrats assemble not to doe iustice vntill there be a new Duke created: the which the law hath ordained, for that the gentlemen being busied about this creation, haue no leasure to attend affaires. They caule the dead bodie of the Duke, being attired in his ducall robes, to be brought into a low chamber, called the Hall of Piousse: whereas it remains three dayes, and there are twentie gentlemen attired in scarlet appointed to attend it, when it is brought downe into the Hall, and there they sit about it during the said three dayes. After which his funerals are made, with that pompe and magnificence that is requisite for so great a dignitie. The day after, the great Councell assembles, whereas the great Chancellour giues them to vnderstand, that before they begin the creation of a future Duke, they should chuse the six Correctors, and three Inquisitors. The office of the Inquisitor is to examine the life and actions of the deceased Duke, and to search if he hath obserued the laws: and finding that he hath erred in any thing, they are bound to accuse him: and all the punishment which he had deserved, must fall vpon his heires; but they are onely pecuniarie fines. The office of the Correctors is to consider if it be needfull to bring in any new law, to be obserued by the new prince, or correct any error which hath been discovered in the gouernement of the last Duke. After all this, they proceed to the election of a new Duke, the manner whereof I omit for breuities sake.

Six Councillors.

The supreme markes of the Venetian empire, are settled in the Dukes person, for that he seemes to be absolute lord in the Commonweale. But notwithstanding that he enioyeth this great dignitie, yet hath he not full power in any thing: for that he may not determine of any thing without the presence of his Councillors, which are six, and they are alwaies chosen of the most honourable gentlemen of the city, according to the greatness and dignitie of the place. These six Councillors sit with the Duke and dispatch all affaires, especially priuat and particular, as to giue audience, to read publique letters, grant priuiledges, and such like: in which the Duke cannot do any thing without the presence of foure Councillors. And when the duke is not with them, they may dispatch affaires, as they shall thinke good.

Councillor of Ten.

The Councill of Ten is a member of the Commonweale, of verie great importance, whose authoritie is like vnto that of the Pregadi, ouer the whole citie, for that it may treat of all affaires of State, and is not subiect to any greater power. It is true, that they doe not practise this authoritie but in cases of great importance, which were impossible to preuent by other meanes: as to determine of a warre, to conclude a peace, to mannage a businesse secretly, and such like: the which if they were treated of in the assemble, and afterwards consulted of in the Councill of the Pregadi (as they ought to be) happily they should not be managed with such secrecie and speed as the time required. Whereas they are to deliberate of any great matter which concerns the State of the whole citie, the Councill of Ten, with the Prince, and his six Councillors assemble onely: and this is simply called the Councill of Ten.

Procurator of S. Marke.

The office of Procurator of S. Marke is of great reputation; for that this dignitie like

into the dukes continues for life, and neuer ends but with death. There was neuer any gentleman of reputation in this citie but had this dignitie, and but few dukes since this magistrat was erected, but was first a Procurator. In old time there was but one Procurator instituted to haue the charge of the Temple of S. Marke, and of the treasures thereof: afterwards Sebastian Ziani hauing at his death left great foundations to the Church, there was another created for the managing of that which he had left, and so from time to time they haue bene augmented, so as in the year 1423 they came to the number of nine, whereof three had the charge of S. Markes Church, and of the treasures: three had the care of such goods as were left by them that dwelt of the one side of Canal-grande, and the other three had the like charge of the goods which were left on the other side of Canal-grande. But in the year 1509 the commonweale was forced to create six more, and to grant this honour to such as did lend a certaine summe of money. They haue also authoritie to force heires to performe the will of the dead. They weare ducall ornaments, and go before all magistrats.

The Auogadori, or Tribunes of the commons, are places of great importance, and numbered among the chiefe. The authoritie of this magistrat is great, for that it is necessarie in all consultations there be at the least one of the Auogadori, whereof there be three: they haue the care and charge to see the lawes and priuiledges obserued. There are infinit other officers and magistrats in the citie of Venice, the which to auoid tediousnesse I forbear to describe in particular, referring the curious reader to them that haue written whole volumes of this subiect.

We may hereby obserue that the seigneurie of Venice is meereley Aristocratical, distributing the chiefe honors, dignities, and offices to the gentlemen of Venice; and the lesser which haue no power, vnto the common people: & yet to content them, the seigneurie hath left them the office of Chauncellor, which is one of the worthiest and most honourable within the citie, being also continued for life: and moreover they haue the offices of Secretaries of Estate, which is also very honourable.

The duke although he seemes to be a prince, yet is he nothing but the first gentleman of Venice, and hath but the conclusion, when there is question of voices in what bodie or colledge sooner he be. At Venice, the decrees of magistrats bind euery one in particular, for the iurisdiction of euery magistrat: but the colledge or councill of ten is about particular magistrats, and the senat is about the ten; and the great councill (which is the assemble of all the gentlemen of Venice that are of age) holds the fouraigntie about the senat; so as if the ten be diuided, they call the councill of the sages, which make two and thirtie, and if they cannot agree, they assembl the senat: but if the matter concerns high points of maiestie, the great councill meets. By these three colleges or bodie, all their lawes and statutes are made: and ordinarie affaires of Estate are dispatched by the senat, which they call the seigneurie.

Finally there is a wonderfull equalitie worthe of much commendation in this citie. Whereas they respect neither poore nor rich, gentlemen nor common people, who (as I haue said) haue some share in this commonweale, enioying many offices which are very beneficall vnto them; whereby the people are very much affected vnto the nobilitie, and shew themselves very humble, and the gentlemen are their protectors, fauouring them in all their necessities, and aduancing them to honours, whereof they are capable. This seigneurie hath great regard to poertie, for the which they provide by all good meanes, whereby they make poore miserable wretches, I will not say subiect but slaves to them; for that the commonweale doth spend much money to keepe downe the price of bread, and other things necessarie for the life of man. It is therefore no wonder, if the people do willingly and without grudging beare all the burthens during the necessities of the commonweale.

The people of other townes subiect vnto this Estate, are in like manner very faithfull; for that he which goes to gouerne them, hath no other end but to do iustice to euery man, and to assist the townes which are vnder his charge; for in doing so, at his returne he receiues greater honours, but if he gouerne himselfe otherwise, he is punished, and no

more imployed: there is another reason why these people loue the Venetian government, for that they are not charged with insupportable customes and imposts, as some miserable townes are by tyrants.

XXIX. If we shall compare this commonweale with others which haue gon before it (yet not speaking of their greatnesse and forces, but onely of their manner and forme of government and good lawes) we shall find how much it doth in this point exceed all others: for that we may say those haue beene gouerned by men that were greedy of spoile and bloud, and this hath bene guided by the creator of all things, and found out and framed by Philosophers, with a perfect composition. I cannot find a better example and argument hereof, than the commonweale of Rome, which hauing in a manner made subiect B all the world, yet could not maintaine her owne libertie aboue seuen hundred yeares: whereas this being enuironed by so many powerfull enemies which haue still sought her ruine, hauing not any neighbour prince for a faithfull friend, hath bene able for the space of one thousand and two hundred yeares and more to maintaine her libertie, yea and to resist the huge and fearefull forces of the great Turke, and in former times of all Christian princes. I know not (to speake the truth) what power is able at this day to vanquish and ruine it, if that discord (the only meanes to vndermine it) creepes not into this commonweale; but there are many graue and wise counsellors which watch continually to preuent it: and although it seemes to some that for the great wickednesse which is committed daily within the citie of Venice, she cannot long auoid her totall C ruine and subuersion, yet others know that besides the magistrat who doth his best endeavour to reforme all disorders, there are many deuout persons whose prayers would stay this desolation.

Seeing that we haue related the perfections of this commonweale, it shall not be impertinent to set downe her defects in particular, although they be of no great moment.

XXX. The first (and it may be the greatest) is that they hold too great a countree and so populous (for the feeding whereof they haue need of victuals from other nations) that if they had not the sea open by the which they bring great store of graine to Venice, their countrees should be in continuall want of bread, which would be very troublesome to their subiects. For this onely reason they do so much esteeme a peace with the Turke, whereby there is much come brought to Venice from countrees that are subiect vnto him, and for this reason also they doe so much respect the king of Spaine, who doth oftentimes giue them leaue to transport graine from Sicilie and Pouillia.

The second defect is, that they imploy none but Italian footmen, although it be certaine that they haue lost much of their ancient reputation, the which hath happened by the diuersitie of fighting; so as in their battallions they are much inferior to the Suiſſes and Germanes: wherefore this commonweale should haue good numbers of Suiſſes and Germanes in their armies, by which meanes their footmen should be better esteemed.

The third is, that they make not any one of their subiects, but a stranger Generall of their armie, whereby they subiect themselves to the discretion of another. Moreover they are forced to spend much vpon their forts, for that men finding daily new devices to assaile, it is necessarie to change them from time to time; wherein they haue many times bene at great charge, the which hath much hindered the happinesse of this commonweale.

But these defects are not all past remedie, and for this cause those wise Senators haue a continuall care to preuent all inconueniences, and haue no other deſſeigne but to preserve the State in peace and libertie. Without doubt they are not like to haue any troubles and combustions among themselves, for they neuer suffer any priuat quarrell to grow among them, but they presently pacifie it, either by loue, or by the authority of the foueraigne counsell of ten. Moreover there is not any citizen or gentleman that doth attaine to any such reputation, degree, or wealth, as he may hope to make himselfe a tyrant, but they liue louingly together in great peace and concord.

¶ The

¶ The Religion.

The Venetians are firme Romish Catholikes, as all their subiects be which remain in Italie: but the inhabitants of the Island of Corsou follow the religion of the German Schismatiques, wherein this commonweale doth not impeach them, fearing least the people should grow into a mutinie, and be wearie of their command, and to inuite their enemies to attempt something, and yet the feigneur hath curbed them by a fort and a garrison which it entertaines there; so as they that would raise any troubles or combustion, should hardly effect their deſſeignes. They are after the like manner in Candia: whereas the people do wonderfully hate the name and religion of the Latins: It is true that some of them are affected to the Romish Church, and are freed from schisme, wherein the rest persist.

¶ The Dukes and Princes of the Commonweale of Venice: and the most remarkable things which past during either of their gouernments.

- C. PAVLVS ANAFESTVS was the first prince of the people, chosen in Heraclea, in the year 697, a man of singular iustice. He swore in the hands of *Christopher* Patriarch of Grada, to gouerne according to the laws, and to haue no regard but to the publique good. He pacified their differences with *Luitprand* king of the Lombards, and made a league with king *Aripert*. He forced the Equilins, who had rebelled, to obedience, as well by his authoritie, as by armes, and increased their reuenues. He gouerned twenty yeares, six moneths, and eight daies.
2. MARCEL TEGALIAN, of the same place of Heraclea, was chosen to succeed him, by the common consent of the people. He was deuout, affable, & modest, but not so careful of the gouernment as his predecessor. The Patriarchship of Grada was transferred to Aquileia in his time, by *Luitprand*, and there growing great waiores, by reason of the two Bishops, he meddled not, but died, hauing bin duke nine yeares, and one and twentie daies.
3. HORTEE HIPPARTE, surnamed *Vrſe*, a nobleman of Heraclea, purchased great reputation by his worthie exploits. *Peule* the Exarke or gouernour of Rauenna had recovered vnto him, the Grecian armie being defeated, and siege layed before Rauenna, by *Luitprand*. He recovered Rauenna, tooke the kings nephew prisoner, slew the duke of Vincence, and restored the Exarke to his rights. He supplanted them of Aquileia, who troubled the publique quiet, and he encouraged the youth to armes. He was slaine by reason of the dissensions of the Ielulains, hauing bin prince eleven yeares, and five moneths.

After the death of this third duke, in the year 737, they made an assemblee, in the which it was decreed and concluded, That they should not chuse any duke for six yeares, and that they should create a maister of the souldiers which should be annuall: the which continued five yeares, for in the year 742, they proceeded to the election of a duke, since which time the Commonweale of Venice hath alwayes had dukes vnto this day. The first which was chosen in this effect, was *Dominic Leon*; the second *Felix Cornicula*; the third *Theodat sonne to Vrſe*, a citizen of *Sansepolcristo*, and was continued the year after, but he died before his time expired; the fourth *Julian Ceparo*, who was subuogated in his place; the fifth was *Ciane Fabricatio*, who had his eyes put out, and was dismissed.

4. THEODAT HIPPARTE, sonne to *Vrſe*, was declared duke, five yeares after the death of his father: during the which, the people were gouerned by a maister of the souldiers, who leauing Heraclea, came to Malamocco. There he was first created, and limited the confines with *Aſſolo* king of the Lombards. He was slaine by *Galla* a citizen of Malamocco, in the thirteenth yeare of his principallitie.

5. GALLA of Malamocco, a wicked and seditious man, carrying himselfe as protector of the publique libertie, was created in the place of *Theodat*: but his wickednes being discovered,

Z z ij

covered, and that he sought to make himselfe absolute lord, which was the reason why A he had slaine *Theodatus*, the people put out his eyes, and within one year took from him the government which he had vsurped.

6. DOMINICO MONEGARIA of Malamocco, was set in the place of *Gilia*. The people to restrain the dukes authoritie, made choyce of two Tribunes yearly: but he being a bold & an insolent man, sought to tyrannize ouer the people, who being incensed, put out his eyes, the fift year of his principalltie.

7. MAURICE GALBATA, a gentleman of Heraclea, was chosen to this dignitie for his wisdom, iustice, and wealth. He made his sonne duke with him, and they gouerned together. In his time, the Church of Grada being molested, he sent an embassadour to Pope *Stephen* to reconcile the difference. The Bishopricke of S. Peter of Castell-Ostiole was erected, and he died, hauing gouerned three and twentie yeares.

8. JOHN GALBATA hauing bin duke nine yeares with his father, gouerned the commonweale alone nine yeares. After which time he made *Maurice* his sonne companion of his principalltie: but both of them being of bad life, and insupportable, for that they had slaine *John* Patriarch of Grada, casting him from the top of a high Tower. *Fortunatus*, the Patriarchs successor, made a conspiracie against them, wherupon a new duke was chosen, wherat they being amazed, the father fled into France, and the sonne to Mantoua in the sixteenth yeare.

9. OBELERIUS, being chosen prince by them of the intelligence of *Fortunatus*, took C his brother *Beat* for companion, and *Valentine* their third brother was also associated by them vnto this dignitie. It is to be noted, that of these three, *Beat* is put in the ranke of dukes, in the Councell hall at Venice, for that *Obelerius* had perswaded *Pepin* king of Italie to make warre against the Venetians, and that *Beat* had defended the Commonweale, hauing reigned fve yeares.

10. ANGE PARTITIATVS, hauing carried himselfe valiantly in the war against *Pepin*, was chosen duke, the people being retired to Realto. He was founder of the dukes palace, in the place where that now stands which was built since. The diuision of the empire being made in his time, the Venetians were left at libertie. The citie was diuided into Sestiers, or parts. The Pregadi, and the Fortie for criminall causes was instituted. He D gouerned eightene yeares.

11. IUSTINIAN PARTITIATVS, hauing been associated in the dignitie, by his father, was after his death confirmed by the people. He called home *John* his brother from Constantinople, and tooke him for companion. He augmented the peoples authoritie, and releued *Michael* emperor of Constantinople, against the Sarrazins. The bodie of S. *Marke* was in his time brought from Alexandria, and taken for their protector; and the Church which is at this day, was consecrated to his honour. He died the second yeare.

12. JOHN PARTITIATVS, brother to *Iustinian*, remained in the dignitie, and did much augment the Church of S. *Marke*, which he caused to be serued by a good number of priests, establishing the Primicerio. He caused the head of *Obelerius* to be cut off, whom E he had besieged in the Island of Curtia: He ruined Malamocco, the people haue rebelled, and held *Obelerius* partie. He made war against the Narentins, whom he subdued. In the end, there was a conspiracie made against him, and being surprisid by his enemies, neere vnto S. *Peters* Church, going to heare Masse, they stript him of his duell ornaments, and confined him to Grada, hauing shauen his beard, the eight yeare of his principalltie, where he became a Monke, and died.

13. PETER TRADONIC of Pola hauing carried himselfe to the peoples content in the war against *Pepin*, was chosen duke. He did associat *John* his sonne, and they gaue succours to the Emperour of Constantinople, who caused *Theodosius Partitius* to entreat them. He was made Protospataire of the Empire, to whose succour he sent sixtie galleies. *Leuis* the second granted him many priuiledges: and in the end he was slaine by a sedition, the fve and twentieth yeare.

14. VRS PARTITIATVS hauing pacified the sedition, was made duke. The Turks hauing spoiled Dalmatia euen vnto Grada, were defeated by him, and *John* his sonne who

V. 25

A was his associat. The Emperour *Basilius* honoured him much for this action, and made him Protospataire of the Empire. He gouerned seuteene yeares.

15. JOHN PARTITIATVS sonne to *Vise*, hauing bene confirmed in his dignitie, took and burnt Comachia, and spoiled Rauenna to be reuenged of the earle of *Comachia*, who had taken his brother *Badoaire* prisoner, and wounded him to the death. Growing sickely, he caused the Church of S. *Cornelius*, and S. *Cyprian* to be built at Malamocco, and hauing gouerned fve yeares and six moneths, he renounced the dignitie.

16. PETER CANDIAN was chosen after the voluntarie demission of his predecessor: he was valiant and expert in armes, yet very deuout. He went in person with ten galleies B against the Narentins: fighting valiantly against them, in his second enterprise he was slain. He gouerned but fve moneths.

DOMINICKE TRIBVN is put in the ranke of dukes by some, others that haue not so curiously lockt into the historie haue omitted him, hauing bene duke but three moneths and thirteene daies. There is nothing memorable in his time but a certaine priuiledge granted to Chioggia.

17. PETER surnamed *Tribun*, sonne to *Dominic* being chosen duke, obtained of *Guyon* emperor and king of Italie, a confirmation of the auncient priuiledges. The barbarous king came into Italie and burnt Heraclea, Cape d' Arger, and Chioggia. This prince C defeated them with much honour: and this was the third time that strangers would haue

climpt this Estate. He gouerned foure and twentie yeares.

18. VRS BADOAIRE was called *Partitius*, and was the first which changed his name. He sent *Peter* his sonne to Constantinople, who was made Protospataire. In the year 1200 he obtained of *Radolph* emperor and king of Italie, the confirmation of the auncient authoritie of the Venetians to coyne money. He gaue himselfe wholly to pietie, and in the twentieth yeare he renounced the dignitie to become a Monke, and liued religiously.

19. PETER CANDIAN the second, was a valiant man, and made war against *Lanterio* marquis of Istria, who hindred the Venetians traffike, whom he subdued, and conquered the people of Capo d' Istria. He vanquished *Albert* sonne to *Berengarius* the emperor, who hauing seized vpon Rauenna, stooped the passage of the Venetian ships. In his D time the maidens that were apt for marriage were stolne away by the Triclauns, and recovered againe. He gouerned seuen yeares.

20. PETER BADOAIRE sonne to *Vise* was redeemed by him from the Sclaunians. He did rule but two yeares and seuen moneths, alwaies in peace, which he made shew to his much. The Emperour *Berengarius* did him many fauours for his merits.

21. PETER CANDIAN the third, sonne to the second *Candian*, did associat his sonne *Peter* to the dignitie: he armed three and thirtie vessells twice against the Narentins: at the second time he made a peace with them. His sonne being blamed by him for his bad behaviour, reuolted against him and the commonweale. The people would haue slaine E him, but he was sent into exile, where ioining with *Guyon* sonne to *Berengarius*, annoyed the commonweale, the which did much trouble his father; so as he died in the fiftenth yeare.

22. PETER CANDIAN the fourth, being called from banishment (notwithstanding that the people had taken an oath neuer to receiue him), was made prince with great applause. He wrought to with Pope *John* the twelfth, as the Bishop of Grada was made Patriarch, and Metropolitan of all the Venetian Estate, and of Istria. The Emperour *Otho* granted him many honourable priuiledges. He ruined *Vderze*, and was slaine in a sedition of the people, hauing gouerned twentie yeares.

23. PETER VRSOLA was a very deuout man, and chosen by the people against his F will. He went often disguised to visit the poore and hospitalis: he pacified the dissentions of the Venetians with them of Capo d' Istria, who yielded themselves tributaries. He went with *Beato Kornualdo* of Rauenna to liue a religious life: hauing gouerned two yeares, two moneths, and twentie daies.

24. VITAL CANDIAN sonne to *Peter* the third, made a league with the Emperour *Otho*.

Otho. He fell sicke in the beginning of his charge; so as hauing made a vow to become a Monke if he recouered his health, he performed it, hauing gouerned a yere or therabouts. **25** **TRIEVNE MEME** was very rich, but no man of State. In his time there were great discensions betwixt the families of the *Morofins* and *Caloprians*, by reason whereof there were great murders committed. He held the *Morofins* faction, which made the rest retire to Verona, to the Emperor **Otho**. He gaue the Island of *S. George* to the Abbot *Morofin*, and renounced the principalitie the twelfth yere, to become a Monke.

26 **PETER VASCOLO** the second, was a politicke man, who dealt so with the Emperors *Basilus* and *Alexius*, as the Venetians were freed from customes. **Otho** the Emperor being at Verona did him the honour, among other things, to christen his sonne. He was the first that did enlarge their confines by sea, getting many places in Istria and Dalmatia. Hauing finished the church and palace he died, the eighteenth yere of his principallitie.

27 **OTHO VASCOLO** hauing gouerned a while with *Peter* his father, was confirmed in the dignitie at the age of eightene yeres: he won such reputation, as *Geisla* king of *Hongarie* gaue him a sister of his to wife. He vanquished them of Istria which had rebelled; and went in person into Dalmatia to the enterprife against *Cresmar*. In the end they that enuied his glorie conspired against him, who hauing shauen off his beard, he was confined into Greece the seuenteenth yere.

28 **PETER CENTRANIC** or **BARBOLAN** succeeded **Otho**: but not able to pacifie the discensions, as well for the mutinies of the citizens, as of their neighbours, was forced to quit the dignitie, and to become a Monke. **Orso** Patriarch of Grado, brother to **Otho**, who was retired to Constantinople, was constituted attending his returne. He continued about a yere in the palace, and left the principalitie, hearing newes of **Othos** death. **Dominic Vrsola** sought to vsurpe the dignitie, but he was expelled by the people the next day, and died at Rauenna.

29 **DOMINIC FLABENIC** was chosen during his exile by the faction of those who had expelled **Dominic Vrsola**: in his time in the yere 1040 there was a National council called touching ecclesiasticall orders. He brought the State in ielousie of the familie of the *Vrsoli*, and sought to supplant it. He gouerned ten yeres, foure moneths, and twelue daies.

30 **DOMINIC CONTAREN** was verie pleasing vnto the people: He pacified Dalmatia, which had bene much afflicted by the rebellion of *Zara*: he fauoured the Normans against *Robert* king of Pouillia. The discord which was betwixt the Commonweale, and *Pepo* patriarch of Aquilea was pacified by him. He caused the monasterie of *S. Nicholas* vpon Lido to be built, and died in the eight and twentieth yere.

31 **DOMINIC SILVIE** going to the funerall of his predecessor, was in the midst thereof saluted duke by the acclamations of the people, and purchased such reputation, as *Nicephorus* emperor of Constantinople gaue him his sister in marriage. By her persuasion he made war against the abouenamed *Robert*, and at the first won an honourable victory, seizing vpon *Duras*. The second time he fought with much disadvantage, whereby his credit was blemished. He first of all adorned the Church of *S. Marke* with marble, and caused it to be wrought after the Italiane fashion: He died the thirteenth yere.

32 **VITALIS FALESI**, being made duke, did presently obtaine of the emperor *Henric* the fourth, the fouering of Dalmatia, and Croatia. *Henric*, successeur to the empire, did him great fauours, and being come vpon deuotion to Venice, he christened his daughter. *Proprio* was instituted in his time, and the worke of *S. Markes* Church continued. He gouerned twelue yeres.

33 **VITALIS MICHAELI**, by his valour at sea did much extend the limits of the commonweale. He made warre in the East by the persuasion of Pope *Vrbis* the second, to conquer the Holie land with other Christian Princes. The Island of *Smime*, *Suria*, and *Hierusalem* were taken from the Infidels. He died the sixty yere.

34 **ORDELAFFUS FALBRIUS**, sonne to *Vitalis*, assisted king *Baldwin* against the Infidels.

in the conquest of the Holie land, and they had such successe, as they diuided the same betwixt them, throughout all the realme of India. In the eight yere of his principallitie, *Malamocco* was in a manner all burnt and drowned, which made them to translate the Bishops See to Chioggia. He went in person to the warre against *Zara*, which he beleagured, and hauing won the victorie, he returned the second time, where he died the fifteenth yere of his principallitie.

DOMINIC MICHAELI, being made duke, for his great reputation and merits, (by the meanes of Pope *Calixtus*) to succour the Christians in the Holie land, with hundred faile, causing the Infidels to raise the siege from before Ioppa. He tooke which he gaue to *Vanmond* Patriarch of Hierusalem. *Emanuel* the emperor made war against him, from whom he tooke *Chio*, *Rhodes*, *Samos*, *Metellin*, and *Istire*. He reuind the principalitie the thirteenth yere.

PETER POLANVS, sonne in law to *Michaeli*, was a verie wise man, so as he chosen Arbitrator betwixt *Conrade* and *Emanuel*, emperours. He made warre against of *Pisa* and *Pidoua*, whom he vanquished. He did arme against the duke of Pouillie, for the forelaid *Emanuel*, from whom he recouered many possessions taken by the empire. Some say, that it was his sonne which won those battailes, and that he himselfe being fallen sicke, returned, and died the eighteenth yere.

DOMINIC MOROSINI clenched the gulfes of certaine Pirats of Ancona, whose name *Guiscard* was taken and hanged. He besieged *Pola*, the which he tooke, with so, which townes had rebelled in Istria. He made a league with *William* king of Sicilie, from whom he obtained many exemptions for the traffique of merchants. *Zara* the Metropolitan at his instance, and he caused *Dominic* the ninth his sonne to be made earle. He beautified the cite of Venice with buildings, and began the Tower of *San Marco*. He died, seven yeres, and fwe moneths after his election.

VITALIS MICHAELI the second, subdued the Tarentins, who had rebelled the first time: he committed *Vricke* patriarch of Aquilea to prison, with twelue Chanoin. In hundred dayes he put one hundred galleys and twentie ships to sea, against the emperor *Emanuel*. The familie of the *Iustiniani*, was in his time reduced to one onely, *Emanuel* Monke, whom he drew out of a Monasterie, by the Popes consent, and gaue him his daughter in marriage. There happened a great plague in his time, whereof the emperor imputing the fault vnto him, he was wounded, and died, hauing gouerned seven yeres, and seven and twentieth dayes.

CHRISTIAN ZIANI was the first that was chosen by ten electors. In his time he was a great Schisme in the Church, by reason of the emperor *Frederic Barbarousse*, who made *Alexander* the third abandon the holie See, *Ostianus* hauing bene made *Antipope*. *Alexander* retired to Venice, where hauing serued long in the Monasterie of the *San Marco*, he was in the end knowne and taken forth by the Prince and Seigneurie. *Barbarousse* made warre against the Venetians vpon this occasion. *Ostianus* his sonne was who was the meanes of a reconciliation, that his father came to Venice to kisse the feet: In requittall whereof, he obtained many priuiledges, and died in the sixt yere of his government.

ALFONSO MARIPIERE was the first duke that was chosen by the fortie which retreated to that end, after the death of *Ziani*. They gaue him six Councillours to make his resolutions. He conquered *Zara*, which had rebelled the fourth time: He succoured the Christians against the Sarrazins, which had vsurped the Holie land the eight yeres after that *Baldwin* had deliuered it. *Ptolmeide* was recouered, and *Emanuel* successeur to *Emanuel* the emperor, deliuered many Venetian merchants. He renounced the principalitie the fourteenth yere, to become a religious man.

ANDREW DANDULO was also chosen by the fortie. They of *Zara* were againe subdued, and *Pola* subdued. In his time Constantinople was taken, with the empire of the East, wherein he assisted the French Princes and Barons. He died the thirteenth yere, being General of all the Christian armies.

ANDREW ZIANI sonne to *Sebastian* was made duke some time after the death of *Dandulo*.

Dandolo, the Correctors being then instituted. In his time there came Embassadors from Athens, and Achaia, to submit themselves to the obedience of the Commonweale. Candie was peopled by a Colonie of Venetian gentlemen. He married *Constance*, daughter to *Tamred* king of Sicile. In the end, he renounced the principallitie, hauing gouerned foure and twentie yeres.

43. *JAMES TEPLYI* was made duke by lot, in concurrence of *Renieri Candelo*, who had as many voyces as he. Candie rebelled, and the seditious were punished. Zara, which had shaken off the yoke, was made subiect againe. There was warre against the Ferrarois, and against *Ezzelin*, who had seized vpon Padoua. In the end, he quit the principallitie the twentieth yere, and died soone after.

44. *MARIN MOROSINI*, was made duke by the fortie, by reason of the precedent concurrence. In his time there was another Colonie of gentlemen sent into Candie, who built Canea. He made warre against *Ezzelin* that besieged Mantoua: who through rage and despithe slew twelue thousand Padouans which he had in his armie. He died the fourth yere of his principallitie.

45. *RENIERI ZENO* being Podesta at Firma, was chosen duke, and sent for with foure galleys. Vnder him the Commonweale obtayned a famous victorie against them of Genoua; but the joy was short, for that *Mitchell Paleologus* expelled the French and the Venetians out of Constantinople, being assisted by the Geneuois forces, fiftie eight yeres after the taking of the citie. They of Genoua were defeated againe: and hauing gouerned sixteene yeres he died.

46. *LAVRENCE TEPLYI* was made duke, in remembrance of the victorie which he won of the Geneuois at Tyre. He made a noble alliance for two of his sons, with two strange ladies, the which was afterwards forbidden by a law. Ceruia made it lele subiect to the Commonweale, and the Bolonians were defeated. He gouerned seuen yeres and twentie dayes.

47. *JAMES CONTARIN* at the age of eightie yeres, of Procurator of *S. Marke* was made duke. The law against bastards was published, and they excluded from all publique charges. There grew certaine rebellions in Istria, and by them of Genoua, which were pacified. In the end, for his great age, he renounced the dignitie, by the aduice of the Senat, hauing gouerned foure yeres, and six moneths.

48. *DANDVLO* was chosen, being absent. The citie in his time was much afflicted with waters, and earthquakes. He made warre in Istria against the Patriarch of Aquileia, and the Bistep of Goritia. At the instance of Pope *Nicholas* he did succour the Archbishop of Tripoli with fise and twentie galleys. He died the seuenth moneth after the eight yere of his gouernement.

49. *PETER GRADONIC*, a valiant man, freed the Commonweale from two great daungers, the one by reason of a great disgrace which happened in a batraile against them of Genoua, and the other for the conspiracie of *Baiamonte*, whom he supprest being in armes vpon *S. Markes* place. It was ordayned, that the gentlemen should haue the gouernement, and the Councell of Ten was instituted. Hauing gouerned two and twentie yeres and nine moneths, he died.

50. *MARIN GEORGE* was so good as they surnamed him the Holie. Venice was alwayes excommunicated in his time, by reason of the taking of Ferrara. Zara rebelled the sixt time, and they had much trouble to bring them to their duties. He built the monasterie of *S. Dominic*, and died eightie one yeres old, hauing gouerned ten moneths and ten dayes.

51. *JOHN SOVRANCE* had the honour to recouer Zara, and other places, distracted in his predecessors time. Negropont was recovered, and warre was made against them of Genoua. The excommunication was taken away at Venice, by the means of *Francis Dandolo*, who cast himselfe at the Popes feet with an yron chaine about his necke. The number of the Procurators of *S. Marke* was augmented vnto six. He gouerned sixteene yeres, and six moneths.

52. *MARCUS DANDVLO*, who had so much humbled himselfe for his countrie, was aduanced

to the highest dignitie. They of Pola and Valse submitted themselves to the Commonweale, the which bred a war against the Patriarch of Aquileia. Padoua was taken by *Albert Scalger*, and Treuifo with the countie remained to the commonweale. He went into league with the Christian princes against the Turke, and in his time there were three score Embassadors at Venice. He gouerned ten yeres, and ten moneths. 53. *ANTHONY GRADONIC*, Procurator of *S. Marke*, was made duke being sixty six yeres old, by the cession of *Andrew Dandolo*. In his time happened (as they say) that great myracle of *S. Marke*, *S. George*, and *S. Nicholas*, who deliuered Venice from a great and imminent inundation. Candie rebelled, and the rebells were sepparated. There fel a great death in the citie, which bred a discontentment in the same. And he dyed the fourth yere.

54. *ANDREW DANDVLO* who had quit the place to *Gradonic*, caused the dearth to be remedied by sending corn into Sicilie. He obtained of the king of Babilon free traffike into Egypt. Zara rebelled the seuenth time, and was suppressed. A war was made against them of Genoua, and the citie was afflicted with two great accidents, the one an Earthquake, and the other the plague. He gouerned twelue yeres wanting some moneths.

55. *MARIN FALERIUS* was chosen being Embassador at Rome. Hauing receiued intelligence from certaine priuat men, the which not being reuenged, according to his desire, he resolved, being fourescore yeres old, to make himselfe absolute Lord. The contriue being discovered by *Nicholas Lyon*, he had his head cut off in the palace: and it is said that in the place of his Pourtrait should be writtten, *This is the place of Marcus Falerius, who for his haynous offence lost his head*. He was duke ten moneths.

56. *JOHN GRADONIC* surnamed *Nase*, had an excellent wit & a bad face. The war was made against the Geneuois, which ended with a peace. He had war also against them of Hongarie for Dalmatia. Treuifo was besieged in his time, and he went thither to seeke them. He gouerned one yere, three moneths, and fourteene daies.

57. *JOHN DAVPHIN* was chosen duke, being in Treuifo for defence thereof against them of Hongarie. The Senat sent to demand free passage for him, which being refused, he marched forth with two hundred horse in spite of the enemy, whither the Senat to receiue him within a short time he ended this war, and recovered Conilian, and Afola. He made a peace for the soueraignty of Dalmatia, and died the twentieth yere of his age, hauing gouerned four yeres, two moneths, and eleuen dayes.

58. *LAVRENCE CELSE* vpon a false bruit of a victorie against the Geneuois, was taken in concurrence of *Peter Gradonic*, *Leonard Dandolo*, and *Marke Cornaro*. Candie was taken, and they had great difficultie to recouer it, whereupon they made a Tournay, and a publicke feast vpon *S. Markes* place. He died two daies after the fourth yere of his principallitie.

59. *MARKE CORNARO* a very learned and a wise man, sent into Candie, which had been long time where there grew cruell wars, the Pope giuing full indulgence to them that would returne. The rebells being severely punished, the commonweale presented a certaine number of gallies to Pope *Vrbain* the fift. He gouerned two yeres, fise moneths, and twentie daies.

60. *ANDREW CONTARIN* fled into the countrie of Padoua for feare of being made duke, as presaging the ruine which should happen in his time to the Commonweale. First there was a war made by them of Trieste, and afterwards by Carrara, for the possession of Padoua, the which was such as Chioggia being taken, the citie of Venice was in daunger: but in the end he went in person against the enemyes, defeated them, and recovered Chioggia. He dyed hauing gouerned fiftene yeres, four moneths, and twentie daies.

61. *MICHAEL MORESINI*, was a man full of all wisdom and learning. Some say that in his time the Island of Tenedos was taken, and not in his predecessors. There were new lawes made, and among others, it was ordained that murderers which were taken should afterwards loose their heads. He ruled but foure moneths, and fise dayes, and

and died seuentie and foure yeares old.

62. ANTHONIE VENTURI, a rigorous oberuor of iustice, causing his owne sonne to be banished, for that he had lightly offended the familie of a gentleman of Venice. He made a league with *Gualtiero* Visconte, against *Carara*, from whom he tooke Padoua. He succoured the Emperour *Emanuel* against the Turke, and did ayd *Sigismund* king of Hongarie, who came afterwards to the Empire. *S. Marke* place and that of Realte were much beautified in his time. He died hauing ruled eightene yeares wanting one moneth, and three daies.

63. MICHAELL STENO had the dignitie of Procurator of *S. Marke*, with that of duke. There was a famous battaile won against the Geneuois: *Carara* was vanquished the last time, and Padoua and Verona taken. They of Vincentia yielded to the common-
weale, to free themselves from his tyrannic. *Ladislaus* king of Hongarie in like manner
left *Zara*. He died hauing gouerned thirteene yeares, and three daies.

64. THOMAS MOENIGO was first of all Generall of the gulfes. He embraced peace to the end the citifens might trafficke. *Vdona* came vnder the obedience of this State, with the countrie of Friuli, by the means of the Seignours of Sauorgnani, who were made gentlemen of Venice. The Florintins had succours giuen them against the duke of Milan. He ruled ten yeares, and three moneths.

65. FRANCIS FOSCARIN did much suppress the duke of Milan, who began to feare vpon the libertie of Italie: *Brescia*, *Bergamo*, & other towns of Lombardie were taken among which were *Loda* and *Parma*, and *Rauenna* in *Romagnia*: he had great successe at sea, and in *Morea*. The Senat did succour the Emperour *Paleologus* against the Turkes, who vnrped Constantinople in the year 1453. He was chosen Arbitrator by the duke of Milan, in certaine controuersies of neighbourhood. The king of *Datia* was made a gentleman of Venice. Then the duke for his great weaknesse was dismissed, hauing gouerned foure and thirtie year, and six moneths.

66. PASCHAL MALIPIERRE being Procurator of *S. Marke*, was chosen duke in the place of *Foscarin*, who died two daies after his dismission. There was a law made that from that time no duke should be deposed. In his time printing was brought into Venice. The Arsenall was much enlarged, and he entertained the people in peace, during four yeres, D
fix moneths, and five daies that he gouerned.

67. CHRISTOPHER MONO was also of a Procurator of *S. Marke* made duke. He entertained peace for a time, but in the second yeare of his gouernment, the Turke growne proud by the taking of Constantinople, declared war against the Venetians. They made a league with Pope *Pius* the second, and the duke of *Bourgonde*, but the Pope dying they were left alone and maintained the wars twentie yeares. He died hauing reigned nine yeares, and six moneths.

68. NICHOLAS TRONI was fortunate, for in his time the affaires of the common-
weale succeeded well against the Turke. *Peter Mocenigo* General in the Archipelago, ha-
uing joined with the Pope, the king of Naples, & them of Rhodes, drew together eighty E
and five galleys, and tooke *Satalia*, a citie of *Panfilia*. He made also a league with the king of *Perfia* against the Turke. *James* king of *Cyprus* comming to Venice married *Katherine Cornara* the adopted daughter of *S. Marke*. He gouerned one yere, eight moneths, and five daies.

69. NICHOLAS MARCEL Procurator of *S. Marke*, after certaine lawes made by the
Correctors, was chosen duke. In his time there was a conspiracie in *Cyprus*, to make the
realme fall into the hands of *Ferdinand* king of Naples. *Peter Mocenigo* went thither with
a great armie, pacified all, and punished the rebels feuerely. *Scutarie* was besieged by the
Turke, and valiantly defended by *Antonio Loredano*. This duke gouerned one yere, four
moneths, and seuteene daies.

70. PETER MOENIGO was chosen duke in remembrance of his braue exploits.
Stepanto was besieged in his time by the Turkes, and valiantly defended by *Antonio Lore-
dano*. They carried their armes against the Island of *Stalamene*, and the said *Loredano* his
valour to defend it. The daughter of king *Ferdinand* came to Venice with the Cardinal
her

A his brother, where they were royally entertained. This prince caused a certaine coyn e to
be made which he called by his name, and he gouerned but one yere, two moneths, and
nine daies.

71. ANDREVV VENDRAMINE, was vnfortunat in his gouernement, for the Ve-
nemie was twice put to rout by the Turkes: once neere vnto *Croya* in *Albania*; and
the second time in the countrie of *Friuli*. In his person he had this happineffe, That
of a goodly stature, he had a most beautifull wife, and goodly children, whom he
married by marriages to the best Families. He gouerned one yere, and eight moneths.

JOHN MOENIGO, brother to *Peter Mocenigo*, hauing continued the warre
with the Turke, in the end he made a peace with him, vpon condition, that he should
by *Scutari* and *Stipula* to haue libertie of traffique, and that they might keep a baylie
in Constantinople. He made warre against *Ferdinand* king of Naples, at the request of
the *Sixtus* the fourth, which was the cause of the long warre of the league. In the end,
peace was made, the Commonweale hauing gotten *Rouigo* and *Polefan*. The citie was
deformed by fire and plague; and this prince died hauing gouerned seuen yeares,
six moneths.

MARK BARBADIC (the plague being ceased) repayed the palace which the
Turke had burnt. He had a maxime different from all other Princes, to know how to par-
don and forget the priuat iniuries which had bene done him, and to reuenge them se-
parately which had bene committed against the State. The great Turke sent a particular
ambadour vnto him, to congratulat his election. He gouerned but nine moneths.

AVGVSTINE BARBADIC opposed himselfe against *Charles* the eighth the
French king, whenas he made warre against the house of *Arragon*, for the realme of
Naples which he conquered. The Turke tooke *Lepante*, *Modene*, and *Corone*, from the
Commonweale. The realme of *Cyprus* was vnder the protection of the Senat, and
Queen Katherine brought to Venice. The office of Health was created by reason of
the plague. The duke gouerned fiftene yeares and one and twentie daies.

LEONARD LORÉDAN indured a cruell warre against the greatest Princes of
Europe, a league being made at *Cambray* betwixt the emperor *Maximilian*, the French
king, the dukes of *Sauoy*, *Ferrara* and *Mantoua*, perswaded thereunto by
Antonio the second. All the Venetians Estate vpon the firme land was taken, except
Messina, but in the end it was recovered. He liued in the principallitie nineteene yeares,
eight moneths, and twentie daies.

ANTHONIE GRIMANI, being Generall in a famous ouerthrow, was there-
upon taken from his charge of Procurator of *S. Marke*, and confined to *Cherfus*. He brake
his imprisonment, and retired to Rome to the Cardinal his sonne, where he did for many
good offices, as he was not only restored to his dignitie of Procurator, but also made duke
being eighty two yeres old. He gouerned but one yere, ten moneths, and two daies.

ANDREVV GRITTI carrying away the greatest part of the glorie for the reco-
uerie of Padoua, was in great esteeme. He prevailed so with the French king, where he
was prisoner, as his maiestie allied himselfe with the Commonweale, and that Verona
and *Brescia* were recovered. He carried himselfe with great liking of the Senat during
the waies betwixt the emperor *Charles* the fift, and *Francis* the first, and also against *Soli-
man*. He gouerned fiftene yeares, seuen moneths, and eight daies.

PETER LAVDE continued the defence of the commonweale against the Turke,
with whom in the end he made a peace, the which he maintained and enioyed during the
waies betwixt the abouenamed *Charles* and *Francis*. He gouerned fix yeares, and eight
moneths.

FRANCIS DONAT, making vse of the peace, beautified the citie with many
stately buildings, and among others, with that of the Palace. He sent to succour the em-
perour against certaine rebells in Germanie. The princes of *Guile* being come to Ve-
nice in his time, were royally entertained there, according to their dignitie. He gouerned
fix yeares, and six moneths.

MARK ANTHONIE TREVISAN, a man wholly giuen to deuotion, had a
care

care to haue the Commonweale flourish in riches, and good manners, he laboured by his A good example, that vice should not crepe in as it doth by too long a peace. He gouerned one yeare, lacking three dayes.

81. FRANCIS VIVIER could so gouerne the Commonweale, as notwithstanding that in his time the Turke made warre against Pouillia, and the French king in Tuscany, yet the Queene of Poland was royally entertayned at Venice. He gouerned two yeares, one moneth, and twentie dayes.

82. LAWRENCE PRIOLI was solicited by the Pope to make warre against the emperour, but being a friend to the Commonweale he would not offend him, and did mediate a peace. In his time a peace was made betwixt France and Spaine. Charles the B fifth died. This prince gouerned three yeares, eleuen moneths, and eight dayes.

83. IEROSME PRIOLI, brother to the precedent duke, enioyed great honours which Pope Pius the fourth did vnto the Commonweale, whom he fauoured much, hearing her embassadours in the place of audience for kings. In his time the Councell of Trent was concluded, whether he sent for embassadours *Nicholas de Ponte*, and *Mathew Dandolo*. The Commonweale did chriest the duke of Sauoy sonne, borne of *Marguerite* of France. He died, hauing gouerned eight yeares, two moneths, and foure dayes.

84. PETER LOREDAN, for the concurrence of two others, was chosen beyond all mens hope, or his owne. The Arsenall was burnt in his time, and there was a great dearth of all things. *Selim*, successor to *Solman*, thereupon tooke an occasion to breake C warre with the Commonweale, from whom he demanded the realme of Cyprus, and made warre vpon this subiect. He gouerned foure yeares, five moneths, and eight dayes.

85. LEVVIS MOENIGO, the warre being kindled against the Turke, lost the realme of Cyprus, Nicosya hauing bene taken, and Famagosta yeelded. The Commonweale made a league with Pope Pius the fift, and *Philip* king of Spaine, so as their forces being joyned together, they obrayned a famous victorie of the Turkes, in the yere 1571. Some two yeares after, *Henry* the third, the French king, past by Venice, where he was royally entertayned and feasted. This prince died, hauing reigned seuen yeares.

86. SEBASTIAN VENIERI was chosen by a common consent, with fo great applause, as certaine Turkes came to kisse his feet. There were fise Correctors of the lawes D created, for the ordering of palace busineses. The cite was freed from a cruell plague, after a vow made to build vp the Redeemers Church. The palace was set on fire, and recieued much harme. This prince did not gouerne a whole yeare

87. NICHOLAS DE PONT was created duke, he was verie learned in all arts, wherof he had made publique profession in Venice. He past through all the honors wherewith the Commonweale may gratifie her citisens. The Seminarie of S. *Marke* was instituted by him. Certaine princes of Iappon being arriued at Venice, were receiued with great fauour. He caused the bridge of Canareggio to be built; and gouerned ieuentyes, nine moneths, and thirteene dayes.

88. PASCALL CIGOONE, Procuratour of S. *Marke*, was chosen as he was at E Church hearing Masse. In his time there was great warres betwixt France and Spaine for Piedmont: and betwixt the emperour and the Turke for Hongarie. He caused the towne of Palma to be built vpon the confines of Friuli, and a new fort in the Island of Cefalonia. He had the honour of that admirable bridge of Realte, which he caused to be built: and he gouerned about ten yeares.

89. MARIN GRIMANI, Procurator of S. *Marke*, was so pleasing vnto the people, as on the day of his election they made extraordinarie signes of joy, the which were continued for many dayes after. The second yere of his principalltie, he caused the duchesse his wife to be crowned in triumph, to whom Pope *Clement* the eight sent a Rose of gold. In his time there was great joy for the peace concluded betwixt the French king, and the king of Spaine. The Pope comming to Ferrara, which did belong vnto the Church, *Cardinal Aldobrandin* passing to Venice, was most honourably entertayned there, with other Cardinalls. There was so great a swelling of water in the fift yere of his principalltie, as the Gondoles and Barkes went vpon S. *Markes* place, as in the lake. He died

the great griefe of all the people, hauing gouerned ten yeares, and eight mo-

8. DONARD DONATI having for his meritis, singular wisdome, and dexteritie in the of affaires, past through all the honours which the commonweale may giue whom he finds faithfull, was set in the place of *Grimani* the tenth of Ianu- He had bene sent Embassadour to Constantinople, towards *Mahomet*, newly the Empire of the East, to performe the accustomed complements in name of the commonweale. He is so practised in affaires, and hath so happie a memorie in a soule to be religiously zelous to the common good, as the Senat refers more to him, they haue done to any of his predecessors. The Senat hath bene excommunicated by Pope *Paul* the fift, for certaine pretensions of the holy See, and it may be that he carried himselfe like an immouable rocke for the defence of the State against lightnings: so as two of the principal pillars of Christendome threatned ruine, had the most Christian *Henry* the fourth, the French king, imbraced these two pillars, and held them vp, to set them straight, by the meanes of his Embassadours, who haue a triumphant arch to the immortalitie of his glorie. This prince who enioies the spinnesse of peace, doth continually acknowledge the loue and particular affecti- which he beares vnto France.

THE COMMONWEALE OF RAGOVS.

The Contents.

Ragou in old time called *Epidaurum*, and of the situation of *Epidaurum* where they did worship *Esculapius*. 2. Beginning of the word *Sclauonia*, the bignesse, length, breadth, climate, and the chiefe townes. 3. *Ragou* a towne of *Sclauonia*, tributarie to the Turke. Her situation and Islands. 4. The soile bearing fruits, fat fish, trees laden with oysters which they gather euery three yeares. 5. *Gradi* full of gardens of orange trees, lymons and pomegranets. *Langoste* another Island in olines and grapes, and famous for the sisting of sprats. 6. The ancient inhabitants of *Ragou*, barbarous and cruell by nature, and inslyming to the humour of the Scythians, since they are discended. 7. Custome of them of *Ragou* to go with halfe their heads tributarie to the Hungarians. Louers of equalitie. The manner of their appayrell, and the which are most in price. 8. Of their marriages and alliances, limited by the lawe of dukats. 9. Of their language and instruction in learning both diuine and humane. 10. Ribes of the *Ragou* consisting in trafficke. 11. Their small forces. 12. The custome of *Ragou* conformable to that of Venice: and first of the great Councell. 13. Of the annual magistrats and their iurisdiction. 14. Of the petite Councell, the charge continuance of this magistrat. 15. Of the election of the Reitor, chiefe of all the Councell. 16. Of the fine Pourwaters. 17. Of six Consuls, instituted for ciuile causes in the first. 18. Of the fine criminall Iudges. 19. Of the Officers vpon the arte of wooll. 20. Of the charge of thirrie appointed for causes of appeal. 21. Of five men called Pourwaters, or stewards of the health, and their authoritie. 22. Of the Officers appointed for customes, the Chamberlaines. 24. Of three Tresurers appointed for the custodie of the publicke store, and of Orphans money. 25. Of the Officers of the armorie. 26. Other Officers for the sale of wheat and wine, and for the reparation of the waies. 27. Of the six Captains of the night. 28. Of the Notarie, or Secretarie. 29. Of the Chancellors. 30. Of the *Capitaines* and *Earles* sent vnto governments, without the towne of *Ragou*. 31. Of the *Chancellors* of the Cathedrall Church of *Ragou*.

I. **B**Efore I ingage my selfe farther in this discourse, I desire to take from them that shall read this worke, all confusion by the equivocall of names, which might make them erre in the very beginning. For seeing that we haue vnderaken to speake of Ragoufe, which in old time was called Epidaurum, and that there were other townes of the same name, it is fit to shew which this is, and not to confound it indifferently with the rest. You must therefore vnderstand, that along the sea betwixt Venice and Corinth, there are three Epidauri, whereof the first lies vpon the gulf of Venice, and is that which we now call Ragoufe: the other is in the countie of Laconia, in the gulf of Napoli, this towne is now called Maluasia: and the third towne of Epidaurum, is that in the gulf of Engia, or Sinus Saronicus, which they call Hieronole or Pigiade: and in this last they did worship Esculapius.

II. But to come vnto that whereof we meane to make mention, it is situated in Sclauonia, which is the ancient Dalmatia, & which tooke the last name from the Sclauons, who in the time of the Emperor, *Iustinian* the first, being come out of Sarmatia, past the river of Danubius, and then a part of them fell vpon Macedonie, and the other vpon Thrace. Afterwards in the time of the Emperor *Maurice* who died in the yere 602, and of *Phoca* his successor, they made themselves maisters of Dalmatia. It is true that at this day the name of Sclauonia extends from the river of Arse vnto that of Drin, being in length from one riuer to another about foure hundred and eightie miles, and in breadth from the mountaines of Croatia vnto the sea, about one hundred and twentie. It lies betwixt the middlest of the fift Climat, neere vnto the thirteenth Parallel, and the middlest of the sixt, whereas the longest day in Summer is but fiftene houres and a halfe, the most Easterly Meridian passeth the six and fortieth degree, and the most Westerly the six and thirtieth. Finally, the sea which is betwixt Italie and the end of Sclauonia, is called the Adriaticke, and runs for the space of fix hundred miles, the greatest breadth is of two hundred miles, & the least of one hundred and fiftie, and that at the mouth of fixtie: but the rest which doth wash Albania and Macedonie, is called the Ionian Sea. One part of this countie obeies the seigneurie of Venice, another the Archdukes of Austria, and the rest the Turke. The chiefe townes are Flumina, Segne, Hone, Zara (for the which the Venetians and Hongarians haue continuall war) Sebenic, and Spalata. But the best town of all Sclauonia is Ragoufe, which maintaines it selfe in libertie, paying foureteen thousand zequins vnto the Turke, and spending as much more in presents, and lodging of Turkes. This commonweale hath a small territorie vpon the firme land, but it hath vnder it certaine small Islands which are reasonably good, lying betwixt Curzole, and the gulf of Cattaro.

III. The ancient towne of Epidaurum was in the same place, which at this day they call old Ragoufe. But the Gothes hauing seized vpon Italie, & by the same means of a great part of Sclauonia, and amongst others of Epidaurum, raised it quite: by reason whereof the inhabitants who knew not whither to retire themselves, began to build new Ragoufe as we see it at this day, of the ruines of the old towne. This towne is very well inhabited, and in an excellent situation vpon the sea: it is full of fountaines and fresh water, which haue bene drawne thither from the neighbour mountaines, to the great benefit of them of the countie. It hath a little port made by art, which is reasonably commodious of the one side, and there is a very high steepe mountaine, at the foot whereof the towne is built. They possesse about their towne a very small territorie, but they haue vnder their obedience diuers little pleasant Islands, among others that of Langoste, whose forme is like vnto an Amphitheatre.

The Qualitie.

III. The soile is by nature barren, but the Ragoufians bestow so much labour and industrie to make it good, as it yelds them oyle, wine, and excellent fruits. There is a certain

the valley whereas in winter there gathers together such abundance of water, as it maketh a lake, the which doth nourish fish which growes so fat, as they drie it without any salt. In the spring time the waters drying vp, they low come in the same place, the which growes abundantly, so as one place yelds them fish and come in one yere. Moreover they vse diuers industries by sea, and among others they make their rees bring them vnto the shore, for they bend downe the bowes of their trees, and stay them vnder the water, so as in two yere there are so many oysters fastened to these branches, as it maye suffice for ten yeres: then the third yere they are in a manner good to eat. The sea is the Island of Graouola, which is a verie pleasant place, and full of garof Orange trees, Lymons, and Pomegranets. The chiefe riuers are Saue, and Drau. The Island of Langoste is inuironed round about with verie high mountaines, in which the Ragoufians farmes, and in the middlest there is a goodly plain, which yelds great store of Oliues and Grapes. Neere vnto it, they haue a good fishing for Sprats.

The Manners of the Ancients.

The Inhabitants of this countie were in old time cruell and barbarous, and were continually giuen to Piracie. *Florus* writes of them, That in the first warre against the Carthaginians, in the time of Queene *Tewte*, they were not content to robbe and spoyle, but they did practise all kind of wickednesse. They were the Sclauons which cutt off the head of the Roman embassadours, and burnt them which gouerned their ships: And which did increase the Romans disgrace, was, That these people were then gouerned by a woman: For *Procopius* saith also, That the Sclauons (a people of Scythia) did enter into these countie in the time of *Iustinian*, and in the end stayed there, so as the Inhabitants did partly imbrace the manners of these strangers newly come. *Justin* calls this nation Fierce, and giuen to spoyle at sea: and therefore the Romans wayes Legions in this countie, as well for other occasions, as to bridle the barbarous humour of this people.

The Manners at this day.

The people of Ragoufe let their haire grow from the middle part of the head vpward, and haue the rest, quite contrarie to the manner of the Hongarians. The women weare long haire, and they make it blacke by art. All liue equally, without any great riches, for that they vse no such reuerences as we doe, neither doe they put off their clothes, but salute one another simplie, either by word, or by some action which discouers affection. They loue equalitie exceedingly, so as they haue a law, by the which no man may be bishop of Ragoufe, to the end, that not any one amongst them shall haue greater prehemence in their Commonweale, than that which is allowed them by the lawes.

They go diuersly attired; for the younger sort fashion themselves after the Florentin manner, others carrie cloaks, and the most ancient great sleeves, like vnto the Senators of Rome, and it is forbidden for any man to weare garments of silke, except the Rector of the Commonweale, the Doctors, and Knights. In Sommer, when it is verie hot, they weare collars of single taffata. There is the like restraint for womens apparell, for that they may not weare any thing but cloth during their liues, but when a maiden marries, it is allowed her to weare silke during a whole moneth. There is also something betwixt these, which shews the difference of their qualities; for on festiuall dayes, the gentlemen are accustomed to weare a hood of cloth, lined with red sandall, which they are to weare after they are married. Moreover, they weare tunicke, red, or blew cloth, and they are allowed to haue sleeves of silke at their pleasure.

For marriages, they are accustomed to allie themselves onely to persons of their condition, that is to say, gentlemen with gentlemen, and a gentleman may not marry a Bourgeois, or a stranger, to the end he bring not into his race a blood that is lesse gentle, corrupting his ancient gentrie; whereby the families are so decreased, as there

about foure and twentie that gouerne, for that the houses sayling (as all things doe) and the gentlemen not allying themselves with any citizens or strangers, these houses in time growne to a small number.

It is true, that if a gentleman for any priuat respect, or commoditie, take a wife which is not of the countrie, he may doe it, so as she be a gentlewoman of that countrie which lies betwixt Zara and Cattaro, and not otherwise: but whosoever takes a stranger to wife (as we haue said) he must haue at the least the worth of one thousand ducats of gold for the dowry of this wife, but yet it is not much obserued. And whereas marriages are limited by the law to one thousand ducats of gold; yet at this day they exceed it more, so as some father will giue three, foure, five, and six thousand ducats, yea more, according to his meanes, and the qualitie of his daughter. They pay the marriage money before the future husband see his wife, and then whenas the contract is written, and all other ceremonies performed, he goes to her house to see her: For it is their custome, not to court a woman before they haue married her, according to the order prescribed by the Romish Church.

IX. As for their language, all the yong men most commonly vnderstand the Italian, which they call Franc: but amongst themselves they onely vse the Sclauon Tongue. Many of them are giuen to learning, & therefore the Commonweale of Ragoufe doth commonly entertaine a Reader with great fees, who reads vnto yong men, hauing three or foure Regents. They doe also draw yearly a good Preacher vnto them, who preacheth onely C vnto men, for that he speaks Italian, and the women vnderstand not the language.

Besides these physicians for the soule, the Commonweale doth entertaine men for the health of the body, that is to say, two Physitians and two Chirurgeians, with great wages: these men are bound to visite all sicke persons, without any fee, especially the poore, and to doe whatsoever is necessarie, according to their profession, for the health of the citizens.

¶ The Riches.

X. It is not the countrie about Ragoufe that makes them rich, for that it is scarce able to maintaine them, notwithstanding that they liue verie sparingly. Their greatest wealth grows by their great trafficke, for that they haue many good ships with the which they go into diuers parts, and get much by their trade. They reape a great benefit, for that in regard of the 14000 Zequins which they giue yearly vnto the Turke, they are free and exempt from all impositions and customes throughout all the great Turkes empire. But we may not therefore conclude, that this Commonweale is verie rich, for that without the Turkes support, it had bene often in prei to many, especially to the Venetians, and it would be much troubled if it were to make any great expence to entertaine soldiers for any long time.

¶ The Forces.

XI. The want of great commodities is the cause why they of Ragoufe can haue no great forces, and if they subsist, it is by reason of the support whereof I haue spoken. Their towne is reasonably well fortified, but besides that it is at the foot of a mountain which commands it, it cannot long indure a great siege. As for the souldiers, they entertaine few, hauing onely one hundred Hungarians for their guard, with a Captaine: but the Commonweale doth rather employ these for execution of affaires, than for any other necessarie thing; for that these men respect no persons, and for this cause doe all that is commaunded them, and are verie faithful, like vnto the Swisses, whom Princes doe vse for the guard of their persons. They haue also the castle of S. Laurence without the town, which is reasonably good, and the new fort towards the port, which is on the East side. All these things are of no great consideration, onely good to resist them that will not be at an enterprise.

¶ The

¶ The Government.

Ragoufe hath not bene alwaies a commonweale, for that it hath obaid diuers lords diuers times, sometimes Gretians, sometimes Albanians. But since it hath imbraced this kind of government, they haue been in some reputation. The Ragoufians when they fought to reduce the towne to a commonweale, they followed for the most part the order of the State of Venice. Being thus resolved, they first instituted a great Council, knowing that it was the foundation of a commonweale, & as it were the firme basis and groundwork of their citie. All gentlemen of the citie enter into this Council, haue attained to the age of twentie yeares, and they are admitted, prouing their gentrie. This Council they create all the magistrats of the citie, the which are such as I will shew.

There are first the Pregadi, which should be commonly fixtie, all gentlemen: but it seldom happens that this magistrat hath a number compleat. There may be many gentlemen of one familie; for that as I haue said, the families in time are reduced into a small number. These haue charge of the affaires of the commonweale, and do also iudge of causes, by appeale, vnder three hundred ducats: they also iudge of criminall causes, which are of importance in regard of the persons, as if any gentleman be accused, or committed any crime. They continue a yeare in this charge, and they are changed yearly, for that they are not all created at one instant, but one after another as they die; and they may be reconfirmed.

The petite Council (so called in regard of the great) is the councill of the Rector, which is composed of eleuen persons, all of diuers families, who assist the Rector, or head of the commonweale. They receiue and heare the petitions and demands of strangers, and of priuat men, the letters, the embassadours, and such like; and are as it were a court which presents vnto other magistrats the things which come before them, and which goe afterwards according to their qualitie to offices appointed for such matters. And these in regard of those things which are presented vnto them, decide some, and send the rest vnto the Pregadi. They continue but one yeare in this charge, and go altogether, and the other eleuen which are created by the great Council, enter al together into this new office with the new Rector, the first day of Ianuarie.

This Rector who is the head of all the Councils, is chosen in the great Council by three kinds of election, as they do in all other offices; & of these elections of all offices, the one is made by way of scrutinie (the which I haue expounded, speaking of the election of Popes) by three Councillors of the Rector, and the two others are made by lot. The Rector remaineth but one month in charge, and he is bound during that month to liue in the palace. He weares the habit of a duke, that is to say, a Robe with open sleeves, and different from others, by reason of his authoritie. They giue seuen ducats a month for his entertainment, and no more. It is true when he is one of the Pregadi, in regard of appellations he hath a ducate euery day to assist.

This Rector assembles with the Councillors vpon working daies after dinner, and alson vpon holie daies, vpon some occasions. He commonly giues the morning to the Pregadi, or to the great Council, according to occurrents. But if the Rector be not there, the most ancient Councillor enters into his place, yet they dispatch not any thing without his presence. They giue this Rector a Lieutenant, who hath iurisdiction in matters which do not exceed three ducats of gold, and he is his Lieutenant for ciuile matters only, and for no other end: the Councillors cannot be chosen Rectors the yere that they are in their magistracie.

Next there are five Pourueurs, who are men of fiftie yeares old and vpwards, and are of diuers families. They haue authoritie to cause all expeditions made by any magistrat whatsoever, to be receiued, and they must be present whenas the Councils assemble. These may be made Rectors during their magistracie, and are so commonly called. They are of the chiefe of the towne, of great authoritie, and in a manner alwaies of the council.

Aaa iij

After

XVII. After theſe are the fix Conſuls which heare ciuile cauſes, in the firſt inſtance, for any ſumme whatſoeuer. They are moſt commonly men of great authoritie, and which enter into counsell with the Pregadi, and they do often frame the proceſſe of ſuch things as they iudge. The parties are not accuſtomed to make allegations, as they doe in many places: but theſe Conſuls hearing the matter in queſtion, determine what iuſtice requires, and draw from euery cauſe two duckats in the hundred. They cannot be Reſtors for the ſpace of two yeares, leaſt they ſhould alter their proceedings in ciuile cauſes, and to the end the people might haue meanes to be ſoone diſpatched in their ſuits, for that they do continually attend them.

XVIII. There are alſo ſixe criminall Iudges, and expeditions go from them according to the iudgements which they make. It is true that gentlemen are excepted, for that in criminall cauſes they go before the Pregadi, and they that haue fees of the commonweale auſwer before the pettie Counſell. And there are ſometimes other cauſes which theſe fixe doe not iudge, for that the Pregadi doe thinke it fit to take knowledge thereof. Theſe Iudges, for that they are not commonly much employed, are made Reſtors, as the Pourueurs be.

XIX. There are moreover three officers vpon the art of wooll, theſe do commonly heare the differences that grow betwixt men which exerciſe that trade. They enter into the number of the Pregadi, and may alſo be made Reſtors.

XX. This commonweale hath alſo a Colledge of thirtie, into the which there may enter many perſons of one familie. They take knowledge of appellations vnto the ſumme of three hundred duckats, and euery one of them hath three duckats a yere for their wages, the which is done for that all the officers of the towne are ſuable if they do not attend their charges; for otherwiſe they would not accept them, for that they are of ſmall profit. When any office falls void, it is ſupplied by one of them that is in ſome other office. As for this colledge it hath charge of no other things but to take knowledge of appellations, as I haue ſaid. And as for the Pregadi, if any dies, they ſupplie his place by one of the Pourueurs, or of this Colledge.

XXI. It hath alſo fixe men which haue a care of health, whoſe charge is to looke vnto the health of the citie, and therefore they are called Pourueurs of the health. Their authoritie is great, for that they may puniſh them that offend, and that do infringe the orders of this office, and they are very like vnto the Pourueurs of health at Venice: and they may be Reſtors during the time of their charge.

XXII. There are ſoure men created for their cuſtomes, who haue care of matters belonging to that office, and demand the money which is due for cuſtomes, and do all things that belong vnto that buſineſſe.

XXIII. There are alſo two Chamberlaines who receiue the money that is laid vp in their coffers, yet they haue not the manning of the publicke treaſure, and their money is employed in ſome occurrents of the commonweale, and at the pleaſure of ſhoſe that haue the charge thereof.

XXIIII. They haue three Treafurers, who are commonly men of great authoritie, as well for their wealth, as for their good life. Theſe haue the publicke treaſure in their hands, and moreover orphans money which is left in Gard with them. They remaine fixe yeres in this office, and may be made Reſtors, and moſt commonly the Reſtors haue bene Treafurers.

There are in like manner Iuſtices, who haue a care that all things may be well ordered concerning victualls, and looke that the waights and meaſures and other inſtruments of merchants & trades men be iuſt, according to the lawes: and in their office the arts which are ſubiect vnto them are marked.

XXV. And for that they haue a little Arceball in their towne according to their forces, they haue a Magiſtracie called the Officers of the armie: theſe haue care of this Arceball, and provide for the munitions both by ſea and land. They are young men who haue ſurveyors or ouerſeers of greater experience ouer them, and they are made from time to time, according as occasions are offered.

More-

XXVI. Moreover, they bring wheat to Ragoufe from other places, the which is done at the publicke charge. There are therefore two officers which haue charge thereof, and tell the ſumme for the Commonweale.

The reuenues of them of Ragoufe conſiſt for the moſt part in wine, and therefore they haue created three officers vpon the counterbands, & theſe men haue charge to diſpatch whenas they are made for wine, and there is a great puniſhment ordayned for ſhoſe that ſhall infringe them, for that the law prohibits the bringing in of any foreign wines.

There are ſome alſo which haue the care of the citie ſtreets, and of publique places, ſuch as the wayes, market-places, and ſuch like to be repayed, according to neceſſitie, theſe are young men, for that they are no offices of any great importance.

There are alſo fix Captaines of the night, who one after another haue the guard of the citie in the night time, with the Hongarians, who are about one hundred, with their captaines, and they obey theſe, who open and ſhut the gates of the citie. They remaine ſome months in this charge, and they obſerue this order, that they which ſhut the citie at night, doe not open them in the morning, for that they change them at midnight.

They haue a Secretarie whom they call Notarie, who is preſent in all their ſecret affairs.

There is alſo another who hath the ſame tytle, but he takes knowledge of ſecrets which import the Commonweale. And theſe two Secretaries ſerue to write letters vpon inſtruments, and they alſo execute the office of publique Notaries.

Besides the abouenamed, there are three Chancellors, who ſerue the Conſulls, and in all cauſes, and they make inſtruments: There is one alſo vnder the Iudge criminall, who like office.

Every night they ſend a Captaine to the caſtle of S. Laurence, which is without the towne, and he hath no entertainment, but is forced to doe it. They doe alſo ſend another to the New Fort, and theſe go by order, and they are commonly young men: but when any one hath paſt fortie yeares, he is freed from this ſubiectiō.

The Captaines and Earles, which go into gouernements abroad throughout the towne of this Commonweale, are all created by the great Councell, and ſome of them remaine in charge ſeuē months, and others twelue.

¶ The Religion.

Theſe people are all Romaniſts. The citie hath a Biſhop, who doth make his ordination abroad there. There are three Procurators or Ouſeers of the Cathedral Church, who haue care of the chiefe Church, and the gouernement of the reliques which are there, for that there are verie many which are enriched with gold, ſiluer, and pretious ſtones. Theſe procurators continue in their charge during their liues, & may be Reſtors, and enter into other magiſtracies, as of Councillors, Treafurers, and other officers.

30 A



A DISCOURSE OF THE EMPERORS ESTATES.

The Contents.

The extent and greatnesse of the auncient Roman Empire: Her declining and great weakening by ciuile warres; by the translation of the seat from Rome to Constantinople; and by the diuision which the Emperour Constantine made vnto his children, diuiding it into three parts. 2. Diuision of the Empire into East and west: and what the partition was in Charlemaignes time. 3. A generall description of Germanie, the circuit, bounds, and provinces, and first of Alsatia, and the chiefe townes. 4. Of Wittenberg, the townes and castles. 5. Franconia, vulgarly Frankeland, subiect to foue Princes: the limits and good townes, Spire, Wormes, Mayence, or Mentz, Francfort, &c. 6. Of Sueuia: and of the realme of Bohemia, commonly called Beheim, the length and confines of these two Estates, the riuers and chiefe townes. 7. Moravia, the riuers, counties, Seigneuries, and the chiefe towne, Olmus. 8. Banaria, or Bayern, high and low, the chiefe townes. 9. Austria, or Oesterreich: the confines and riuers. 10. The countie of Tirol. 11. Stiria or Steirmarch, the Earldomes, and chiefe townes. 12. Carinthia or Kaernten, and the best townes. 13. The two Carnioles, with the chiefe townes. 14. Westphalia: the limits and townes. 15. The duchie of Cleues, and her best townes. 16. The countie of Iuliers. 17. The Lanigrauit of Hesser. 18. Turinge. 19. The auncient Saxonie, high and low: her earldomes and townes. 20. The Marquisat of Brandebourge, diuided into two Marches. 21. The Earldome of Mansfeld. 22. Lusatia. 23. Silesia. 24. Misnia or Meyssen. 25. Liege. 26. The Archbisshopricke of Treues. 27. Holsatia. 28. Bisenjon. 29. Under what climat Germanie lies: the ayre troublesome and sharpe in winter: abounding with all sorts of corne and pulses: mynes of Siluer, Copper, Tron, Lead, and Gold: Fountaines and mynes of Salt: Vines, Saffron, and Firre Trees. 30. A particular obseruation what euerie prouince in Germanie doth yeeld, and first of Alsatia abounding in wheat, wine, and pastures. 31. Allemannes, why in old time called Germans; hauing no use of gold, siluer, nor of swords. What their armes were, and their manner of fighting. Election of their kings, and heads of armies: their women martiall and courageous: their sacrifices of men to Mercurie. Obseruation of the New Moone in their enterprises: their assemblies in armes: their exercises out of warre, and in time of peace: their apparrell. Chastitie of their women: punishment of adulterie, and murder. Their banquets and feasts, where they did treat of affaires both of peace and warre. Exercise of their youth in armes. Their yeare diuided into three seasons. 32. A particular obseruation of the manners of some people of Germanie. 33. Of the Saxons, diuided into foure Estates. Given to the superstition of idols, and to the adoration of fountaines, forrests, and high growne woods. 34. Of the art of diuining, which they used. 35. Manner of liuing, and the lawes of them of Suebe, or Sueuia. 36. Of them of Banaria. 37. The Germans at this day diuided into foure Estates, and what their manners are in general, their kind of liuing, their apparrell and exercises. 38. Particularities of euerie prouince in their lawes, and of their manner of liuing, apparrell, and disposition of bodie and mind. 39. Riches of Germanie, in mynes of Siluer, and other metalls: Fountaines, and pits of Saltwater, trifolite, and

workes of diuers arts, Faires of Francfort: reuenues of townes, and secular princes. 40. Of the Emperors reuenues. 41. What forces the Emperour Charles the first, and Maximilian the second drewne out of Germanie, whenas they armed against the Turke. 42. Number of souldiers which the Emperour may draw to field, and of the Germane foot and horse. 43. Their sea and allies. 44. Of two things which the Empire wants. 45. When, and by whom, the Empire being hereditarie, was made elective. 46. Of the three members of the Empire, whereof the Electors make the first. 47. Of the second member of Princes and Noblemen. 48. Of the third member of the Empire consisting of free townes. 49. Of the Councils of the Circles, what and they were instituted. 50. Institution and erection of the Imperiall Chamber. 51. Of the charges and dignities of the Empire: required to the number of foure. What their sittings be at the Diet, and of the order that is kept in generall Processions. Of the three Councils which are at Diets, and of what persons euery Council is composed. Of the Germanes religion, and of the beginning and progresse of the profession of Luther, Calvin, and others in that countie: and of the Estate wherein it stands at this day. 55. In what Estate the Romish religion is in Germanie, and what religion the seuen Metropolitans hold. A list and catalogue of the Emperors of the West, their times, raigne, and death.

The Roman Empire, which vnder Traian did extend from the Spanish sea, beyond the riuier of Tygris, and from the Atlantick Ocean vnto the gulfes of Persia, and from Mont Atlas, vnto the Forrest of Galedonia, and toucht the riuier of Elbis, passing that of Danubius, began first to decline by means of the ciuile wars of Galbe, Otho, and Vitellius, in whose time the armie which was in great Britain, past to the firme Land, and Holland, with the neighbour countries revolted, and in a short space (the frontiers being vnfurnished with souldiers) the Barbarians past the riuier of Danubius; and the Alains the Caspian ports, the Persians by power and reputation, the Gothes ouer-ran Misia and Macedonia, and the Francians into Gaule. Constantine did afterwards restore the Empire to her auncient beaultie, for that he pacified the ciuile broiles, suppressed tyrants, bridled the Barbarians, and staid the Nations their enemies to the Romane name, forcing them to liue in quiet. Yet he did two things which did somewhat weaken this Monarchie: the one was, that he transported the seat of the Empire from Rome to Constantinople, by meanes whereof he left the citie naked, and the Empire weake; being most certaine, that as plants which are rooted into a soile which differs much both in clymat and qualitie, retainre very little of their naturall vertue; euen so humane things, and especially great Seigneories, loose much of their force, by great changes and alterations. This was the chief reason why the Senat of Rome would neuer consent, that the people should leaue the citie of Rome for that of Veies, which was much fairer, and more commodious: nor alter that Rome had beene ruined by the Gaules. The other thing was, that he diuided the Empire into three parts, to distribute it to his children, the which happened in the yeare of grace 341; so as of one great and mightie Estate, he made three, which made a decrease both of authoritie and forces, and his sonnes making war one with another, did so consume themselues, as the Empire was in a manner like vnto a widow without bloud: and although it was sometimes vniued vnder one prince, yet from thence it was so easily drawne into factions, as it was often seene diuided into two; so that the East had one Empire, and the West another; vntill that Odoacre king of the Gothes coming into Italie with a mightie armie, forced Augustulus to quit the Empire, and the West through dispaire, the which happened in the yeare of grace 466, for that the Gothes had already past the riuier of Danubius, Alaric king of the Vandales had taken Rome, and the same Vandales had seized vpon Andalusia, and afterwards vpon the Brittaines, the Alains held Portugal, the Gothes the greatest part of Spaine, the English Brittain, the Bourgondians Prouence, the Francians Gaule, and the Huns Hungary. (at this day Hongarie.)

The Emperor *Iustinian* did some what restore this Estate, for that by the meanes of his A
 captaines he expelled the Vandales from Africke, and the Gothes out of Italie in the
 year 556, but this lasted not long, for that in the year 613 the armes and sect of *Maho-*
met began to afflicke both the Empires, which in a short time were oppressed by the Sa-
 razins, who made themselves in a manner absolute maisters of the one side, of Syria, Egypt,
 and the Archipelagus, and on the other side, of Africke, Sicile and Spaine: who also in
 the year 735, seized vpon Narbona, Auignon, Tolouise, and the neighbour countries:
 so as by little and little the Empire of the West was quite ruined, and that of the East
 growen so weake, as the citie of Constantinople could hardly defend it selfe against the
 Mahometans, much lesse giue any aide to them of the West. The which *Leo* the third B
 hauing well considered (besides that the Emperors of Greece did nourish impieties and
 heresies) he resolved to giue the Empire of the West to *Charlemaigne* king of France,
 the which happened in the year of our saluation 800.

II. The Empire of the West was then diuided from that of the East after this manner,
 so as the Grecians had for their part all Eastward, from Naples and Siponte with Sicile;
 Beneuent remained to the Lombards, the Venetians, as neuters, remained free, and
 the rest was left to *Charlemaigne*. *Blondus* saith, that this diuision was first allowed by the
 Emperesse *Irenae*, and afterwards confirmed by the Emperor *Nicephorus*. Some say that
 by this meanes Pope *Leo* transported the Empire to the Germans, for that *Charles* was
 a German by blood and nation, as all the Franks which came into Gaule were of Fran- C
 conia, a Prouince of Germanie.

The Empire remained by this meanes, so diuided, as it could neuer be afterwards vni-
 ted, notwithstanding that *Emanuel Comnenes* hearing of the deprivation of *Frederic* the
 first, made great offers to Pope *Alexander* the third: so as this diuision began by the
 transport of the Imperiall seat from Rome to Constantinople, and came vnto the heigh
 of it in the creation of *Charlemaigne*, who remained possessor of that which had bene as-
 signed vnto him by the Pope. Since the Empire was reduced into narrow and straight
 bounds hauing nothing remaining, but Germanie, and a part of Italie, for that the Pope
 did peaceably enioy a great countrie in Italie, and the Venetians (who were in a manner
 betwixt both the Empires) liued in absolute libertie with all their Estate, not depending D
 vpon any one, and the realmes of Naples and Sicile (which the Normans had taken
 from the Grecians) were become fees of the Church, first vnder the Antipope *Clement*,
 and then vnder *Nicholas* the second, and his successors, who allowed (in regard of the
 publicke good) of what the Antipope had done; and Lombardie, and Tuscanie (partly
 through the disobedience of *Henry* the fourth and fifth, and of *Fredericke* the first and se-
 cond Emperours, towards Popes, and partly by reason of the mutinous humor of the
 people) did still put the Emperors to more paine and charge, than they brought them
 aide or profit. Wherefore *Rodolphus* not onely neglected to go into Italie (for that the
 crosses and misfortunes of his predecessors had amased him) but he also sold the people
 their libertie at an easie rate: for they of Luca paid but ten thousand crownes, nor the E
 Florentines aboue six. Thus the Empire loosing her force and reputation in Italie, there
 remained scarce any other thing than the name. The Viscounts at Milan and some others
 in other places seized vpon what they could, bearing no more honour or respect vnto the
 Emperor, than to demand the inuestiture. Yea *Francis Sforza* hauing conquered the
 Estate of Milan by armes, cared not to obtaine the inuestiture, thinking that he could
 maintaine himselfe in the possession of this Estate, by the same means which he had got-
 ten it. To conclude, the Empire at this day is wholly reduced to Germanie, yea and in ma-
 ny places the Emperors authoritie is in a manner extinct.

III. But to come vnto the description, we must speake generally of this countrie, whose
 confines are in question. The most Auncient haue bounded Germanie within the riuers
 of Rhin and Danubius, the sea, the riuier of Don, or Tanais, and the Euxin fea. They
 that came after, as *Strabo*, *Ptolomee*, *Pomponius Mela*, *Plinie*, and others, as well Grecians as
 Latins, containe it betwixt the riuers of Rhin and Vistula, *Tacitus* saith, that the Ger-
 mans are rather diuided from the Sarmatians and Daciens, by a mutuall feare and by the

A the mountains, than by the riuier of Vistula. At this day they giue vnto Germanie all
 those prouinces whose inhabitants vse the German tongue; so as it containes (they end
 the limits of Prolomee, or Danubius, Rhetia, or the Grifons) high Hongarie, and a part
 of Sclauonia, vnto the countrie of Trent.

The Germanes haue held beyond the Rhin, the townes of Constance, Ausbourg,
 Wormes, Mentz, Conflans, Bonne, Cologne, and many other places vnto
 the sea. They also comprehend the Suisses at this day among the Germanes, and in
 the manner the Prussians who dwell beyond the riuier of Vistula: so as Germanie should
 extend beyond the Rhin vnto Picardie and Bourgondie vpon the West, and vnto the
 Alpes towards the South, vpon the East it should containe Prussia beyond Vistula, and
 towards the North it should be bounded in by the sea.

But omitting what I haue spoken elsewhere of Low Germanie, discoursing of the
 low Countries, and also of Swisserland, speaking of that Commonweale, and passing
 vnder silence the Estates which acknowledge not the Emperour; I will begin first
 with Alsatia, or the countrie of Elzas, which doth frontire vpon the Suisses. This prouince
 is diuided into high and low: the high is a Langrauiat, and contains Sungoye, and
 Epoye. All this countrie comprehends a great number of townes, boroughs, and vil-
 lages, and is very well peopled. The chiefe townes are Rubesquum, which was built by
 the Romans, now called Rufach, and Schlestat, or Seletstad in high Alsatia, Fribourg in
 Ouygoie, and Argentine or Strasbourg in high Alsatia: this place is exceeding strong,
 where there is to be seen an admirable tower, being five hundred feuntie and foure geo-
 metricall paces high.

The countrie of Vittenberg, or Wittemberg, confines vpon the East and South with
 that of Ssaube, vpon the North with Franconia, and towards the West with the Palatinate
 of Rhin. The riuier of Neccar passeth through the midst of this countrie. There
 are in this prouince many townes and castles, with an infinit number of villages. The
 chiefe townes is Sturgard: the next of note are Tubinge (where there is an vniuersitie)
 and Vittenberge, which giues name vnto the whole prouince.

Franconia, otherwise called East France, and vulgarly Frankenland, hath for bounds
 towards the South Ssaube, and Bauaria, vpon the West the riuier of Rhin, vpon the
 East Bohemia, and the countrie of Turinge, and towards the North the countrie
 of Alsace, and Turinge aboue mentioned. The chiefe townes are Heribopolis, common-
 ly called Wirtzburg, whose Bishop calls himselfe duke of Franconia, not of the whole
 countrie, but of the greatest part: next is Bamberg a faire towne. This prouince is sub-
 iect to foue princes, that is, to the Bishops of Wirtzburg, Bamberg, and Mentz, to
 the Margraue of Noremberg, and to the Count Palatin of the Rhin.

Not far from Franconia, neere to the riuier of Rhin, is the town of Spire, in the which is
 the Imperiall Chamber: then Wormes, which is famous by reason of the Diets, and as-
 semblies: after which is Mayence commonly called Mentz, whose Archbishop is an
 Elector of the Empire. This towne is strong, as well by reason of the situation, as for the
 walls, and inhabitants: it stands vpon the riuers of Rhin and Mein. Frankfurt vpon Mein
 is famous by reason of the faires which are held there twice a year, and for that the Em-
 perour is chosen there.

Sauecia, or Ssaube is the highest part of all Germanie: it hath for bounds vpon the
 East part, Bohemia, towards the North Franconia, vpon the West Alsatia and the riuier
 of Rhin, and to the South Bauaria, and the Alpes. The spring or head of the riuier of Da-
 nubius is in this countrie: it was sometimes a realme, afterwards it became a duchie, & is
 now vnder diuers princes, but not any one doth carrie the title of duke of this countrie:
 yet the duke of Wittenberg holds the best part. The chiefe townes are Ausbourg, seat-
 ed vpon the riuier of Lich, the which is as rich as any one in Germanie. Vlme is vpon the
 riuier of Danubius, which is not so great, yet is it very rich, and of great trafficke: and
 Nuringe standing in a goodly plaine, and is three miles in circuit. There is also diuers
 other Imperiall townes which they call free.

The Emperor who reigns at this day doth also hold the realm of Bohemia, commonly
 called

IIII.

V.

VI.

called Behaim, which lies within the limits of Germanie. This realme hath for confines A towards the East, Moravia, and a part of Sclavia, upon the South Austria, and Bavaria, to the West the countrie of Noremberg, and upon the North Saxonic and Misnia: the Forrest of Hercynia doth environ it round about. It is round in forme, and they passe the Diameter in three daies iourney: others say that it is thirte and fix Bohemian leagues long. The riuers which runne through this realme are Albis (which the Bohemians call Labe) Mulauia, commonly called Vltauue, and in the German tongue Vuolda, and besides these the riuers of Egria, Saffaue, Gifera, Mife, and Vatto, which fall into Labe, Prague called in old time Bubien, and Marobude, is the chiefe citie, and is diuided into three parts, that is to say, old Prague, the New, and the Little, which is diuided from the two others by the riuers of Vltauue.

VII. Moravia, sometimes Marcomania, and in the vulgar tongue Merheren, takes his name from the riuers of Morauie: it is diuided from Hongarie and Poland upon the East, from Bohemia towards the West, and from Sclavia on the North, by mountains, Forrests, or riuers: but it is plaine towards Austria, which confines it toward the South. The riuers are Morauie, Noire, Suite, Taize, Igle, Haue, and Suarte. There are two Earldomes in Moravia, with certaine other seigneuries. The chiefe towne is Olmuz, which the Bohemians call Holomats: the next which folloes is called Prunne, and in the German tongue Brin, and in the Bohemian Bruno.

VIII. Bavaria, commonly called Bayerne, contains the countrie which in old time the Nariffes did hold, which at this day they call Nordaoun, and is seperated from the rest by the riuers of Danubius; and it doth in like manner embrace the countries of the Noricians, and Vindelicians, commonly called Licatians, or Lechrains. This countrie hath for bounds on the North part Franconia, to the West Suabe, towards the South the Alps, and upon the East part Austria, and Bohemia. There are two Bauaries, the higher, and lower: high Bauaria lies on this side the riuers of Danubius towards the Alps, and the South. The chiefe townes are Monachie, commonly called Munchen, upon the banks of the riuers Iser (whereas the duke makes his ordinarie residence) Ingolstadt, a famous vniuersitie, Freising an Episcopall towne: and generally throughout the whole countrie, there are thirte and foure reasonable good townes.

Base Bauaria lies beyond the riuers of Danubius, and contains thirte and four townes, fortie and six borowhes, with many castles and villages. This part is called Noregoy: the chiefe towne is Noremberg, which is eight miles in circuit, and hath in it many faire and stately buildings, and is compassed in with two walls: the other chiefe townes are Ratibonna, called in their vulgar tongue Regenpurg, in old time Augusta Tiberia, and before Artobriga: Passau, upon the mouth of the riuers of Inn, which falls into Danubius: Lanfhuir upon Iser, and Saltzburg an Archbishopsricke upon the riuers of Salz.

IX. Austria, commonly called Oesterreich, or Aufordrich, or else Osterland, that is to say, the East countrie, was in old time called Pannonia: it hath for confines upon the East Hongarie, upon the South the mountaines of Stiria, which runne from the Alpes E into Hongarie, and beyond it, upon the West Bauaria, and to the North the riuers of Teye and Morauia. The riuers of Austria are Danubius, which runs through the middell of it, Onafe, Traune, Erlaf, Traife, Ipsia, Melice, Marchie, Teye, and Leyche. Austria is an Archduchie, whose chiefe citie is Vienne, in old time called Flauiana, or Iulio bona, it is faire, rich, well peopled, and hath a good vniuersitie.

X. The countie of Tirol lies betwixt the riuers of the Rhine and Oen or Inn, and the Alpes, and it hath taken the name from the little towne of Tirol. This countrie was in old time a part of Rhetia: it confines upon the North with Bauaria, upon the South with Lombardie, towards the East with the Marquisat of Treuifo and Friuli, & on the West with Suisseerland. The chiefe townes are Insprug, the head of the Lord of the Prouince, and the place for the Chamber, and Parliament of the countrie of Austria; then Brixen upon the life, and after that Trent, a towne famous by reason of the Councill that was held there in the yere 1546, vnder Pope Paul: in it there is a very faire Castle. In this countie is also the towne of Maran upon the riuers of the Rhine, and those of Bolzan, and Hale.

Stiria

A. Stiria, called in old time Valeria, and by the vulgar people Steirmarck, is a little countrie which confines upon the North part with Austria, upon the West with Carinthia, on the South part with Croatia, and Sclauonia, and upon the East with Hongarie. It was made a duchie by the Emperor Frederic Barbarouffe. There are many Earldomes in this countrie, and among others that of Vuaraldin upon the riuers of Drauu, and that of Carinthia upon Mure. The chiefe townes are Celis or Cilte, Fruch, and Grezzie, which hath a very strong Castle looking towards Austria, and in like maner the town of Sepian, Carinthia, commonly called Kaerdren, confines upon the West and South with Friuli, and Carniola, and towards the East and North with Stiria. The best townes are Vuklmarch and Villac, both standing upon the riuers of Drauu, Marchburg, Clagenfurt, in old time Claudia, a towne well fortified: but S. Veit is the chiefe towne of the Prouince.

XII. There are two Carnioles, the one is called the Drie, and in the vulgar tongue Vnderbrain. The princes of Austria hold many townes there, and amongst others Gorice, seated upon the banks of the riuers of Sont: the other Carniola is called Oederkain, and lies along the stonie mountaines of Noritia. The chiefe towne is Lubiana, which the Germans call Laubach.

XIII. The countrie of Westphalia is taken by some for the true and ancient Saxonic: the limits are, upon the East the riuers of Viser, upon the North Friland, and the Centre C of Vtrecht, to the West the Rhin, and towards the South the mountaines of Hessen, called by Ptolomee Obnobies. The chiefe townes are Munster, Dusseldorp, Wesel, Oldenbourg, Onabourg, Minde, and Herworde. A good part of this countrie is subiect to the Bishop of Cologne, a towne seated upon the Rhin, with a double wall and double ditch, having eightie and foure towers, and nineteene parishes.

XV. The duchie of Cleues lies of either side of the Rhin betwixt Cologne and the Low Countrie of Vtrecht. The Lordship of Raustien is ioined to the duchie of Cleues: the chiefe townes are Cleues, Wesel, Reetz upon the Rhin, Ringlebourg, Kernendonck, Dinsbourg, and some others.

XVI. The countrie of Juliers, or of Guelich, hath taken his name of the chiefe towne, the D which is strong, and yet it was taken of late yeares by the Marquis of Brandebourg, and the duke of Neufbourg. This countrie, and that of Cleues, are now in question by many who pretend to haue right.

XVII. The countrie, or Langrauiat of Hessen confines upon the East with Turinge, upon the South with Franconia, upon the West with Westphalia, and towards the North with the Duke of Brunfwic, the Bishop of Minde, and some other Lords. The chiefe townes are Marpourg, where there is a good vniuersitie, Cassel, where the Langtraue remains, and then Bubac and Asfeld. There are some Earldomes vnder this Langtraue, whereof the chiefe is that of Waldeck.

XVIII. The countrie of Turinge hath upon the East the riuers of Sal, upon the North the Forrest of Hercynia, upon the West the riuers of Vuer, and on the South the Forrest of Turinge, which they call Thuringerwald. This countrie is a Langrauiat, the which hath aboute twelue Germane leagues in length or breadth, and yet it contains twelue Earldomes, and as many Abbies, one hundred fortie and foure townes, and as many borowhes, besides two thousand villages, & two hundred and fiftie castles. The chiefe townes are Erfourt, seated upon the riuers of Gere, and one of the greatest of Germanie, the next are Weymar upon Ilin, and Hsenach upon Nefse, where there is a good vniuersitie.

The Palatinat lies betwixt Franconia, Alsatia, the countrie of Wittemberg, Lorraine, and some part of Luxembourge. This countrie besides many borowhes, villages, and castles, contains eight and fortie townes, whereof Heidelberg is the chiefe, in the which the Prince Elector Palatin makes his ordinarie residence. The situation of it is pleasant standing at the foot of the hills, from whence the riuers of Neccar doth flow, & passe by the countrie about Heidelberg is fruitfull of all things. In the yere 1346 Robert the chiefe prince Palatin was the founder of a famous vniuersitie, in the which in proceesse of time

Bbb

time

time there haue flourished many learned men : and the same *Robert* (being king of the Ro-
mans, and Emperor) did also build a goodly church there, dedicated to the holy Ghost,
where he was interred. Besides Heidelberg there are in this countie the townes of Al-
zea, Neosade, Mosbach, and Bretta, which are of some note. The prince Palatin is the
chiefe of the secular Electors, and the first prince of the Empire, but he is neither so
powerfull, nor so rich as the duke of Saxony.

XIX. The auncient Saxonie, or Sachsen contained sometimes Westphalia, the auncient
Marche, Misnia, Lusatia, Mansfeld, and some other countries: for that it did embrace all
that betwixt the riuers of Rhin, and Elb, the German Sea, and the riuers of Leydore
vnto Hessen and the Frontiers of Turinge: so as Brunswic was as it were in the Cen-
ter of this countie, but now they diuide Saxonie into high and low. The chiefe towne
of high Saxonie is Wittemberg vpon the riuere of Elb. Some put Torge in this high
Saxonie, but it is fitter to place it in the countie of Misnia.

The chiefe towne of base Saxonie is Alba, neere vnto the which is the town of Man-
feld, the chiefe of an Earledome. The counties of Lauembourg, Meckelembourg, & Lu-
nebourg are also contained vnder base Saxonie, with the counties of Holface, Stor-
mar, & Dithmarie. Aboue Saxonie towards the North, stands Magdebourg vpon the ri-
uer of Elb, the which is strong both by situation and art, whose Archbishop carries the
name of Primar of Germanie; & yet the Archbishops of Mentz, Treues, and Cologne,
who are Electors, nor the Archbishop of Saltzbourg, yield nothing vnto him.

XX. The Marquisat of Brandebourg is vpon the East of New Saxonie, and is diuided in-
to two parts, that is to say, the old Marquisat which is watered by the riuier of Spree,
whose chiefe towne is Brandebourg, vpon the riuier of Havel: but the chiefe towne of
the new Marquisat is Francfort vpon Oder. There is also Berlin, whereas the Marquis
remaines, who is one of the Electors of the Empire, and is to be held for one of the
mightiest princes of Germanie, for that besides these two Marquisats he enioies certain
townes and counties in the counties of Lusatia, and Slesia: and they hold that his Estate
is sixtie Germane leagues long, in which they do number fiftie and fise townes, and six-
tie and foure boroughes.

XXI. The countie of Mansfeld is a part of old Saxonie, and hath for confines vpon the East
the riuier of Sal, with the Archbishopsricke of Magdebourg, and the diocese of Merse-
bourg; vpon the South Turinge; and vpon the West the counties of Suanzen-
bourg, of Stolbourg, and some other petite seigneuries that are neighbours. There are
vnder this countie foure other Earles, that is to say, Arnster, Vurpre, Vuetthin, and Quem-
furt, besides the Palatinar of Saxonie, and some other principalities. The chiefe townes
are Mansfeld, neere vnto the which is Leimbach, then Eiszeleben and Vuypre.

XXII. Lusatia lies betwixt the riuers of Elb and Audera, and the mountaines of Bohemia:
it is diuided into high and low, and both belong vnto Saxonie. It is watered by the riuier
of Nefse. The chiefe towne is Gorlitz, next vnto the which is Zittau vpon Nefse.

XXII L. Slesia, commonly called Schlesie, is bounded towards the South by Morauia, and the E
forrest Hercynia; vpon the West by Lusatia, & a part of Bohemia; & towards the North
and the East by Polonia. It is two hundred thousand paces long, and eightie thousand
broad. There are many vniuersities in this countie. The chiefe towne is Vratisslaua, com-
monly called Brefflau, where there is a Bishopsricke and an Vniuersitie, another of the
best townes is Nissa, or Neyse, which is also a Bishopsricke. There are fiseene duchies in
this countie, whereof six haue bene diuided to three ancient families, and the rest are
fallen to the king of Bohemia.

XXIII. The countie of Misnia, commonly called Meyssen, hath vpon the East part Lusatia,
vpon the South Bohemia, vpon the North the Marquisat of Saxonie, and towards the
West Turinge. There are in this province many cities and castles. The chiefe towne is
Misnia, the which hath an exceeding strong castle; next of greatest note is Dresden the
princes aboad (and these two stand vpon the riuier of Elb) and Lipse, where there is a good
vniuersitie: they doe also put Torge, but some others place these two last in Saxonie,
confounding Misnia with the countie of Saxonie. But to returne to Dresden, it is a town
of

A of great note, for that the duke of Saxonie doth commonly keepe his court there: yet is
it not aboue an English mile and a halfe in compasse, but the situation is very plea-
sant, the fortification strong, and the buildings faire, being most of stone; so as it is not
inferior to any town of Germanie. In it is a famous stable able to containe one hun-
dred and eight horses, and an armorie which doth exceed most in Christendome:
they write that it is able to arme seuentie thousand men, whereof there are ten or twelue
thousand compleat for horsemen. There is great store of canons and other ordnance,
withall necessarie furniture and munition. There is a bridge vpon the riuier of Elb of an
admirable length and breadth.

B The Duchie and Bishopsricke of Liege hath vpon the North and West Brabant, vpon
the East the riuier of Meuse, with the duchie of Lembourg, and vpon the South the
countie of Namur. This Bishopsricke doth containe the duchie of Bouillon, the Mar-
quisat of Franchenmont, the countie of Borclion, or of Looz, and the countie of Has-
bania, whose chiefe towne is Borkunorm, besides many baronies and abbeyes. There are
moreouer foure and twentie townes, besides those which are of the diocese of Vtrecht,
whereof the principall towne is that of Liege, seated in a pleasant valley, and neere vnto
the Meuse.

The Archbishopsricke of Treues, commonly called Trier, is bounded vpon the North
by the countie of Nassau, the duchie of Monts, and the Bishopsricke of Cologne, vpon
the East by Ringouia, and the countie of Hessen, vpon the South by the countie of
Westrich, and the duchie of Deux Ponts, and vpon the West by the duchie of Luxem-
bourg. There are in this diocese of Treues foure Earledomes with certaine baronies and
other seigneuries. Finally the chiefe towne of this countie is Treues, the which is one of
the most auncient of the world: there is also the auncient towne of Conflans.

Holfatia, commonly called Holstein, hath for bounds vpon the East the riuier of Bilene,
vpon the West Dithmaria, vpon the South Elb, & vpon the North the riuier of Eidore,
which of that side, is vpon the frontire of Denmarke. But I will forbear to speake any
more of Holfatia, for that it belongs to the king of Denmarke, to the which we referre a
particular discourse.

D There is also Besançon in the countie of Bourgondie: it is an imperiall towne, and
was sometime called Chrysolopolis. The riuier of Doux passeth through the middle of it,
and goes in a manner round about it, vnlesse it be on that side by the which they goe to
Dole.

¶ The Qualitie.

Germanie is vnder the sixt, seuenth, and eight climar, betwixt the seuen and fortieth,
and fise and fiftieth degree of latitude, and the four and twentieth, and six and forti-
eth of longitude. The longest day in Sommer in the Paralell towards the South is of
fifteen houres and a halfe, and vpon that side which lies neere vnto the North, of seuen-
teene and a quarter. Although that *Cornelius Tacitus* writes that the aire is troublesome,
and *Seneca*, that it is alwaies Winter, yet it enioyeth an aire that is reasonably mild and
temperat, but somewhat cold, yet it makes them healthfull and strong. The soile beares
wheat, barley, rye, oats, and all kindes of graine, and pulse in abundance: the fields are
fines, and the meadowes beare abundance of grasse. There is also in Germanie many
mines of siluer, copper, yron, lead, and other metalls; yea and of gold in some places.
There are also very good fountaines, and mines of salt. *Plinie* writes that in the auncient
Germanie they found chrysell, onix, topazes, and other stones. There are very faire gar-
dens and orchards, whose sight is very pleasing in Sommer and Autumne.

F They haue so manured this countie, as there is little remaining of the forrest Herci-
nia, notwithstanding that it contains sixtie dayes iourney, and there is not any but the
blacke forrest, that of Othon, and those of Bohemia, but is employed: yet there are not
fewe as in former times, being full of villages, and monasteries. There is also great
store of vines, especially right against the blacke forrest along the riuier of Rhin, and also
vpon

upon the banks of Neccar, and Mein. But of that side where it confines with high Hon. A game, it not only beares excellent wine, but also saffron which is good; there is also great store of fruit trees: but that part which stretcheth towards the sea, and the river of A. Rh. is little fertile, and yet in those places it beares abundance of wheat. Finally, in high Germanie there are few moores, or troublefome mountaines, for that those which be there are very fertile, yea the Alpes whose tops are alwaies covered with snow, haue at the bottome excellent pastures. The mountaines of the blacke forrest are full of fire trees, from the which they draw great store of pitch, yea and the extremities of these mountaines beare very good wine. This prouince feeds no silke wormes, neither doth it beare any oliue trees.

XXX.

But let vs come to the particularities of euery prouince, hauing considered of all Germanie in generall.

Alsacia doth beare abundance of wheat, especially in the plaine, where there are excellent fruits. The mountaines and little hills beare good wine, and the pastures are also very good vpon the mountaines, and in the valleys.

The soile of the countie of Wittenberg is partly rough, and will beare no wine, but there are excellent pastures, and some part of it is stonie and full of sand, but fit to beare fruits, and some part also is champion and apt for tillage. There are also riuers, lakes, and pooles full of fish.

Franconia is part of it plaine, and part hillie. And although the soile be not fat in some places, but full of sand, yet doth it beare good store of wheat and pulses, as also onions, turneps, and cabbages greater than in any other prouince. The countie is also covered with fruit trees, and there is great store of meadow, wherewith they do feed much cattel of all sorts: and in many places there grows very good wine, especially neere vnto Wirtzburg. There are many forrests where they haue store of game. Neere vnto Bamberg grows abundance of liquorice.

Suaube hath some part of it plaine, and the rest hillie. But it is fertile and well manured in all places, ynclesse it be where there are lakes, forrests, and mountaines. There is great store of game, both for hawking and hunting, abundance of wheat, and great numbers of cattel. There are also many riuers which come from all parts and fall into the Rhin. All the countie is very wholesome, and in the mountaines they find yron, siluer, and other metall.

Bohemia abounds in barley and wheat, but it wants oliue trees, and hath few vines, which beare not much, by reason of the Northerly windes wherunto it is subiect, the which doth seldome suffer the grapes to come to maturitie. It brings forth much saffron, whose colour, iuice, and smell is very pleasing. It abounds so in siluer, as there is scarce any other thing to be seene in the veines which they find out: these mines are in the territorie of Cromlau, and in like manner in those of Budweis and Kuttenberg. They haue also very good gold in some places, with tin, leade, copper, and yron, wherewith this countie abounds: but especially there are very good mines of yron neere vnto the towne of Beram. They do also find Carbuncles and Amethystes in this countie.

Moravia hath for the most part a fat soile, and by consequence apt for corne, and the little hills are also fit for vines, which agree better with this soile than with that of Bohemia: all is so manured, and so full of people that giue themselves to tillage, as there is scarce any place left to feed their cattel. John Dabrus hath written that they find Insens and Myrthe in this countie, not that falls from any tree, but which is drawne out of the ground, and it is only found in one place, which they call Gradelque.

The high countie of Bauaria is in a manner full of mountaines and forrests, and watered with lakes and forcible streames, and for this cause fit for pasture, and for the planting of fruit trees which yeeld abundance of fruit: but their champion fields beare good store of wheat.

The low countie of Bauaria abounds in wheat, cattel, fish, foule, wild beasts, and other things necessarie for the life of man. This countie doth breed great store of swine by means of their akoms and crabs. There are also in this countie many fountains of

A salt: but for the most part they want wine. There is also found great store of copper and yron.

The countie of Austria is plaine, and lies open to the Northren winds. It brings forth good store of wheat, wine, and other fruits. The aire is very wholesome, and they find abundance of siluer.

As for the countie of Tyrol it abounds in mines of siluer, copper, and latten. The mountaines of this countie are very high, alwaies couered with snow, and abound with wild beasts.

Siria is a countie altogether hillie, except vpon the East parts, where there are good plaines. In it are excellent mines of yron and siluer.

As for Carinthia, there are valleis and little hills which yeeld store of corne. It hath also very many lakes and riuers.

Westphalia is fitter to feed cattel than to beare corne: there are forrests in some places. The soile is vnfit for vines: but there are diuers fruits, as aples, nuts, and akomes, wherewith they feed great store of swine. There is also great store of mettals in the territorie of Cologne.

The duchie of Cleues doth enioy a sweet and temperate aire, and the soile doth yeeld great store of wheat. There are good pastures, and reasonable good riuers which doe water it.

As for the countie of Iuliers it yeelds abundance of wheat, & a kind of grasse which does make vse of. There is much tame cattel, especially very good horses.

The countie of Hefsen yeelds abundance of all things necessarie for the life of man, except wine, whereof notwithstanding, it is not altogether vnurnished, for that there grows some neere vnto the riuier of Rhin. There is great store of cattel. The soile of Waldeck beares much corne and wine, it is watered with many riuers, and rich in mines, from whence they draw gold, siluer, copper, quicksiluer, yron, lead, salt, and alumne.

The Palatinat wants not any thing that is necessarie for mans vse, vpon the hills there grows excellent wine, especially about Baccharac, the which is much commended about most of the wines in Germanie, and there grow also vpon these hills abundance of chestnuts; at the foot of the hills there are goodly orchards, and in the plaines abundance of wheat, barley, and other graine. The woods and hills are full of wild beasts, especially of stags, and the countiemen feed many goats and kids there. The riuier of Neccar runs through this countie in which they take great store of fish, especially of barbles. There go many boats laden with wood out of this riuier into Rhin, and ferre all the towne vpon that riuier from Spire to Bins. There lies a great plaine betwixt Wormes, Heideberg, Neustade, and Oppenheim, the which is wonderfull fruitfull of wine and wheat, but no place abounds more than about the towne of Alzea.

Turinge yeelds good store of corne, and a kind of herbe which the Latins call Ifatade, which serues for the vse of diers.

In Saxonia they haue great store of mettals, and there are goodly riuers which haue abundance of fish, and besides all this the inhabitants find many other great commodities.

In the countie of Mansfeld they haue great store of mettals, and flint stones which are easie to breake, the which being heat yeeld copper, with good store of siluer. There is also in this countie a salt lake, in the which if the fishermen cast their nets too deepe, they are burnt, as if they had bene in the fire.

Lusatia yeelds wheat and all other kind of graine in abundance, like vnto Silesia, which hath also a great number of pooles for fish.

Misia yeelds good store of wheat, wine, and honie, and doth feed much cattel. In this countie also they find mines of gold. The countie of Liege is pleasant, and exceeding fertile: it hath many goodly riuers full of fish, and in like manner great forrests full of decre and other wild beasts, and also mountaines and valleis which yeeld plentie of wine and fruits: there are also mines of yron and coles which they call Lilanthracas.

They decin like manner find much salpeter, and excellent waters and bathes for the curing

curing of diuers diseases, amongst the which is that of Tongres, whereof *Plinie* and some A others make mention.

As for the countrie of Treues, it is vneuen, for that in some places there are rough and barren mountaines which beare nothing but oats, and in some parts there are hills which be greene and fertile, and are well planted with vines: but the countrie is much more yielding towards the riuers of Rhin and Moselle. This countrie is watered with many riuers, torrents, & small brooks which fall into Moselle, and then discharge themselves into the Rhin. By reason of these many riuers and waters, the inhabitants are abundantly furnished with fish. The forrests of this countrie are full of stagg, and other wild beasts. There are in this countrie two lakes of an admirable depth, whereof the one is called Vlme, and the other Laiche, in this last they find stones which be greene, yellow, and red, and in a manner as faire as Emeralds, Hyacynthes, and Rubies. There is also generally in this countrie mines of copper, lead, siluer, and yron, and in like manner waters fit and wholesome for sicke persons.

¶ The Manners of the Ancients.

XXXI.

The Allemans, called sometimes Germans, by reason of their force, according vnto some, for that this word Germane signifies all masculine and strong; and according vnto *Strabo*, for that they did imitate them in behauiour, and were as it were like vnto them in disposition, and in the greatnesse of their bodies and their complexions: so as the Romaines gaue them this name of Germans, as if they had bene knowne to be brethren to the Gauls, for that the Latine calleth them Germans which are brethren, and issued from one venter. The Allemans I say haue alwaies bene held very valiant and couragious. Before they entred into battell, they did sing a hymne to the honour of *Hercules* who they said, had bene sometimes in their countrie, and they vsed numbers and measures, though without any proportion in their singing, the which was inuented to amaze the enemy. They were lodain in their affaires and marcht with great precipitation. They were vsit for trauell, and could not long indure the discomforts which follow war, especially thirst and heat.

In old time they had no vse of gold or siluer, and they made as little account of siluer plate, which was giuen vnto capitaines, or presented vnto their princes, vnlesse it were of earth: gold and siluer hath since bene known and esteemed by them, onely in regard of traffike and commerce. There was as little vse in old time of swords, but they rather vsed long stauers, boare-speares, or pikes with a little yron at the end, fitter armes to encounter an enemy, were it to charge him a far off, or to ioine and come to handy strokes: their horsemen carried launces and targets, and the footmen did cast many darts when they came to ioine battell: they did either fight naked, or else they did vse a certaine short cassocke, and there was no diuersitie of habits to distinguish the companies, they did onely paint their targets diuersly, to the end they might be knowne. There were few that vsed corselets nor cuirasses, or that did arme their heads with any head peece. They had no great care of the beautie and swiftnesse of their horses, nor to make them courter, but they were onely contented to haue them passe a straight carriere. He that had lost his target fighting, was so hated & detested, as he was not admitted neither to their sacrifices, counsells, nor publicke assemblies, which caused many that would not suruiue this infamie to aduance their owne deaths.

Their king was chosen out of the bodie of the nobilitie, and had no power to do all things after his owne fancie, nor to vse euery thing absolutely at his pleasure. They did chuse for heads of their armies such as exceeded the rest in vertue, and knew better how to execute, than to commaund. It was not lawfull for any one to beat or to kill another, except the priest onely, to the end that they might beleue that it was God only that did punish offenders.

They did commonly carry vnto the warre certaine tables, which did represent their Gods, and to this end they drew them out of temples built in forrests. When they went

A to the war, they would haue their neereff kinsmen, and those things which were deereff vnto them not far off, to the end, that in the presence of their friends they might either vanquish gloriously, or dye with honour & commendation: when they were wounded they retired themselves to their mothers and wiues, who were not so daintie but they would dress their wounds, visit them, and prepare them meat, and encourage them to fight valiantly. We also find in writing, that the Germans (being in a manner defeated) haue often repulsed their enemies by the encouragement of their wiues, to whose spirits they did attribute a certain foresight and holynesse, by reason whereof they did not reiect their counsell, nor contemne their aduice in their assemblies.

B They had certain daies on the which they did sacrifice men to *Mercurie*, but they offered none but beasts to *Mars* and *Hercules*. They did also velsots and diuination in matters of small importance, the resolutions of affaires depended vpon the heads of cities, but in those things that were of consequence, they did assemble the whole bodie of the cite to determine thereof. They did not begin any enterprise but during the new Moone, and when it was full, and they did not account by the daies, but made their computation by nights. They came armed to their assemblies, and when they would shew that they did concur in opinion with any one, they did onely shake their pikes, which was the most honourable signe of their approbation, but if the proposition did displeafe them, they shewed it by some great murmuring.

C They that fled from the warre, or betrayed their friends were hanged at the first tree where they were found, and cowards, and such as had no force were cast into the myer and covered with dirt, or else they were cast headlong into moores with a hardle vpon them, to the end they should not come forth; as if they had bene of opinion that they should publicly punish an offence, and yet couer and hide the infamie of the fact.

It was not lawfull for the magistrat to do any thing either in priuat or in publicke without his armes. They were very curious to be well followed, for that they which had the gallantest troups of youth in their traines were honoured above the rest. It was infamous for a soldier to suruiue his commaunder being slaine in war, vnlesse he died after that he had won the victorie. The prince did fight to vanquish, and they that followed D him sought for his preservation and defence. They did lightly vnderake a war, and without any necessity, being able to liue without fighting; so as they held it a basenesse to provide for any thing necessarie by labour, if they might get it by force and fighting.

When they were not in war, the most valiant and worthiest among them had no other care but to sleepe, eat, and drinke, leauing the charge of their families and husbandrie to their wiues; wherein also the old men were employed. Their ordinarie aboad was in villages and hamlets, where their houles were separated.

Their attire was a cassocke made close before with a buckle or a lace, and for want thereof with thornes. The rich did differ in habit from the poore, not for that they were larger, but more straight, and so fitted to the bodie, as it seemed to be glued to the members which it couered: and the apparrell both of men and women was a like.

The Germans among all the Easterne and Northerne Nations haue from the beginning contented themselves with one wife, although there were some that did marry many. The wife did not bring a dowrie to her husband, but the husband gaue it vnto his wife: they did not care to adorne their wiues, or to spend their estates in buying of iewels, and moueables, but they gaue them a paire of oxen readie yoked, a horse with bridle & furniture, a target, a pike, and a sword. It was an admirable thing to see the modestie and continencie of their wiues, being in a manner neuer scene at publicke places or feasts; so it was seldom heard of among so populous a nation that there was any adulterie: and if it happened that any woman were conuicted of this crime, first they did cut off her F haire, then her husband brought her naked into the open place before her kinsfolkes, deprecating her of the rights of his house, after which she was whipt throughout the village: there was no meanes nor hope of any reconciliation, when as a woman had once forgotten her selfe after that manner.

It was not lawfull among them to mocke at one anothers vices, for that they thought this

this custome was fitter to corrupt good manners, than to reforme the bad.

Young men began late to haue the acquaintance and companie of women, and by this means their youth were more lustie and actiue: neither did they much hasten the marriage of their daughters, to the end that both parties might be more fit and able for generation. A murder committed, was recompensed by a certaine price, and a number of cattell, and the murthrer agreeing did make satisfaction to all his familie that had bene flaine. They tooke great delight to entertaine and lodge strangers, and it was a great error among them to refuse his house and table to such as came. They were accustomed to giue presents mutually one vnto another, without reproaching any thing; for that they did not hold themselves beholding in any sort one vnto another, for any thing they had receiued.

They spent whole daies and nights in making good cheere, so as they held drunkenesse for no vice: and after their drinking there was nothing scene but quarrells; & there was a murthre sooner committed, than an injurious word spoken. They treated of affaires both of peace and war in their banquets, and in old time they were not cunning, but deliuered their conceptions plainly and simply. The day after they had consulted, they did retract what they had formerly resolu'd, to the end they might deliberate the second time, like vnto men that knew not how to difsemble, standing vpon the second deliberation, and thinking that they could not erre, hauing so wel consulted vpon a businesse. Their drinke was made of barley, and like vnto wine: but they that liued neere vnto riuers had wine which was brought them from forreine countries. For their meat they had wild apples, meale newly ground, and quayled milke.

They taught their youth to passe cunningly through ranks of pikes, and naked swords, to the end they might be more expert in battell. They were so giuen to play, as hauing lost their hearts, they would ingage and sell their liberties; so as he that lost remained slaue vnto the other: and although that the looser were young and strong, yet he suffered himselfe to be bound, and sold like a beast in the market.

They diuided the year into three seasons, that is to say, into Winter, the Spring time, and Sommer, like men that knew not Autumne, for that they had neither wine, nor fruits to gather in that season.

Their teares were soone past at the death of any one, but their griefe continued long grauen in their soules. It was the office of women to weepe and lament, and for men only to haue a remembrance of the dead.

XXXII.

But to speake in particular of the manners of some people of Germanie, the Saxons were great pirats at sea, as *Appollinaris* doth teach vs. Before they left the countrie which they had spoiled, their custome was to take the tenth of all their prisoners, whom they murdered with an execrable ceremonie: they thought that by this means they were discharged towards their gods, in sacrificing those whom they had taken in war.

They did seldom suffer their neighbours in peace, but they liued quietly among themselves, and the lords provided with great curtesie for all things that were necessarie for their citizens. They were wonderful curious of the preferuation of the families and races of their ancient nobilitie, and would not much acquaint themselves with strangers, nor allie themselves to their inferiours.

XXXIII.

This people was generally diuided into foure Estates, that is to say, the nobilitie, free men, men that had bene enfranchised, and slaues; and it was forbidden by their law, for any one to quit his ranke in contracting marriage: wherefore a nobleman, or a gentleman was bound to marrie a wife of his owne condition, and so of the rest, and if any one did infringe this ordinance, he was in question of his life. They had good laws for the punishment of offences; as if a murthrer had bene committed, they had a regard vnto the condition of him that had bin slaine, and it was seldom punished with death, vnlesse it had been done in some temple, and then there was no remission: yea whoeuer laid an ambush, and sought opportunitee to commit a murthre, although he did not execute his bad desseigne, yet was he banished and condemned in great fines.

He that was punished with greater rigour, for he that had stolen but three foules of their ancient

A ancient kind of money was called in question of his life: and in like manner they that did rob and vse violence did passe the rigour of the same sentence. As for inheritances, no man could deprime his lawfull heire, or him that had right vnto the succession, to giue it to another, vnlesse it were vnto the church, or to make the king his heire.

The Saxons were in old time giuen to the superstition of Idols, and did worship images that were very Greene and full of leaues, and laden with branches, and in like manner were fountaines. They had also the bodie of a great tree set into the ground in an open place which they call *Irmisfual*, which signifies an vniuersall pillar, as if it had supported all things: this tree was beaten downe by *Charles* the Great when as he subdued the Saxons, and transported them into Flanders and Brabant, to the end they should not reme any more in their countrie. They did also worship *Mercurie*, to whom they did sacrifice (like vnto the other Allemans) vpon certaine daies those whom they had taken in war. They held it nothing fit for the maiestie of their gods to be shut vp in temples, so that they should make any image to represent them, thinking it impossible for man to comprehend that which is of a diuine maiestie. They did dedicate high growne woods, and the thickest and obscurest forrests to their gods, and there they disposed of the greatest secrets of nature with much honour and reuerence. This people was also giuen to observe the flying, eating, and entrailes of birds, that by this means they might diuine obscure things.

In old time they diuined after this manner: They that would know any thing tooke little sticks or rods of certaine fruit trees which they cut in peeces, and marked them after diuers manners, and with diuers colours, spreading them without any forme or order vpon some garment that was white & cleane. If the consultation concerned the publicke, the priest did preside, and if it were for any priuat cause, the father of the familie, or master of the household where it was practised, hauing made his prayer vnto the gods, with his eyes lift vp on high, he did lift vp these rods thus spread, thrice, and as the marks turned, he foretold the happie or vnfortunat euent of the businesse; and if the marks did forbid the enterprise, they deferred it vntill another time: but if it did allow of it, these lots must also foretell the euent.

They also bred vp white horses in their woods and forrests at the publicke charge, and they had a care that they should not beved: they were harnessed to a chariot appointed to that end, the which was accompanied by the priest and king, or by the head of the citie or prouince, who did obserue the neighing and noise of these horses; so as there was not any kind of diuination, wherunto they gaue more faith and credit than to this, for as much as they did esteeme these beasts as the ministers of the gods, as who knew their secrets. They had also another kind of lots or hazard by the which they did coniecture the euent of their wars of greatest importance: for they did force euerie one of their captiues taken in warre (and that were of the nation against whom they did contend) to fight with any one of theirs they should chuse, and he that had the vpper hand did serue as a prediction of the future victorie.

As for them of *Suaube* or *Sueuia*, *Cesar* saith in his Commentaries, that it was a great people much giuen to armes, yea more than all the rest of the Germans: that they had a hundred boroughes and cantons, whereof euery one did furnish yearly one thousand warlike souldiers, who went forth of their countrie to invade their neighbours, and in the meane time, they that remained at home laboured as well to feed themselves, as to defray their charges that went to the wars, and that these which remained went at the end of the year, when as the rest returned home to refresh themselves. He saith also that no man had any land or field in particular, and that it was not lawfull for them to stay and dwell aboue a yeare in a place, that they fed little vpon bread, but vpon milke and flesh, and were altogether giuen to hunting, in like manner that they were not accustomed from their infancies to any duties, nor subiect to the rigour of any discipline. They were so hardened to labour, as notwithstanding they dwelt in a very cold countrie, yet had they no other garments but skins, and those were so short and straight, as the greatest part of their bodies were bare: and they also bathed themselves often in riuers.

They

They suffered merchants to come into their countie, more to sell the pillage which they had gotten during the war, than for any desire they had of that which came from foraine countries. They tooke no delight to be well mounted, like vnto the Gauls; for they contented themselves with such horses as they bred in their countie, and they did inure them so well to labour, as they made them fit for their seruice. They did often leaue their horses to fight on foot, hauing taught them to stand still in one place. They held nothing more base than to vse saddles; so as although they saw great numbers of men, whose horses had saddles, yet they feared not to charge and assaile them. They would not suffer any wine to be brought into their countie, saying that it made them but soft and effeminate. They held it a great honour to haue much ground lying nere them wast, being a signe that there were many people which could not withstand their forces; so as nere ioyning to the Sueuians there were six hundred thousand paces of ground not manured.

Tacitus saith that they did shorten their haire with tying and wreathing it vpon their heads, & that the princes carried their haire better combed and trimmed than the rest. At a certaine time of the yere they sent deputies out of euery quarter of Germanie, & there they did massacre and sacrifice a man in a place that was thicke couered with trees. It was not lawfull for any man to set footing into this place but with his hands bound, to the end he should acknowledge that he was lesse than the gods, and if by chance any one fell to the ground he might not rise againe, but be dragged forth. This foolish superstition tended to acknowledge from whence they had their beginning, & the place where their god reigned. One part of the Sueuians did sacrifice also to the goddesse *Iuua*. Finally the Romans hauing drawne the Sueuians to their obedience and freindship, they alwaies did them this honour to put them before in their armies, & to giue them the point in battells rather than to any other nation.

XXXVI. They of *Bauaria* (who descended from the *Boiens* according to *Polybens*) dwell in hamlets built without any walls, or inclosure, and the ground was their bed with a little straw. They liued of flesh, and were wholly giuen to war and labour, liuing very sparingly, and making no account of arts and sciences. Their wealth consisted in gold and cattle, which things might be easily transported if they should be forced to change their dwellings. Euery man sought to get as many friends as he could, and he that had most men at his deuotion was most esteemed and feared.

¶ The Manners at this day.

XXXVII. At this day the Germans are diuided into foure Estates and kinds of people. The first is of the Clergie, which comprehends all Churchmen both secular and regular, or religious orders. These haue great reuenues, and are much honored of all the rest, if they be learned, and of good life: for the people do easily contemne prelates and ministers of the Church if they be ignorant and dissolute: the religious men carrie habits befitting their condition: the priests which are not monkes haue long blacke gownes, their caps are of wooll very hollow, and not pointed, and come downe vnto their eares. When as they go in the street they carry a hood vpon their shoulders which is of silke or wooll, and they weare pantables: the greatest part of them are giuen to idleness, and care little for learning, but onely to drinke, play, and make good cheere.

The second Estate is of the nobilitie, which comprehends the princes, earles, barons, knights, and gentlemen. The princes are more esteemed than the rest, not so much for their greatness, or the antiquitie of their families, but for that they are more mightie than the rest, as hauing more land, seigneries, and reuenues. But it is strange to see the princes, earles, barons, and their like, obey their Emperor vpon the first command, as his subjects and liege men, when as the meanest gentlemen say that they are free from this subiection, and go not to the wars vntill they be paid, and yet they call the emperor their prince, and doe so acknowledge him. All the nobilitie and gentrie would thinke they should do themselves great wrong, if they should vse the trade of merchandise, or

practise

A practise any mechanic art, and they thinke it would be a great dishonor vnto them to take any base woman to wite, that were not of their qualitie. They contemne the company and conuersation of Bourgeses of townes, and for this reason they build castles and towers in the countie, whereas they liue at libertie with their families. Some of them frequent the courts of Princes, and follow them to the warres, others liue close at home vpon their reuenues.

All the gentlemen take delight in hunting, and say, that this exercise belongs onely to them, and that they haue the graunt and priuiledges of princes. If any passenger, or any one of the third Estate is conuicted to haue killed, especially hares, hyndes, fallow there, wild goats, and stagges, in any place whatsoever, they put out his eyes for a punishment of the fact; and in some others he loseth his life: yet it is lawfull for any man to hunt such beasts as are hurtfull. Finally, the nobilitie make good cheere, & are stately apparelled. Both men and women haue their garments of silke of all colours, & weare many chaines of gold and goodly jewells.

When as they go abroad they are followed by a great troupe of their domestick seruants, and march with such a grauitie, as they are easily distinguished from the people. They go any thing farre, it is on horsebacke, for that they hold it a dishonor to go on foot, and say, that it is a signe of a strange miserie, and pouertie, and yet if they want any necessities, they hold it no shame to take it by force and violence. If they haue received any wrong, they do seldome appeale to iustice, but seeke their reuenge by way of armes; so as spoiling and burning their enemies countie, they force them that haue done the wrong to make them a sufficient reparation. They are proud, full of disquietnesse, contentious, and hold the poore peasant in a strange seruitude.

The third Estate contains the Citizens, and Bourgeses of townes, whereof some are immediately subiect to the Empire, without acknowledging any other lord: others besides the Emperor haue princes, or are subiect to the Clergie. The citizens of townes liue in great loue and concord, they carrie themselves honestly, and traffike together both in publique and priuat, and oftentimes they feast one another. They seldome become one another, and haue verie few controuersies. At what time, or in what place soeuer they meet, they salute one another courteously, and with much honour. They are all plainly attired, and liue sparingly on the weeke dayes, but vpon festiual dayes they are somewhat more liberrall. They that labour make foure meales a day, and the men that worke not haue but two.

The ordinarie apprell of the men is of wooll, and that of the women of linnen cloth, and sometimes of wooll, but of diuers colours. They loue to be in the French fashion. They attire themselves in blacke at the funeralls of their kinsfolkes, and they mourne three dayes, during which time they cause prayers to be said thrice for the deceased, that is, on the day of the Interment, on the seuenth day, and on the thirtieth. This nation is much deuoted to the seruice of God, so as there is not any Artizan whatsoever, but he prays before he begins his worke.

They entertaine young men, who for to studie haue voluntarily banished themselves out of their countries and wander throughout the world, whereof sometimes there are so many in one towne, as it is a wonder how they are able to maintaine them. The citizens lodge them for the honour of God, then they go begging their bread and singing from doore to doore, where they are releued with abundance. Ioyning to euery parish Church there is a house which belongs to the publike, whereas they read the liberall, and these poore men, with the children of the towne and others, are taught there by learned men, who haue stipends to that end.

The buildings of rich men are of stone, lime, and sand, the poore haue their lodgings low, and made of wood and earth. Both the one and the other couer their houses with tile or slate. In the countie of Saxonie, and in many other places they couer them with linn.

The last ranke and Estate is of Peasants, and the countie people, who manure the land, and whose condition is miserable. They remaine farre one from another, euery one with his

the familie, living poorly and wretchedly. Their bread is blacke, and for the most part A
poore. As for their meat, they haue beanes and peas; and their drinke is pure water or
beere. Their habit is a caslocke of linnen cloth, a paire of high shooes, and a poore felt
hat. These people are alwaies without rest, vnbandsome, and slovenly in their household.
They carrie what they haue to sell to the neighbour townes, be it fruit, cattel, or any other
thing, and with the money they buy such things as they need, for that they haue few or
no artificers dwelling among them in their villages. Vpon festiuall dayes they meet after
noone vnder some tree in a publicke place, whereas they talke of their affaires: After this,
the young men fall a dancing by some flute, and the elder men go to the tauerne to drinke
caroules. The men neuer go to any publicke place without some armes, to vse if need
be. They make many journeys for the seruice of their lords, tilling their land, sowing
and reaping their come, carrying it into the barne, cutting downe their woods, and ser-
uing their masons when they build. Finally, there is no seruitude but the lords say the
people are bound vnto.

XXXVIII

But hauing spoken in generall of the manners of the Germans, let vs looke into the
particularities which are obserued in many Prouinces. The Saxons are such great drink-
ers, as they that attend them can hardly furnish them that drinke: and therefore they
set a great pot vpon the table, whereas euery man takes what he likes, and by this
means they drinke exceedingly. They are so giuen to drunkennesse, as they in a man-
ner force euery man to drinke; and this life they continue day and night: he that drinks
best is not onely commended for his beauly humour, but is crowned with a Crowne of
Roses, or other flowers and hearbes, or hath some toy giuen him for the prize of his
victorie. Their manner of drinking is spread ouer all Germanie. Whilest they are sea-
ting, if any one passe by them, be it the maister of the lodging or any other, euery man
that hath a glasse full riseth and drinkes vnto him, which is as much to say, as he must
drinke to them. They hold him for their enemy that being often inuited to drinke, doth
not pledge them: so as this contempt is many times repenged with some murdr.

The Saxons meat is hard, ill dressed, and of grosse digestion, as Lard, Saufages, and
Andouilles, or Chitterlings, dried in the smoke, raw Onions, and salt Butter: and in
some places they seeth the meat on Sunday which they eat all the weeke after. As for D
their Infants they doe not feed them with pappe, but they giue them solid meats well
chawed by the mother, or nurse; by reason whereof, the Saxons being accustomed to
this feeding, are stronger than the rest, and indure all discommodities with more pati-
ence. They haue a particular language; but as for their apparell they differ not much
from the rest of the Germans.

The Westphalians are witty and good warriors, but vicious and cuening.

The Franconians differ neither in proportion of bodie nor in manner of
habit from the rest of the Germans. They endure much labour, and both men and wo-
men are giuen to dress and trim their vines, so as not any one liues ydle. These people
being prest with pouertie sell their wine, and drinke water, for that they contemne E
beere. They are insolent, proud by nature, hauing a good opinion of themselves, and
contemne all other nations, yea they speake so ill of others, as strangers that frequent
among them will hardly discouer the place of their birth, vnlesse they be verie forward
of speech. They that endure their arrogancie with patience are welcome, and hauing
once tried them after this troublesome manner, they receiue them often for their allies,
and giue them their daughters and kinswomen in marriage. They are verie deuout, and
yet much giuen to blasphemie and theft, whereof the one seemes goodly vnto them, and
the other lawfull.

Three weekes before Christmas euening Thursday, the children, both boyes and gides,
go knocking at euery doore, and singing songs, which containe the neere Natiuitie of
Christ, and by the which they wish vnto the whole companie a good yeare: for which
euerie man giue them Peares, Apples, and Nuts, and some giue them siluer.

Vpon Christmas day, they set the representation of an infant newly borne, vpon the
about the which the children leape and dance, and the old folkes sing; vpon
Newyeares

earesh day the kinsfolkes and friends salute one another, and shake hands, wishing a
New yeare. They spend the day together in good chere, and according to the an-
custome of their ancestors, they send presents one vnto another.

Vpon Twelfth day euery house makes a cake of fine white flour, honie, pepper, and
sugar, and then they create a king as followeth. The mistress of the house is she that
sets the cake, into the which when she kneads it, she puts a small peece of siluer, then
she giue it vpon the harth, she cuts it into as many peeces as there are persons in the house,
and giues to euery one his part: yet there are certaine peeces assigned, first one to Christ,
then to the Virgin Marie, and last to the three wise men that came to worship him; and
these parts are giuen to the poore: he that hath that part wherein the peece of siluer
is, is saluted as king, set in a chaire, and raised vp thrice by the whole companie
with great cries of ioy. The king being thus raised vp on high, hath a peece of chaulke in
his hand, with the which he makes for many crosses vpon the top of the plancher of the
chamber where they meet. During the twelue daies of Christmas, there is not any house
in Franconia but is perfumed with incense, or some other sweet sent, to preuent witch-
craft.

Vpon Shrouetide the Franconians run vp and downe the streets attired like deuils, or fa-
king without discretion such as passe by with little bagges filled with sand. Vpon
wednesday in many places, all the boies of the parish meet together, who taking all
the maidens which haue most frequented dauncing that yeare, and yoking them like
vnto a chariot, vpon the which there is a minstrell set, who plaies vpon some in-
strument, in this manner they conduct them to the first water which they find.

Vpon the Rogation weeke many parishes meet together, and the young giles and
maidenes march before in procession with garlands of floures vpon their heads, and staues
in their hands. The priests of euery church are very attentue to heare
the children sing, & they that haue sung best haue (according to their sentence, and
ancient custome) certaine measures of wine giuen them to quench their thirst.

Vpon Whitsontidaies, their manner is both in Franconia and almost through-
out Germanie, for them that haue horses, or can borrow any, to meet together, setting
themselves also on horsebacke, who carries the holie sacrament; and in this manner they go
into the precincts of their territorie, singing hymnes and songs, and praying vnto God
that he would preserve the fruits of the Earth.

Vpon S. Iohns day, they that trimme the vines set forth a table in some publicke place,
cover it with a faire cloth, and with leaues, herbes, and sweet smelling floures, where-
by they set the image of S. Iohn. If the day be faire and bright, they drinke freely, and
sing in the honour of his name: but if it raine, or the weather be close, they cast dirt
on this fait, and desile the cloth and whatsoeuer is vpon the table, with flinking
water: so that they thinke their vines which are then in flower, will beare, or not, accord-
ing to the day is faire or foule.

Vpon S. Iohns Baptists day, both men and women go dauncing about a bonfire, and
the husbandes of veruein and other hearbes, and they carrie great nosegayes of flowers,
which they call Esperons, and they looke vpon the fire through these flowers, thinking
they shall haue no diseases in their eyes that yeare. They that will depart before the
bonfire, cast in first certaine hearbs wherewith they are girt, vnto the fire, or such
words. Let all my misfortunes part, and be deuoured in this fire. At the same time
they set pots of Earth full of holes, which the young maidens cover with roses and
flowers, then they put a candle burning into them, which they set vpon tops of
trees, as lam pes.

Vpon the young men which are to marrie, carry young fire trees, and cut off all
the boughes downward, beautifying the top of the tree with looking glasse, peeces of
siluer, and other things that glister, the which they plant in the ground, and
call them May trees.

When as their grapes are ripe, it is not lawfull for any man to beginne his
haruest, without his leaue to whom the tythe doth belong, and all they that haue vines
in

In the quarter, must begin their vintage together, and bring the lords right into the valley, that which grows upon the hills. They that will make their vintage later than the rest, must not only haue permission to do it, but they must also bring the lords thither to the press. Vintage being ended, for that at Wirtzburg there are young men appointed to comroule them that pay, these young men make torches of straw, which they kindle, and so enter by night into the towne finging with this light, thinking that with this ceremony they purge and bime Autumn.

The Franciscans do celebrat the feasts of S. Martin, and S. Nicholas, the one at the table in drinking hard: the other at church in praying: then every man tastes of his wine, and at Wirtzburg, and in other places they giue somewhat to the poore. They cause two furious bores to fight within a toyle, to the end they may teare one another in peeces, and being both fore wounded, and ouertrowne, the people haue a part, and the rest is distributed to the magistrates. Vpon S. Nicholas day the children which go to schoole shew three amongst them, one of which is the bishop, and the other are his deacons. This day made at pleasure, is that day conducd to the church by the whole troupe of schoolers, being attired in his pontificall robes, with the which he doth assist at diuine service, at the end whereof, he and his deacons go finging from doore to doore to get money, and they denie that this is an almes, but a charitable succour due to the bishop. They teach their children to fast the eue of this Saint, and therefore in the night when they sleepe, they put some peece of siluer in their throoes, telling them that it proceeds from the Saints bountie, so as some fast with such eagernesse, as they are forced to make them eat to preferre their health.

As for them of Suenia, the richest and of most note among them are in a manner all giuen to merchandise, and make a common purse to that end, and euery man knows what summe he shal aduance: with which money they not onely buy silkes and spices, but also other fine mercer wares, as spoons, points, looking glasses, & puppets, and they also buy wine and come to keepe, the which they sell againe for the double of that it cost. They haue letters of commision from princes, by the which all men are forbidden to buy wine or come in any other places, but whereas they haue their storehouses. True it is that they do not vse this trafficke themselves, but they haue their factors who giue them an account.

As for them of meane qualitie, their greatest trade is to make linnen cloth, to the which they are giuen, as in many places you shall not onely see women and maidens at the distaff, but also men and boyes spinning among them. They make a certaine cloth of linnen mixt with cotton which they call Pargath, and another all of linnen, called in their language Gold.

The Suenians are much giuen to incontinencie, and the women are as tractable as men can desire, and both the one and the other begin this lewd life soone, and leave it late: and therefore there is a common proverbe, That the countrie of Suae alone is able to furnish all Germanie with strumpets, Franconia with rogues and beggers, Bohemia with hereticks, Banaria with theues, Westphalia with periurers and false winnells, and the Marquiss of the Rhin with gluttons.

As for them of Bawaria, they are so slovenly, rude, and brutish, as if they be compared with the rest of the Germanes, they may iustly be termed barbarous. But the vices wherein they are most infected, are discourtesie and theft. They attire themselves most commonly in blew, and do rather wear boots and buskins, than stockings. The most deuout of them go often in pilgrimage in great troupes, especially to Aix la Chapelle.

These last princes which carrie the title of Archduke, and wheras any one comes into this countie, they vse a strange custome: for not far from the towne of S. Vite, in a great and deep valley, there are the ruines of a towne to be seene, but the name is not knowne: where vnder these ruines in a goodly meadow there is a great marble stone flat on the top of which they set a peasant, to whom this right falls by succession: this man is the cow big with calfe sette vnto him on the right hand, and on the left a leane man, and about him an infinit number of peasants and other people.

Aftir

After which the duke comes being accompanied with a great troupe of his nobilitie, whom they carrie his Ducall ornaments, and all his traine are in great pompe: the prince is plainly attired, wearing the habit of a Peasant, with the cappe and shooes, he beards hooke; so as one would rather take him for a man of that condition than a prince. He that sits vpon the stone, seeing the Archduke come, cries out in the German Tongue, What is he that marcheth so proudly? To whom the multitude answers, It is the Lord of all the countrie. Then the Peasant demands of him in his judgement, if he desires the good of the countrie; if he be of a condition, and of a noble extraction; if he deserues this dignitie; if he will keepe the commandments of God like a good Catholicke, and defend the Church: whereat all crye, yea: and then he that sits vpon the stone saith, By what meanes can he take from this place? Then the Steward to the new Prince answers, This place shall be giuen from you with the price of sixtie peeces of siluer; these beasts shall be yoked from all Taxes, Imposts, and Subsidies. After this, the Peasant strikes the duke vpon the cheek, aduising him to be an vpright Iudge; which done, he goes from his seat, takes his spoiles, and retires himselfe: then the duke goes vp vnto one, and drawing forth his sword, he turnes himselfe round about, and promisseth the people all the dutie of a good Prince, and of an vpright Iudge. Some hold, that he doe also bring him water in a Peasants hat, and that he drinks thereof for an assurance of his future sobrietie. From thence they go vnto a Church neere vnto the place, called to the Virgin Marie, where the duke assists with all his troupe at diuine ceremonies being ended, the Prince calling off his rusticke habit, he puts on his robes, and feasts with his nobilitie. After dinner, they returne vnto the meadow, where the duke hears the complaints of euerie man, and doth iustice vnto all, receiuing alacrie and homage of all his vassalls and subiects. The Peasants haue this priuilege, that they may challenge the duke in his dignitie, for that they were the first which receiued the duke into the countrie.

There is a strange kind of proceeding against theues, especially towards that quarter of the towne of Klagen stands. If any man be suspected of theft, they hang him by the neck, and then they make his proceffe; if he be found innocent, he is taken downe, and his funerals are made at the publike charge; but if he be judged guilty, they suffer him to hang vntill he fall in pieces.

The countie of the Carinthians is of wooll, but not died, and they doe commonly weare cloathes that speake the Sclauon Tongue. But the Stirians are grosse and rude, and haue all their swellings vnder their throat, as it hinders their speech: yet they doe imitate the Germans in their behaviour and attire, and also in their speech, except it be those that dwell by the river of Drawe, who vse the Sclauon Tongue. As for them of Bohemia, they speake no German but Sclauon: yet there are many which at this day speake the German tongue, especially in preaching. This people were neuer tied in general by any law, which drew them vnto verue, but their will serues them for a law. They are much breasted, and haue their haire white; they are ambitious, glorious, arrogant, and contemne others, and in all other things doe not much differ from the Germans.

The Germans make profession to be verie loyall, and to speake the truth, but they are more home to simplicitie than to subtiltie, the which they know not how to vse in themselves: but in a strange countrie, they are the more fit to deceiue others, than to be deceived. They are not much distrusted; and we may say, that chastitie is more commended in this countrie. Drunkenesse is no vice amongst them, yea, they say, that the most deceiפטull men haue brought in an abstinence from wine, to the end they might discover their bad conceptions, hauing drunke hard.

Ccc ij

¶ The